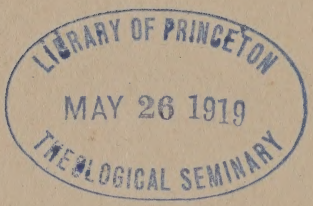

Division DH682
Section .W61
v. 2

BELGIUM

Painting by Franz Von Holst

Brand Whitlock

United States Minister to Belgium

BELGIUM

A PERSONAL NARRATIVE

LIBRARY OF PRINCETON
MAY 26 1919
THEOLOGICAL SEMINARY

BY

BRAND WHITLOCK

UNITED STATES MINISTER TO BELGIUM

AND AUTHOR OF
"FORTY YEARS OF IT,"
ETC.

VOLUME II

D. APPLETON AND COMPANY
NEW YORK MCMXIX

COPYRIGHT, 1919, BY
BRAND WHITLOCK

all rights reserved

COPYRIGHT, 1918, BY
THE RIDGWAY COMPANY

COPYRIGHT IN GREAT BRITAIN, CANADA, AUSTRALIA

all rights reserved for
France, Belgium, Holland, Italy, Spain, Russia, Central and South America
and the Scandinavian Countries

PRINTED IN THE UNITED STATES OF AMERICA

CONTENTS OF VOLUME II

CHAPTER		PAGE
I.	A Visit to the Front	1
II.	Under Fire	20
III.	The 21st July	32
IV.	Little Tragedies	50
V.	The Bâtonnier Théodor	65
VI.	The Resumption of Work	76
VII.	Edith Cavell	81
VIII.	The Night of the Execution	101
IX.	An ex-post-facto Edict	111
X.	Miss Cavell's Last Night	137
XI.	The Reaction	146
XII.	The von Sauberzweig Régime	159
XIII.	Homeward Bound	174
XIV.	Back in Brussels	180
XV.	Stripping Belgium	196
XVI.	The Fate of Louis Brill	203
XVII.	Verdun	211
XVIII.	After the War!	226
XIX.	The Ravitaillement in Danger	229
XX.	The University of Ghent	236
XXI.	The Ravitaillement Goes On	250
XXII.	Visitors	255
XXIII.	Summer Time	266
XXIV.	Toward War	273
XXV.	Dr. Bull	284
XXVI.	Some Noble Visitors	292
XXVII.	Luncheons and Dinners	305

CHAPTER		PAGE
XXVIII.	Commerce and Corruption	316
XXIX.	Saving the Golf Links	327
XXX.	The Queen's Hospital	335
XXXI.	Fête Days	351
XXXII.	Retaliation	365
XXXIII.	The Orangerie	371
XXXIV.	Bank Abteilung and Yegg Men	389
XXXV.	"Belgium Will Learn What War Is"	410
XXXVI.	To Assassinate a Nation's Soul	436
XXXVII.	Francis Joseph's Requiem Mass	449
XXXVIII.	The Monstrous Thing	478
XXXIX.	Documents in Evidence	491
XL.	Press Gangs	625
XLI.	Calvary	633
XLII.	The Dying Year	648
XLIII.	Hermancito	676
XLIV.	Holidays	680
XLV.	Deportations	688
XLVI.	The End's Beginning	699
XLVII.	The Ravitaillement Assured	706
XLVIII.	Problems of Position	736
XLIX.	Slavery	742
L.	Destroying a Nation	754
LI.	Rags and Old Bones	779
LII.	Instructions to Depart	785
LIII.	Details of Departure	794
LIV.	The Closed Door	808
	Appendix	814

BELGIUM

BELGIUM

I

A VISIT TO THE FRONT

I HAD seen one side, and a hideous side, of the war, but that was the side behind the scenes; and I was always regretting, or reminding myself that one day I should regret, that I had not seen that other side, of martial glory and splendour and heroism, of which we had only the echoes in the distant thud and boom of the cannonading there from the trenches so far to the south of us—the sound that could be heard always when by day one was away from the noises of the city or when by night they were stilled. I had often reproached Lancken with inhospitality in not taking Villalobar and me to see their great spectacle and finally one afternoon he asked me if I was really in earnest, and when I said that of course I was, he forthwith arranged the excursion for the next day, the twentieth of July, and we drove away in the afternoon—Lancken, Villalobar, Count Harrach and I—in Lancken's big grey automobile. We took the familiar road to Hal, and, driving rapidly by Enghien and Ath, we came to Tournay by tea-time. There, after inspecting the cathedral with its famous five towers, a noble specimen of medieval architecture dating from the eleventh century, we went to a

small *pâtisserie* for tea. *Madame la patronne,* a bright, talkative little woman, was full of curiosity as to who we were and what business we were about, and when von der Lancken said:

"Nous venons de visiter votre belle cathédrale;" the woman replied:

"Oui, et puisque vous avez détruit la belle cathédrale de Rheims j'espère que vous épargnerez la nôtre!"

The Baron turned as red as the lining of the white collar of his bluish-grey cape—and we sought the motor.

The road to Lille was a descent into Avernus, with destruction and desolation more and more apparent as we passed on. One could almost mark the frontier between Belgium and France by the changed aspect of the population and the scene; instead of the bustling, gossiping groups, we saw only sad women and bedraggled children and old and hobbling men, but not a strong man or a man in middle years—all were off to the front. It was a depressing sight and I felt a sorrow settle over me that was not lifted during all our stay; it is not lifted yet, nor ever will be. I cannot forget those tragic faces, that expression of humiliation, the degradation of living under a conqueror. We entered Lille toward evening with an aeroplane flying high above us amid the bursting shrapnel with which the Germans were trying to bring it down, and from that moment on we were not once beyond the sound of guns.

Lille is an industrial centre, very much like any one of a dozen small cities in the Middle West. In times of peace it is dingy enough, but then, with life prostrate, empty of men and of all who could get away, and swarming with foreign soldiers, it was beyond words haggard, forlorn, and disreputable; everywhere there was dirt,

the disgusting dirt of war, that seemed to sift into every crevice, every crack and cranny, and to cover everything. The Crown Prince Rupprecht of Bavaria, who commanded that district, had invited us to dine with him that night. Villalobar had scented the function from afar and we had taken dinner jackets, absurd as it seemed to do so with a visit to the trenches in prospect, and I dressed that evening in my room overlooking the courtyard of l'Hôtel de l'Europe, the typical caravansari of the French provinces, with the sound of booming guns in my ears.

An old servitor in long dark grey coat with two rows of brass buttons, his bald head bowed in an habitual servile stoop, descended the steps to meet us when at twilight we entered through the great gate between bearded sentinels and drove up to the château which the Prince occupied outside the town. The long *salon* into which we were shown was furnished in the execrable taste of some new rich manufacturer and ornamented with a portrait-bust of the proprietor, which, as a last touch of taste and to lend an air of artistic verisimilitude, the resemblance so much desired in portraiture, wore a pince-nez on its marble nose.

The officers who composed the suite of the Crown Prince came one after another into the *salon,* pausing in the doorway to click their heels and to bow formally, and one after the other were presented; and presently we all fell back and there entered a slender, tall, rather wary man, in a grey tunic jacket, and dark blue trousers, with very wide red stripes, strapped under his military boots. And every one bowed before the Crown Prince. He entered with a vague and rather sad, wan smile on his lips, and von der Lancken presented Villa-

lobar and me. He spoke to us in French with an accent more refined, I think, than the accent of the Prussians when they speak French. He seemed sincere and cordial in manner, with nothing of exaggeration in his bearing; a thin, grey man, weary, as I have said, with a lean, smooth-shaven grey face and a little brush of grey moustache. He seemed to be about fifty years of age, though I believe he is not so old.

We stood about uttering the customary banalities until the wide glass doors between the *salon* and the dining-room swung open and we went in to dine. Villalobar was seated on the right of the Crown Prince, I on his left. I had on my left the Count A——, a tall, well set-up reddish man, with a pleasant manner and a good deal of intelligence, and we chatted pleasantly throughout the simple dinner that was served. There were but five courses, indicated on the menu by their German names, a pastry, a bit of salmon, a roast chicken, a salad, great mounds of ice cream, and white and red wines. The old servitor handed about cigars and cigarettes at the table and when we had gone into the *salon,* continued to hand them around, bearing the while a candle, from the wavering yellow flame of which we lighted them. The footmen served no coffee, but instead, large goblets of beer, and these they continued to serve throughout the evening, while the old servitor passed gravely around and around with his tall lighted candle.

The Crown Prince withdrew with Lancken into a corner near the window and they talked in low tones for a long time, while I chatted with the affable Count about all sorts of things—trying to avoid the war, for the notes on the *Lusitania* were being exchanged in that

moment. But by the irresistible attraction of the subject with which the very atmosphere throbbed, the conversation inevitably veered round to it, as the needle, oscillating an instant, turns unerringly to the magnetic-pole. And the Count introduced the topic by saying:

"Si vous autres en Amérique n'aviez pas fourni les munitions aux Alliés, la guerre aurait été finie il y a longtemps."

I decided to end it there and then. I looked at him and said:

"Ne le prenez pas sur ce ton, je vous prie!" He laughed, and we did not discuss munitions of war, nor war at all.

The Crown Prince finished his chat with Lancken after a while, and, seating himself, signed to us all that we might be seated, and beckoned to me to draw up my chair. Villalobar and I then sat on either side of him, and he sent my Count out to see what the news of the day was. His Royal Highness was very amiable. He addressed me in English, with an apology, saying he could not speak the language very well, that he had been out of practise for a long time; but as a matter of fact he spoke it remarkably well, though presently he drifted into French. He told us about his many voyages, especially about his visit to America; and said that he hoped after the war was over to make another visit to America, for he was deeply interested in many of our institutions. He said that it was good of us to have come down to visit his command and that he had tried to arrange a comprehensive itinerary for us, that naturally it was difficult to see everything in the course of one day, but he trusted that we should not find it uninteresting.

As he sat there he smoked a light cigar and took an occasional sip from the goblet of beer the old servitor had placed on a little table before him, and then at nine o'clock—it was ten o'clock their time—he rose and said that inasmuch as we should have to arise early in the morning he would allow us to depart and get some rest. Then, amid universal bowing and clicking of spurred heels, he withdrew.

At the dinner-table there were, besides His Royal Highness, the Count on my left, and Villalobar, Lancken, Harrach, and I, and four other officers—one of them a red-faced, heavy German who said nothing during the entire meal. Next to him and across from Villalobar was a well set-up chap with a head somewhat like that of Louis Philippe; he spoke in a heavy voice, and when he was not talking German he seemed to prefer English, which he spoke with an English accent—indeed, he may have belonged to that class of younger Germans who, as the French put it, *singent les Anglais.* There was another young officer of the same type, wearing a monocle and English puttees, also speaking English with a pronounced English accent. The first of these two, a Captain, had been detailed by the Crown Prince to conduct us on our visit of inspection on the following day. As we were about to leave he explained to me that we must be ready and awaiting him at the hotel at six-forty—that would be twenty minutes to six, Belgian time.

Villalobar, knowing that I had neglected to cultivate the habit of early rising—perhaps the easiest device known to man for acquiring cheaply a reputation for virtue—laughed and said:

"That's too early for you."

"We chose this hour," our Captain explained earnestly, "because naturally we do not wish to expose you more than is necessary. We are going in the trenches opposite the English, and at that hour things are more quiet than at any other time of the day; it is the hour when the English breakfast, and they don't like to be disturbed at their meals."

Villalobar gave me an amused glance. And then we drove away through the darkness of the park—bearded Bavarian sentinels saluting, and a spy in civilian dress emerging from the bushes under the trees, snatching off his hat, and standing stiffly at attention as we rode by and through the great gates.

We went to the hotel, asked to be called at five-thirty —four-thirty our time—and at once retired. When I reached my room and opened the window I could hear the booming of the heavy guns and when I got to bed I discovered that there were two town clocks in Lille within striking distance of each other, and between the ugly booming of the guns and the striking of the clocks it was not easy to get to sleep.

I was awakened by a terrible cannonade, in the midst of which I heard German voices calling to each other across the courtyard which my room overlooked. It was dawn, and, looking out of my window, I saw an aeroplane soaring high overhead and all about it the exploding shrapnel. I could hear the roar of the motor, the whistle and shriek of the shells, and presently to this noise there was added the drumming of *mitrailleuse*. It was weird, there in the silent dawn, in that French provincial hotel. From every window frowsy, sleepy, yellow German heads were thrust out. Two German soldiers were on the roof, one of whom I identified as

Fritz, von der Lancken's orderly; he had crawled out of his window in the mansard to see this battle in the air. The aviator was flying toward us and was soon directly over the courtyard, and to the horrid racket of the shells and the *mitrailleuse* there was now added the rattle of the falling pieces of shrapnel on the pavement of the courtyard. It was nearly four o'clock—useless to try to sleep—and so I shaved, looking out of my window the while at the black puffs of smoke from the exploding shells. Down in the courtyard, where in time of peace one might have gone back in imagination half a century and pictured a diligence, a little French boy was darting in and out from the cover of a doorway to pick up pieces of the shrapnel, while a covey of birds at each fresh hail of metal flitted uneasily from one tree to another, trying to find a hiding-place.

I was hardly dressed when the waiter brought me my tea—he called it tea—and a few biscuits. The little Frenchwoman who seemed to conduct the hotel had warned me the night before, with a long face and an apologetic gesture:

"Nous ne sommes pas très riches, Monsieur!"

At six-thirty, their time, five-thirty ours, we were all in the courtyard below waiting for our Captain; the battle in the sky had ended but the booming of the guns in the distance still came to our ears.

Captain von X—— came promptly in a huge grey car, with a black, white, and red target on the lantern in front, and the arms of the Crown Prince on the side. He was accompanied by the officer with the monocle and by another officer, and we raced off through the city at a frightful speed to a park somewhere beyond the citadel. Sentinels tried to halt us, but the officer with

the monocle, who had mounted to the seat beside our chauffeur, shouted some terrible German words at them and smote them into an immobile attitude of attention. At several places the road was barred by wooden, stone, or wire barricades, but these our monocled Captain did not respect; he ordered the soldiers to remove them and sometimes even did not wait for them to be thrust aside, but had the car driven high on the sidewalks around them, and thus we were whirled, to the screaming of our siren, out of town. We paused once, by a door in a château-wall, where a sentinel, a Saxon, from his green cap with the horse's tail twisted about it, stood at salute, while a young Saxon officer, an *aide* of the General commanding the corps, whose trenches we were to visit, came out and joined us, and we went screeching out onto the road to Armentières. The long highway was cumbered with all the engines of war—guns, caissons, battalions of infantry, squadrons of cavalry; and always wagon trains, lumbering on heavily toward the insatiable front, stirring up forever clouds of dust, which settled subtly everywhere and made everything obnoxious to the touch, to the sight, to all the senses. But at the importunate and imperative screech of the siren on the grey car, with the target of the staff and the arms of the Crown Prince, they all hastily turned aside, and we passed, whirling on through the dusty villages, whose every door was chalked in German, and from whose every window showed the frowsy yellow out-thrust heads of the German soldiers quartered there, with the women slaving for them, and toothless old men with trembling chins sitting on the doorsteps in the sun vacantly staring at the changing scenes of that onward progress toward the front.

Beyond, there were heavy woods and the terrible devastation of war, ruins, and the wreckage left in the train of the battle with the retreating British in the autumn; back among the trees now and then some ruined old château, its windows staring vacantly, its white façade riddled by shell and ball, inexpressibly sad and desolate. There was not anywhere a single inhabited house, all had been deserted long since. At last we stopped in the edge of a wood, and there, with the sweet morning air blowing over us—already under the artillery fire that goes on continually and, as it were, for ever, between the Germans and the British across the trenches, we heard the screaming of the shells overhead. That shriek of shrapnel is a horrid sound; I had often read descriptions of it. There are many comparisons—"lost souls moaning in the wind," "the wail of damned spirits," etc., and it is indeed some one of the many noises of hell, no doubt; but nothing brings the sound more vividly to my mind than the instinctive gesture which the Captain with the head like Louis Philippe's, made to his brother-officer with the monocle, when, as a shell went over us, he placed his clenched fists together and then rent them apart as though giant hands were ripping asunder some heavy piece of cloth.

The Captain produced an engineer's drawing of the trenches which we were about to visit and, while we stood there in the edge of that cool wood, began to explain; we would enter the rear trenches here, pass on to the second line here, then enter the first line here. But I was not watching the well-drawn plan of the trenches—what can be more stupid than a plan of anything, especially when you are to see the thing itself?—but a wagon train

that went rumbling by, the drivers staring at us with that strange expression that dwells in soldiers' eyes.

We left the motors behind and went out from the cover of the woods and walked along the road, stretching dusty yellow before us in the sun, toward a little village where was the entrance to the rear trenches. On either side lay the neglected fields, overgrown with grass and weeds, and beautiful with poppies, *bleuets,* and buttercups, and great masses of an exquisite lavender—some flower that I did not know. And in their wonderful colours under that serene sky those fields breathed peace, even with the shells overhead and the trenches lying just beyond.

We walked on in the hot sun for a quarter of a mile. On each side soldiers were digging new trenches to be used in case of a retreat or, as one officer explained, as if he considered retreat unlikely, to keep the soldiers busy; there were barbed-wire entanglements in the woods, some of them cunningly concealed; and a kind of *chevaux-de-frise* called, to Villalobar's amusement, Spanish cavalry. And always those flowers in the fields and the perfume of them and the sweet morning sunlight, and always overhead that noise of the shrapnel that seemed to darken the sky. There was a lane—a quiet, peaceful country lane, that turned away to the left into the woods that lay across the field; at the entrance to the lane there was a sentinel, a pretty boy, he could not have been more than seventeen. He came to attention, his blue eyes fixed in a kind of terror on those officers; his eyes never left them. He stood very erect and constantly tried to stand more erect, ever more respectfully and attentively and correctly, by jerking his head back again and again—in an agony of fear, an ob-

sequious, exaggerated respect. All the soldiers did that, boys and old men—all in terror, all obsequious, the old fawning and cringing even more than the young. . . . And the young officers strutted carelessly by, striking their puttees with their *cravaches,* indifferently acknowledging their salutes.

Just ahead was the little village, and across the road a barricade of sand bags and stones and wood piled as high as my head. And there was a hut, with a low door, and from it at our approach there emerged a little man in grey uniform, grey hair, grey eyes and pince-nez, a mild-mannered little man, introduced as Captain X——, who commanded the company stationed at that post—it was his trenches we were to visit. His little hut had a roof of corrugated iron, with sod on top of it; inside, a table with a telephone, some books, some papers, a cot, a washstand, a picture on the wall, a little stove for cold days. And there and thus he lived.

Near by was another hut, with earth thrown over it; and the little grey Captain drew back a curtain at its entrance, revealing soldiers curled up in frowzy bunks, sleeping heavily after their night in the trenches. And the air inside was not pleasant.

The road had now become the main street of the village and the barricade thrown across it, the Captain explained, was necessary because the road was in the direct line of fire from the English trenches. To reach the German trenches we had to cross the road, edging close up to the barricade, to the houses on the other side. The houses were all empty and silent; all the houses in that poor little town were empty and silent; not a window was left in one of them, not a door; the walls were riddled and split by bullets and shrapnel, the bricks

chipped and peppered. On the floors inside were heaps of wreckage, all the filthy débris, the soiled intimacies of deserted human habitations, sordid relics of sordid lives tragically interrupted, left behind by fleeing refugees before advancing armies in the autumn. The Germans had knocked rude holes in the party walls, so that one could pass directly from one house to another and be sheltered from the fire. And so we passed on through one silent house after another of that deserted village, through gardens overgrown with weeds, littered with rubbish, here and there the souvenirs of some former occupant, happy, maybe, in his quiet home—a portrait hanging crookedly on the wall, having escaped miraculously all those shells; a little lace curtain blowing out of a window in that sweet morning breeze. It was the abomination of desolation spoken of by the prophet, depressing in the extreme.

There was not a living being in sight, and then suddenly we came upon a soldier sitting in the kitchen of a house, at a common table. His head was bound up in a white surgical bandage, as big as a turban, and he wore an old faded, threadbare black frock-coat, that made him ridiculous. He had been wounded and was convalescing. He was breakfasting on a piece of black bread upon which with a pocket-knife he was spreading some kind of grease from a tin, and he had a tin cup of coffee. At our approach he sprang to his feet, came to attention, and stood there. Our officers spoke to him, with the condescending sugary kindness that wardens and gaolers display toward inmates of prisons when visiting and inspecting committees are about. Myriad flies were crawling over his tin of paste and his hunk of black bread. . . .

In the rear of a house, close by an old wall, in an entrance cunningly concealed, we descended steps cut in the earth to a narrow trench, six feet deep, scarcely a yard wide, like those dug for water pipes in city streets, and were lost in the labyrinth of the German trenches. I was in advance with the monocled Captain, the others came on in single file behind, clattering on the wooden gratings that made a floor for the trenches. And always overhead those shells, those bullets; the English were not all at breakfast, surely!

The trench was cut directly through a graveyard; on either side I could have laid my hand on a grave where still reposed those ugly, too enduring artificial flowers in which French cemeteries abound. And there in the centre, high over our heads, was reared a great Golgotha, a monstrous crucifix, the white body of the Christ on its wooden cross, spotted again and again by black holes where bullets had pierced it. The arms of the cross were splintered, but there the Christ hung pitiably, in that hail of balls, a great black hole in His white side, with an aspect terribly human—and no one commented on the dramatic picture and all its fearful, poignant, ironic implications. We walked on in silence. . . .

Soldiers here and there flattened themselves against the wall of the trench to let us pass, or blotted themselves out of sight in little recesses and niches. They looked more like working-men than soldiers; they wore only trousers, boots and undershirts. We came from time to time to little dug-outs where men were standing idly about; and in a place as wide as a cistern some men were sawing wood, making grating for the trenches. The soldiers were silent and very sober. They never

smiled; they simply stared at us without interest or curiosity, dull, or, maybe, benumbed—though perhaps only properly disciplined. In one of the dug-outs there was a bench and a bunk where men were sleeping and there was a little pup chained within—a cowering, whining, pitiful thing which, when I stooped to pat it, shivered all over in its fawning affection. The soldiers had tried to find little comforts, little distractions, little ameliorations—prints cut from illustrated journals or portraits of the Kaiser or of Hindenburg or other German worthies. Some of the trenches were named, like streets, after Paris or other cities; one, in clumsy humour, was "Rue des Barbares."

And so we threaded the trenches, piercing deeper into the hopeless labyrinth. There were more and more soldiers as we progressed, though the trenches were not full of them, as I had imagined them. But the Captain showed us a rusty iron gong on which the alarm was beaten in case of attack, so that the concealed reserves could come forward to the defense. I could not understand how he could find his way through this maze, but presently he told me that we were in the second line of trenches. We were now seeing more men, more guns, more alarm-gongs, boxes of hand-grenades. Two black wires ran along the trench for electric lights; some of the trenches in water-bearing ground were made with gabions, and here and there reinforcements of concrete, and there were structures like Esquimaux huts, also made of concrete—depots for ammunition.

There was a curious effect of silence in those trenches; the infernal noise of the shells overhead seemed, somehow, remote; we got used to it. I neglected after a while

even to duck my head every time a shell or a ball had gone over.

There was, too, a sense of order and of cleanliness, except—loathsome detail—everywhere, over all, there were crawling flies, millions of them, moving about sluggishly, deliberately, along the edges and the walls of the trenches. On the gratings little green toads were hopping; one, in a strange respect for life, had to be careful not to step on them.

That was all—that and a bunch of poppies and vines overhanging the edges of the trenches where the sand bags were piled. No one was firing from our trenches; we saw no killed, no wounded, even. Those men seemed to have nothing to do with that hail of balls that flew always just over our heads, the shells, highest, of all describing great parabolas in the air, which they seemed to darken almost palpably, like a cloud. That was imagination, of course; the sun was blazing in a brazen sky.

The bullets whistled, or sang—that buzzing sound which nails make when boys throw them sharply through the air; and the English rifles kept up a fusillade like fire-crackers, the racket of an old-fashioned Fourth of July at home; the sunshine added to the similitude, even if it did make it all garish and unreal, as if it were not really happening after all. But the eyes of the soldiers that looked on death always and awaited it—they were real.

We had been in the trenches for an hour when we came to a little steel cupola, with a soldier inside, sitting on a stool, his eyes pressed to a narrow slit like a bar of brilliant light. He had a telephone at his elbow, and his gun. There were periscopes here and there, some of

them rude contrivances improvised of boxes and bits of broken mirrors. . . . The Captain motioned to the soldier to come down, and asked me to enter the cupola. I went in, took the soldier's place on the stool, peered through the narrow slit, and there, across the field filled with daisies and cornflowers, and just midway, a great flaming bunch of poppies—there, two hundred yards away, stretched a low white wall of sand bags.

"There are the English," said the Captain. "We are now in the first trenches."

I could see nothing but the low line of sand bags, hear nothing but the shrieking of the shells and the whistling, the humming, the buzzing of the bullets—and the red mass of the poppies blooming between.

. . . And those were the English, only two hundred yards away—the men whose tongue I spoke, whose thoughts I thought, whose traditions, ideals, hopes, I shared, as though they were mine own people. I peered a long time, feeling strange, lonely, home-sick, in the trench where I did not belong. . . .

When we were out of the trenches and had passed again through the deserted village of Wez Macquart, behind through its riddled, empty houses and gardens grown high with weeds and flowers that had sprung up that year with no gardeners to tend them, and had bidden the little Captain good-bye at the door of his hut, we were glad of the shelter of peaceful woods, whose lovely nooks, untroubled by firing, gave no sign of war until we came to a clearing, where under sheds German soldiers were at work making barbed wire.

There was, indeed, a very busy little manufacturing plant in full operation; some of the men were making gratings for the trenches and others were inspecting and

classifying obus that had fallen in their lines, photographing them, ticketing and labelling them, making statistics in the slow, methodical German way.

"To show where they were manufactured," as one of them explained.

I could see new campaigns in the Press, and when a *sous-officier* drew out some ammunition which he declared indignantly to be American, von der Lancken hastily exclaimed:

"Put that away, you fool; don't show it now!"

Then we must inspect a swimming-pool, hidden away in the woods with spring-boards standing out over the water and a high board fence around it. Further on through the fields and woods there was an old farm house, long since abandoned by its occupants, and occupied as headquarters by a German battalion. The soldiers were cultivating a little vegetable-garden in the courtyard and peacefully raising chickens; in the kitchen with its great stove there was a desk at which a soldier was sitting at a telephone, and there was a piano.

Thus through the woods we gained the motor, and so past those ruined châteaux, those white façades *criblées* by balls, past those fields where the flowers were blowing in the sunshine, we came again to the dusty suburbs of Lille—and must stop to visit a factory to see soldiers making nails. A nail is a nail, and I had seen nails, and once having grasped the principle as Thoreau said, I could see no reason for indefinitely multiplying the instances, but we visited the nail factory.

When we reached our hotel and stopped there to wait for another car to join us, a funeral procession was passing; a man was carrying a crucifix at its head and a priest in robes was reading his prayers; then, a poor

open hearse, a cheap wooden coffin, a shabby black pall, and behind it a woman in mourning, leading a blind boy dressed in obviously new blacks, in whose uplifted pallid face there was the rapt expression and the placid smile peculiar to the blind, at long intervals blinking his sightless eyes in the glaring sun. Then the friends and mourners—hobbling old men, bent old women, and young wives and girls, and little children, but not one man of middle age, not one for whom war has any use.

The pathos of all that hopeless poverty, of those squalid obscure lives, ending futilely in that last and shabbiest scene of all, touched me with its poignant sadness, as the waste, the destruction, and desolation had filled me with its despair. The monstrous folly of it all, and then the moral indignity heaped upon these innocent, inoffensive people, sinking under their dumb sorrow, conquered, broken, passed under the yoke. . . .

A little boy was plucking at my sleeve:

"Un sou, Monsieur!" he begged. *"Pour manger, s'il vous plaît!"*

It was one of those moments in which the ghastly spectacle of this our common life, suddenly revealed stark and hideous, by some such commonplace, and insignificant scene, becomes intolerable, and in an overwhelming depression I found myself exclaiming to one of the young German officers:

"Mon Dieu! que la vie est abominable et triste!"

And he replied, with a laugh, and ready wit:

"Mais les funérailles sont toujours gaies!"

II

UNDER FIRE

We had been joined by the father-in-law of one of the officers, an old German civilian with a long grey beard that covered his breast. He had been a soldier in the war of 1870; was then engaged in business in Hamburg, and was on his annual holiday. He explained to me that he had found himself in need of rest, and knew no better way to spend his vacation than by visiting the front.

Von der Lancken, Villalobar, and I mounted into the motor of the Crown Prince and our young Captain—he of the broad jaw and the short moustache, was at the wheel. He drove that car like a demon, whirling and dashing and swerving through the streets, shouting to people to get out of his way, and so on to the road and through the villages of Siglin and Carvin on the way to Lens and the French front.

The memory of the haggard villages, with that bedraggled, unkempt air which the occupation gave them, that palpable layer of dirt, those sad women lifting their weary eyes in languid interest as we passed, those ragged children seeing only the superficial glamour of the military spectacle, those soldiers in dirty grey, those swanking officers and conspicuous salutes—it can never leave me. It was good to get out onto the highway again, in the sunlight, with the harvests ripe in the fields on either

side, though there were no peasants to gather them; Russian prisoners, great fellows out of the novels of Tourgenev and Tolstoy, had taken their places at the reapers. We were running sixty miles an hour, too fast to talk, but just before we got to Lens, lying there before us in a little valley, we stopped, and our Captain pointed away off across the fields and rolling hills, to the right.

"La Chapelle de Notre Dame de Lorette," he said.

It was the famous and sanguinary Loretta Heights, where in Joffre's great offensive the terrible fighting of May twenty-first had occurred. It lay a little to the northwest of Souchez, almost half-way to Arras. There is an old legend in northern France, brought down through centuries of battles, that the one who holds Loretta Heights will win the war. It is not, perhaps, altogether a soldier's superstition, but founded no doubt upon the very salient and substantial fact that the army that held those hills had a strategical position that commanded the country-side for miles around.

Behind was La Bassée and a little further on Neuve-Chapelle, where the English heroically failed. These, of course, were out of sight but we could see Loretta Heights, see the smoke rising and hear the thunder of the guns in the artillery duel that goes on there forever. There lay those lovely fields in the sunlight of France, under a haze of grey smoke and grey dust.

We drove down into Lens, a little town, dirty like the rest, reeking of the odour of invasion, deserted by everybody who could get away, inhabited now by slatternly women, depressed and bedraggled, and by children on the sidewalks watching the endless stream of grey soldiers flow by. We drove through the town and beyond into a cemetery—for of course, after the factory,

one must visit the cemetery. There, at the entrance of the cemetery, where in the blazing sun lay closely huddled graves, decorated with artificial flowers, crosses of wood or of iron ornamented with photographs and other mementoes of the deceased, was a monument that had been erected to the citizens of Lens that had fallen in the war of 1870, and already there were the new graves of those other heroes who had fallen in this latest war.

But they took us there not to see so much the French as the German cemetery. The Germans had acquired a plot of ground adjoining the French cemetery and therein were buried, with German regularity, the officers in the centre, in a sacred enclosure by themselves—the German soldiers killed in that vicinity. Already eighteen hundred Germans had been buried there, men who had fallen in the battles of May and June, and there was a significant repetition of the same date on the rough wooden crosses over the graves, and the inscription *"Hier ruht in Gott . . ."*

Ivy had been planted in the yellow ground, and there was a colossal angel in stone, heavy, stalwart, muscular, Teutonic—with a sword in his hands larger than the sword of Gideon. . . . And immediately adjoining this space the French were buried, and over the graves the same little wooden crosses, the same dates, and *"Ici repose en paix . . ."*

From the brow of a lofty hill, crowned by a colliery, its great iron building lifting its gaunt sides high above the surrounding country, its cupola shattered by a shell, we looked down into the broad valley. The thunder of the guns below us was loud; once more we heard the shriek of the hurtling shells and the sharper rattle of the artillery over at Notre-Dame de Lorette. Off to our

left a whistling and shrieking of German shells; one could hear them, and one thought one could almost see them before they struck and exploded in a puff of smoke. We stopped, watching the duel through glasses. But:

"We must not stay here too long," said our Captain, "or they will see us and take a shot at us."

We went back to the motors, and our Jehu dashed through the village and on to Liévin, out on the way to Angre, where were the outer defenses of Lens. A dismal little town, Angre, wholly abandoned by its inhabitants and occupied by German troops in force; we drove through it and on to the road just outside and up a little hill, straight in the direction of Notre-Dame de Lorette, now as it seemed, not half a mile away. The road was crowded: wagon trains trundled up the hill, caissons were drawn up by the roadside, in the shelter of a crumbling bank and a row of tall trees, the artillerymen sitting with their legs carelessly crooked over the pummels of their saddles—grim, sullen fellows, waiting for I know not what. Off to the right across an open field above the bank, we had a better view of the Loretta Heights—a grey-green, bald hill; looking through the glass one could see that the foliage of the woods had all been shot away. And the guns were pounding in that sullen, stupid reiteration of the one argument they know. . . .

Then suddenly a shell burst in the field, there on our right. The Captain instantly stopped the car.

"Mais c'est tout près!" I said.

"Je comprends!" said von der Lancken, who was sitting in a seat in front of me.

The shell had exploded not more than fifty yards

away, and there seemed to be something preposterous in the fact that it had fallen so close. There had been, there still was, a great puff of brown smoke, and then a shower of dirt and stones right there beside us. Then, the shriek of another shell; it exploded just to our left and a little ahead of us, much nearer. They were shooting at us evidently, having seen the two big grey motors on the exposed hill-top.

"Look out for the third one!" our captain cried.

Look out? How was one to look out? It seemed to me a most stupid, silly thing to say. We sat there in the motor and waited. Nobody spoke. I had a confused recollection of the old superstition of policemen, railroad men, and sailors, that catastrophes come in threes. I was wondering at this, accepting it as a phenomenon at last confirmed by reality. But in the stillness von der Lancken was explaining the way gunners find the range, firing first on one side, then on the other, and then in the middle—*la fourchette,* he said, and striking the finger of his right hand between the thumb and forefinger of his left hand, he illustrated just how the third shell, for which we were waiting, would strike us. I waited in a fascination of suspense. There it was—that shriek, that tearing of heavy cloth. Still the waiting, the suspense. Then Lancken exclaimed:

"Il n'a pas éclaté!"

It was a dud, as the soldiers say. Then another shell exploded in front of us in the field, a little closer to the road. They were finding the range. The Captain at the wheel was backing his car as fast as he could; he backed it down near the caissons under cover of the bank. The shells were exploding all about in that field above us to the right. The artillery horses were bucking and

prancing, the gunners irritably trying to calm them. On the other side of the road a *sous-officier* in spectacles, who had been sitting his horse carelessly, shouted an order in a loud, angry, resentful voice. The gunners reined in their horses, shouted at them, jerked them about; and the caissons turned, lumbered down the hill, and disappeared behind the shelter of the vacant houses.

We alighted from the motors. The shells were still exploding in the field. The officers of our party clambered up the bank to the edge of the field. I climbed up with them, feeling that I should do as the others did. I was filled with an intense depression—the depression, I suppose, of fear, but I did not wish Villalobar and von der Lancken and the Captain, just then at least, to know of this fear. And so I climbed up the bank to the field to look over toward the Loretta Heights again.

The name stands out in my mind as the most important point in this war. I looked, and it seemed inexpressibly foolish and futile and stupid to be standing there in the field where shells were exploding, tearing up the earth, and throwing up clouds of dust.

Lancken told us to take the car and to join them at a group of houses on another road beyond the field, some distance away. They started on foot, while Villalobar and I got into the car and were driven by a détour around the angle of that high field, down a little road and again in the direction of the Loretta Heights. We were on the brow of the range of hills, the triangular field in which the shells exploded lay to the left of us; to our right was a row of houses, deserted, with innocent little flower gardens before them, there on the brink of that inferno. The officers were huddled under the lee of

the house, peering around the corner of it at the wide battle. We joined them and took turns at looking at the artillery duel through the glass; all that we could see were the faint puffs of smoke from the shells, exploding first on one side, then on the other side, of the wide valley. We could see no soldiers, only the bursting shells, now over at Loretta Heights, now on our side, there at the foot of the range of hills, across the invisible trenches. And so we stood there at the corner of that house taking turns at the glass, the old man who had been in the war of 1870 twisting his long white beard in his fingers, peering now and then out around the corner of the house, looking over at Loretta Heights, enjoying his holiday. . . .

We could really see no more than we had seen from the colliery; but I said to myself that I could stay as long as they could, play the actor with the best of them. I do not know how long we stood there. The battery that had fired at us and had come so near to hitting us was at last, directing its fire in another direction, its shells were falling elsewhere. . . .

After we got into the motor, and were driving back into the village, Lancken, twisting about in his little seat in front of us, said:

"Well, you have had your baptism of fire."

We were racing back through the little town of Liévin. In a dirty and deserted square a band was playing, an old white-haired conductor leading it, raising his bâton high in the air to salute us as we passed.

After such a morning, after the incidents of the sleepless night and the rising at such an unhallowed hour, we were all tired. We drove to the Hôtel de l'Europe,

had a miserable luncheon, and at five—four, our time—started back for Brussels.

We made a détour and stopped for tea in a pretty little cottage built in the English style, where some young officers of aviation were living. The tea proved to be coffee, and the young officers all very gay. They were strong, good-looking young chaps of aristocratic families who had taken to aviation, which in our day replaces the cavalry as the smart branch of the military service. They liked the life of the villa, where they lived like a college fraternity, and they were naïvely anxious to have the war go on indefinitely.

"J'espère," said one of them, who spoke a little French, *"que la paix n'é clatera pas!"*

He said it seriously, innocent of the charming *mot,* the amusing figure that he had made.

Von der Lancken wished to go around through Audenarde, and that involved another détour. We drove through Roubaix and raced on to Waterloo—not the historic Waterloo—and then through a village in which every window and every door was closed and not a soul abroad. There in the glare of the afternoon sun it was like a city of the dead, but finally we saw people cautiously peeping at us from behind curtains. There was one person abroad, a boy in the street, who said they had to enter their houses at six o'clock. But a little farther up the road, not a quarter of a mile, the houses were open, the population loafing pleasantly in the street—and we knew that we had entered Belgium. The people were all gazing upward into the sky, and there, looking up, we saw an English aviator. As we rolled along he came after us. For miles and miles he flew as we rode, much of the time directly over us.

The sun was low, the air was clear and soft, and the windmills extended their graceful arms against a silver western sky; the low barges on the canal were spreading their brown sails for the evening breeze; the slender trees along the canal were bending like plumes, ever towards the East, the characteristic mark of the Flemish landscape. It was a lovely evening, and we looked forward to a restful drive in the peaceful twilight. But all the while that aviator was flying along with us. Now and again Harrach would glance up, as would Lancken. Presently he said: "If he were to drop a bomb on us. . . ."

The aviator raced along with us for an hour and then turned back and was lost in the pearly clouds away to the south. And we drove on in the quiet evening, far, it seemed, from the war, for none of war's ravages were visible in that part of Flanders. . . .

The spires of Audenarde were showing in the distance, and then suddenly—*une panne.* Harrach and the chauffeur got out; but it was no ordinary blowout, or *pneu crevé*—the chassis was broken.

"Rien à faire!" said the chauffeur, shaking his head. Perhaps he might get the car to Audenarde, three kilometers away. He went slowly, picking his way carefully, over the terrible Belgian blocks that pave the roads of Belgium.

We crawled along, and finally reached Audenarde. Harrach got out and was gone a long time. There was no motor to be had. He found the name of a garage and sent the chauffeur there with the car. In the twilight we wandered through the Grand'Place and to the Hôtel de Ville—smaller, but more beautiful, even, than the Hôtel de Ville in Brussels; then to the little Hôtel

de la Pomme d'Or, where we ordered supper. While the supper was being prepared Harrach, who had been to the garage to see about repairing the car, came in with a long face.

"Impossible!" he reported.

"Pourquoi impossible?" asked von der Lancken.

"A cause de leur sale fête nationale!" he replied.

It was Belgium's national holiday and the Belgians were observing it, if not in one way, then in another. They would not repair a German car. And so we had the prospect of spending the night at the Hôtel de la Pomme d'Or—and the valets with our luggage had gone on from Lille by train to Brussels. We considered the possibility of sending to Brussels for a motor-car but that involved *passierscheins* and all sorts of arrangements, in this instance as difficult for these two distinguished German officers as for us in ordinary times; the motor could not get to Audenarde before morning—we should gain nothing. But von der Lancken was resourceful. He sent Harrach to telephone to Brussels and order a special train, and then we sat down to a very good supper.

The yellow-haired Flemish girl who served us wore a brooch with a photograph in it; she could speak no French, but Harrach could get along with her in Flemish.

"Who is that?" asked Harrach.

She threw back her head with pride:

"Belge soldat, meinherr," she said.

"Your sweetheart?" Harrach asked.

"Neen, mijn broeder."

"But you have a sweetheart?" he persisted.

"Ik zal niemand beminnen duuring de oorlog!" she said.

She was as indomitable as the rest of the Belgians.

We had our dinner and then a bugle in the street announced the retreat; everybody must be indoors a little after ten—that is, ten, German time.

We left the hotel and walked through the dark and silent streets, Villalobar with von der Lancken going on ahead, Harrach and I following, talking in low tones in the intimacy the darkness somehow makes natural. He told me of his experiences at the outbreak of the war; he had been in Florence studying art. He spoke of his family, of his wife and children, of his ambitions, of art, of the war, of all his interrupted plans. And we strolled on in the soft grateful darkness, weary after our long day of excitement.

Suddenly in the darkness a cry:

"Halte-là!"

We halted.

"Ces vieux bonshommes de Landsturm tirent si à la légère parfois, vous savez," said Harrach.

Lancken and Villalobar had halted; they were on the other side of the street. Then Lancken's voice rang out; he was shouting something in German. Finally he was ordered to draw near. We approached then and under the light of a lamp post—the only one, I think, in the town that was lighted—the sentinel, a bearded old fellow, read our papers, became suddenly obsequious, and showed us the way to the station. When we got there it was half-past eleven and we had an hour and a half to wait. Lancken grumbled at the lateness of our return.

"Si vous n'aviez pas changé l'heure, nous ne serions pas rentrés si tard ce soir," said Villalobar.

The railroad officials—all German, of course—were saluting right and left. They gave us the waiting-room; von der Lancken had them put out the lights and we stretched out on the cushions with our overcoats over us. I fell asleep immediately and did not awaken until they called us to take the train. There were four compartments in the train and, tired of each other's presence, we each took one. I wrapped myself in my overcoat and stretched myself out on the seat. The train jerked —started. . . .

Some one had opened the door of the carriage and was shouting:

"Brüssel, meinherr."

We were in the Gare du Nord; it was silent and empty, with that desolate air a railway-station wears in the night—an impression intensified then because the *Gare* had become a *Bahnhof,* with all the signs in German. In the Place Rogier, a cabman was snoozing on his box, and Villalobar's motor was waiting, the Spanish flag at the fore. . . . We drove home in the cool morning air.

III

THE 21ST JULY

WHEN we got back to Brussels from the front it was to learn that the latest rumour had it that Villalobar and I had been arrested by the Germans and whirled away in motors, no one knew where. Perhaps the rumour in some of its forms related the event to the Belgian national holiday which the Belgians had been celebrating that day—celebrating it as well as they could, considering the disabilities under which they lived. We had celebrated our own national holiday a little more than a fortnight before, and the Belgians had added to the meaning of the day by their felicitations. It had been an excessively hot day, as the Fourth of July should be, and its celebration had made a little oasis of liberty in a desert where liberty just then was unknown. I had decided against a reception or manifestation of any sort as, under the circumstances, in bad taste. But we had raised a new flag, the old having been whipped out by the winds and, as one might almost say, by the emotions of those long months; and as the lovely emblem rose and fell in the heavy, humid air and the sunlight touched its bright colours, it had seemed never so beautiful, never so full of meaning. The Belgians, as I said, had silently celebrated the day with us. There was a telegram from Davignon, on the part of the Belgian Government at Havre.[1]

[1] The telegram from Davignon, Belgian Minister for Foreign Affairs:

The *salons* were filled with flowers and all day there was a constant stream of visitors at the Legation, signing the book, leaving cards and all sorts of little souvenirs expressing felicitation and reconnaissance. Our flag was on many a breast with the ivy-leaf. It was strange that there, away across the sea, the vibrations of that wild, free music of '76 should be felt; yet not, after all, perhaps, so strange, for the principles of our revolution are loved in Belgium, whose own principles are precisely like them, and they were loved passionately then because they were denied and scorned and crushed down in an epoch when everybody in our western world so fondly imagined that political liberty had been won for mankind.

Burgomaster Lemonnier and the *échevins* had called, and M. Lemonnier had made a little speech, very moving, presenting to my wife a souvenir from the city of Brussels. And we had the young men of the C.R.B. at Ravenstein for luncheon, with Villalobar and van Vollenhoven, and speeches on the lawn afterwards.

When their own national holiday dawned on the twenty-first of July the Belgians could not celebrate it as they had in other years—in that gaiety, that happy spirit of careless freedom which I had seen in graceful play on every hand the year before, when we had all gone to Ste.-Gudule for the *Te Deum;* indeed they were forbidden

---

Transmis cite. A l'occasion votre fête nationale vous exprimons ainsi qu'au gouvernement américain vives félicitations et sincère gratitude nation belge.—
DAVIGNON.

Transmitted, quote: On the occasion of your national holiday permit us to express to you and thus to the American Government the lively felicitations and sincere gratitude of the Belgian nation,

to celebrate it at all, and perhaps that is one reason why the day, which had such poignant memories for them in that year of 1915, was marked by such a celebration as it had never known before.

For days *affiches* signed by von Kraewel, the Military Governor of Brussels, had been on the walls, rigorously prohibiting any demonstration whatsoever—meetings, processions, the display of flags—and threatening with fine and imprisonment those who disobeyed.[2] There was already in force an edict [3] forbidding the wearing of

---

[2] ARRÊTÉ

Je préviens le public que, le 21 juillet 1915, les démonstrations de tout genre sont expressément et rigoureusement interdites.

Les réunions, les cortèges et le pavoisement des édifices publics et particuliers tombent aussi sous l'application de l'interdiction ci-dessus.

Les contrevenants seront passibles d'une peine d'emprisonnement de 3 mois au plus at d'une amende pouvant aller jusqu'à 10,000 mark ou d'une de ces peines à l'exclusion de l'autre.

Bruxelles, le 18 juillet 1915.

Le Gouverneur de Bruxelles, VON KRAEWEL, Lieutenant-Général.

(Translation:)

NOTICE

I warn the public that on the 21st July, 1915, demonstrations of all kinds are expressly and emphatically prohibited.

Assemblies, parades, and the decoration of public and private buildings fall also within the scope of this prohibition.

The offenders will be liable to punishment of imprisonment for not exceeding three months and a fine not exceeding 10,000 marks, or one of these two penalties to the exclusion of the other.

Brussels, July 18, 1915.

The Governor of Brussels, VON KRAEWEL, Lieutenant-General.

[3] ARRÊTÉ

Quiconque porte, expose ou montre en public d'une façon provocatrice des insignes belges ou quiconque porte, expose ou montre

ribbons or patriotic colours at any time—a prohibition to which Brussels wit had responded by substituting a new emblem, the ivy-leaf, and suddenly, as by some spontaneous impulse, the whole population was wearing ivy-leaves (*le lierre*) the symbol of fidelity, of which the motto is *Je meurs où je m'attache,* "I die where I cling." Indeed, the whole history of the occupation of Belgium is the story of the contest between German stolidity and brute force and the nimble wit of Brussels, and if the contest were between wits alone Brus-

---

en public, même d'une manière non provocatrice, des insignes d'autres pays en guerre avec l'Allemagne ou ses alliés, est passible d'une amande de 600 marks au plus ou d'une peine d'emprisonnement de 6 semaines au plus. Ces deux peines peuvent aussi être réunies.

Les contraventions seront jugées par lés autorités ou les tribunaux militaires allemands.

Le présent arrêté entrera en vigueur le ler juillet 1915.

Bruxelles, le 16 juin 1915.

Le Gouverneur-général en Belgique,
Baron von Bissing, Général-Colonel.

(Translation:)

Notice

Whoever wears, exposes, or shows in public in a provocative fashion Belgian insignia, or whoever wears, exposes, or shows in public, even in a manner not provocative, the insignia of other countries at war with Germany or her allies, is liable to a fine of not more than 600 marks, or to the penalty of imprisonment for not more than 6 weeks. These two penalties may be applied together.

Infringements will be judged by the authorities or the German military tribunals.

This notice will go into force the 1st of July, 1915.

Brussels, June 16, 1915.

The Governor-General in Belgium,
Baron von Bissing, General-Colonel.

sels would long since have won it—a fact that embittered all the more the German spirit, which had nothing but the clumsy, if temporarily effective, weapons of force to use. After the prohibition was published every one who knew Brussels was certain that there would be a celebration such as Brussels had never known before, and almost at once the quality of it was foreshadowed in the word that went from mouth to mouth saying that inasmuch as the nation was in mourning its anniversary should be observed by a solemn display of its grief. Every shop, every establishment in Brussels, every café even, should be closed. Everywhere little hand bills with wide black borders mysteriously found their way through the city calling on all to remain indoors, to draw the blinds and to put up the shutters. And that courageous little journal, the organ of Belgian patriotism, *La Libre Belgique,* published a notice inviting the people, Catholic and non-Catholic, to assemble at Ste.-Gudule on the morning of the day where in place of the *Te Deum* that had been the expression of the nation's joy, a high Mass would be celebrated in this its hour of sorrow.

It was the secret of Polichinelle, of course, and the day before the twenty-first the pseudo newspapers of Brussels published a statement from the Kommandantur announcing that the closing of shops would be considered a demonstration and an infraction of the prohibition. But the threat had little terror; when the day dawned all the houses, whether in the Quartier Léopold or in the Quartier des Marolles, whether in the Avenue Louise and the boulevards or the Rue Blaes and the Rue Montagne aux-Herbe Potagères, wore the same sad expression of silence and desolation. The shades were drawn at every window, the shutters were up, not a shop any-

where was open, even the Hôtel de Ville itself had been closed by the patriotic Lemonnier. But the menace in the newspapers had frightened some of the *restaurateurs* and the keepers of public-houses—a few of them were open; but a crowd of two hundred persons besieged the Café Métropole and it closed, three hundred Bruxellois menaced La Grande Boucherie and it closed, and so in turn the Restaurant de la Monnaie, the Taverne Royale, La Lanterne, the Café Cosmopolite, before these crowds of stout burghers whom the *polizei* could not affright, closed their doors, and through their windows one could see the chairs stacked on the tables. In all Brussels there remained open only some German *Bierhaüser* and the two hotels that had been taken over for German officers, the Palace and the Astoria. No newspapers were sold, but along the sidewalks women offered to the passers-by ivy-leaves or pansies, or white daisies with black hearts, or knots of *crêpe* and combinations of red and yellow flowers which, against the black of the formal frock coats which the bourgeois were wearing as though it were Sunday, composed the national colours. This gave to the streets an aspect that was not wholly one of mourning; some of the people became exuberant in the Belgian way—bantering, jovial, almost in the spirit of the old Flemish *kermis.* German troops paraded the streets and dragged *mitrailleuses* after them, but the crowd was calm and gave the invaders no excuse for using their weapons.

My wife, driving by chance down the Rue Neuve, in the lower town, found it crowded from wall to wall, and the flag on the motor moved the crowd to cheers that made her fear she might be the centre of an "incident." Men took off their hats and waved them and

shouted again and again, *"Vive l'Amérique!"* All day long the crowds poured through the Place des Martyrs, each person bringing flowers, many of them by armfuls—violets, roses, carnations, wreaths of ivy, leaves knotted with *crêpe*—and threw them into the crypt about Geefe's statue of Belgium—the crypt where sleep the heroes of those September days in 1830 when Belgium won her independence. They heaped flowers on the statue of Frédéric de Merode, and the German police stood about, disconcerted, out of countenance, not knowing what to do.

But it was in an essentially solemn spirit that the day was celebrated: in all the parishes of Brussels the churches, which, throughout the occupation were to the hunted and oppressed as asylums of patriotism, were filled from early morning, and at ten o'clock, in the old Collégiale Sts.-Michel and Gudule—to give its proper name to what is so often erroneously called the Cathedral of Ste-Gudule, one more affecting and historic scene was added to the long series of manifestations of the hopes and despairs and triumphs of man that had been unrolled on that majestic scene. The old church was crowded to every corner of nave and transept. The Mass was celebrated by M. Remés, Curé of St. Nicholas. The Nonce himself was in the choir. The high Mass was finished, and the celebrant from the twinkling altar had just lifted the monstrance over the throngs that knelt in the light that was softened by the stained glass of the ancient windows, and had given the solemn benediction when the first strains of "La Braconçonne" rolled softly from the great organ in the loft. The people listened in a strained silence; the organist was playing softly, but when he had played the hymn

once he played it again, this time with the full organ, until its strains rolled and reverberated and resounded like prophetic thunder from the vaulting upheld by those lofty pillars. The crowd, unable longer to control itself even in that majestic place, burst forth with cries of *"Vive le Roi! Vive la Belgique!"* The people mounted the chairs on which they had been kneeling, crying this again and again, then demanding that "La Brabançonne" be played once more. It was played, and again, and for the fourth time, the organist played it; and this time the people sang it, and when at the end they came to the words *"Le Roi, la loi, la liberté!"* it was a whole vast congregation standing with transfigured, uplifted faces, down which rained the pent-up tears of all the woes, all the anguish, all the injustice they had borne. They wept aloud and flung up their hands and shouted the words with voices broken by emotion, and finally they shouted them with defiance, crying again and again, *"Vive le Roi! Vive la Belgique! Vive la Liberté!"*

When J——, who was there, told me of it all his own eyes were moist and his voice trembled again with the emotion that had choked it on that morning.

"Do you think a people like that can be conquered?" he asked.

The Germans had sent a company of infantry at noon to the Place Rogier before the Gare du Nord, there before the Palace Hotel, to scatter the crowds. The soldiers tried to keep the Rue Neuve open, and at the Place de Brouckère a company of the grey-coated soldiers were formed on the steps of the Monument Anspach in a picturesque pyramid. But there were no serious collisions, and toward evening the German feeling was expressed with all the petulance of a child when

suddenly the walls seemed to bloom, as it were, with little red *affiches* [4] ordering all those restaurants, public houses, cafés, cinemas, that had been closed all day long —to close. And thus the day ended in a peal of Brussels laughter. *La Libre Belgique* in its following number, giving an account of these events, said, speaking of the German authorities:

"Again they grossly deceive themselves. Not only did the manifestation take place, but it had the amplitude and the importance that constituted for General von Bissing, and also for the Pan Germans, who were naïvely felicitating themselves on having already captivated the confidence of the Belgians, a resounding slap in the face. The spectacle which the capital offered today will dispel forever, it is to be hoped, the illusions of those who, following the example of the Brussels correspondent of the *General Anzeiger,* do not cease to envisage the possibility of an understanding between the Belgians and their execrated oppressors."

The French national holiday, the fourteenth of July, had been observed by a closing of shops, and now, after

---

[4] Avis

Les hôtels, restaurants, brasseries, estaminets, cafés et cinématographes doivent être fermés aujourd'hui, le 21 juillet, à partir de 8 heures (heure allemande) du soir, dans l'agglomération bruxelloise.

Bruxelles, le 21 juillet 1915.

Le Commandant, Baron von Stachwitz, Colonel.

(Translation:)

Notice

The hotels, restaurants, breweries, beer gardens, cafés, and cinemas must close to-day, the 21st of July, at 8 o'clock in the evening, German time, in the agglomeration of Brussels.

Brussels, July 21, 1915.

The Commandant, Baron von Stachwitz, Colonel.

the celebration of the twenty-first, it was rumoured that another anniversary of a sinister significance in Belgian history—the fourth of August—would also be observed. And, sure enough, another little hand bill was passed about on which were printed the words: *"Belges, fermez tous, le 4 août."*

But there was an *affiche* [5] forbidding the people to assemble, to wear insignia, to make demonstrations, or in any way to observe August fourth, the anniversary of

---

[5] Avis

Je préviens la population de l'agglomeration bruxelloise que, le 4 août, toute démonstration, y comprise le pavoisement des maisons et le port d'insignes en vue de manifester, est strictement défendue.

Tous les rassemblements seront dispersés sans ménagement par la force armée.

En outre, j'ordonne que, le 4 août, tous les magasins, ainsi que les cafés, restaurants, tavernes, théâtres, cinémas et autres etablissements du même genre, soient fermés à partir de 8 heures du soir (heure allemande). Après 9 heures du soir (heure allemande), seules les personnes ayant une autorisation spéciale et écrite émanant d'une autorité allemande pourront séjourner et circuler dans la rue.

Les contrevenants seront punis soit d'une peine d'emprisonnement de 5 ans au plus et d'une amende pouvant aller jusqu'à 10,000 mark, soit d'une de ces deux peines à l'exclusion de l'autre.

Les magasins et établissements précités qui, démonstrativement, fermeront pendant la journée du 4 août, resteront fermés pendant une période de temps assez longue.

Bruxelles, le 1er août 1915.

Le Gouverneur de Bruxelles, Von Kraewel, Lieutenant-Général.

(Translation:)

Notice

I warn the population of the agglomeration of Brussels that on August 4 all demonstration, including the decoration of houses and the wearing of insignia for the purpose of celebrating, is strictly forbidden.

the beginning of the war between Germany and Belgium. Everybody was to be indoors by eight o'clock that night, Belgian time, and all shops were to be kept open during the day. And there was a penalty for disobedience—five years in Germany and ten thousand marks fine. Such was to be the punishment for the quiet, significant celebration of the twenty-first of July.

The fourth of August passed quietly, but the Belgians had their revenge—all over the city men were wearing as *boutonnières* little scraps of paper, recalling the famous phrase by which von Bethmann-Hollweg had characterized the treaties that he had torn up that day a year before. It was chiefly in the Quartier Marollien that this example of the irrepressible *zwanze bruxelloise* was to be seen. And the *zwanzeurs* paid the penalty: two streets in the *quartier,* the Rue de l'Escalier and the Rue du Dam, were ordered closed, shut off from the rest of

---

All assemblies will be dispersed without distinction by the armed forces.

Furthermore, I order that on August 4 all stores, including cafés, restaurants, taverns, theatres, cinemas, and other establishments of a similar nature, be closed at 8 o'clock in the evening (German time). After 9 o'clock in the evening (German time), only those persons having a special and written authorization emanating from a German authority will be able to travel or to circulate in the streets.

The offenders will be punished either by a penalty of imprisonment for not more than 5 years and a fine of not more than 10,000 marks, or by one of these two penalties to the exclusion of the other.

The stores and establishments named above which, as a manifestation, are closed during the day of August 4, will remain closed during a rather long period.

Brussels, August 1st, 1915.

The Governor of Brussels, Von Kraewel, Lieutenant-General.

the city, and for a fortnight the denizens of those two rather lively thoroughfares sang "La Brabançonne" all night behind their closed shutters.[6]

---

[6] Une Communication Officielle

Aux habitants de la rue de l'Escalier et de la rue du Dam:

Je vous communique la traduction d'un extrait d'une lettre que je viens de recevoir de l'autorité allemande.

J'attire votre attention sur les sanctions annoncées contre ceux qui contreviendraient aux mesures ordonnées par le gouvernement militaire allemand.

Bruxelles, le 9 août 1915.

Au Collège échevinal de Bruxelles:

. . . Si même je veux reconnaître que l'administration de la Ville s'est efforcée à faire appliquer, le 4 de ce mois, par ses organes, les mesures prescrites, il reste cependant subsister le fait que, dans deux rues, des individus isolés ont tenu d'une manière démonstrative une grossière inconduite à l'égard des patrouilles allemandes.

Il est à regretter que les coupables individuellement n'aient pu être découverts; par suite, il ne me reste qu'à prendre des mesures contre les rues dont s'agit dans lesquelles des écarts ont été commis.

En conséquence, j'arrête ce qui suit en ce qui concerne les deux rues de l'Escalier et du Dam:

A partir du lundi 9 de ce mois et pour la durée de quatorze jours, c'est-à-dire jusqu'au 22 de ce mois inclusivement:

(A) Toutes les maisons de commerce et tous les cafés seront fermés à partir du 7 heures du soir (heure allemande).

(B) A partir de 9 heures du soir (heure allemande) personne ne pourra se trouver hors de sa maison sur la rue. Depuis cette heure, toutes les fenêtres donnant sur la rue devront être fermées.

Il incombe à la Ville de communiquer ce qui précède aux habitants de ces rues, d'appliquer les mesures précitées et d'exercer, pour l'observance de celles-ci, une sévère surveillance.

Aussi je vous prie de faire en sorte que ces rues soient suffisamment éclairées jusqu'à 11 heures du soir (heure allemande).

En outre, je ferai inspecter ces rues par des patrouilles alle-

And again we had evidence of this fact, to which I have already referred—that there was nothing too insignificant for the Germans to notice. Once set out on

---

mandes. S'il se produisait, à cette occasion, de nouveaux écarts contre les patrouilles allemandes, ces dernières feraient usage de leurs armes.

Avec haute considération distinguée.

(Signé) Von Kraewel, Gouverneur de Bruxelles.

(Translation:)

An Official Communication

To the inhabitants of the rue de l'Escalier and the rue du Dam:

I transmit to you the translation of an extract from a letter which I have just received from the German authority.

I call your attention to the penalty prescribed for those who violate the measures ordered by the German military government.

Brussels, August 9, 1915.

To the College of Echevins of Brussels:

. . . If indeed I wish to recognize that the City was forced to apply, on the 4th of this month, through its departments, the measures prescribed, the fact remains that in two streets some isolated individuals committed, in a demonstrative manner, a gross violation in the sight of the German patrols.

It is to be regretted that the guilty parties individually could not be discovered; therefore it remains for me to take measures against the streets concerned, in which the misconduct took place.

Consequently, I proclaim the following concerning the two streets, de l'Escalier and du Dam:

Beginning Monday, the 9th of this month, and during a period of fourteen days, that is to say until the 22nd of this month, inclusively:

(A) All business houses and all cafés will be closed after 7 o'clock in the evening (German time).

(B) Beginning at 9 o'clock in the evening (German time), no one will be allowed outside of his house in the street. After this hour all windows facing on the street must be closed.

It is the duty of the City to communicate the preceding to the

an impossible and endless chase, they hunted down every rumour, every statement that did not please them, tried to correct every impression that was not to their liking. They were of the puerile mentality of those obscure individuals who used to publish in newspapers such notices as, "John Doe, of 416 First Street, wishes it to be understood that he is not the John Doe arrested for drunkenness Saturday evening." Von Bissing published a long *affiche* denying some story that E. Alexander Powell had written and printed in a book; he published another denying a statement to the effect that the Germans had removed the bronze lion from the mound that marks the battlefield of Waterloo, though, as I told von der Lancken, whatever might be said in favour of the lion, it would have been in the interests of art, if not of morals—which does not have, necessarily, anything to do with art—had the mound itself been leveled with the earth of which it was made.

The young men of the C.R.B. were often the witnesses and sometimes the victims of exhibitions of this curiously immature judgment in all that pertained to the judicial ascertainment of facts, to the administration of justice. The Germans revealed the same notion of evidence that fish-wives and termagants display in

---

inhabitants of these streets, to apply the foregoing measures, and to exercise, for the observance of them, a severe watch.

Also, I beg you to see that these streets are sufficiently lighted until 11 o'clock, in the evening (German time).

Furthermore, I shall have these streets inspected by the German patrols. If there should occur, on this occasion, renewed outbursts against the German patrols, these last would make use of their arms.

With high and distinguished consideration,

(Signed) VON KRAEWEL, Governor of Brussels.

neighborhood quarrels and in petty trials before justices of the peace. Two of our Americans, Messrs. Stevens and Gaylor, delegates of the C.R.B. at St.-Quentin, in the north of France, had an enlightening experience of the sort. An English soldier who had been in hiding in the north of France was captured and a diary found on him. The diary contained an entry saying, "I hear there are two Americans in town and I wish I could see them, for I am sure they would help me." The Germans, on the strength of this evidence, to them perfectly admissible and convincing, threatened to arrest Stevens and Gaylor, insisting that this proved collusion on their part with the Englishman, and the young men could not convince the Germans that they could not be bound by unsupported statements of a third person so long as no ground had been laid to show a connection between him and them.

Mr. Casper Whitney, the writer and explorer, another of the delegates of the C.R.B., had an experience even more striking. One day, while driving in a motor with Mr. Lytle, likewise a delegate, a German officer, dashing around a corner in a village down in Luxembourg, came violently into collision with the C.R.B. car. No one, fortunately, was hurt, but the officer flew into a rage, had the two men arrested, and there was eventually an inquiry conducted by the German Governor of the Province. The report of the Governor himself shows the German attitude and mentality, and the amazing character of the whole remarkable proceeding, better than I could possibly do it, and I give extracts from it:

"If Oberlt Wessel did not, to begin with," says the German statement—in what I think was Bulle's translation into English, and I give it as it was made—"re-

ceive the two gentlemen of the C.R.B. in a manner as is otherwise his, and insisted on the use of the German language, it is on account of Mr. Lytle's conduct. The officer had a right to expect that Mr. Lytle's attitude, as the junior, would be more modest and polite. The conduct of this gentleman was assuming and his attitude offensive. He had, while speaking, both hands in his pockets which, to German views, is not usual amongst well-educated [7] people.

. . . . . .

"Mr. Lytle, in his statement of complaint, makes use of expressions which the Government can not admit in correspondence between educated men. Mr. Lytle says that 'neither Mr. Whitney nor he could take Oberlt Wessel seriously in his saying.' He further writes that Mr. Whitney has said that the accident only happened on account of the 'stupidity' of the German chauffeur. These remarks are offensive toward the German officer and the German chauffeur. I would ask you to request Mr. Lytle to immediately present his excuses on account of his remarks in his report, as otherwise I should, to my regret, be obliged to proceed against him for insult."

Just what light all this could throw on the question of responsibility for the collision it would be difficult to say. No comment was made on the officer's conduct while in the frenzy of the rage into which he flew, and no reflections were made on his rearing; possibly he was a *Wütherich*, and his *Jähzorn* therefore to be overlooked.

Nor did the German authorities see anything unusual

[7] Used, doubtless, in the French sense, equivalent to our "well bred."

in the fact that the Kreischef, when the matter was brought before him by Oberlt Wessel, insisted that the two Americans speak to him in German, a language neither of them understood.

It was not an uncommon thing, indeed, for them to insist on this being done—unless one were an *Excellenz* and had authority or dignity enough to overpower them, as Villalobar did one day. A German officer began shouting at him in German, but the Marquis said:

"Pardon, Monsieur; je ne peux pas vous comprendre; parlez lentement, poliment et en français."

An officer said to me one day—though in French and, as he supposed, *poliment*—that English was but a dialect of German. There are, of course many German words in our language; for instance, all or many of the words that relate to the kitchen, to the barnyard, and to the servants' quarters are German in origin, while all words that relate to the *salon* and to the life above stairs we got from the French. Germans say *"Fleisch," "Kalb," "Schafe,"* etc., as we say "flesh," "calf," "sheep." But in the dining room we say "beef" (*bœuf*), "veal" (*veau*), and "mutton" (*mouton*). One might go on indefinitely, or one might if one were a comparative philologist and were not too weary of the subject—like most such subjects futile after all.

But while on the experiences of the delegates of the C.R.B. I may as well add an incident that came under the notice of Mr. Bowden, the delegate at Longwy. He had been living in a château down there belonging to a French manufacturer. This Frenchman had a factory, a steel mill of some sort, and the Germans insisted that he operate it. He said he had no fuel and they sold

him a hundred tons of coal, for which they made him pay cash. Then the next day they requisitioned the hundred tons of coal, took it away—and gave him a *bon* for it.

IV

LITTLE TRAGEDIES

MEANWHILE we were having a more important display of the German mentality in the notes on the *Lusitania* case, and indeed on the whole submarine controversy, that ran like a serial through all the troubled months of that summer. We could only read them, of course, and marvel at them and live on from day to day wondering when the war that we felt to be so inevitable would come. The experience repeated on its own gigantic scale the smaller experiences we were having, in which the deeds were so at variance with the discussions that pretended to regulate them. I would read the *Nieuwe Rotterdamsche Courant* at evening and think the whole controversy settled, and Gibson in the morning would come in and say:

"Well, they've blown up another ship."

Thus we lived through the incidents of the *Hesperian,* and of the *Arabic*—with our trunks packed.

The whole of Germany, as we were coming to understand it, was revealed in those notes. The explanation was simple. The notes were written by the civil Government, and the ships were blown up by the military: the military was not, as in our western system, a weapon of the civil power, an arm in the hand of Government; the civil power was a rudimentary organ, tolerated for the sake of appearances by the military

cabal, which was the ruling power and the real government.

These notes were, however, as not every one at the time seemed to realize, the pleadings in the great cause that was being tried before the jury of civilization and the judges of history, and it was a matter of pride that our cause was pleaded by a President who, almost without effort, could strip the German words of the very last of their pretensions and expose their speciousness, their immature, inconsequential, and immaterial statements, so that even then the issues were joined and America entitled to a judgment on the pleadings. While the Common Law and the Civil Law, proceeding from widely differing sources, practically unite in the same rules of evidence, the Germans seemed to be wholly ignorant of such rules—at least they disregarded them. We were constantly having, on a smaller scale, experiences that were identical: the civil officers would promise one thing, the military would straightway do another; and what was more astonishing, they seemed to see nothing extraordinary in such inconsistency; *"Messieurs les militaires,"* they would say, perhaps give a shrug of the shoulders—and that was a reason and an argument. The German mentality indeed offered a psychological phenomenon that was baffling to the most profound study, and the Belgians had daily examples of it. For instance, when the city fathers of Louvain began to discuss the rebuilding of the portions of the city that had been destroyed, and Brussels architects submitted plans. German architects submitted plans, too, with the price of what they delicately called the "public improvement" indicated, and the German architects were wholly unaware that their taste in ethics was as bad

as it is in art; it never occurred to them that there could be any repugnance on the part of the people of Louvain to the engagement of German architects to reconstruct what German soldiers had so wantonly destroyed, though perhaps there is another explanation in the fact that the Germans seemed to be incapable of seeing two things at the same time.

The Countess K. de R——, for instance, living on in her château, was ordered by the Kommandant of the region to furnish his men with so many eggs each day. She did so. Then she was ordered to dispose of her chickens in order to save food. But how, she asked, could she then provide the eggs? They had not thought of that. It was wholly characteristic of the German mind, which, so exceedingly keen in many ways, can not always put two and two together—does not often think, as I said, of two things at the same time. They would have a commission on eggs composed of thirty-six Herr Professors, and they would make an intricate study; and another commission, of Herr Doktors, on hens, and all sorts of statistics, but they would fail to note the relation between hens and eggs.

Going down the Rue de la Madeleine those summer afternoons we used to smile as we passed a café with this sign:

CAFE DES . . .

and then a blank. It had been the "Café des Alliés" in the early days of the war, but the Germans ordered the proprietor to change the name; the proprietor, with Belgian cleverness, simply erased the word "Alliés" and left a blank, and thereupon his *café* had an extraordinary advertisement and such a vogue as he had never dreamed of when at first he had thus flaunted his col-

ours. It was but another instance of that incomparable inability to understand all things that have to do with the mystery of human nature; they were myopic of soul, as of vision, seeing nothing beyond their purblind eyes—and they could not understand why the Belgians did not like them, and actually complained, as I fear I have said, or shall say, more than once, that they were not more cordially received.

When the Germans arrived at Marchienne-au-Pont, near Charleroi, they made an investigation as to the status of the Garde Civique of the vicinity. The Ober-Kommandant had an officer of the Garde Civique called before him, and with him inspected the barracks. All the arms were turned over to the Germans, and a number of blank cartridges, but the Ober-Kommandant said that these were not dangerous, and of no use to the German army, and left them where he found them. Several months afterwards the Ober-Kommandant was replaced by another officer, who one morning called the officer of the Garde Civique and reproached him with having, in spite of all orders, kept munitions. The officer explained to him that they were blank cartridges, formerly used for exercises, and repeated what the first Kommandant had said. "Then," said the German, "the Kommandant made a mistake; he failed in his duty and will be punished." Whether the Kommandant who seemed to be so reasonable was punished or not I can not say, but the officer of the Garde Civique was sent to prison for three months. That would have seemed to be sufficient injustice, or enough bad luck, for one time, but no; while the officer was in prison a fire broke out in his home, and his pigeons flew away from the *colombier,* which was burning, and he was condemned

to pay a fine—because it had been forbidden to allow pigeons to fly!

The pigeons in Belgium, indeed, had almost as hard a time of it as the people themselves. At Nivelles a poor man had some carrier pigeons and the Belgian love for them. But he had no food for them and so was obliged to kill them. He cut off their heads, and these his children ranged along a window sill, and underneath wrote *"Morts pour la Patrie."* The Germans saw the little heads and the inscription—and the man was sent for fifteen days to the Kommandantur, and fined two hundred francs.

There was literally no end to the incidents of injustice and cruelty. For instance, I was told, on what seemed to be indisputable authority, that the Germans visited a stock farm, one of the most famous in Belgium, took six or seven stallions and turned them into a paddock together to see them fight; and afterwards some of the officers hamstrung the stallions with their sabres—wantonly, with loud guffaws.

And yet the delegates of the C.R.B., who were always with officers in the north of France, used to tell us how, with this brutality, the young German officers, or many of them, were strangely effeminate—that they all had, for instance, delicate toilet articles, like those that women use, and that they had them in profusion. It may be there was something pathologic in it all, and that the scientists would see in the two instances a consistency instead of what appears to be an inconsistency. It was a common sight in the country to see soldiers, their guns slung on their backs, bending by the roadside picking wild flowers.

Those pigeons were not the only animals that were

sacrificed. I had a friend, the most charming of country gentlemen, who had the finest pack of fox-hounds in Belgium; he had been M.F.H. for many years. There were more than a hundred of the noble dogs, the result of years of careful breeding. But food was growing scarce, and the peasants near the master's château were complaining of the feeding of dogs while they themselves were so limited as to food. And so he sacrificed the poor beasts. He made a sad ceremony of it—gave them their last supper, the best he could provide, photographed them as they enjoyed it, then had them put painlessly to death. Poor old hunter! He was quite broken up over the tragedy of it! Another pack of beagles was taken off to Germany, in that systematic stealing that went on until Belgium was stripped bare, with all the breeds of her horses and her dogs destroyed or transplanted.

But there were darker tragedies; there were artists who committed suicide, and insanity was on the increase. We received at the Legation quantities of letters from people who had evidently gone mad. And a friend of mine rescued, just as they had turned on the gas to asphyxiate themselves, an artist and his wife, who had nothing more to eat, and were too proud to let their condition become known. Dr. van Dyke had entrusted to me a fund raised by the Authors' Club of New York for the relief of needy artists, and with the advice of certain friends in Brussels, it was, I think, so wisely bestowed that many a painter and sculptor and writer was saved from despair.

It is one of the inscrutable mysteries of life that it should be so cruel, and it is appalling to dwell on the extent of cruelty to animals that goes on constantly

in the world—almost as much, indeed, in the case of animals as in the case of man. Every morning, down the Rue Belliard, there would come those herds of lowing cattle, being led to the *abattoir* or seized by the Germans. The horses had long since disappeared; no one ever saw them any more save in the hands of the Germans. The streets were filled with bicycles, which suddenly enjoyed a remarkable renaissance as a means of locomotion, until the Germans requisitioned them, too, and then there were no vehicles left in the streets, save the little pony-carts that went jingling along the boulevards on sunny afternoons towards the Bois; the ponies were too small for any military purpose.

Finally it was the children's turn. They must be regulated, forbidden to play; kites were *verboten.* And one August day the Governor-General, by an *affiche,* forbade the Boy Scouts to assemble or to march in the Bois, as they had always done—bright pictures in the forest with their sombreros and neckerchiefs; but now this must stop, and they must no longer go forth in bands. It was done, no doubt, partly to repress the national spirit, which, I suppose, found some expression in those promenades, but there was the passion to regulate, to govern everything. Meanwhile, however, the German Boy Scouts, in their clumsy costumes—they did not have the *chic* of the Belgian boys—were marching on Sundays in the forest singing German songs:

DER GUTE KAMERAD

Ich hat ein' Kameraden,
Einen bessern findst du nicht
Die Trommel schlung zum Streite,
Er ging an meiner Seite
In gleichem Schritt und Tritt.

Ein kugel kam geflogen,
Gilt es mir, oder gilt es dir?
Ihn hat es weggerissen,
Er liegt mir von der Füssen,
Als war's ein Stück von mir.

Will mir die Hand noch reichen,
Derweil ich eben lad';
Kann dir die Hand nicht geben,
Bleib, du im ew'gen Leben
Mein guter Kamerad.

The number of Germans in town, indeed, seemed to increase daily; they swarmed everywhere, not only military but civilians. They had almost taken over the Bois; the officers had all the tables at the "Laiterie," the restaurant once so popular, where it used to be pleasant of an afternoon at tea-time, with so much light and life and music and show of pretty costumes. Many of the officers and civilian officials had brought their wives to Brussels because, it was said, it was so much easier to live in Belgium; and there were other officers accompanied by women not their wives. There were family groups, indubitably German, to be seen on the boulevards on Sunday afternoon, and one began to hear almost as much German as French. Indeed, they became so numerous finally that they created a new problem for us in the *ravitaillement:* we began to wonder whether, since they could not carry over into Germany the food that we imported, the Germans were not gradually to import their whole population over into Belgium to eat it up on the spot. We solved the problem eventually, and justly enough, we felt, but it was never quite divested of its complications.

It was estimated that there were fifteen thousand Ger-

man civilians in Brussels, of whom six thousand were spies. I have no way of verifying the figures, of course, but we were always hearing of the trouble and pain they caused, and of their unconscionable exactions. I knew of a family who were literally driven out of their apartment by a German family that came to live in the same building with them; the German family preferred the apartment in which the family of which I write was living, and by a series of petty persecutions forced them to leave. They had no redress, because the Kommandantur would punish any Belgian on the bare complaint of a German.

Again, there was a certain *pension* kept by a Belgian and his wife, an Alsatian woman. German officers came to the *pension,* insisted on boarding there, and brought their mistresses with them; whereupon all the other inmates of the *pension* and all the servants left. The poor man and his wife could find no Belgian servants to work for them, and they had to do all the work and serve the officers and their companions; and when the mistress of the ranking officer, whose whimsical exactions and debaucheries had given the wife of the proprietor no end of trouble and caused no end of scandal in the neighbourhood, had a quarrel and left, the officer refused to pay the bill for her board.

I knew of a man who, boarding a tram one day at the Bourse, gave the receiver one of the little paper francs that were in circulation in Brussels at that time. When the receiver gave him in change some German pfennigs the passenger replied:

"I paid you in Belgian money, and you give me back pfennigs; I don't know what to do with that dirty money."

A man in a soft felt hat sitting beside him suddenly turned and said:

"What did you say, sir?"

"I said something to the receiver, sir, I was not speaking to you."

At the Gare du Midi the man in the soft felt hat got up, left the tram, hailed two German soldiers, and arrested M. N——. He was taken to the Kommandantur and sent to prison at St.-Gilles.

Indeed, when the year had rolled round, and the anniversary of that fourth of August came again, it was no longer the old Brussels, though we loved it all the more in its saddened aspect. The shops were depleted; there was no such thing as a new hat or a new style; many articles could scarcely be procured at all—soap, tooth brushes, many medicines, cigarettes; and prices had quadrupled. It cost us to live four times what it used to cost before the war. Butter was difficult to obtain, and the famous *poulets de Bruxelles* were disappearing, for there was no food to fatten them on. The streets were deserted, with no animation in them; people dragged hopelessly along, staring aimlessly, looking a little more shabby, a little more threadbare, every day. At every block there was a squad or a company of the grey Landsturm tramping stolidly along in their heavy hobnailed boots.

Often we would be awakened in the morning at five o'clock by that ring of heavy heels on the roughly paved streets. It was a dreadful sound, somehow symbolic, rolling nearer and nearer in a loud insistent beat, broken now and then as the feet lost step, then caught up again, and it came on with a brutal crescendo, louder and louder, more and more menacing, until it was a veritable thun-

der. It seemed as though it had been one of the carefully calculated effects of *Fürchterlichkeit.* Often they were singing their dull, heavy, lugubrious hymns, or sometimes, though I suppose it is not a hymn, *"Ich bin ein Prüsse und will ein Prüsse sein."*

The Germans, indeed, of themselves were enough to change the aspect as well as the atmosphere of the city. Once the most beautiful city in Europe, or surely one of the most beautiful, they had destroyed its artistic appearance by the evidences of their own taste. They had built everywhere kiosks for the vendors of German newspapers and publications—hideous things of brilliant colours; and they set up everywhere the sentry boxes painted in stripes with garish black, white and red, like monstrous barber-shop signs. And there were German signs and German publications for sale.

The country lay bare, stripped to the bone. The atrocities of the soldiers committed in the early weeks of the war were not worse than those other Machiavellian or Borgian crimes they were committing then—the attempts at slow poisoning and corruption of the minds of those they would enslave. There was no press, no posts, no communications, no liberty whatever. Every one of the rights enumerated in the charters of English and American liberty, and in the French Rights of Man, were denied. Those are years I do not like to look back upon; I do not know how I lived through them. And I was the most privileged man in Belgium.

One day we overheard a servant at a doorway in the Rue Belliard, near the Legation, ask an old woman if she had been caught in the rain of the morning, and the poor creature replied:

"Non, j'ai vite couru, tellement j'avais peur qu'il ne pleuve dans ma soupe."

I used to go often to the book stalls, and I shall always have in kindly memory old M. Lamertin, who sold books—and at one time, I think, published them—in his shop at the corner of the Rue Caudenberg and the Rue d'Isabelle. There were many idle hours to be filled in Brussels, much time to be passed away in waiting for the King to come back, and all the books worth reading one by one disappeared. There was no way to replenish the stock; Brussels no longer knew what London or Paris was reading, writing, thinking.

"C'est le misère noire," M. Lamertin said to me one afternoon, when I went to look for a certain volume of Maeterlinck. *"Mais je remuerai tout Bruxelles demain pour le trouver,"* he said, glad of a commission.

Le Jeune had been compelled to dispose of his fashionable establishment at the Porte de Namur, and had removed to a little shop in the Rue Thérèsienne. I went in there one day. The place was quite empty. Le Jeune was thin, aged by fifteen years, with burning eyes, breathing with difficulty. The war had ruined him, but he talked no more about *les sales boches.* I bought everything I could think of in his little shop, and he said, *"Merci, merci, Excellence, pour votre belle visite."* Poor Figaro! How many tragedies like his there were in the town! And on millions of such miseries the glory of Emperors rests!

And yet I never heard a German express the least commiseration for the sorrow there was all about them, or saw one give evidence of the slightest pity. Autumn was coming on; and, while Belgians, of course, were forbidden to take advantage of it, there were always carts

and wagonettes in the Bois, filled with German officers armed with shot guns going out for game. The Forêt de Soignes echoed with the reports of their fowling pieces; they must always be shooting something.

More and more they were shooting Belgians as spies, or as traitors, as in their judicial forms they called Belgians who committed any act that was considered inimical to German interests. Every day, almost, there were the fresh *affiches* on the walls. One September morning, standing before the latest of them, which announced the shooting of a young architect and a clerk for *trahison de guerre,* an old gentleman read the *affiche,* uncovered, and said gravely:

"Ce sont des martyrs."

But side by side with their heroism there were more sordid injustices, squalid brawls in public-houses, and that sort of thing. The *estaminets* were ordered to close at nine o'clock (*heure belge*), but there were sometimes German officers or soldiers drinking in them, and they forbade the proprietor to close. Then, if the proprietor kept his place open, the *Polizei* would arrest him and take him off to the Kommandantur; if he closed it he had insulted the sacred uniform, and the *Polizei* would hale him off for that.

The calm and stolid brutality of the *Polizei* was beyond belief. One night in a public-house near the Luxembourg station there was a quarrel between some German soldiers and the proprietor. The next morning, as a result, three *Polizei* entered the place, shot down the proprietor and dragged his body into the street. . . .

"Don't speak of the war," Mademoiselle used to say. But there was no escape; it was in all the atmosphere that we breathed, even the pure air of the

golf links at Ravenstein and the fields that rolled away toward Tervueren; but the air was always throbbing with the thud of the guns that boomed forever and without ceasing, there on that front of battle miles to the south and west of us. One morning, as I was sitting by the high old wall of the château looking at the pretty garden, there, on the other side of the wall behind me, I heard boys playing in the woods. They would rush forward, halt at the command of their leader, make the noise with which children imitate the sound of firing, and then the leader would announce:

"Nous nous sommes emparés de la première ligne de tranchées."

Then, *en avant,* the same thing over again, and then he would cry:

"Nous nous sommes emparés de la seconde ligne de tranchées."

Golf is as much an art as any, but there was perhaps a more perfect isolation from all that pertained to war in the ateliers of my painter friends. No sound of cannon could reach one there, and they wisely lived in that other world of dreams and visions that is so remote from this. One of them told me that he had not looked at a newspaper half a dozen times since the war. Then one morning he told me, as he turned from squinting at the canvas on his easel—there was a late rose hanging over the garden-wall—that the night before he had dreamed of aeroplanes. He began to relate his dream, and dreams are seldom as interesting in the recital as in the reality.

"Un ciel bleu," he said, *"comme ce bleu-là,"* and he indicated a pale blue stuff on a *canapé*. *"Et puis un*

Zeppelin—d'un gris foncé." His dream was not of air craft at all but of artists' colours!

I suppose he had dreamed of aeroplanes because we were having visits in those late September days from the aviators of the Allies. One Sunday the city was all excitement over the visit of an aviator who threw down a number of Paris newspapers, which were snatched up eagerly, and, as a *beau geste*—a Belgian flag, torn immediately to bits for precious souvenirs; the *Polizei* were perquisitioning everywhere the rest of the day trying to find them. There had been suddenly a change in the city: it became all at once, more animated, and was all excitement over the Allies' offensive; it wore, somehow, another aspect. Hopes were throbbing high. There were crowds about the Palais des Académies, where the ambulances were once more rushing in with the wounded; other crowds stood watching the troop trains rumble by in the rain, and deep meaning was attached to all little things, as when the *Allies communiqué* was not published or when the number of sentinels was increased at the Porte Louise. And when Germans marched singing through the streets Brussels was almost happy, for whenever the Germans sang ostentatiously Brussels took it as a sign that things were not going well.

Now and then toward evening a great Zeppelin would sail over the town going into the west; the next morning it would come back. Doubtless it was only the literary imagination that invested it with a hang dog air, as though it had been returning from some nocturnal sheep-killing expedition, but a few days later we would read of a raid over London.

V

THE BÂTONNIER THÉODOR

It was a difficult matter to leave Belgium, even for the respite, since no one was in holiday mood, that a few days in Holland or Switzerland would give. Women with husbands or sons at the Belgian front could at least obtain news of them or communicate with them if they could get to The Hague, and sometimes they could steal over into England—which the Germans were so opposed to their doing that they always made it a condition, when they did grant permission to leave, that the recipient should not leave Dutch soil. A similar condition was imposed in the cases of passports for Switzerland; they were not good for France, though the Germans never had the same feeling of personal hatred for the French that they had for the English. Women were put on their honour as to remaining in Holland, or in Switzerland if they went there, and then were made to promise not to carry out or to bring in any letters, and when one of them forgot this promise other women were refused passes for a long while. Men found it more difficult to obtain these permissions, and there was a legend, with some fact to justify it, that von Bissing was incapable of refusing a lady a pass if she asked it of him personally. Not many of them could do that because it was as difficult to obtain an audience of him as of a sovereign, and most of the ladies of Brussels would scorn to ask a favour of him; they

preferred to take their chances in the long line waiting at the Pass-Zentrale in the Place'Royale, where *passierscheins* were so reluctantly issued. They would file their applications, wait for days, go back to be severely cross-examined, and generally in the end find themselves refused. Now and then, though rarely, some succeeded, but they were obliged to deposit guarantees, often in sums as high as twenty, or thirty, or even fifty thousand francs. And even when the passes were granted the fortunate could not be certain of their journey and of their breath of free air—which indeed was not wholly free, for in Switzerland, as in Holland, they were compelled to report at regular intervals to a German Consul in those countries.

The Baroness L——, depressed like all of us, and half ill, needed a cure in Switzerland and finally succeeded in procuring a *laissez-passer* to go there and ultimately to Paris. She left one Sunday for her cure. She had reached Lorrach, Bâle was just in sight, only ten minutes away—and that meant Paris, her daughter and the boy who was in the army. Then, suddenly, officers entered the coach, arrested her and brought her back to Brussels. The Germans had found in the post a letter in which she had indiscreetly expressed the fervent wish that the war might speedily be won by the Allies. For days thereafter there were anxiety and waiting, and the interrogatories and perquisitions, and though nothing more serious came of the adventure than a summons to appear before the Governor-General, who gave the Baroness advice in his most fatherly manner, the journey was indefinitely postponed.

The *perquisition,* the domiciliary visit, was one of the

most offensive elements of the régime under the German occupation, not only because of the denial of personal liberty, but because of the contempt of all personal dignity, so that delicate women were not even safe from brutal intrusion in their own boudoirs. It occurred so often, so constantly, that we became callous to it and were, perhaps, not always so astounded and outraged as we should have been by the amazing disrespect for principles that are, or used to be, taken for granted in the modern world. Often one would fear that one was becoming hardened, if not corrupted, so insidious is the effect of example, so quickly is one dragged to a lower level. I recall the concern, almost the anguish, of a wealthy manufacturer in Brussels, who had large interests in other countries and was arrested in that month of September, charged with having sent letters out of the country. The *Polizei,* without any warning, appeared at his offices, overturned everything, bore off the company's books, correspondence and papers, arrested the manufacturer and his son, and released them only on their depositing as a kind of bail, two hundred thousand francs in cash. They were subjected almost daily to interrogatories, a host of agents pried into all their affairs; finally they were informed that they were to be tried by court martial. The poor manufacturer, sitting there telling me his experiences, was so troubled and worried that he repeated every sentence twice in identical words, producing a most curious effect: *"nous avons constaté . . . nous avons constaté;" "ils ont fait leur perquisition . . . ils ont fait leur perquisition"; "ils ont tout bousculé . . . ils ont tout bousculé."*

He contrived finally to escape prison, though most were not that fortunate, but he did not escape a heavy

fine and may have lost the trade secrets of his company in those numerous perquisitions.

Such instances of personal indignity and injustice, arising from individual infractions of the German rules, or offenses against German prejudices, were, as I have just said, common; they were happening all the time. But during the history of the occupation there were from time to time other instances of injustice which directly challenged those principles of human liberty that are the efflorescence of the culture and the civilisation of Latin and Anglo-Saxon peoples, and they provoked that kind of resistance to tyranny which in English history is exemplified by the refusal of Pym and Hampden to pay the ship money, and in our own by that of our forefathers in the Boston Tea Party when they refused to be taxed without representation.

Léon Théodor, the Bâtonnier of the Brussels bar, was a kind of Belgian John Hampden himself. In the same month of September of which I have been writing Maître Théodor was arrested and confined in the Kommandantur. The arrest was the inevitable sequel to the events that had occurred in the spring, and because of the courageous manner in which he had defended the rights not only of the lawyers but of the courts and the nation, and of those principles, upon which, in liberal nations, courts rest, Maître Théodor had been elected Bâtonnier for a third term by his associates at the bar, of whose long traditions he had been indeed the worthy upholder.

It was no surprise to any one acquainted with events in Belgium, and above all no surprise to the Bâtonnier himself, when he was arrested. His fearless attitude, his insistence on the independence of the courts and

the bar; his devotion to right, to justice and to law, and to international obligations, could have no other result. The Germans found the Bâtonnier's presence uncomfortable and galling, and had waited only an opportunity to rid themselves of the brave, undaunted spirit.

Maître Théodor was arrested on Wednesday and taken before the German officer who acted as *juge d'instruction,* or examining magistrate, for that preliminary interrogation with which all their proceedings began. The offense charged against the Bâtonnier was that he had advised a certain lawyer at Brussels, Bremeyer, not to represent a certain German then being sued, or about to be sued, in the Belgian courts. The proof adduced by the German authorities that this undefined offense had been committed by Maître Théodor consisted of a letter written by Bremeyer in which he said that the Bâtonnier had so advised him. It was with this charge, and with such evidence to support it, that the juge d'instruction confronted the Bâtonnier, and asked him what he had to say in his defense.

The fact, of course, as any one acquainted with Maître Théodor, or any one knowing his position in Brussels, would at once have assumed, was that the Bâtonnier had given the lawyer no such advice; as Bâtonnier of the Order he had no right and no reason to give advice, much less injunctions as to what cases lawyers should accept or not accept, and so he might easily have denied the charge. But he assumed another attitude, consistent with his dignity, his position, and his patriotism.

"As a lawyer, and as Bâtonnier of the Order," he replied, "I am responsible for my conduct only to the Court of Appeals; if the Procureur Général of that

court were to interrogate me as to the allegations I should consider it my duty to respond. But I have no explanations to make, and I am not responsible for my conduct, to a German military tribunal."

Here, as might have been expected, the "trial" ended. Governor-General von Bissing himself, who was said by some to be waiting in an ante-chamber while the proceedings were in progress, and at any rate not far away, decided at once that, "in view of the fact that his influence on the Bar of Brussels and on the different Bars of the country constituted a danger for the German army," Maître Théodor was to be deported to Germany. A few days solitary confinement at the Kommandantur, with two armed sentinels day and night, a moment in which to bid his wife good-bye, and on Sunday the brave Bâtonnier was taken off to his prison beyond the Rhine.

Whatever may be said of the justice or of the legality of the judgment, it no doubt set forth an indubitable fact. If Maître Théodor did not constitute in the military sense, a danger for the German army, he constituted a danger for the whole system that was embodied in the German Army, just as spirits like his, understanding and loving liberty, have constituted at all times a danger to autocracy. Indeed, nowhere could there be found two men who more ideally represented the two opposing systems in the world than those two who were separated by a wall that day—Théodor in the court-room, von Bissing in the ante-chamber. They were the best that the two systems could produce, and it was not on the word of some piqued lawyer that Théodor was sent into exile and in prison, but because the Governor recognised in the keen penetration and in-

sight of this slender man with the delicate features, the charming smile, the gracious and polished address, the white hair and beard and flashing eyes, one of the most dangerous of all Germany's enemies in Belgium.

The Bâtonnier wrote in all four letters that have an historical significance in the occupation of Belgium. I have given three; the fourth was written in September, 1915, and it was that letter, and not the mere statement of the lawyer Bremeyer, which determined his arrest. It was a protest, addressed to von Bissing himself, against the rifling by German police agents and spies of the chamber of lawyers, where they hoped to secure possession of documents belonging to persons they suspected or disliked. The terror was in full swing in Belgium; domiciliary visits were made daily, the *Polizei* were ransacking houses everywhere, and all the time. There was a noted case in Belgium which involved the succession of the estate of the late King Leopold II.

Shortly before his death Leopold II endowed the Niederfullbach Foundation, turning over to it some of his properties in the Congo. At his death, on the seventeenth of December, 1909, he left a fortune of twenty millions of francs, to be divided in equal parts among his three daughters, the Princesses Louise, Stephanie and Clementine. The Princesses Louise and Stephanie then brought suit to recover the property with which their father had endowed the Niederfullbach Foundation. The Belgian courts refused their demand but declared the Foundation illegal and void and, under the Belgian law, attributed to the Belgian state almost the whole of the Foundation. An amicable agreement was arranged in the year 1913 by M. Henri Carton de Wiart, Minister of Justice, between the Belgian State and the three

Princesses, by the terms of which the State ceded to the Princesses a part of the patrimony of the Foundation, thus assuring each of the Princesses a capital of from seven to eleven millions of francs. This agreement was made definitive by a law voted almost unanimously by the Belgian Parliament, and it had just become effective when the war came on.

German police forcibly entered the offices of Maître Wiener and Maître Alexandre Braun, attorneys in the case, and seized and bore away their dossiers, in order, it would appear, to secure information of value to persons in Germany who claimed pecuniary interests in the estate. Maître Théodor wrote a protest to the Governor-General in which he invoked the doctrine of privileged communication and raised the question of professional confidence and secrets, pointing out that the dossiers of attorneys, under civil law, were secret and privileged, that even a police magistrate (*juge d'instruction*) under the Belgian law had not the right to seize them; that the documents in the dossiers were not the property of the attorney but that of his client, and that the attorney was only the confidential depositary of them.[1]

[1] EXCELLENCE:

J'ai reçu de Monsieur l'Avocat Francis Wiener la lettre dont j'ai l'honneur de vous transmettre ci-jointe la copie.

Elle vous apprendra que des fonctionnaires allemands se sont présentés chez mon confrère et ont exigé sous la menace d'une perquisition, c'est-à-dire de l'emploi de la force, la remise entre leurs mains de dossiers relatifs à des procès civils plaidés par son regretté père Me Sam Wiener.

Ci-joint également copie d'une lettre de Monsieur l'Avocat Alexandre Braun, Ancien Bâtonnier de l'Ordre, chez lequel les mêmes faits se sont passés.

Comme Chef de l'Ordre, je proteste respectueusement, mais avec

Such a spirit, with its logic, its insight and its courage, under a régime of irresponsible autocracy was not only troublesome, but "dangerous" and "undesirable."

---

la dernière énergie, contre cette violation des immunités du Barreau et des droits des tiers.

Le cabinet de l'avocat doit être tenu pour sacré. Les dossiers que celui-ci détient ne sont pas sa propriété; ils sont la propriété de ses clients. Ils constituent entre ses mains le plus inviolable des dépôts. Ils reposent dans ses archives sous le sceau du secret professionnel.

Le secret professionnel est à la base de notre profession. Il est la condition necessaire du Droit de défense, lié lui-même indissolublement à l'administration de la Justice. Il permet au client de se livrer, sans avoir à craindre d'être jamais trahi; de tout dire, de tout révéler, jusqu'aux plus intimes secrets de sa vie, avec la certitude que rien ne sera connu de personne. Le secret confié à un avocat devient le secret du tombeau.

A personne il n'appartient d'essayer d'obtenir de l'avocat qu'il livre la confidence qu'il a reçue. Aucune puissance au monde n'a le droit de forcer ce suprême asile de la détresse humaine.

L'inviolabilité qui couvre les confidences orales en couvre aussi l'expression écrite. Tout document, tout dossier remis à un avocat ou formé par lui, participe de la même inviolabilité. Celle-ci s'étent au cabinet de l'avocat lui-même.

Ces principes sont admis dans notre législation et dans nos moeurs comme des axiomes. Aucun détenteur de l'autorité, fût-il Ministre du Roi, n'oserait, sous quelque prétexte que ce soit, songer à y déroger. La Justice elle-même s'arrête devant cette barrière infranchissable. Le Juge d'instruction, armé de pouvoirs souverains quand il s'agit de la recherche des délits et des crimes,—devant lequel toute porte doit s'ouvrir,—qui a le droit de pénétrer dans l'intimité de la vie et du foyer des citoyens, s'arrête au seuil du cabinet de l'avocat. Il n'y pénètre qu'accompagné d'un délégué du Bâtonnier. Ce délégué n'a pas pour mission de protéger l'avocat, auteur ou complice présumé d'une infraction—le secret professionnel ne couvre aucune défaillance; il se substitue d'office à l'avocat mis

en cause et représente vis-à-vis du Juge d'instruction les immunités de l'Ordre et les droits des tiers.

L'Avocat appelé à déposer en justice doit refuser son témoignage s'il est interrogé sur ce qu'il a appris, vu ou connu en sa qualité d'avocat.

Les lettres échangées entre avocats ne peuvent, même du consentement de leurs auteurs, être produites dans un débat judiciaire, si ce n'est de l'assentiment du Bâtonnier.

Toute notre organisation du Droit de défense se meut dans cette atmosphère de confiance illimitée et de sécurité absolue, indispensable aux relations d'Avocat à Avocat ou d'Avocat à client et à la bonne marche de la justice. Elle autorise les confidences et les aveux, parfois si pénibles et si douloureux. Elle permet à l'Avocat de saisir la trame profonde des actions humaines et de se faire le conseiller sûr de ceux qui se confient à lui. Elle permet à l'Avocat, avant tout débat public, de discuter avec son confrère, dans l'abandon de l'intimité, en vue d'arrangements aimables ou de transactions, sans crainte de surprise.

Ainsi compris et pratiqué, sous le contrôle d'ailleurs de la discipline des autorités corporatives, le secret professionnel demeure l'un des plus beaux attributs de notre profession et achève de donner au rôle social de l'Avocat son caractère de haute dignité et de noblesse.

Cette loi du secret professionnel imposé à tous, dans un intérêt social supérieur, n'a pas été respectée par vos agents.

En se faisant remettre de force des documents confidentiels, dans le but d'en prendre connaissance, de les copier ou de les photographier, ils se sont approprié, sans droits, leur contenu. Ils ont violé un dépôt aux mains de ceux qui en avaient, sous les sanctions de la loi, de leur honneur et de leur conscience, assumé la garde et la responsabilité. Le restitution des pièces saisies n'enlève rien de la gravité des faits accomplis.

Rien, au surplus, ne justifiait la mesure prise. Aucune nécessité de guerre ne l'imposait. Les dossiers saisis sont relatifs à des affaires civiles terminées. Les avocats en cause n'étaient personnellement l'objet d'aucune poursuite et c'est à leur seul titre de détenteurs des dossiers qu'ils ont été inquiétés.

Cette atteinte à nos immunités aura un retentissement douloureux au sein de tous les Barreaux. Si elle devait constituer un

précédent couvert par l'autorité, c'en serait fait de notre ministère comme d'ailleurs du rôle de la Justice elle-même.

La Justice vit de sécurité, d'indépendance et de liberté. Exposée à des coups de force, elle ne peut se voir condamnée à un rôle d'opposition inconciliable avec la dignité de ses fonctions. Vinculée et soumise, elle ne serait plus qu'une justice déchue.

C'est pourquoi je proteste.

Je proteste au nom de notre Droit public, au nom du Droit naturel, au nom du Droit des gens.

La Convention de La Haye a placé notre vie civile sous la haute protection du pouvoir occupant: la vôtre. J'y fais appel. Je la réclame comme un droit.

Je prie Votre Excellence d'agréer l'assurance de ma haute considération.

Le Bâtonnier de l'Ordre,
(S) L. Théodor.

A Son Excellence Monsieur le Baron von Bissing,
Gouverneur-Général en Belgique.

VI

THE RESUMPTION OF WORK

During those late days of September, so depressing because each one brought forth its tragedy of Belgian men and women and boys shot down by firing squads as spies or traitors, Mr. Hoover came over from London to discuss several questions connected with the *ravitaillement.* One of them was the seizure by the Germans of the crops in the north of France and in the *Éttapengebiet* in Belgium. These crops were not covered by the guarantees which we had secured earlier in the summer as to the crops of the *Occupationsgebiet,* and after we had those guarantees the British Government refused, unless the Germans relaxed their seizures, to allow the C.R.B. to send any more food to the *Étappengebiet,* where the crop was all raised by the Belgian peasants. As to the north of France, there was presented a somewhat different and hardly less difficult question, for there the Germans provided the seed themselves, and put their Russian prisoners to work on the land. The peasants, in their stubborn and pathetic attachment to the land, continued to till their soil. As the war grew more ferocious along the front the civilian populations were in danger and the Germans were criticized for not evacuating them.

"But they do not wish to be evacuated," said a German officer to an official of the C.R.B. "Try yourself to make them leave."

The C.R.B. delegates in the north of France, or some of them, were detailed to question the peasants. They offered them the chance of leaving, but they would not go; they preferred to stay in their homes as long as their positions were at all tenable, and to face the unknown dangers there rather than to confront the unknown dangers of the mysterious world outside. Peasants plowed while an occasional shell fell in the fields about them, and old peasant-women, driven from their homes by bombardment, crawled back at night to seek some shelter in the ruins that still had some air of familiarity.

The other problem, long a subject of inconclusive consideration, was known to us as *la reprise du travail.* Industry in Belgium was prostrate. There were no importations and no exportations. Factories were closed and, with the deliberate and systematic purpose of ruining Belgian industry and impeding its resumption after the war, the machinery in them was being taken and shipped to Germany. There were thousands of idle men. The Governor-General had considered means of getting them to go to work, but as they would not work for the Germans, and as no one else had any employment to offer, there seemed no way to do that. But the sight of others idling away their time, always distressing to the self-satisfied and superior element of mankind, induced many conversations on the subject; but no solution had ever been reached.

We were beginning to hear that Bulgaria was about to enter the war—not, as every one fondly supposed, on the side of the Allies, but on the side of the Central Powers; and when Mr. Hoover arrived he brought the news of rumblings of revolution in Russia, so that there were likely to be in the world more idle men than

ever. Many men had studied the problem of unemployment—men like Mr. Paul Otlet, the Belgian publicist, and Mr. Edward A. Filene, of Boston, who, coming to Brussels (accompanied by Colonel Buxton, of the Providence *Journal*), on other errands, had become greatly interested in the subject. None of them, however, had succeeded in devising a solution that would be acceptable to the various groups and interests concerned; and when Mr. Hoover, who might have evolved some practicable scheme, came to study it, he had to begin at the point fixed by the British Government—namely, that no German, directly or indirectly, should profit by the resumption of industry. Mr. Hoover was not therefore very sanguine of success. There were, indeed, Belgians who were opposed to the plan; they feared that if industry were resumed Belgium might appear prosperous under German régime and that the Germans therefore could claim credit and point with pride to the record of their administration. Mr. Hoover disposed of this objection by remarking drily that the English would impose such conditions as to prevent any very flourishing prosperity, and we talked it all over and continued to talk it over, with the prospect of talking it over for days and days thereafter.

It was indeed a perplexing problem. Certain Dutchmen, with an eye to the main chance, had already attempted to organize trade in Belgium, and had failed. Finally Villalobar and I decided to go to the Baron von der Lancken and, since von Bissing professed to be so anxious to have work resumed, to offer our services. But we decided at the same time to keep it separate and distinct from the *ravitaillement,* with which we wished no complications. Destitution was increas-

ing to an alarming extent, and suffering was certain to be very great in the winter that was drawing near, and of course if the people could get to work and produce something the financial strain in that respect would be relieved.

We talked it over with the Baron von der Lancken accordingly, and he said the Governor-General would view the prospect with a friendly eye, and thought it might be arranged if the British Government could be brought into agreement. The task of reinvigorating and reviving an enormous industry like that of Belgium, then thoroughly prostrate, was, of course, appalling and the details infinite in number and complication. In order not to endanger the *ravitaillement* it was decided to create another committee, of which Villalobar and I were to be patrons. The broad lines had been laid out and agreed upon, and the conferences were being held, when an incident occurred that caused all my own interest in the scheme to evaporate. It was intimated at the Politische Abteilung that, while the assistance of the American Government and the patronage of the American Ministers were desired, the C.R.B. was to have nothing to do with it. The observation was not made directly to me, but it reached me promptly through the ever open ear and mouth of one of those persons, common to all lands, who esteem it a friendly office and a duty to tell one unpleasant things they have heard, and thereafter I gave myself no further concern about the matter. It was in a way a relief: my instinct had been against it; I had foreseen a difficulty that would be inevitable in the development of such a scheme —namely the monopoly to which it would necessarily lead, and the favouritism and injustice that would have

been inseparable from the monopoly. And as far as the workingmen whom it was proposed to benefit were concerned, I could not see what they would gain, aside from the moral discipline that labour cultivates. In their cases I felt that the moral discipline would very likely be all they would receive; they were at that moment eating their bread in idleness, to be sure, but under the scheme of *la reprise du travail* they would receive no more than the bread they were already receiving, the only difference being that they would have to work for it. My associates were duly shocked and scandalized by these economical heresies, but I left them after that to their conferences, which continued for a long time; and nothing, so far as I know, ever came of the sublime project—until it was solved by the Germans themselves, more than a year later, in one of the most sinister and tragic events that ever darkened human history.

I do not know that anything would have come of it even if the Americans had not so thoroughly washed their hands of it, and I think that it was part of the luck that attended them that they were led to abandon it when they did. Late in September Mr. Hoover went back to London not very much concerned over the fact that his valuable assistance was not desired; and he was followed soon after by Mr. Crosby, who, after having served long months most efficiently as Director of the C.R.B., affairs had been called home to America by the demands of his own. He was succeeded by Professor Vernon Kellogg, of Leland Stanford University, who arrived in that month of October.

VII

EDITH CAVELL

We were all a little saddened at Mr. Crosby's going and I regretted my own inability to join in the ceremony at which the men of the C.N. and of the C.R.B. expressed their appreciation of the executive services he had rendered. I happened just then to be confined to my quarters, as the military men say, by the orders of my physician. The long strain had told on all of us, and worse than the strain was the almost intolerable depression, one with the atmosphere all about, that settled down like a black cloud. October had come, with all the signs of the early autumn and the menace of another dark winter of war. The grey, dripping skies seemed but the reflection of the universal spirit of man. There were bitter rains and fogs that pinched the nose and clutched at the throat with cold fingers. Then, imprudently I went out one afternoon in the rain, and that evening the good Dr. Derscheid came with his little thermometer and bundled me off to bed. . . .

The leaves were falling, and it remains as a part of the memory of that gloomy October that the apprentice of Le Jeune, the barber, had just told me that if *"le patron"* could survive *"la tombé des feuilles,"* he might live until *"la poussée des feuilles."* It was of some old superstition, I suppose, that he had this curious notion, and yet it seems in a way to express the feeling of all

those suffering Belgians. They had felt for awhile a mounting of their hopes as the cannon preluded the great Allied offensive of that autumn, but after the guns had thundered in full orchestra all about the vast circle that stretched from the Yser to the Vosges they realized, even if they were too stubbornly courageous to admit it, that they were the victims of one more great disappointment. The frequent publication on the walls of those sinister *affiches,* reporting the morning activities of the firing squad, beat down the spirits; each day seemed to outdo its predecessor in some such dread news. General von Kraewel had been removed because, it was said, he had not been severe enough, and was succeeded as Chief of Staff and Military Governor of Brussels by General von Sauberzweig.

It was said that many German soldiers were deserting—the offensive was getting on their nerves; those brought back from Russia to face the fighting on the western front were half-mad with terror. The Germans were beating la Fôret de Soignes for these deserters, and it was said that even officers were fleeing. One day the Rue de Commerce, in the Quartier Léopold, was closed and all the houses searched, because, so the wiseacres said, six officers were hiding there. It was even said that a man was shot for assisting some of them to escape.

Perhaps it was only the ordinary perquisition, the usual search for letters or incriminating documents, now grown more frequent than ever. At any rate, Brussels was nearer black despair than it ever had been. No one smiled, and the people only hoped on because they must; there was nothing else to do. And then a deed was done that threw its black and monstrous shadow not only

over us, but over the whole world. It seemed, somehow like the whelming doom that had been implicit in the dreadful events of that dark month, the *dénouement* toward which they had been so implacably tending; it was so in harmony with the atmosphere, the spirit and the feeling of the time. It was one of a thousand other injustices essentially as bad, but because it doomed in its tragic circumstances a noble woman of our own blood and tongue and tradition it well-nigh overwhelmed us with its horror.

Early in August Brussels had heard, and all Belgium —or at least all that part of Belgium that lived in châteaux—had heard that the Princess Maria de Croy and the Countess Jeanne de Belleville had been arrested. The de Croys are one of the oldest families of the Belgian nobility, and the Princess Maria was a maiden lady who lived almost in seclusion in her château of Bellignies, near Mons. The Countess Jeanne de Belleville lived not far away, at her château of Montignies-sur-Roc, near Andregnies, in the province of Hainaut. These two distinguished ladies had been arrested for having aided British soldiers to pass the Belgian frontier, and were accused of "treason in time of war." At the beginning of the war the Princess de Croy had established a Red Cross hospital in her château, where Belgian, English and German wounded were cared for. After the battle of Mons a great many British soldiers, cut off in the retreat, had been left behind in Belgium, and all through the winter and spring had lived the lives of hunted animals in the woods or in the farms and fields of Hainaut and of Brabant. Near the château of the Princess de Croy thirteen British soldiers had hidden in a hay stack on a Belgian farm, and, tracked down at last

by German soldiers, they were taken and shot without mercy. This so affected the Princess that she determined to organise a method whereby British soldiers who, finding themselves in a position that in all civilized countries would have entitled them at least to the consideration shown to prisoners of war, could be cared for, and if possible got out of the country. And, though frail and in delicate health, she and the Countess de Belleville and Mademoiselle Thuliez and certain others organised a system to aid those British soldiers who were still in hiding, and to send them to Brussels, where, as she declared in her interrogatory before the military tribunal, she thought they would be less rigorously dealt with than at Mons, which was under the military régime of the *Etappengebiet*. The Princess did not know what became of them after they reached Brussels; however, others aided them to get across the frontier into Holland.

One day in August it was learned at the Legation that an English nurse named Edith Cavell had been arrested by the Germans. I wrote a letter to the Baron von der Lancken to ask if it was true that Miss Cavell had been arrested, and saying that if it were I should request that Maître de Leval, the legal counselor of the Legation, be permitted to see her and to prepare for her defense. There was no reply to this letter and on the tenth of September I wrote a second letter, repeating the questions and the requests made in the first. On the twelfth of September I had a reply from the Baron stating that Miss Cavell had been arrested on the fifth of August, that she was confined in the prison of St.-Gilles, that she had admitted having hidden English and French soldiers in her home, as well as Belgians of an age to

bear arms, all anxious to get to the front; that she had admitted also having furnished these soldiers with money to get to France, and had provided guides to enable them to cross the Dutch frontier; that the defense of Miss Cavell was in the hands of Maître Thomas Braun, and that inasmuch as the German Government, on principle, would not permit accused persons to have any interviews whatever he could not obtain permission for Maître de Leval to visit Miss Cavell as long as she was in solitary confinement.[1]

---

[1] Mr. Whitlock, American Minister in Brussels, to Baron von der Lancken

Bruxelles, le 31 août, 1915.

Excellence:

Ma Légation vient d'être informée que Miss Edith Cavell, sujette anglaise habitant rue de la Culture à Bruxelles, aurait été arrêtée.

Je serais fort obligé a Votre Excellence si Elle voulait bien me faire savoir si ce renseignement est exact, et, dans l'affirmative, quelles sont les raisons de cette arrestation. Je lui saurais gré également dans ce cas de bien vouloir faire parvenir à la Légation l'autorisation nécessaire des autorités judiciares allemandes, pour que M. de Leval puisse conférer avec Miss Cavell, et éventuellement charger quelqu'un de sa défense.

Je saisis, etc., Brand Whitlock.

(Translation:)

Brussels, August 31, 1915.

Your Excellency:

My Legation has just been informed that Miss Edith Cavell, a British subject residing in the rue de la Culture, Brussels, is said to have been arrested.

I should be greatly obliged if Your Excellency would be good enough to let me know whether this report is true, and, if so, the reasons for her arrest. I should also be grateful in that case if Your Excellency would furnish this Legation with the necessary

We at the Legation had not at the time seen anything more serious in the case than in the numerous other

---

authorization from the German judicial authorities so that M. de Leval may consult with Miss Cavell, and eventually entrust some one with her defense.

I avail, etc., BRAND WHITLOCK.

MR. WHITLOCK, American Minister in Brussels, to BARON VON DER LANCKEN

Le Ministre d'Amérique présente ses complimets à son Excellence M. le Baron von der Lancken, et a l'honneur de lui rappeler sa lettre du 31 août, concernant l'arrestation de Miss Cavell, lettre à laquelle il n'a pas encore reçu de résponse.

Comme le Ministre a été, par dépêche, prié de s'occuper aussitôt de la défense de Miss Cavell, il serait fort obligé à son Excellence M. le Baron von der Lancken de bien vouloir le mettre à même de prendre immediatement les mesures eventuellement nécessaires pour cette défense, et de répondre par télégramme à la dépêche qu'il a reçue.

Bruxelles, la 10 septembre, 1915.

(Translation:)

The American Minister presents his compliments to the Baron von der Lancken and has the honour to draw his Excellency's attention to his letter of the 31 August, respecting the arrest of Miss Cavell, to which no reply has yet been received.

As the Minister has been requested by telegraph to take charge of Miss Cavell's defense without delay, he would be greatly obliged if Baron von der Lancken would enable him to take forthwith such steps as may be necessary for this defense, and to answer by telegraph the despatch he has received.

Brussels, September 10, 1915.

MR. WHITLOCK, American Minister in Brussels, to MR. PAGE

American Legation, Brussels, September 21, 1915.

SIR:

Referring to your telegram of the 27th of August in regard to the case of Miss Edith Cavell, who was arrested on the 5th of

cases that were similarly brought to our notice, or of which we were constantly hearing. It was the German

---

August, and is now in the military prison at St.-Gilles, I beg to enclose herewith for your information a copy of a communication which I have just received from Baron von der Lancken in regard to the matter.

The legal adviser appointed to defend Miss Cavell has informed the Legation that she has indeed admitted having hidden in her house English and French soldiers, and has facilitated the departure of Belgian subjects to the front, furnishing them money and guides to enable them to cross the Dutch frontier.

The Legation will of course keep this case in view and endeavour to see that a fair trial is given Miss Cavell, and will not fail to let you know of any developments.

I have, etc., BRAND WHITLOCK.

BARON VON DER LANCKEN to MR. WHITLOCK

Politische Abteilung *bei dem* General-Gouverneur in Belgien

I. 6940

Bruxelles, le 12 septembre, 1915.

M. LE MINISTRE:

En réponse à la note que Votre Excellence a bien voulu m'adresser en date du 31 du mois dernier, j'ai l'honneur de porter à sa connaissance que Miss Edith Cavell a été arrêtée le 5 août et qu'elle se trouve actuellement dans la prison militaire de St.-Gilles.

Elle a avoué elle-même avoir caché dans sa demeure des soldats anglais et français, ainsi que des Belges en âge de porter les armes, tous désireux de se rendre au front. Elle a avoué également avoir fournir à ces soldats l'argent nécessaire pour faire le voyage en France et avoir facilité leur sortie de Belgique en leur procurant des guides qui les faissient franchir clandestinement le frontière néerlandaise.

La défense de Miss Cavell est entre les mains de l'avocat Braun, qui du rest s'est déjà mis en rapport avec les autorités allemandes compétentes.

Attendu que le Gouvernment-Général pour des raisons de principe n'admet pas que les prévenus aient des entretiens quels qu'ils

practice in Belgium to arrest any one "on suspicion," as we should say in America, and to investigate the

---

soient, je regrette infiniment de ne pouvoir procurer à M. de Leval la permission d'aller voir Miss Cavell tant qu'elle est au secret.

Je profite, etc., LANCKEN.

(Translation:)

SIR:

In reply to Your Excellency's note of the 31st ultimo, I have the honour to inform you that Miss Edith Cavell was arrested on the 5 August, and that she is at present in the military prison at St.-Gilles.

She has herself admitted that she concealed in her house French and English soldiers, as well as Belgians of military age, all desirous of proceeding to the front. She has also admitted having furnished these soldiers with the money necessary for their journey to France, and having facilitated their departure from Belgium by providing them with guides who enabled them secretly to cross the Dutch frontier.

Miss Cavell's defence is in the hands of the advocate Braun, who, I may add, is already in touch with the competent German authorities.

In view of the fact that the General Government as a matter of principle does not allow accused persons to have any interviews whatever, I much regret my inability to procure for M. de Leval permission to visit Miss Cavell as long as she is in solitary confinement.

I avail, etc., LANCKEN.

MR. WHITLOCK, American Minister in Brussels, to MR. PAGE

American Legation, Brussels, October 9, 1915.

SIR:

I beg to acknowledge the receipt of your letter of the 23rd of September in regard to the arrest by the German military authorities of Miss Edith Cavell, head of a training school for nurses.

Upon receipt of your telegram of the 27th of August, I took the

facts afterward. Under the German system in vogue in Belgium, as Maître Théodor had not feared some months before to point out to the authorities, persons who were arrested were not told of the offense with which they were charged, nor were the offenses themselves clearly defined; so that Miss Cavell, like many an-

---

matter up with the German authorities, and learned that Miss Cavell had indeed been arrested upon a charge of "espionage." The Belgian attorney appointed to defend her before the court-martial called several times at the Legation, and will continue to keep me well posted in regard to the case. It seems that Miss Cavell has made several very damaging admissions, and there appeared to be no ground upon which I could ask for her release before the trial.

The case will come up for trial next week, and I shall write you as soon as there is any further development.

I am, etc., BRAND WHITLOCK.

MR. WHITLOCK, American Minister in Brussels, to MR. PAGE

American Legation, Brussels, October 11, 1915.

SIR:

Referring to my letter of the 9th of October in regard to the case of Miss Edith Cavell, I hasten to send you word that her trial has been completed, and that the German prosecutor has asked for sentence of death against her and eight other persons implicated by her testimony. Sentence has not yet been pronounced, and I have some hope that the court-martial may decline to pass the rigorous sentence proposed.

I have thus far done everything that has been possible to secure a fair trial for Miss Cavell, and am assured by her attorney that no complaint can be made on this score.

I feel that it would be useless to take any action until sentence is pronounced. I shall then, of course, neglect no effort to prevent an unduly severe penalty being inflicted upon her. I shall immediately telegraph you upon the pronouncement of sentence.

I have, etc.,

BRAND WHITLOCK.

other who had shared her fate, was arrested and held in prison while the secret police continued their investigations and made up the dossier which would reveal its secrets only before a military court, that was at once prosecutor, jury and judge.

For one of our Anglo-Saxon race and legal traditions to understand conditions in Belgium during the German occupation it is necessary to banish resolutely from the mind every conception of right that we have inherited from our ancestors—conceptions long since crystallised into immutable principles of law and confirmed in our charters of liberty. In the German mentality these conceptions do not exist: the Germans think in other sequences, they act according to another principle, if it is a principle—the conviction that there is only one right, one privilege, and that it belongs exclusively to Germany; the right, namely, to do whatever they have the physical force to do. These so-called courts, of whose arbitrary and irresponsible and brutal nature I have tried to give some notion, were mere inquisitorial bodies, guided by no principle save that inherent in their own bloody nature; they did as they pleased, and would have scorned a Jeffreys as too lenient, a Lynch as too formal, a Spanish *auto de fé* as too technical, and a tribunal of the French revolution as soft and sentimental. Before them the accused had literally no rights; he could not even, as a right, present a defense, and if he was permitted to speak in his own behalf it was only as a generous and liberal favour.

Long months before, a clergyman, an American citizen, had been arrested and held for several days at the Kommandantur without the knowledge of any one at the Legation; the fact came to our knowledge only acci-

dentally. I was able to secure the liberation of this American, however and then I asked the Politische Abteilung to notify me and to permit me to present a defense whenever any American citizen, or a citizen of any country whose interests were confided to my care, was arrested. The Politische Abteilung agreed to this, but we usually learned of such incidents before the Politische Abteilung could notify us, and provided a lawyer to look after the interests of the accused, so far as it was possible to do that before a German military courtmartial. The defense, as I have just said, was not a defense in our meaning of the word. The lawyer was not allowed to see his client until he appeared to plead the case before the court where the accused was arraigned for trial, and he was not permitted to speak to his client during the trial; often he did not know what the accusation was until the trial began, and sometimes he did not know it even then. There were no written charges and no specifications, much less an indictment or information. The secret police would bring before the bench of German officers sitting there in the Senate chamber, all the evidence, as they called it, that they had been able to collect, and present it as they pleased, with no concern as to its pertinence or relevancy. The court would admit hearsay, presumptions, conclusions, inferences and innuendoes so long as they were on behalf of the prosecution; there was no cross-examination, sometimes even no interrogatory on the part of the presiding judge. The accused was sometimes allowed to present a defense, but it was generally only such as he might contrive in sparring with the judges as they questioned him. He had no process

for witnesses in his own behalf, and no right to have them heard even when they were willing to appear.

After the evidence was in, the officer, a kind of judge-advocate, who acted as prosecutor, would state the penalty that he thought applicable, and the court would vote to apply it. The lawyer for the defense, after having gone through the case without any possibility of preparation, without even having spoken to his client before or during the trial, and with no admitted principles to guide him, without the right to present testimony in rebuttal, would be allowed to make a statement or an argument. But, as though he were not already labouring under a disadvantage sufficiently heavy, he must be careful in his argument not to say anything that would reflect in the least on one of the witnesses, especially if the witness happened to be a German soldier, or even a German civilian; he must not contradict a judge-advocate, or question the validity or propriety of any act of the prosecution, for this would be equivalent to contempt of court and amount to the heinous offense of failing in respect to the German Army. He must show the most exquisite and exaggerated respect for the court, and as a result he could only stand there niddy-noddying, pale with fear, and—say nothing. In a word, even when the judgments of those extraordinary tribunals reflected a kind of natural justice, which perhaps they did on occasion, the whole proceeding was the veriest travesty and mockery. The judges could be swayed by any passion, any prejudice, any whim, and when the accused happened to be some one who had offended the secret police or *Messieurs les Militaires* the judgment was a foregone conclusion—unless he was a personage, especially a titled personage,

and then he was apt to be shown a snobbish consideration.

It was before such a court that Edith Cavell was to be arraigned. I had asked Maître de Leval to provide for her defense, and on his advice, inasmuch as Maître Thomas Braun was already of counsel in the case, chosen by certain friends of Miss Cavell, I invited Maître Braun into consultation. Maître Braun was a Belgian lawyer of standing and ability; his father was defending the most distinguished of the accused, the Princess of Croy. He was a man thoroughly equipped, who had the advantage of knowing German as well as he knew French, and had appeared constantly and not without success before the German tribunals. I asked Maître Braun to appear, then, for Miss Cavell, representing the American Legation.

It was supposed at first that the case was no more likely to result in tragedy than the generality of cases brought before such tribunals; that is, that it was one of those numerous cases in which Belgians were being condemned to deportation to some German prison, like Madame Carton de Wiart or Maître Théodor, to mention the most celebrated, or if one were to consider the cases of those less prominent, the many convictions and sentences to imprisonment for terms of years—two or ten or twenty. They all amounted to the same thing, those terms of imprisonment, for the victims would be freed at the conclusion of peace if they lived, and if peace were ever concluded.

It was not until weeks had passed that we heard that the charges to be brought against Miss Cavell were serious, but still we were in mystery; all we could learn was that "the instruction was proceeding," and that

things were taking their course. Then we were told that the offense with which she would be charged was that of aiding young men to cross the Dutch frontier. I think that we were somewhat relieved; such cases were common, and the sentences provided in them were not in general severe, according to the standard of those in vogue in occupied Belgium.

Edith Cavell herself did not expect such a fate. She was a frail and delicate little woman about forty years of age. She had come to Brussels some years before to exercise her calling as a trained nurse, and soon became known to the leading physicians of the capital and nursed in the homes of the leading families. But she was ambitious and devoted to her profession, and ere long had entered a nursing-home in the Rue de la Clinique, where she organized for Dr. Depage a training school for nurses. She was a woman of refinement and education; she knew French well; she was deeply religious, with a conscience almost puritan, and was very stern with herself in what she conceived to be her duty. In her training school she showed great executive ability, was firm in matters of discipline, and brought it to a high state of efficiency. And every one who knew her in Brussels spoke of her with that unvarying respect which her noble character inspired.

Some time before the trial Maître Thomas Braun informed the Legation that the Germans had forbidden him to plead before the Military Court and that some one else must appear for Miss Cavell; he suggested Maître Sadi Kirschen, who was engaged. I had thought of asking to have Maître de Leval attend but on second thought, and on the advice of Maîtres Braun and Kirschen, as well as that of Maître de Leval himself, I came

to the conclusion that perhaps it would not be entirely tactful to do this, for the presence of Maître de Leval as an observer might suggest to the hyper-sensitive suspicions of the Germans a lack of confidence that could only react against Miss Cavell.

It was the morning of Thursday, the seventh of October, that the case came on before the court-martial [2] in the Senate chamber where the military trials always took place, and Miss Cavell was arraigned with the Princess de Croy, the Countess de Belleville, and thirty-two

[2] M. DE LEVAL to M. KIRSCHEN

Bruxelles, le 5 octobre 1915.

M. L'AVOCAT:

Je vous remercie pour la lettre que vous avez bien voulu adresser à M. de Leval l'informant que l'affaire de Miss Cavell viendrait devant le conseil de guerre jeudi prochain à 8 heures du matin. Ainsi qu'il a été convenu, je vous serais fort obligé si vous vouliez bien, après l'audience, m'envoyer un mémorandum exposant les faits pour lesquels Miss Cavell est poursuivie, et indiquant les charges qui se seront révélées contre elle à l'audience ainsi que la sentence qui aura été prononcée.

Veuillez, etc., (Pour le Ministre),
G. DE LEVAL, Conseiller-legiste de la Légation.

(Translation:)

Brussels, October 5, 1915.

SIR:

I thank you for the letter you were good enough to address to M. de Leval informing him that Miss Cavell's case would come before the court-martial at 8 A.M. next Thursday. In pursuance of the arrangement already made, I should be most grateful if you would be good enough to send me, after the hearing, a memorandum setting forth the acts for which Miss Cavell is being prosecuted, and stating the charges brought against her at the hearing, and also the sentence passed.

I am, etc., (For the Minister),
G. DE LEVAL, Legal Adviser to the Legation.

others. The accused were seated in a circle facing the court in such a way that they could neither see nor communicate with their own counsel, who were compelled to sit behind them. Nor could they see the witnesses, who were also placed behind them.

The charge brought against the accused was that of having conspired to violate the German Military Penal Code, punishing with death those who conduct troops to the enemy. Its basis in German Military Law is found in Paragraph 68 of the German Military Code, which says:

> Whoever, with the intention of helping the hostile Power, or of injuring the German or allied troops, is guilty of one of the crimes of Paragraph 90 of the German Penal Code, will be sentenced to death for treason.

Among the crimes mentioned in Paragraph 90 is that of "conducting soldiers to the enemy." (*Dem Feinde Mannschaftenzuführt.*)

We have no record of that trial; we do not know all that occurred there behind the closed doors of that Senate chamber, where for four-score years laws based on another and more enlightened principle of justice had been discussed and enacted. The lips of the lawyers who were there, and of the accused—those among the thirty-four who were acquitted—have not been unsealed, and will not be until the little land is released from the terror which daily enacts such scenes. Miss Cavell did not know, or knew only in the vaguest manner, the offense with which she was charged. No written statement of it had ever been delivered to her, no written statement of it had ever been given to her attorney, and it is a pathetic circumstance that it was her own honesty and frankness, her own direct Eng-

lish way of thinking, that convicted her. With the *naïveté* of the pure in heart she assumed that the Germans were charging her with the deeds that she had committed, and these she readily admitted, and even signed a paper to that effect. We know enough to be able to say that Miss Cavell did not deny having received at her hospital English soldiers, whom she nursed and to whom she gave money; she did not deny that she knew they were going to try to cross the border into Holland. She even took a patriotic pride in the fact. She was interrogated in German, a language she did not understand, but the questions and responses were translated into French. Her mind was very alert, she was entirely calm and self-possessed, and frequently rectified inexact details in the statements that were put to her. When, in her interrogatory, she was asked if she had not aided English soldiers left behind after the early battles of the preceding autumn about Mons and Charleroi, she said yes; they were English and she was English, and she would help her own. The answer seemed to impress the court. They asked her if she had not helped twenty.

"Yes," she said, "more than twenty; two hundred."

"English?"

"No, not all English; French and Belgians, too."

But the French and Belgians were not of her own nationality, said the judge—and that made a serious difference. She was subjected to a nagging interrogatory. One of the judges said that she had been foolish to aid English soldiers because, he said, the English are ungrateful.

"No," replied Miss Cavell, "the English are not ungrateful."

"How do you know they are not?" asked the inquisitor.

"Because," she answered, "some of them have written to me from England to thank me."

It was a fatal admission on the part of the tortured little woman; under the German military law her having helped soldiers to reach Holland, a neutral country, would have been a less serious offense, but to aid them to reach an enemy country, and especially England, was the last offense in the eyes of a German military court.

The trial was concluded on Friday, and on Sunday one of the nurses in Miss Cavell's school came to say that there was a rumour about town that the prosecuting officer had asked the court to pronounce a sentence of death on the Princess de Croy, the Countess de Belleville and Miss Cavell, and several others. The court had not as yet pronounced judgment, however, and there was some hope—or in the tribunals before which Maître de Leval and I were used to practise there would have been some hope—that the court would not pronounce the judgment proposed. I remember to have said to Maître de Leval, when he came up to my chamber to report this astounding news:

"That's only the usual exaggeration of the prosecutor; they all ask for the extreme penalty, everywhere, when they sum up their cases."

"Yes," said Maître de Leval, "and in German courts they always get it."

Maître de Leval sent a note to Maître Kirschen asking him to come on Monday at eight-thirty o'clock to the Legation, or to send word regarding Miss Cavell. Maître Kirschen did not send Maître de Leval the word he had requested, and on that Sunday de Leval saw an-

other lawyer who had been in the case and could tell him what had taken place at the trial. This lawyer thought that the court-martial would not condemn Miss Cavell to death. At any rate no judgment had been pronounced and the judges themselves did not appear to be in agreement. On Monday, the eleventh of October, at eight-thirty in the morning, Maître de Leval went to the Politische Abteilung in the Rue Lambermont, and found Conrad. He spoke to him of the case of Miss Cavell and asked that now that the trial had taken place he and the Reverend Mr. H. Stirling T. Gahan, the British chaplain at Brussels and rector of the English church, be allowed to see Miss Cavell. Conrad said he would make inquiries and inform de Leval by telephone, and by one of the messengers of the Legation who that morning happened to deliver some papers to the Politische Abteilung Conrad sent word that neither the Reverend Mr. Gahan nor Maître de Leval could see Miss Cavell at that time, but that Maître de Leval could see her as soon as the judgment had been pronounced. At eleven-thirty o'clock on that Monday morning Maître de Leval himself telephoned to Conrad, who repeated this statement. The judgment had not yet been rendered, he said, and Maître de Leval asked Conrad to inform him as soon as the judgment was pronounced, so that he might go to see Miss Cavell. Conrad promised this, but added that even then the Reverend Mr. Gahan could not see her because there were German pastors at the prison, and that if Miss Cavell needed spiritual advice or consolation she could call on them. Conrad concluded this conversation by saying that the judgment would be rendered probably on the morrow—that is, on Tuesday—or the day after, and that even when it had

been pronounced it would have to be signed by the Military Governor before it was effective and that the Legation would be kept informed.

Maître de Leval is one of the most meticulously exact men that I ever knew. The instant he had an important conversation of any sort he used to dictate the purport of it to a stenographer, and thus he always had a record of everything—the date, the hour, precisely what was said and done. In preparing this account I have had the benefit of a glance at Maître de Leval's own notes. Shortly after noon on that Monday, not having received any news from Maître Kirschen, Maître de Leval went to his house, but did not find him there and left his card. He then went to the house of a lawyer to whom reference has already been made and left word for him to call at his, de Leval's, house. At four o'clock that afternoon the lawyer went to Maître de Leval and said that he had gone to see the Germans at eleven o'clock and that there he had been told that no judgment would be pronounced before the following day. On leaving the Legation to go home Maître de Leval told all that had happened to Gibson, and asked him to telephone again to Conrad before going home himself.

Thus at intervals all day long the inquiry had been repeated, and the same response made. Monday evening at 6:20 o'clock, Belgium time, Topping, one of the clerks of the Legation, with Gibson standing by, again called Conrad on the telephone, again was told that the judgment had not been pronounced and that the Political Department would not fail to inform the Legation the moment the judgment was confirmed. And then the chancellerie was closed for the night.

VIII

THE NIGHT OF THE EXECUTION

At nine o'clock that Monday evening Maître de Leval appeared suddenly at the door of my chamber; his face was deathly pallid. He said he had just heard from the nurses who were keeping him informed that the judgment had been confirmed and that the sentence of death had been pronounced on Miss Cavell at half-past four that afternoon, and that she was to be shot at two o'clock the next morning. It seemed impossible, especially the immediate execution of sentence; there had always been time at least to prepare and to present a plea for mercy. To condemn a woman in the evening and then to hurry her out to be shot before another dawn! Preposterous!

But no; Maître de Leval was certain. That evening he had gone home and was writing at his table when, about eight o'clock, two nurses were introduced. One was Miss Wilkinson, *"petite et nerveuse, toute en larmes,"* the other *"plus grande et plus calme."* Miss Wilkinson said that she had just learned that the court had condemned Miss Cavell to death, that the judgment had been read to her in the cell of the prison at four-thirty that afternoon, and that the Germans were going to shoot her that night at two o'clock. Maître de Leval told her that it was difficult to believe such news since twice he had been told that the judgment

had not been rendered and would not be rendered before the following day, but on her reiterating that she had this news from a source that was indisputable de Leval left at once with her and her friend, and came to the Legation. And there he stood, pale and shaken. Even then I could not believe—it was too preposterous; surely a stay of execution would be granted. Already in the afternoon, in some premonition, Maître de Leval had prepared for my signature a *recours en grâce* to be submitted to the Governor-General, and a letter of transmittal to present to the Baron von der Lancken. I asked Maître de Leval to bring me these documents and I signed them,[1] then at the last minute, on the letter addressed to von der Lancken, I wrote these words:

Mon cher Baron: Je suis trop malade pour vous présenter me requête moi-même, mais je fais appel à votre générosité de coeur pour l'appuyer et sauver de la mort cette malheureuse. Ayez pitié d'elle!

Votre bien dévoué,
Brand Whitlock.

(Translation:)
My dear Baron:

I am too ill to present my request to you in person, but I appeal to the generosity of your heart to support it and to save this unfortunate woman from death. Have pity on her!

Yours sincerely,
Brand Whitlock.

---

[1] Mr. Whitlock, American Minister in Brussels, to Baron von Bissing, Governor-General in Belgium

Bruxelles, le 11 octobre, 1915.

Excellence,—Je viens d'apprendre que Miss Cavell, sujette anglaise, et par conséquent sous la protection de ma Légation, a été condamnée à mort ce matin par le conseil de guerre.

Sans examiner les causes qui ont motivé une condamnation aussi

I told Maître de Leval to send Joseph at once to hunt up Gibson to present the plea, and if possible to find the

sévère, et qui, si les renseignements qu'on me donne sont exacts, est plus sévère dans le cas actuel que dans tous les autres cas de même espèce qui ont été jugés par le même tribunal, je crois pouvoir faire appel aux sentiments d'humanité et de générosité de Votre Excellence en faveur de Miss Cavell, afin que la peine de mort prononcée contre elle soit commuée et que cette malheureuse femme ne soit pas passée par les armes.

Miss Cavell en effet est la principale nurse le l'Institut Chirurgical de Bruxelles. Elle a passé sa vie à soigner la souffrance des autres, et, à son école, se sont formés de nombreuses infirmières qui ont, dans le monde entier, en Allemagne comme en Belgique, veillé au chevet des malades. Au début de la guerre Miss Cavell a prodiqué ses soins aux soldats allemands comme aux autres. A défaut d'autres raisons, sa carrière humanitaire est de nature à inspirer toutes les pitiés et à promouvoir tous les pardons. Si les informations qui me sont données sont exactes, Miss Cavell, loin de se cacher, a, avec une louable franchise, avoué tous les faits qui étaient à sa charge, et ce seraient même des renseignements fournis par elle seule, et qu'elle seule pouvait fournir, qui ont causé l'aggravation de la peine prononcée contre elle.

C'est donc avec confiance, et avec l'espoir de la voir favorablement accueillie, que j'ai l'honneur de présenter à Votre Excellence ma requête en grâce en faveur de Miss Cavell.

Je saisis, etc., BRAND WHITLOCK.

(Translation:) Brussels, October 11, 1915.

YOUR EXCELLENCY,—I have just heard that Miss Cavell, a British subject and consequently under the protection of my Legation, was this morning condemned to death by court-martial.

If my information is correct the sentence in the present case is more severe than all the others that have been passed in similar cases tried by the same court, and, without going into the reasons for such a drastic sentence, I feel that I can appeal to Your Excellency's feelings of humanity and generosity in Miss Cavell's favour, and to ask that the death penalty passed on Miss Cavell be commuted, and that this unfortunate woman be not executed.

Marquis de Villalobar and to ask him to support it with the Baron von der Lancken. Gibson was dining somewhere; we did not know where Villalobar was. The Politische Abteilung, the Ministry of Industry, where Baron von der Lancken lived, was only half a dozen blocks away. The Governor-General was in his château at Trois Fontaines, ten miles away, playing bridge that evening. Maître de Leval went. . . .

The nurses from Miss Cavell's school were waiting in a lower room. Other nurses came for news; they too had heard, but could not believe. Then the Reverend Mr. Gahan, pastor of the English church, came. He had a note from some one at the St.-Gilles prison—a note written in German saying simply:

"Come at once; some one is about to die."

He went away to the prison; his frail, delicate little wife remained at the Legation, and there my wife and

---

Miss Cavell is the head of the Brussels Surgical Institute. She has spent her life in alleviating the sufferings of others, and her school has turned out many nurses who have watched at the bedside of the sick all the world over, in Germany as in Belgium. At the beginning of the war Miss Cavell bestowed her care as freely on the German soldiers as on others. Even in default of all other reasons, her career as a servant of humanity is such as to inspire the greatest sympathy and to call for pardon. If the information in my possession is correct, Miss Cavell, far from shielding herself, has, with commendable straightforwardness admitted the truth of all the charges against her, and it is the very information which she herself has furnished and which she alone was in a position to furnish, that has aggravated the severity of the sentence passed against her.

It is then with confidence and in the hope of its favourable reception that I have the honour to present to Your Excellency my request for pardon on Miss Cavell's behalf.

I avail, etc., BRAND WHITLOCK.

Miss Larner sat with those women all that long evening, trying to comfort, to reassure them. Outside a cold rain was falling. Up in my chamber I waited. . . . A stay of execution would be granted, of course; they always were granted. There was not in our time, anywhere, a court, even a German court-martial, that would condemn a woman to death at half-past four in the afternoon and hurry her out and shoot her before dawn.

Midnight came, and Gibson, with a dark face, and de Leval, paler than ever. There was nothing to be done. De Leval had gone to Gibson and together they went in search of the Marquis, whom they found at Baron Lambert's, where he had been dining; he and Baron Lambert and M. Francqui were over their coffee. The Marquis, Gibson and de Leval, went to the Rue Lambermont. The Ministry was closed and dark; no one was there. They rang, and rang again, and finally the concierge appeared—no one was there, he said. They insisted. The concierge at last found a German functionary, who came down, stood staring stupidly; every one was gone; His Excellency was at the theatre. At what theatre? He did not know. They urged him to go and find out. He disappeared inside, went up and down the stairs two or three times, finally came out and said that he was at "Le Bois Sacré." They explained that the presence of the Baron was urgent and asked the man to go for him; they turned over the motor to him and he mounted on the box beside Eugène. They reached the little variety theatre there in the Rue d'Arenberg. The German functionary went in and found the Baron, who said he would come when the piece was over.

All this while Villalobar, Gibson and de Leval were in the *salon* at the Ministry, the room of which I have

spoken so often as the yellow *salon* because of the satin upholstery of its Louis XVI furniture of white lacquer —that bright, almost laughing little *salon,* all done in the gayest, lightest tones, where so many little dramas were played. All three of them were deeply moved and very anxious—the eternal contrast, as de Leval said, between sentiments and things. Lancken entered at last, very much surprised to find them; he was accompanied by Count Harrach and by the young Baron von Falkenhausen.

They told him why they were there, and Lancken, raising his hands, said:

"Impossible!"

He had vaguely heard that afternoon of a condemnation for "spying," (*sic!*) but he did not know that it had anything to do with the case of Miss Cavell, and in any event it was impossible that they would put a woman to death that night.

"Who has given you this information? For, really, to come and disturb me at such an hour you must have information from serious and trustworthy sources."

De Leval replied:

"Without doubt, I consider my information trustworthy, but I must refuse to tell you from whom I received it. Besides, what difference does it make? If the information is true our presence at this hour is justified; if it is not true I am ready to take the consequences of my mistake."

The Baron showed irritation.

"What!" he said, "it is because 'they say' that you come and disturb me at such an hour, me and these gentlemen? No, no, gentlemen this news cannot be true.

Orders are never executed with such precipitation, especially when a woman is concerned."

He paused, and then added:

"Besides, how do you think that at this hour I can obtain any information. The Governor-General must certainly be sleeping."

Gibson, or one of them, suggested to him that a very simple way of finding out would be to telephone to the prison.

"Quite right," he said, "I had not thought of that."

He went out, was gone a few minutes, and came back embarrassed, so they said, even a little bit ashamed, for he said:

"You are right, gentlemen; I have learned by telephone that Miss Cavell has been condemned, and that she will be shot to-night."

Then de Leval drew out the letter that I had written to the Baron, and gave it to him, and he read it in an undertone—with a little sarcastic smile, so de Leval said—and when he had finished he handed it back to de Leval, and said:

"But it is necessary to have a plea for mercy at the same time. . . .?"

"Here it is," said de Leval, and he gave him the document. Then they all sat down.

I could see the scene—as it was described to me by Villalobar, by Gibson, by de Leval, in that pretty little *salon* Louis XVI that I knew so well—Lancken giving way to an outburst of feeling against "that spy," as he called Miss Cavell, and Gibson and de Leval by turns pleading with him, the Marquis sitting by. It was not a question of spying, as they pointed out; it was a question of the life of a woman—a life that had been devoted

to charity, to the service of others. She had nursed wounded soldiers, she had even nursed German wounded at the beginning of the war, and now she was accused of but one thing: of having helped British soldiers make their way toward Holland. She may have been imprudent, she may have acted against the laws of the occupying Power but she was not a spy; she was not even accused of being a spy, she had not been convicted of spying, and she did not merit the death of a spy. They sat there pleading, Gibson and de Leval, bringing forth all the arguments that would occur to men of sense and sensibility. Gibson called Lancken's attention to their failure to inform the Legation of the sentence, of their failure to keep the word that Conrad had given. He argued that the offense charged against Miss Cavell had long since been accomplished, that as she had been for some weeks in prison a slight delay in carrying out the sentence could not endanger the German cause; he even pointed out the effect such a deed as the summary execution of the death sentence against a woman would have upon public opinion, not only in Belgium but in America and elsewhere; he even spoke of the possibility of reprisals.

But it was all in vain. Baron von der Lancken explained to them that the Military Governor—that is, General von Sauberzweig—was the supreme authority (*Gerichtsherr*) in matters of this sort, that the Governor-General himself had no authority to intervene in such cases; and that under the provisions of German martial law it lay within the discretion of the Military Governor whether he would accept or refuse an appeal for clemency. And then Villalobar suddenly cried out:

"Oh, come now! It's a woman, you can't shoot a

woman like that!" (*"C'est une femme, voyons, vous ne pouvez pas fusiller une femme comme cela!"*)

The Baron paused, was evidently moved.

"Gentlemen, it is past eleven o'clock; what can be done?"

It was only von Sauberzweig who could act, he said, and they urged the Baron to go to see von Sauberzweig. Finally he consented. While he was gone, Villalobar, Gibson and de Leval repeated to Harrach and von Falkenhausen all the arguments that might move them. Von Falkenhausen was young, he had been to Cambridge in England, and he was touched, though of course he was powerless. And de Leval says that when he gave signs of showing pity Harrach cast a glance at him, so that he said nothing more, and that then Harrach said:

"The life of one German soldier seems to us much more important than that of all the old English nurses. . . ."

At last Lancken returned and standing there, announced:

"I am exceedingly sorry, but the Governor tells me that it is after due reflection that the execution was decided upon, and that he will not change his decision. . . . Making use of his prerogative he even refuses to receive the plea for mercy. . . . Therefore, no one, not even the Emperor, can do anything for you."

With this he handed my letter and the *requête en grâce* to Gibson. There was a moment of silence in the yellow *salon.* Then Villalobar sprang up and seizing Lancken by the shoulder said to him in an energetic tone:

"Baron, I insist on speaking to you!"

"C'est inutile . . ." began Lancken.

"Je veux vous parler!" the Marquis replied, giving categorical emphasis to the harsh imperative.

The old Spanish pride had been mounting in the Marquis, and he literally dragged the tall von der Lancken into the little room near by; then voices were heard in sharp discussion, and even through the partition the voice of Villalobar:

"It is idiotic, this thing you are going to do; you will have another Louvain!"

A few moments later they came back—Villalobar in silent rage, Lancken very red. And, as de Leval said, without another word, dumb, in consternation, filled with an immense despair, they came away.

I heard the report, and they withdrew. A little while and I heard the street-door open. The women who had waited all that night went out into the rain.

IX

AN EX-POST-FACTO EDICT

THE rain had ceased and the air was soft and warm the next morning; the sunlight shone through an autumn haze. But over the city the horror of the dreadful deed hung like a pall. *Affiches* were early posted[1] and crowds huddled about them in a kind of stupefaction, reading the long and tragic list down to the line that closed with a piece of gratuitous brutality:

"Le jugement rendu contre Baucq et Cavell a déjà été exécuté."

(Translation:)

"The judgment pronounced against Baucq and Cavell has already been put into execution."

---

[1] AVIS

Par jugement du 9 octobre 1915, le tribunal de campagne a prononcé les condamnations suivantes pour trahison commise pendant l'état de guerre (pour avoir fait passer des recrues à l'ennemi):

1. Philippe Baucq, architecte à Bruxelles, à la peine de mort;
2. Louise Thuliez, professeur à Lille, à la peine de mort;
3. Edith Cavell, directrice d'un institut médical à Bruxelles, à la peine de mort;
4. Louis Severin, pharmacien à Bruxelles, à la peine de mort;
5. Comtesse Jeanne de Belleville, à Montignies, à la peine de mort;
6. Herman Capiau, ingénieur à Wasmes, à 15 ans de travaux forcés;

Of the twenty-six others condemned with Miss Cavell, four—Philippe Baucq, an architect of Brussels, Louise

---

7. Epouse Ada Bodart, à Bruxelles, à 15 ans de travaux forcés;

8. Albert Libiez, avocat à Wasmes, à 15 ans de travaux forcés;

9. Georges Derveau, pharmacien à Pâturages, à 15 ans de travaux forcés;

10. Princesse Marie de Croy, à Bellignies, à 10 ans de travaux forcés.

Dix-sept autres accusés ont été condamnés à des peines de travaux forcés ou d'emprisonnement allant de 2 à 8 ans.

Huit autres personnes, accusées de trahison commise pendant l'état de guerre, ont été acquittées.

Le jugement rendu contre Baucq et Cavell a déjà été exécuté.

Bruxelles, le 12 octobre, 1915.

GOUVERNEMENT.

(Translation:)

NOTICE

By judgment of the 9th of October the military tribunal has pronounced the following condemnations for treason committed in time of war (for having led recruits to the enemy):

1. Philippe Baucq, architect of Brussels, to death;

2. Louise Thuliez, teacher of Lille, to death;

3. Edith Cavell, directress of a medical institution at Brussels, to death;

4. Louis Severin, pharmacist of Brussels, to death;

5. Countess Jeanne de Belleville, of Montignies, to death;

6. Herman Capiau, engineer of Wasmes, to 15 years at hard labour;

7. Madame Ada Bodart, of Brussels, to 15 years at hard labour;

8. Albert Libiez, lawyer of Wasmes, to 15 years at hard labour;

9. Georges Cerveau, pharmacist of Pâturages, to 15 years at hard labour;

10. Princess Maria de Croy, of Bellignies, to 10 years at hard labour.

Seventeen other accused persons were condemned to penalties of hard labour or imprisonment of from 2 to 8 years.

Thuliez, a school-teacher at Lille, Louis Severin, a pharmacist of Brussels; and the Countess Jeanne de Belleville, of Montignies-sur-Roc—were sentenced to death. Herman Capiau, a civil engineer of Wasmes, Mrs. Ada Bodart, of Brussels, Albert Libiez, a lawyer of Wasmes, and Georges Derveau, a pharmacist of Pâturages, were sentenced each to fifteen years penal servitude at hard labour. The Princess Maria de Croy was sentenced to ten years penal servitude at hard labour. Seventeen others were sentenced to hard labour or to terms of imprisonment of from two to five years. The eight remaining were acquitted.

All day long sad and solemn groups stood under the trees in the boulevards amid the falling leaves gazing at the grim *affiche*.

In one of the throngs a dignified old judge said:

"Ce n'était pas l'exécution d'un jugement; c'était un assassinât!"

Eight other persons accused of treason committed in time of war were acquitted.

The judgment rendered against Baucq and Cavell has already been executed.

Brussels, *October* 12, 1915. GOVERNMENT.

MR. WHITLOCK, American Minister in Brussels, to MR. PAGE

American Legation, Brussels, October 12, 1915.

(Telegraphic.)

Your letter of the 23rd September and my replies of the ninth and eleventh October. Miss Cavell sentenced yesterday and executed at 2 o'clock this morning, despite our best efforts continued until the last moment. Full report follows by mail.

WHITLOCK, *American Minister.*

[I was mistaken in supposing that the execution had taken place at two o'clock.]

The horror of it pervaded the house. I found my wife weeping at evening; no need to ask what was the matter. The wife of the chaplain had been there, with some detail of Miss Cavell's last hours—how she had arisen wearily from her cot at the coming of the clergyman, drawn her dressing-gown about her thin throat.

I sent a note to the Baron von der Lancken asking that the Governor-General permit the body of Miss Cavell to be buried by the American Legation and the friends of the dead girl.[2] In reply the Baron himself

---

[2] Mr. Whitlock, American Minister in Brussels, to Mr. Page

American Legation, Brussels, October 14, 1915.

My dear Colleague.—

Referring to my letter of yesterday in regard to the case of Miss Cavell, I beg to enclose herewith further correspondence in regard to my request that her body be delivered to the School for Nurses of which she was the directress.

I have not received a written reply to my note to Baron von der Lancken on the subject, but he came to see me yesterday afternoon and stated that the body had been interred near the prison of St. Gilles, where the execution took place; that under the regulations governing such cases it was impossible to exhume the body without written permission from the Minister of War in Berlin. He added that he had no authority to ask permission to exhume the body, but that immediately upon the return of the Governor-General he would request him to take the matter up.

I hope to be able to tell you that we have at last been able to accomplish this small service.

I am, &c., Brand Whitlock.

Mr. Whitlock, American Minister in Brussels, to Baron von der Lancken

Bruxelles, le 12 octobre, 1915.

Excellency,—M. Faider, Premier Président de la Cour d'Appel de Bruxelles, et Président de l'Ecole belge d'Infirmières diplômées,

came to see me in the afternoon. He was solemn and said that he wished to express his regret in the circumstances, but that he had done all that he could. The body, he said, had already been interred, with respect and with religious rites, in a quiet place, and under the law it could not be exhumed without an order from the Im-

---

me prie de reclamer, pour cette institution, le corps de Miss Cavell, qui en était directrice, et qui a été exécutée ce matin.

Le Comité s'engage, pour l'enlèvement du corps et pour la conservation de celui-ci dans un cimetière dans l'arrondissement de Bruxelles, à se conformer à toutes les mesures que l'Administration allemande jugerait utile de prescrire.

Je suis persuadé qu'aucune objection ne sera faite à cette demande, et que l'on ne refusera pas à l'institution à laquelle Miss Cavell a consacré si charitablement une partie de son existence, l'accomplissement de ce pieux devoir.

Je me permets donc d'appuyer auprès de Votre Excellence la requête de l'Ecole belge d'Infirmières diplômées, et dans l'attente de sa réponse.

Je le prie, etc., BRAND WHITLOCK.

Brussels, October 12, 1915.

YOUR EXCELLENCY,—M. Faider, First President of the Brussels Court of Appeal and President of the Belgian School of Certified Nurses, begs me to ask, on behalf of this institution, for the body of Miss Cavell, its directress, who was executed this morning.

The Committee undertakes, in the removal of the body and its burial in a cemetery in the Brussels district, to conform to all the regulations that the German authorities may see fit to make.

I feel sure that no objection will be made to this request, and that the institution to which Miss Cavell has so generously devoted a part of her life will not be denied the performance of this pious duty.

I venture, therefore, to commend to your Excellency the request of the Belgian School of Certified Nurses, and, awaiting your reply, I am, etc., BRAND WHITLOCK.

perial Government. The Governor-General himself had gone to Berlin.

And then came Villalobar; and I thanked him for what he had done. He told me much, and described the scene the night before in that ante-room with Lancken. The Marquis was much concerned about the Countess Jeanne de Belleville and Madame Thuliez, both French and hence protegées of his, condemned to die within eight days, but I told him not to be concerned; that the effect of Miss Cavell's martyrdom did not end with her death —it would procure other liberations, these among them. The thirst for blood had been slaked and there would be no more executions in that group; it was the way of the law of blood vengeance. We talked a long time about the tragedy, and about all the tragedies that went to make up the larger tragedy of the war.

"We are getting old," he said. "Life is going, and after the war, if we live in that new world, we shall be of the old—the new generation will push us aside."

Gibson and de Leval prepared reports of the whole matter and I sent them by the next courier to our Embassy at London.[3] But somehow that very day the news got out into Holland and shocked the world. Richards,

---

[3] Mr. Whitlock, American Minister in Brussels, to Mr. Page

American Legation, Brussels, October 13, 1915.

Sir,—Referring to previous correspondence in regard to the case of Miss Edith Cavell, I regret to be obliged to inform you, in confirmation of my telegram of yesterday morning, that the death sentence recommended by the prosecuting attorney was imposed by the court-martial, and that Miss Cavell was executed early yesterday morning.

I enclose herewith for your information copies of all the correspondence which I have had with the German authorities in regard

to this case, together with copies of previous letters addressed to you on the subject.

I know that you will understand without my telling you that we exhausted every possible effort to prevent the infliction of the death penalty, and that our failure has been felt by us as a very severe blow. I am convinced, however, that no step was neglected which could have had any effect. From the date we first learned of Miss Cavell's imprisonment we made frequent enquiries of the German authorities and reminded them of their promise that we should be fully informed as to developments.

They were under no misapprehension as to our interest in the matter. Although the German authorities did not inform me when the sentence had actually been passed, I learned, through an unofficial source, that judgment had been delivered, and that Miss Cavell was to be executed during the night. I immediately sent Mr. Gibson, the Secretary of Legation, to present to Baron von der Lancken my appeal that execution of the sentence should be deferred until the Governor could consider my plea for clemency. Mr. Gibson was accompanied by Maître de Leval, Legal Counsellor of the Legation, who had worked from the beginning upon the legal aspect of the case. Mr. Gibson was fortunate enough to find the Spanish Minister, and got him to accompany him on his visit to Baron von der Lancken. The details of the visit you will find in Mr. Gibson's report to me. The other papers which are attached speak for themselves and require no further comment from me.

I have, &c., BRAND WHITLOCK.

MR. HUGH GIBSON, Secretary of the American Legation in Brussels, to MR. WHITLOCK, American Minister in Brussels

Report for the Minister

American Legation, Brussels, October 12, 1915.

SIR,—Upon learning early yesterday morning through unofficial sources that the trial of Miss Edith Cavell had been finished on Saturday afternoon and that the prosecuting attorney ("Kriegsgerichtsrat") had asked for a sentence of death against her, tele-

horror. And even the Germans, who seemed always to do a deed and to consider its effect afterwards, knew that

---

phonic enquiry was made at the Politische Abteilung as to the facts. It was stated that no sentence had as yet been pronounced and that there would probably be a delay of a day or two before a decision was reached. Mr. Conrad gave positive assurances that the Legation would be fully informed as to the developments in this case. Despite these assurances we made repeated enquiries in the course of the day, the last one being at 6:20 P.M., Belgian time. Mr. Conrad then stated that sentence had not yet been pronounced, and specifically renewed his previous assurances that he would not fail to inform us as soon as there was any news.

At 8:30 it was learned from an outside source that sentence had been passed in the course of the afternoon (before the last conversation with Mr. Conrad), and that the execution would take place during the night. In conformity with your instructions, I went (accompanied by M. de Leval) to look for the Spanish Minister and found him dining at the home of Baron Lambert. I explained the circumstances to His Excellency and asked that (as you were ill and unable to go yourself) he go with us to see Baron von der Lancken and support as strongly as possible the plea, which I was to make in your name, that execution of the death penalty should be deferred until the Governor could consider your appeal for clemency.

We took with us a note addressed to Baron von der Lancken, and a plea for clemency *("requête en grâce")* addressed to the Governor-General. The Spanish Minister willingly agreed to accompany us, and we went together to the Politische Abteilung.

Baron von der Lancken and all the members of his staff were absent for the evening. We sent a messenger to ask that he return at once to see us in regard to a matter of utmost urgency. A little after 10 o'clock he arrived, followed shortly after by Count Harrach and Herr von Falkenhausen, members of his staff. The circumstances of the case were explained to him and your note presented, and he read it aloud in our presence. He expressed disbelief in the report that sentence had actually been passed, and manifested some surprise that we should give credence to any report

they had another Louvain, another *Lusitania,* for which to answer before the bar of civilisation. The lives of the

---

not emanating from official sources. He was quite insistent on knowing the exact source of our information, but this I did not feel at liberty to communicate to him. Baron von der Lancken stated that it was quite improbable that sentence had been pronounced, and that even if so it would not be executed in so short a time, and that in any event it would be quite impossible to take any action before morning. It was, of course, pointed out to him that if the facts were as we believed them to be, action would be useless unless taken at once. We urged him to ascertain the facts immediately, and this, after some hesitancy, he agreed to do. He telephoned to the presiding judge of the court-martial and returned in a short time to say that the facts were as we had represented them, and that it was intended to carry out the sentence before morning. We then presented, as earnestly as possible, your plea for delay. So far as I am able to judge, we neglected to present no phase of the matter which might have had any effect, emphasizing the horror of executing a woman, no matter what her offense, pointing out that the death sentence had heretofore been imposed only for actual cases of espionage, and that Miss Cavell was not even accused by the German authorities of anything so serious. I further called attention to the failure to comply with Mr. Conrad's promise to inform the Legation of the sentence. I urged that inasmuch as the offenses charged against Miss Cavell were long since accomplished, and that as she had been for some weeks in prison, a delay in carrying out the sentence could entail no danger to the German cause. I even went so far as to point out the fearful effect of a summary execution of this sort upon public opinion, both here and abroad, and, although I had no authority for doing so, called attention to the possibility that it might bring about reprisals.

The Spanish Minister forcibly supported all our representations and made an earnest plea for clemency.

Baron von der Lancken stated that the Military Governor was the supreme authority ("Gerichtsherr") in matters of this sort; that appeal from his decision could be carried only to the Emperor, the Governor General having no authority to intervene in such cases.

three who remained, of the five who had been condemned to death, were ultimately spared, as I had told Villalobar

---

He added that under the provisions of German martial law the Military Governor had discretionary power to accept or to refuse acceptance of an appeal for clemency. After some discussion he agreed to call the Military Governor on the telephone and learn whether he had already ratified the sentence, and whether there was any chance for clemency. He returned in about half an hour and stated that he had been to confer personally with the Military Governor, who said that he had acted in the case of Miss Cavell only after mature deliberation; that the circumstances in her case were of such a character that he considered the infliction of the death penalty imperative; and that in view of the circumstances of this case he must decline to accept your plea for clemency, or any representation in regard to the matter.

Baron von der Lancken then asked me to take back the note which I had presented to him. To this I demurred, pointing out that it was not a *"requête en grâce"* but merely a note to him transmitting a communication to the Governor, which was itself to be considered as the *"requête en grâce."* I pointed out that this was expressly stated in your note to him, and tried to prevail upon him to keep it; he was very insistent, however, and I finally reached the conclusion that inasmuch as he had read it aloud to us, and we knew that he was aware of its contents, there was nothing to be gained by refusing to accept the note, and accordingly took it back.

Even after Baron von der Lancken's very positive and definite statement that there was no hope, and that under the circumstances "even the Emperor himself could not intervene," we continued to appeal to every sentiment to secure delay, and the Spanish Minister even led Baron von der Lancken aside in order to say very forcibly a number of things which he would have felt hesitancy in saying in the presence of the younger officers and of M. de Leval, a Belgian subject.

His Excellency talked very earnestly with Baron von der Lancken for about a quarter of an hour. During this time M. de Leval and I presented to the younger officers every argument we could

they would be. The King of Spain and the President of the United States made representations at Berlin on

---

think of. I reminded them of our untiring efforts on behalf of German subjects at the outbreak of the war and during the siege of Antwerp. I pointed out that, while our services had been rendered without any thought of future favours, they should certainly entitle you to some consideration for the only request of this sort you had made since the beginning of the war. Unfortunately, our efforts were unavailing. We persevered until it was only too clear that there was no hope of securing any consideration for the case.

We left the Politische Abteilung shortly after midnight, and I immediately returned to the Legation to report to you.

HUGH GIBSON.

M. DE LEVAL to MR. WHITLOCK, American Minister in Brussels

Report for the Minister

October 12, 1915.

SIR,—As soon as the Legation received an intimation that Miss Cavell was arrested, your letter of the 31st of August was sent to Baron von der Lancken. The German authorities were by that letter requested, *inter alia,* to allow me to see Miss Cavell, so as to have all necessary steps taken for her defense. No reply being received, the Legation, on the 10th September, reminded the German authorities of your letter.

The German reply, sent on the 12th September, was that I would not be allowed to see Miss Cavell, but that Mr. Braun, lawyer at the Brussels Court, was defending her and was already seeing the German authorities about the case.

I immediately asked M. Braun to come to see me at the Legation, which he did a few days later. He informed me that personal friends of Miss Cavell had asked him to defend her before the German Court, that he agreed to do so, but that owing to some unforeseen circumstances he was prevented from pleading before that Court, adding that he had asked M. Kirschen, a member of the Brussels Bar and his friend, to take up the case and plead for Miss Cavell, and that M. Kirschen had agreed to do so.

I, therefore, at once put myself in communication with M.

behalf of the Countess de Belleville and Madame Thuliez, and their sentences were commuted to imprison-

---

Kirschen, who told me that Miss Cavell was prosecuted for having helped soldiers to cross the frontier. I asked him whether he had seen Miss Cavell and whether she had made any statement to him, and to my surprise found that the lawyers defending prisoners before the German Military Court were not allowed to see their clients before the trial, and were not shown any document of the prosecution. This, M. Kirschen said, was in accordance with the German military rules. He added that the hearing of the trial of such cases was carried out very carefully, and that in his opinion, although it was not possible to see the client before the trial, in fact the trial itself developed so carefully and so slowly, that it was generally possible to have a fair knowledge of all the facts and to present a good defense for the prisoner. This would specially be the case for Miss Cavell, because the trial would be rather long as she was prosecuted with thirty-four other prisoners.

I informed M. Kirschen of my intention to be present at the trial so as to watch the case. He immediately dissuaded me from taking such attitude, which he said would cause a great prejudice to the prisoner, because the German judges would resent it and feel it almost as an affront as if I was appearing to exercise a kind of supervision on the trial. He thought that if the Germans would admit my presence, which was very doubtful, it would in any case cause prejudice to Miss Cavell.

M. Kirschen assured me over and over again that the Military Court of Brussels was always perfectly fair and that there was not the slightest danger of any miscarriage of justice. He promised that he would keep me posted on all the developments which the case would take and would report to me the exact charges that were brought against Miss Cavell and the facts concerning her that would be disclosed at the trial, so as to allow me to judge by myself about the merits of the case. He insisted that, of course, he would do all that was humanly possible to defend Miss Cavell to the best of his ability.

Three days before the trial took place M. Kirschen wrote me a few lines saying that the trial would be on the next Thursday, the

ment, as was that of Louis Severin, the Brussels druggist. The storm of universal loathing and reprobation for the deed was too much even for the Germans.

7th October. The Legation at once sent him, on the 5th October, a letter confirming in writing, in the name of the Legation, the arrangement that had been made between him and me. This letter was delivered to M. Kirschen by a messenger of the Legation.

The trial took two days, ending Friday the 8th.

On Saturday I was informed by an outsider that the trial had taken place, but that no judgment would be reached till a few days later.

Receiving no report from M. Kirschen I tried to find him, but failed. I then sent him a note on Sunday, asking him to send his report to the Legation or call there on Monday morning at 8:30. At the same time I obtained from some other person present at the trial some information about what had occurred, and the following facts were disclosed to me:

Miss Cavell was prosecuted for having helped English and French soldiers, as well as Belgian young men, to cross the frontier and to go over to England. She had admitted by signing a statement before the day of the trial, and by public acknowledgment in Court, in the presence of all the other prisoners and the lawyers, that she was guilty of the charges brought against her, and she had acknowledged not only that she had helped these soldiers to cross the frontier, but also that some of them had thanked her in writing when arriving in England. This last admission made her case so much the more serious, because if it only had been proved against her that she had helped the soldiers to traverse the Dutch frontier, and no proof was produced that these soldiers had reached a country at war with Germany, she could only have been sentenced for an attempt to commit the "crime" and not for the "crime" being duly accomplished. As the case stood the sentence fixed by the German military law was a sentence of death.

Paragraph 58 of the German Military Code says:

"Will be sentenced to death for treason any person who, with the intention of helping the hostile Power, or of causing harm to

The *affiche* announcing the execution of the sentence against Miss Cavell was not the only one on the walls of

---

the German or allied troops, is guilty of one of the crimes of paragraph 90 of the German Penal Code."

The case referred to in above said paragraph 90 consists in:

". . . conducting soldiers to the enemy. . . ." (viz., *"dem Feinde Mannschaften zuführen"*).

The penalties above set forth apply, according to paragraph 160 of the German Code, in case of war, to foreigners as well as to Germans.

In her oral statement before the Court, Miss Cavell disclosed all the facts of the whole prosecution. She was questioned in German, an interpreter translating all the questions in French, with which language Miss Cavell was well acquainted. She spoke without trembling and showed a clear mind. Often she added some greater precision to her previous depositions.

When she was asked why she helped these soldiers to go to England, she replied that she thought that if she had not done so they would have been shot by the Germans, and that therefore she thought she only did her duty to her country in saving their lives.

The Military Public Prosecutor said that argument might be good for English soldiers, but did not apply to Belgian young men whom she induced to cross the frontier and who would have been perfectly free to remain in the country without danger to their lives.

Mr. Kirschen made a very good plea for Miss Cavell, using all arguments that could be brought in her favour before the Court

The Military Public Prosecutor, however, asked the Court to pass a death sentence on Miss Cavell and eight other prisoners amongst the thirty-five. The Court did not seem to agree and the judgment was postponed. The person informing me said he thought that the Court would not go to the extreme limit.

Anyhow, after I had found out these facts (viz., Sunday evening) I called at the Political Division of the German Government in Belgium and asked whether, now that the trial had taken place, permission would be granted to me to see Miss Cavell in jail, as

Brussels that morning. There were others, among them one that announced that a Belgian soldier, Pierre Joseph

---

surely there was no longer any object in refusing that permission. The German official, Mr. Conrad, said he would make the necessary enquiry at the Court and let me know later on.

I also asked him that permission be granted to Mr. Gahan, the English clergyman, to see Miss Cavell.

At the same time we prepared at the Legation, to be ready for every eventuality, a petition for pardon, addressed to the Governor-General in Belgium and a transmitting note addressed to Baron von der Lancken.

Monday morning at 11, I called up Mr. Conrad on the telephone from the Legation (as I already had done previously on several occasions when making enquiries about the case), asking what the Military Court had decided about Mr. Gahan and myself seeing Miss Cavell. He replied that Mr. Gahan could not see her, but that she could see any of the three Protestant clergymen attached to the prison; and that I could not see her till the judgment was pronounced and signed, but that this would probably only take place in a day or two. I asked the German official to inform the Legation immediately after the passing of said judgment, so that I might see Miss Cavell at once, thinking, of course, that the Legation might, according to your intentions, take immediate steps for Miss Cavell's pardon if the judgment really was a sentence of death.

Very surprised to still receive no news from Mr. Kirschen, I then called at his house at 12:30 and was informed that he would not be there until about the end of the afternoon. I then called, at 12:40, at the house of another lawyer interested in the case of a fellow-prisoner, and found that he also was out. In the afternoon, however, the latter lawyer called at my house, saying that in the morning he had learned from the German Kommandantur that judgment would be passed only the next morning, viz., Tuesday morning. He said that he feared that the Court would be very severe for all the prisoners.

Shortly after this lawyer left me, and while I was preparing a note about the case, at 8 P.M., I was privately and reliably informed

Claes, of Schaerbeek, a suburb of Brussels, had been condemned at Limbourg and shot as a spy,[4] and an-

that the judgment had been delivered at five o'clock in the afternoon, that Miss Cavell had been sentenced to death, and that she would be shot at 2 o'clock the next morning. I told my informer that I was extremely surprised at this, because the Legation had received no information yet, neither from the German authorities nor from M. Kirschen, but that the matter was too serious to run the smallest chance, and that therefore I would proceed immediately to the Legation to confer with your Excellency and take all possible steps to save Miss Cavell's life.

According to your Excellency's decision, Mr. Gibson and myself went, with the Spanish Minister, to see Baron von der Lancken, and the report of our interview and of our efforts to save Miss Cavell is given to you by Mr. Gibson.

This morning Mr. Gahan, the English clergyman, called to see me and told me that he had seen Miss Cavell in her cell yesterday night at 10 o'clock, that he had given her the Holy Communion and had found her admirably strong and calm. I asked Mr. Gahan whether she had made any remarks concerning the legal side of her case, and whether the confession which she made before the trial and in the Court was, in his opinion, perfectly free and sincere. Mr. Gahan says that she told him that she perfectly well knew what she had done; that according to the law, of course, she was guilty and had admitted her guilt, but that she was happy to die for her country.

G. DE LEVAL.

[4] Le gouverneur militaire de la province de Limbourg publie ce qui suit:

AVIS

Par jugement du 7 octobre 1915 du tribunal de campagne du gouvernement militaire de la province de Limbourg, lequel jugement a été confirmé hier par moi, le nommé

PIERRE-JOSEPH CLAES

de nationalité belge, né le 8 mai 1887 à Schaerbeek, près de Bruxelles, a été

other that in the Hainaut, at Mons, ninety-four workmen had been condemned to prison for having refused to work for the Germans. The terror was spread everywhere.

But two of the new announcements bore on the Cavell case. One of them, on the walls or in the newspapers before the sentence was pronounced against Miss Cavell, was a long screed of von Bissing's that made an impres-

---

condamné à la peine de mort

pour espionnage.

Claes a avoué qu'en sa qualité de soldat belge, il était venu en Belgique, habillé en civil, dans le but d'y pratiquer l'espionnage.

Le condamné a été fusillé aujourd'hui.

Hasselt, le 8 octobre, 1915.

Der Militaergouverneur der Provinz Limbourg,
KEIM, Général-Major.

Bruxelles, le 12 octobre, 1915. GENERAL-GOVERNMENT.

(Translation:)

The Military Governor of the Province of Limbourg publishes the following:

NOTICE

By judgment of the 7 October, 1915, the military court of the Province of Limbourg, which judgment was confirmed by me yesterday, one

PIERRE-JOSEPH CLAES

of Belgian nationality, born May 8, 1887, at Schaerbeek, near Brussels, has been

condemned to the pain of death

for espionage.

Claes has admitted that in his quality of Belgian soldier he had come into Belgium in civilian dress for the purpose of spying.

The condemned man was shot to-day.

Hasselt, October 8, 1915.

The Military Government of the Province of Limbourg,
KEIM, *Major-General.*

Brussels, October 12, 1915. GENERAL GOVERNMENT.

sion almost as painful as the crime it sought to justify, and enraged and humiliated the people. This statement or proclamation—prepared, no doubt, while the trial was in progress—was posted on Monday, before the judgment against Miss Cavell had been pronounced, and evidently it had been put out to prepare the public mind for the shock of the *affiche* of Tuesday morning which was to announce the murder of Miss Cavell. Its unctuous, sanctimonious tone, invariably the sign of some new outrage, the allusion to espionage, the threat of severest penalties, show that the deed had been premeditated and arranged. It showed another thing—that the offensive of the Allies had angered the Germans; and, as always, when events were not to their liking, they avenged themselves upon the helpless.

The result of the offensive of the Allies is known, that offensive so long expected on the western front [said the proclamation of the Governor-General]. The German lines resisted a violent cannonading lasting seventy hours, and the numerically superior forces of the enemy. The French have lost several hundred thousand in killed and wounded, and the English, both white and coloured, have suffered even greater losses. In spite of the enormous number of lives and the immense amount of ammunition recklessly sacrificed, the enemies of the German Empire have in no way succeeded in their aim, which is to reconquer Belgium and the north of France.

While this decisive battle was raging on the front, I have had to protect the rear of the German army against hostile manœuvres. During this time I have been obliged to combat tendencies due—as was the desperate offensive of the Allies—to a belief in a prompt re-establishment of the old order of things, and to the old and vain hopes. Certain circles which, more than any other, should have wished to aid in maintaining interior peace, have incited the minds to resistance; certain persons who have declared themselves ready to co-operate with me in re-establishing prosperity in the country, have once more lent a complaisant ear to insinuations emanating

from Havre and from London; false prophets spreading false news have won over the unfortunate credulous and have caused them to commit unlawful deeds. By false patriotism, and even more by cupidity, the Belgians have allowed themselves to become involved in a spy system which has been defeated even as has the enemy offensive.

In spite of all we have succeeded in holding at bay the sly and cowardly enemy which treacherously menaced the security of the German army. The most rigorous measures have had to be applied to those who through vain hopes have rendered themselves culpable of unlawful deeds. The facts, which speak eloquently, will themselves refute all the loud talk of victory on the part of our enemies, and of the news announcing that the German armies are evacuating the country. That which we hold, we hold well.

This last deception should serve as a lesson to the Belgians in the future and teach them no longer to place their faith so credulously in news which the following day inevitably reveals itself to be false. All those who, under my administration, are working, who are earning sufficient wages, and who have acquired the inward satisfaction of duty accomplished, must help those who are still deluded to enjoy these same benefits. The experience of the last few weeks proves that the security of the German armies is assured against the most cunningly planned plots. But the security of every-day life, which alone can heal the wounds of suffering Belgium, can be guaranteed only to those who, leaving to the soldiers the business of fighting and seconding my efforts, aid in their way the interior peace and the economic prosperity of the country. The orders that I have promulgated pursue the same end; whoever disregards them will suffer in all their severity the penalties that they enact. Those who resist my efforts must expect to undergo all the rigours of martial law; those who aid me in my task will help in the most efficacious manner their country, their compatriots, and themselves.[5]

---

[5] Nouvelles Publiées
Par le Gouvernement General Allemand

On connaît le résultat que l'offensive des alliés, cette offensive annoncée depuis si longtemps, a atteint sur le front occidental. Les

But it was the other *affiche,* which attracted no notice, or very little notice, that had the greater significance,

---

lignes allemandes ont résisté à une canonnade de 70 heures et à la supériorité numérique considérable de l'ennemi. Les Français ont eu plusieurs centaines de milliers de tués et de blessés, tandis que les Anglais, blancs et de couleur, ont subi des pertes relativement plus élevées encore. Malgré le nombre énorme des vies humaines et les immense quantités de munitions qu'ils ont sacrifiés sans ménagement, les ennemis de l'Empire allemand ne se sont rapprochés en rien de leur but, qui est de reconquérir la Belgique et la France du Nord.

Pendant que cette bataille décisive faisait fureur sur le front, j'ai eu à protéger le dos de l'armée allemande contre des manœuvres hostiles. A cette occasion j'ai été obligé de combattre des tendances dues, tout comme l'offensive désespérée des Alliés, à d'anciennes et vaines esperances, à la croyance en un prompt rétablissement de l'ancien état de choses. Certains milieux qui, plus que tout autre, devraient avoir à coeur de favoriser la paix intérieure, ont incité les esprits à la résistance; des personnes qui s'étaient déclarées prêtes à co-opérer avec moi à rétablir le bien-être dans le pays, ont prêté de nouveau une oreille complaisante aux insinuations venant du Havre et de Londres; de faux prophètes répandant de fausses nouvelles ont séduit des malheureux crédules et les ont amenés à commettre des actions criminelles. Par faux patriotisme et plus encore par cupidité, des Belges se sont laissés entraîner à un espionnage qui a abouti au même échec que l'offensive ennemie.

Malgré tout, nous sommes parvenus à tenir à l'écart l'ennemi sournois et lâche qui, perfidement, menacait la sécurité de l'armée allemande. Les peines les plus rigoureuses ont dû être appliqués sans pitié à ceux que de vains espoirs ont amenés à se rendre coupables d'actions criminelles. Les faits, qui parlent une langage éloquent, réfuteront par eux-mêmes tous les bruits de victoires de nos ennemis et les nouvelles annonçant que les armées allemandes évacuent le pays. Ce que nous tenons, nous le tenons bien.

Cette dernière déception impose aux Belges le devoir d'en tirer des enseignements quant à l'avenir et de ne plus prêter si credule-

for it stamps with the ineffaceable seal of its amazing admission the whole proceeding that did Miss Cavell to death as illegal, even according to the German code. It was a last and crowning infamy, that threw a flood of light on what might have long remained the mystery of that trial behind the closed doors of the Senate chamber —an *ex-post-facto* law or decree defining and declaring the offense for which Miss Cavell had already been tried, condemned and put to death.

In the statement of von Bissing on the "situation," which I have translated in full, there was a reference to spying—*espionnage*. It was the first time that the acts of Miss Cavell had been referred to publicly and officially as spying; but it was as "the spy Cavell" that they always referred to her thereafter. But Miss Cavell was not charged with spying; she was not convicted or sen-

---

ment foi à des nouvelles qui, le lendemain, forcément, se révèleront mensonges. Tous ceux qui, sous mon administration, travaillent, qui gagnent suffisement et qui ont su acquérir la satisfaction intérieure du devoir accompli, doivent contribuer à faire jouir des mêmes bienfaits ceux de leurs prochains qui sont encore aveuglés. L'expérience des dernières semaines prouve que la sécurité des armées allemandes est assurée contre les complots les mieux tramés. Mais la sécurité de la vie active, qui, seule, peut guérir les maux de la Belgique souffrante, ne peut être garantie qu'à ceux qui, laissant aux soldats le soin de combattre et secondant mes efforts, favorisent dans leur millieu la paix intérieure et la prospérité économique du pays. Les arrêtés que je promulgue poursuivent le même but; quiconque les enfreint subira, dans toute leur dureté, les peines qu'ils edictent. Ceux qui contrecarrent mes efforts doivent s'attendre a subir toutes les rigeurs de la loi martiale; ceux qui me secondent dans ma tâche viennent en aide, de la manière la plus efficace, à leur patrie, à leurs compatriots et à eux-mêmes.

Le Gouverneur Général.

tenced to death for spying. There was no evidence and no claim that she had been a spy. She was charged with having violated that paragraph of the German Military Penal Code which punished with death those who conducted troops to the enemy (*Dem Feinde Mannschaften zuführen*), and it was on this charge that she was convicted. To the German military mind this is "treason," and the nomenclature does not seem any the less astonishing when they qualify it by calling it "treason in time of war."

But as a matter of fact and as a matter of law, even this charge did not apply and was not sustained. Miss Cavell had not conducted any troops to the enemy; in individual cases she had aided soldiers in various charitable and humane ways, and had helped them and boys who had as yet performed no military service and never worn a uniform, to escape out of Belgium and to cross the frontier into Holland, a neutral country, where the soldiers would be interned until the end of the war and the young men have the status of citizens of any other nation. There was, indeed, no proof that any of these soldiers or these Belgian boys had joined the enemy, singly or as "troops," except, it is said, in the case of one lad who wrote and mailed a postal card to thank Miss Cavell for the aid she had rendered him, and saying that he had got to England and joined the English army. This card, it was said, was found by the German secret police, and proved to be one of the clues that led to Miss Cavell's arrest.

But even so, these men were not conducted by Miss Cavell to the enemy; the charge was—and she did not deny it—that she had given them asylum and had aided

them either by gifts of money, of food and of clothes, or by hospitality and care when they were sick.

These are not mere lawyer's quibbles; they would seem to afford sufficient reason in any English or American court for dismissing the charge on the ground of variance. And the Germans themselves recognized this fatal variance, for on that very day, the twelfth of October, after they had executed a judgment which even their own laws would not sustain, they posted the *affiche* announcing a new decree that sought to cure the defect by defining the offense for which they had already shot their frail victim, and punishing with death those who aided or harboured fugitive soldiers.

"Whoever knowingly aids, in any manner whatsoever, such a person (*i.e.*, a person who has wished to aid an enemy of Germany) in concealing his presence, whether by giving him lodging, by clothing him, or by giving him nourishment, is liable to the same punishment" (death).[6]

---

[6] Avis

Il y a encore dans le territoire du gouvernement général des personnes qui se cachent et qui ont appartenu pendant la guerre à une armée ennemie ou sont venues dans le pays sur l'ordre d'un gouvernement ennemi. Je consens à accorder l'impunité à ces personnes si elles se font connaître et se présentent volontairement à l'autorité militaire allemande dans les vingt-quatre heures; dans ce cas je me bornerai à les envoyer en Allemagne comme prisonniers de guerre. Ces personnes, si elles ne se sont pas présentées avant l'expiration du delai précité, ainsi que toutes les autres personnes qui leur viennent en aide d'une manière quelconque, entre autres en les logeant, en les habillant ou en les nourrissant, seront punies de la peine de mort ou de fortes peines de travaux forcés et d'emprisonnement en vertu de l'arrêté ci-dessous.

J'ai invité les gouverneurs à décréter des dispositions spéciales

Such was the new edict of the Governor-General, promulgated an hour or two after Miss Cavell had been

---

et des interdictions de nature à assurer la sécurité des installations importantes au point de vue militaire. Quiconque enfreindra ces interdictions s'exposera à être tué sur-le-champ.

Voici le texte de l'arrêté susmentionné:

ARRÊTÉ

concernant les personnes appartenant aux armées ennemies et les agents ennemis qui se cachent dans le pays, ainsi que les personnes qui leur viennent en aide

Article 1er.—Quiconque appartient à une armée ennemie ou a appartenu à une telle après le début de la guerre, quiconque se trouve au service d'un gouvernement ennemi ou d'une personne qui agit dans l'intérêt d'un gouvernement ennemi, sera puni de travaux forcés (à moins que d'autres lois ne prévoient une peine plus rigoureuse encore) s'il dissimule aux autorités allemandes sa présence dans le territoire du gouvernement ou s'y tient caché.

En cas de circonstances atténuantes, le peine ne pourra être inférieure à 3 mois.

Art. 2.—S'il résulte des circonstances que la personne en question a voulu favoriser une puissance étrangère ou nuire aux forces militaires de l'Empire allemand ou de ses alliés, elle sera punie de la peine de mort.

Art. 3.—Quiconque, en connaissance de cause, aide, d'une manière quelconque, une telle personne à dissimuler son séjour, entre autres en la logeant, en l'habillant ou la nourrissant, est passible des mêmes peines.

Si, dans les cas prévus à l'article 2, le complice bénéficie de circonstances atténuantes, la peine de mort pourra être remplacée par une peine de travaux forcés qui ne sera pas inférieure à 2 ans.

Art. 4.—Quiconque connaît le séjour d'une des personnes désignées à l'article ler et n'en prévient pas immediatement une autorité militaire allemande, sera puni d'une peine d'emprisonnement; quiconque, dans un tel cas, a su que les circonstances prévues à l'article 2 existaient en réalité, sera puni de travaux forcés ou d'une peine d'emprisonnement qui ne pourra être inférieure à 6 mois.

shot, to cure a defect in the process that had condemned her.

Art. 5.—Ne seront pas punies les personnes désignées aux articles 1er et 2 qui se trouvent dans le territoire du gouvernement général et se présentent volontairement à l'autorité militaire dans les vingt-quatre heures à l'affichage public du présent arrêté.

Bruxelles, le 12 octobre, 1915.

Le Gouverneur Général en Belgique, Baron von Bissing, Général-Colonel.

(Translation:)

Notice

There are still in the territory of the General Government persons who are in hiding and who have belonged during the war to an enemy army, or who have come into the country under the orders of an enemy Government. I consent to accord impunity to these persons if they make themselves known, and if they present themselves voluntarily to the German military authorities within twenty-four hours; in this case I shall limit myself to sending them to Germany as prisoners of war. These persons, if they do not present themselves before the expiration of the prescribed time, as well as all other persons who aid them in any manner whatsoever, whether by giving them lodging, by clothing them or by nourishing them, will be punished with death or with hard labour and imprisonment, by virtue of the order hereinunder.

I have asked the Governors to decree special provisions and prohibitions of such a nature as to assure the safety of important installations important from a military point of view. Whoever disregards these prohibitions will expose himself to death on the spot.

The following is the text of the above-mentioned order:

Order

concerning persons belonging to enemy armies and enemy agents who are hiding themselves in the country, as well as persons who aid them.

Article 1.—Whoever belongs to an enemy army, or has belonged to such since the beginning of the war, whoever is in the employ of an enemy Government or of a person who is acting in the inter-

ests of an enemy Government, will be punished with hard labour (unless other laws provide a punishment even more severe) if he conceals his presence from the German authorities in the territory of the Government, or keeps himself hidden therein.

In case of extenuating circumstances the punishment shall not be less than three months.

Art. 2.—If circumstances should prove that the person in question has wished to aid a foreign Power, or to harm the military forces of the German Empire, or of its allies, he will be punished with death.

Art. 3.—Whoever knowingly aids in any manner whatsoever such a person in concealing his presence, whether by giving him lodging, by clothing him, or by giving him nourishment, is liable to the same punishment.

If, in the cases provided in Article 2, the accomplice profits by the extenuating circumstances, the penalty of death may be replaced by the punishment of hard labour for a period of not less than two years.

Art. 4.—Whoever knows of the presence of such persons as are mentioned in Article 1 and does not immediately warn the German military authorities of them, will be punished with imprisonment; whoever, in such case, has known that the circumstances envisaged by Article 2 have actually existed will be punished with hard labour, or by imprisonment for a period of not less than six months.

Art. 5.—The persons designated in Articles 1 and 2 who are in the territory of the General Government will not be punished if they present themselves voluntarily to the military authorities within twenty-four hours of the public posting of this order.

Brussels, 12 October, 1915.

The Governor General in Belgium, Baron von Bissing, Colonel-General.

X

MISS CAVELL'S LAST NIGHT

Our rector, Mr. Gahan, whose services and sacrifices during all those sad and brutal times were consoling to so many, was the last representative of her own people to see Miss Cavell. He had gone from the Legation to the prison of St.-Gilles, and his wife was among the waiting women on that night at the Legation. Mr. Gahan was with Miss Cavell all that evening, and though they would not let him be with her at the very last, it is the one ameliorating circumstance of the tragedy that the German chaplain was kind.

When Mr. Gahan arrived at the prison that night Miss Cavell was lying on the narrow cot in her cell; she arose, drew on a dressing-gown, folded it about her thin form, and received him calmly. She had never expected such an end to the trial, but she was brave and was not afraid to die. The judgment had been read to her that afternoon there in her cell. She had written letters to her mother in England and to certain of her friends, and entrusted them to the German authorities.

She did not complain of her trial; she had avowed all, she said—and it is one of the saddest, bitterest ironies of the whole tragedy that she seems not to have known that all she had avowed was not sufficient, even under German law, to justify the judgment passed upon her. The German chaplain had been kind and she was willing

for him to be with her at the last, if Mr. Gahan could not be. Life had not been all happy for her, she said, and she was glad to die for her country. Life had been hurried, and she was grateful for those weeks of rest in prison.

She had no hatred for any one, and she had no regrets; she received the sacrament.

"Patriotism is not enough," she said, "I must have no hatred and no bitterness toward any one."

Those, so far as we know, were her last words. She had been told that she would be called at five o'clock. . . . At six they came and the black van conveyed her and the architect Baucq to the Tir National—where they were shot. Miss Cavell was brave and calm at the last, and she died facing the firing squad—another martyr in the old cause of human liberty.

In the touching report that Mr. Gahan made there is a statement—one of the last that Edith Cavell ever made—which in its exquisite pathos illuminates the whole of that life of stern duty, of human service and martyrdom.[1]

---

[1] *Report by* Mr. Gahan, *British Chaplain in Brussels.*

On Monday evening, the 11th October, I was admitted by special passport from the German authorities to the prison of St.-Gilles, where Miss Edith Cavell had been confined for ten weeks. The final sentence had been given early that afternoon.

To my astonishment and relief I found my friend perfectly calm and resigned. But this could not lessen the tenderness and intensity of feeling on either part during that last interview of almost an hour.

Her first words to me were upon a matter concerning herself personally, but the solemn asseveration which accompanied them was made expressly in the light of God and eternity. She then added that she wished all her friends to know that she willingly gave her life for her country, and said: "I have no fear nor shrink-

She said that she was grateful for the six weeks of rest she had just before the end. During those weeks she had read and reflected; her companions and her solace were her Bible, her Prayer Book and the Imitation of Christ. The notes she made in these books reveal her thoughts in that time and will touch the uttermost depths of any nature nourished in that beautiful faith which is at once so tender and so austere. The Prayer Book, with those laconic entries on its fly-leaf in which she set down the sad and eloquent chronology of her fate, the copy of the Imitation which she had read and

---

ing; I have seen death so often that it is not strange or fearful to me." She further said: "I thank God for this ten weeks' quiet before the end." "Life has always been hurried and full of difficulty." "This time of rest has been a great mercy." "They have all been very kind to me here. But this I would say, standing as I do in view of God and eternity: I realize that patriotism is not enough. I must have no hatred or bitterness towards any one."

We partook of the Holy Communion together, and she received the Gospel message of consolation with all her heart. At the close of the little service I began to repeat the words "Abide with me" and she joined softly in the end.

We sat quietly talking until it was time for me to go. She gave me parting messages for relations and friends. She spoke of her soul's needs at the moment and she received the assurance of God's Word as only the Christian can do.

Then I said "Good-bye," and she smiled and said "We shall meet again."

The German military chaplain was with her at the end and afterwards gave her Christian burial.

He told me; "She was brave and bright to the last. She professed her Christian faith and that she was glad to die for her country." "She died like a heroine."

H. Stirling T. Gahan,
British Chaplain, Brussels.

marked during those weeks in prison—weeks which, as she so pathetically said, had given her rest and quiet and time to think in a life that had been "so hurried—" and the passages noted in her firm hand, all have a deep and appealing pathos.

Just before the end she wrote a number of letters; she forgot no one. Among the letters that she left was one addressed to the nurses of her school, and there was a message for a girl who was trying to break herself of the morphine habit. Miss Cavell had been trying to help her, and she sent word telling her to be brave, and that if God would permit she would continue to try to help her.

It was on October 10, 1915, already doomed to death, that Miss Cavell wrote the letter to her nurses. The letter was in French, for all the nurses were Belgian girls, and in it, after expressing the sorrow she felt in bidding adieu to her pupils, she wrote of the joy she had had in being called on September 17, 1907, to organize at Brussels the first school of graduate nurses in Belgium. At that time nursing had not been made a science in Belgium as it had been in England and in America; the graduate nurse was unknown. Dr. Depage, one of the leading physicians in Belgium—one of the leading physicians, indeed, in the world—had been anxious that such a school be founded, and it was through his inspiration and that of his wife that the school was made possible. They succeeded in interesting in the project a number of influential men and women in Brussels, Antwerp, Bruges, Liége and Mons; a society was formed, and Madame Ernest Solvay gave to the school the sum of 300,000 francs, with which was built the model hospital and training school for nurses that stands now

in the Rue de Bruxelles in Uccle. The building had fifty rooms for nurses and thirty rooms for patients, study halls, theatres for operations, and represented the ideas of Dr. Depage, of Madame Depage, and of Miss Cavell. The building was completed in the month of May, 1915 —the very month that Madame Depage went down on the *Lusitania,* and five months before Miss Cavell was killed—and by the operation of the old ironic rule of life, neither of the two women most concerned ever saw established in it the school they had founded. Miss Cavell, in organizing and establishing this school, encountered very real difficulties in those first years, for, as she says in her letter, *"tout était nouveau dans cette profession pour la Belgique."* She was evidently a woman of great force of will and of nervous energy; she had a high intelligence and a profound character, and she succeeded. She established the school, she established nursing in Belgium, and her name and that of Madame Depage, both victims of German frightfulness, will ever be associated with the institution at Brussels.

The letter, with its stern command of emotion and feeling, though all the while deep down there is an affection that somehow fears to express itself, sounds the profound depths of the Anglo-Saxon nature, and it somehow sums up the character that made a noble and devoted life. When one thinks that there in her cell behind the grim walls of the prison of St.-Gilles this frail woman sat down and in a firm hand, and in a foreign language, almost without a fault, wrote such a letter as this, one understands something of her nature. She gives a glimpse of the difficulties she had to overcome in order to found her school in a peculiarly conservative *milieu* where all was new and strange. She

remembers some of the obscure but tragic conflicts that were going on in the souls of those whom she was directing. She had been a strong disciplinarian, a self-contained nature, which she had completely mastered sternest always with herself; and in asking those girls, who may not always have understood her, to forgive what they may have considered her severity, she ends with the touching confession that she loved them more than they knew.[2]

---

[2] Prison de St. Gilles

Mes chères Neurses:

C'est un moment très triste pour moi quand je vous écris pour vous faire mes adieux. Il me fait rappeler que le 17 septembre a vu la fin des huit ans de mon direction de l'Ecole. J'étais si heureuse d'être appelée à aider dans l'organisation de l'oeuvre que notre comité venait de fonder. Le 1 octobre de l'année 1907 il n'y avait que 4 jeunes élèves, maintenant vous êtes déjà nombreuses, en tout entre 50 et 60, je pense, comptant celles qui sont diplomées et qui ont quittées l'Ecole.

Je vous ai raconté à differents reprises ces premiers jours et les difficultés que nous avons rencontré, jusque dans le choix des mots pour vos heures "de service" et "hors de service," etc.; tout était nouveau dans la profession pour la Belgique.

Peu à peu un service après l'autre a été établi—les infirmières diplomées pour soigner dans les maisons particulières—les infirmlères scolaires—l'hopital St.-Gilles. Nous avons desservi L'Institut du Dr. Depage, le sanatorium de Buyssingham, le clinique du Dr. Mayer et maintenant beaucoup sont appelées (comme vous serez peut-être plus tard) à soigner les braves blessés de la guerre.

Si cette dernière année notre ouvrage a diminué la cause se trouve dans le triste temps par lequel nous passons, dans les jours meilleurs notre oeuvre reprendra sa croissance et toute sa puissance pour faire du bien. Si je vous parle du passé c'est parce qu'il est bien quelque fois de s'arrêter pour contempler le chemin que nous avons traversé et pour nous rendre compte de nos erreurs et de notre progrès.

She left several other letters, one for her mother in England, that were turned over to the German authori-

---

Dans votre belle maison vous aurez plus de malades et vous aurez tout ce qu'il faut pour leur comfort et le vôtre.

A mon regret je n'ai pas pu toujours vous parler beaucoup en particulier; vous savez que j'ai eu assez d'occupations, mais j'espère que vous n'oublierez pas nos causeries du soir. Je vous ai dit que le dévouement vous rendrez un vrai bonheur,—et la pensée que vous avez fait devant Dieu et vous-mêmes votre devoir entièrement et de bon coeur sera votre plus grand soutient dans les mauvais moments de la vie et en face de la mort.

Il y a deux ou trois de vous qui rappellerez les petits entretiens que nous avons eu ensemble; ne les oubliez pas. Etant déjà si loin dans la vie j'ai pu voir peut être plus claire que vous et vous montrer le chemin droit. Un mot encore. Mẽfiez-vous du médisance. Puis-je vous dire—aimant votre pays de tout coeur—que c'est la grand faute ici. J'ai vu tant de malheurs depuis ces 8 ans qu'on aurait pu éviter ou amoindrir si on n'avez pas soufflé un petit mot par ci par là, sans peut être mauvais intention—mais qui a ruiné le réputation, le bonheur, même la vie de quelqu'un. Mes neurses ont toutes besoin de penser de cela et de cultiver parmi elles la loyauté et l'esprit de corps.

S'il y a une de vous qui à un grief contre moi je vous prie de le me pardonner; j'ai été peut-être quelque fois trop sévère mais jamais volontiers injuste, et je vous ai aimé toutes beaucoup, plus que vous ne croyez.

Mes souhaits pour le bonheur de toutes mes jeunes filles autant à celles qui ont quitté l'Ecole qu'à celles qui s'y trouvent encore et merci pour la gentillesse que vous m'avez toujours témoigné.

Votre directrice dévouée,

10 Oct., 1915. EDITH CAVELL.

(Translation:)

PRISON OF ST.-GILLES

My dear Nurses:

It is a very sad moment for me when I write to make my adieus to you. It calls to my mind the fact that the 17th September was the

ties to be delivered, but they were never delivered. Again and again I asked for them, begging to be allowed to

---

end of eight years of my direction of the school. I was so happy to be called to aid in the organization of the work that our committee had just founded. The 1st October of the year 1907 there were only four young students; now we are already numerous—between 50 and 60 in all, I believe, counting those who have received their diplomas and have already left the school.

I have told you on various occasions of those first days and of the difficulties that we encountered, even in the choice of words for your hours "on duty" and "off duty," etc.; all was new in the profession in Belgium.

Bit by bit one service after another was established—graduate nurses to nurse in private houses, student nurses, the St.-Gilles Hospital. We helped in the Institute of Dr. Depage, the sanatorium of Buyssingham Buysinghen, the clinic of Dr. Mayer, and now many are called (as perhaps you will be later) to nurse the brave men wounded in the war.

If in this last year our work has diminished, the cause is found in the sad time in which we live. In better days our work will resume its growth and all its power to do good. If I speak of the past it is because it is well sometimes to stop and look over the road that we have traversed and to take account of our mistakes and of our progress.

In your beautiful house you will have more patients and you will have all that is necessary for their comfort and your own.

To my regret I have not been able always to speak very much with you personally; you know that I have had a good many occupations, but I hope that you will not forget our evening chats. I told you that devotion would give you real happiness—and the thought that before God and yourselves you have done your entire duty with a good heart will be your greatest comfort in the hard moments of life and in the face of death.

There are two or three of you who will recall the little interviews that we have had together; do not forget them. Being already so far along in life, I have been able perhaps more clearly than you to show you the straight path. One word more. Beware of gossip!

send them to England to comfort the aged and sorrowing mother, but they refused to give them over. They said that if I were to send them to England they would be published abroad and another sensation created that would react against the German cause. I was able later to give them my word that they would not be published, that they would remain the sacred secret of the mother for whom they were intended, but no, they would not give them up—the military would not consent. But the officer in whose keeping they were did have the grace to say to me finally:

"I wish I might give them to you; they are a very sad and uncomfortable charge for me to keep."

And may I say to you—loving your country with all my heart—that that is the great fault here. I have seen so much evil during these 8 years that could have been avoided or lessened if there had not been a little word whispered here and there, perhaps not with bad intention—but it ruined the reputation and happiness, even the life of some one. My nurses should think of that and cultivate among themselves loyalty and *esprit de corps*.

If there is one among you whom I have wronged I beg you to forgive me; I have been perhaps too severe sometimes but never voluntarily unjust, and I have loved you all much more than you thought.

My best wishes for the happiness of all my girls, those who have left the school as well as those who are there still, and thank you for the kindness that you have always shown me.

Your devoted directress,

10 Oct., 1915. EDITH CAVELL.

XI

THE REACTION

WHY was Miss Cavell singled out among the others as the one to be shot at dawn on the morning after condemnation? Why, if justice, even rude military justice, were being done, were not all shot who had been condemned to death? Why this signal distinction, this marked and tragic discrimination? Because Edith Cavell was English; that was her offense. And so they slew her, those generals with stars on their breasts and iron crosses, bestowed for bravery and gallantry—slew the nurse who had cared for their own wounded soldiers. They could not even await the unfolding of their own legal processes; they could not wait even the few days they had allotted to the Countess de Belleville, to Madame Thuliez, or to Severin, the Belgian, although the Countess and Madame Thuliez, if all that is now known of the complot and the trial is true, were as deeply involved as Miss Cavell. They had been associated in a conspiracy, if the word may be employed, to aid British soldiers to escape; the only fact that saved the Princess de Croy was her declaration that after the men reached Brussels she did not know what became of them. But *Messieurs les militaires* must hide their intentions, perhaps even from their own colleagues in the Government of occupation, and shuffle their frail victim out by stealth in the night, like midnight garroters and gunmen, be-

cause she was English. The armies of Great Britain were just then making an offensive, and it was partly in petty spite for this, partly an expression of the violent hatred the Germans bore everything English, the savage feeling that had been fostered and kept alive and fanned into a furious flame by historians and Herr Professors and Herr Doktors and Herr Pastors, and editors with their editorials and harangues and hymns of hate, that they did what they did. It was in that spirit that they pronounced their judgment secretly in her prison cell and hurried her out and slew her before dawn and another day should come in which the voice of pity and of humanity could get itself heard. They could not wait for that, and they would not disturb von Bissing there at his game of bridge in the château at Trois Fontaines.

We were told that, according to the German law, whatever that may mean, it was only the Military Governor in the jurisdiction in which the so-called crime had been committed who had the power to receive or to grant a plea for mercy. I do not know as to that; German military law seems to be whatever *Messieurs les militaires* are moved at the moment to call it. Von Sauberzweig said that he alone had the power to receive our plea for mercy, or even to grant a few hours' delay; he accepted the responsibility.

Baucq, the Brussels architect, was shot that morning because it would have been too bald, too patent, even from the Prussian viewpoint, to hurry out a woman all alone and kill her. And so it was Baucq's sinister luck to be chosen for a fate that might have been no worse than that of Severin, or the others whose lives were saved. Poor Baucq has not been often mentioned in connection with this tragedy. He was no less illegally con-

demned, no less foully done to death, but his fate was swallowed up in the greater horror of the assassination of his companion of that tragic dawn at Etterbeek. He left a wife and two children. One of them was a little girl of twelve who, several days after, went to a neighbor's and asked if she might come in and be alone for a while.

"I wish to weep for my father," she said, "but I do not like to do it before Mamma; I must be brave for her."

There were heroisms even among the Belgian children.

Miss Cavell, as I have said, did not deny having aided British soldiers and Belgian lads by giving them food and clothing and lodging and money. The thirty-four who were tried were said to be concerned in a combination of wide extent—more than seventy persons were said to be included in it—to help men over the frontier into Holland. More than seven thousand young men, it was said, had gone out during the months of June, July and August.

Miss Cavell was ideally situated to aid such patriotic work. Her nursing home offered an exceptional *pied à terre.* The Germans had apparently convinced themselves, at least, that among the seventy whom they had arrested they had the ringleaders of a formidable organisation and that they had undone the knot of the conspiracy that had been carrying on so extensively the work of recruiting for the Allied armies. They determined to break it up, and they employed their favorite weapon—*fürchterlichkeit.* What would make a deeper impression on the mind, or instill greater fear in the hearts of the people, than to take a woman out and shoot her—this calm, courageous little woman with the

stern lips and the keen grey eyes that were not afraid? And then she was English—the unpardonable offense.

It is possible that the men at the Politische Abteilung did not know, that Monday afternoon, that the judgment had been pronounced. *Messieurs les militaires* had an affair in hand, and they had set their hearts on carrying it out; and they may not have told them at the Politische Abteilung, may have kept the truth from their colleagues, or, with that contempt they always had for the civil department of government, may have warned them to keep their hands off. It may be that the Political Department did not care, or did not dare, to interfere. If the military party had deceived or ignored them, they, of course, in the solidarity and discipline that binds all Germans, would not have given that fact as an excuse. The excuse they did give was that Maître de Leval had led the American Legation into error, and that, anyway, even if Conrad had told Maître de Leval what he did tell him, neither Conrad nor Maître de Leval had any diplomatic quality, and that therefore the German authorities had not deceived the American Legation. The first excuse is not founded on fact, the second rests upon a distinction too trivial to give it any moral or legal value. Maître de Leval did not lead us into error; Conrad did tell him and did tell Topping, either honestly believing what he said or having been instructed to say—it must be one or the other—that no judgment had been rendered, when, as a matter of fact, that judgment had been rendered hours before.

There is a curious variance between the statements of the Germans that I have never been able to explain. The *affiche* of the German Government which announced the death of Miss Cavell begins: *"Par jugement du 9*

octobre" ("By judgment of the 9th October"). This statement as to the time of the rendition of the judgment is opposed to all the declarations made by the Germans to representatives of the Legation. Miss Cavell's trial took place on October 7, 8 and 9, and on the 11th de Leval, Gibson and Topping, who made inquiries, were informed that the judgment had not yet been pronounced and would not be pronounced for several days. The judgment or the final and formal judgment, was not pronounced until the 11th, at 4:30 in the afternoon in the prison of St.-Gilles, and hours afterward Conrad again said that it had not been pronounced and would not be pronounced for a day or two. Either the *affiche* is mistaken or the officials at the Politische Abteilung were mistaken, or the phrase *"Par jugement du 9 octobre"* means something else in the German mind than it does in our minds. If the judgment was rendered on October 9, then the action of the Germans is even more odious than ever, and could be explained on no hypothesis consistent with honourable conduct, for if the judgment were rendered on October 9, as the official announcement of the German Government states, then their verbal communications to the Legation of the 11th were unspeakable in their cynical disregard of facts. I am of the opinion that the judgment was rendered on October 11 and that the statement in the *affiche* is inexact, or else the action of the 9th was in the nature of a verdict and that of the 11th in the nature of a death sentence.

There were many stories of how the Princess and the Countess and Miss Cavell and the others were betrayed: there was the tale of the post-card sent to Miss Cavell by the boy whose indiscreet gratitude betrayed his bene-

factor; there was another that would have it that there was a lad, a messenger somewhere down in the Borinage, who, angry because his pay was not at once forthcoming, betrayed his employers. And only lately I heard a fantastic tale to the effect that one of the accused was a somnambulist who talked in his sleep, and that the Germans, as always, strong on science and modern methods, hypnotized him and so obtained the facts. The story is hardly sufficient for our Anglo-Saxon notions of evidence, and others claimed that the explanation was somewhere to be found in another dark tragedy which some months later shocked that Brussels so accustomed to tragedy.

In the letter that Miss Cavell wrote to her nurses there is a reference to the evil of gossip that is of immense significance; not only were happiness and reputations destroyed by idleness, she says, but life itself sacrificed. It is not for me, or any one, to penetrate the sacred precincts of the brave soul of Edith Cavell in that solemn hour, but the references may have been, in part at least, due to the fact that she found herself condemned to death because of some unrestrained and indiscreet tongues that had betrayed her.

"It is no small prudence to keep silence in an evil time," she wrote in her copy of the Imitation—the most pathetic, perhaps, of all the lines she wrote, and the nearest expression of anything like reproach that she ever made.

I shall refer to that other tragedy in its place, but for us at the American Legation there was a sequel a week later. I had had Gibson's and de Leval's reports sent over to the American Embassy at London, and there they were turned over by our Ambassador to the For-

eign Office and given out to the press for publication. They were published far and wide—and in consequence the *Rotterdamsche Courant* and the other Dutch newspapers were not allowed on sale in Brussels that next day. The closing of the frontier to newspapers was an invariable sign, well known in Brussels, that the Germans were not satisfied with the state of things, and we soon heard that the authorities were very angry and had even intimated that the Governor-General "might have to send all the diplomats away in consequence." It was, of course, the policy of terrorization transferred to the diplomatic field, but it was a menace that held few terrors for us. Our situation was not enviable.

The Germans had a copy of the London *Times* over at the Politische Abteilung, with our reports spread out in full through all its broad columns, and were greatly agitated. Even little Conrad, much moved, had exclaimed to Villalobar:

"Ils m'ont mis dedans!"

"Très bien," said the Marquis, *"vous êtes devenu fameux, un des gros bonnets de l'Europe."*

Then we heard that the German rage was especially directed against de Leval for having made a report at all, and that they threatened to send him to a concentration camp in Germany. That was on Saturday, the 23rd. I was convalescing; my physician had told me that I might go to work again, and I had made an appointment to see the Baron von der Lancken on the following Monday to discuss *la reprise du travail*—an appointment that had been postponed several times already by my illness. It was raining heavily when Monday came, and Dr. Derscheid came to give me a *piqûre* and to tell me not to go out; but I went.

The Baron von der Lancken, pink from his morning ride, booted, with his Iron Cross and other ribbons, the white cross of St. John on his side, and a large dossier under his arm, received me with a dark, glowering face, asked me upstairs to his little workroom where a fire was burning, and when seated he began solemnly:

"Je suis très peiné d'être obligé de vous faire la communication que . . ."

And then he went on to say that the diplomats had remained in Brussels by courtesy of the Germans, that the publication of my report in the Cavell case was a great injustice to Germany and a breach of diplomatic etiquette, that our Legation was furnishing an arm to England, Germany's enemy, that it was an unneutral act, etc. All these observations and others like them were conveyed in phrases that were diplomatically correct, but in the manner of conveying them there was an evident feeling and I know not what of irritation and resentment that revealed or reflected the temper of *Messieurs les militaires,* smarting, no doubt, under the sting of that universal opprobrium which had surprised them with its lash, and of course trying in their rage to shift the blame for a deed the consequences of which they had apparently been unable to foresee. It was, as I have already reported, a habit, I might almost say a policy of theirs, to open discussions that involved their manners and morals in a way that was intended to put their opponent or their interlocutors at once in the wrong, and I interrupted the Baron, then, and he adopted a less emphatic tone.

"Let us talk the matter over unofficially and in a friendly way, and try to reach some conclusion," he said.

This was better, and we discussed the case in all its bearings. He had copies of the *Times* and of the *Morning Post* before him, marked with red and blue pencils. His objections, it soon developed, were not to the report so much as to the fact that the report had been published, though by reason of what he alleged as misstatements in de Leval's report he himself had been accused of having broken his promise. He said that I officially, as American Minister, had not made frequent inquiries, that it was de Leval who had spoken to Conrad, and that neither de Leval nor Conrad had any diplomatic quality. What he wished then, at the end, was that I express regret at the publication and that de Leval instantly be dismissed from the Legation; otherwise he could not be responsible for what would happen to him. Already the military had threatened to arrest and report him.

To this I replied that I was responsible for de Leval and for his actions, and that I would not dismiss him, and that my Legation would be his asylum if any effort were made to molest him.

"You don't think me capable of throwing him to the wolves and letting this Sauberzweig eat him alive!" I exclaimed.

And as for regrets, I said that I would not express any, nor make any statement unless instructed by my Government so to do. We talked calmly and frankly perhaps as never before, both recognizing in our conversation the fact that the relations between our Governments were still strained over the *Lusitania* case. We spoke of the *ravitaillement,* and the danger involved to it in any disagreement; but even so, I said, rather than seem to shirk any responsibility or to abandon de

Leval, I should prefer to withdraw from Belgium. At this he protested, begged me not to mention such a thing, suggested that Villalobar join the discussion—to which I consented of course, with pleasure—and we parted, to meet again that afternoon. And in the end he shook hands twice and inquired solicitously about my health.

At three o'clock that afternoon, in the yellow *salon* downstairs, the Baron and the Marquis and I met, and Baron von der Lancken outlined the whole subject again; on the table before him were copies of the London newspapers, with the *Graphic,* or some illustrated journal, containing my portrait and one of Villalobar—the Marquis in a yachting-cap, at Cowes—thirty years before, he said with a sigh.

Baron von der Lancken's tone made it clear that they were especially bitter against de Leval. He said that de Leval was *persona non grata* and that his presence compromised our neutrality. I told him that of course if de Leval was *persona non grata* he could be eliminated, though not as a punishment, and only after communication with Washington.

We talked all afternoon—a terrible afternoon. I was weary and depressed—weary of the long strain, weary of negotiations in French of all accents, and I was still seedy and under the horror of that awful night. The cold rain was falling in the park. . . . The Baron was anxious and even insistent that I make a statement in writing, that would absolve the German authorities by admitting inaccuracies in the report made by de Leval and express regret at its publication; he had a sheet of paper and pencil ready to write it all down. But I declined to make such a statement or any statement

or to authorize any expression in the nature of an excuse, a disavowal or a regret.

So it was left. Van Vollenhoven was waiting to join us in the discussion of the *reprise du travail.* He came in and I hurried the business through; every one, indeed, was tired except van Vollenhoven, and possibly Villalobar, who seemed never to get tired.

The next day Baron von der Lancken went to Munich. The Governor-General had gone to Berlin. The President and the King of Spain had made appeals to the Government at Berlin on behalf of the Countess of Belleville and Mademoiselle Thuliez, and Villalobar and I felt that their lives were saved, at any rate. And Severin, who was a freemason, had friends who were working in his behalf. Some one brought to the Legation and committed to my care Miss Cavell's Prayer Book, with its touching entries,[1] written in her own hand, firmly, that last night, with the verses of Scripture that had

---

[1] *Notes in Miss Cavell's "Imitation of Christ"*

p. 124. *It is no small prudence to keep silence in an evil time.*

Chapter XXIX, p. 125, and Chapter XXX, p. 126.

Psalm XXX. Into thy hands I commend my spirit, for thou hast redeemed me, O Lord, thou God of truth.

502 p. 'Twas the last watch of night,
Except what brings the morning quite
When the armed angel, conscience-clear,
His task nigh done, leans o'er his spear
And gazes on the earth he guards
Till God relieves him at his post.

170 p. So shalt thou keep one and the same countenance always with thanksgiving, both in prosperity and in adversity, weighing all things with an equal balance.

58 p. Man considereth the deeds but God weigheth the intentions.

given her comfort, and then, last entry of all—written while she was yet alive and life still pulsing within her, when, in a world otherwise ordered, long years of de-

---

36 p. Thou must pass thro' fire and water before thou come to the place of refreshing.

22 p. Occasions of adversity best discover how great virtue or strength each one hath.

108 p. Without a combat thou canst not attain unto the crown of patience.

102 p. Grant me above all things that can be desired to rest in Thee and in Thee to leave my heart at peace.
Thou art the true peace of the heart; thou its only rest; out of Thee all things are hard and restless. In this very peace that is in Thee, the one Chiefest Eternal good, I will sleep and rest. Amen.

62 p. Be pure and free within and entangle not thy heart with any creature.

54 p. It were more than just that thou shouldest accuse thyself and excuse thy brother.

(Notations in Miss Cavell's Prayer Book:)

Arrested 5 Aug., 1915
Prison de St. Gilles 7th Aug. 1915
Brussels
Court martialed, 7th Oct. 1915
" " 8 " "
Condemned to death, 8th Oct.
In the Salle des Députés at 10.30 A.M.
(h.a.)
with 7 others. (The accused numbered
in all 70 of whom 34 were present
on these 2 dates.)
Died at 7 A.M. on Oct. 12th, 1915
E. Cavell
With love to
E. D. Cavell

voted service might have been hers—the legend, the epitaph that need not yet have been:

"Died at 7 A.M. on Oct. 12th, 1915."

There were a few francs and a few precious trinkets, all her poor little belongings. And yet—how vast, how noble, how rich an estate!

The modest English nurse whose strange fate it was to be so suddenly summoned from the dim wards of sickness and of pain to a place among the world's heroes and martyrs will have, in happier, freer times, her monument in Brussels; some street or public place will bear her name, the school she founded will be called after her, and continue her mission of healing in the earth. And when the horror of her cruel and unjust fate shall have faded somewhat in the light of its emergent sacrifice, the few lines she wrote and the simple words she spoke as she was about to die will remain to reveal the heights that human nature may attain, and to sanctify a memory that will be revered as long as faith and honour are known to men.

XII

THE VON SAUBERZWEIG RÉGIME

THE doctor had been there again that Wednesday morning with his *piqûres*. My motor, like every other institution in the world, was broken down, and I had not been out of doors. I had been working on a despatch, trying to inform Washington of all those complicated events. I was still under the horror of it all, and depressed, and after dinner that evening Miss Larner sent up word that a cipher cablegram had come. There is a certain nervous suspense about a cipher telegram, especially when one is used to receiving so much bad news; the words, the phrases come forth so slowly, with such long and painful pauses, while the clerks rustle the leaves of the code, turning them over and scowling and finally writing down some absurd *non sequitur*. . . .

There was a diplomat, a Minister I used to know, who received one night a cipher despatch, and one by one the words came forth:

"You—are—promoted——"

His heart began beating wildly. . . .

"—an—ambassador——"

He was all radiant; it was the moment for which he had been waiting and working for so many years, the supreme moment of his career. What would the next cipher groups say? Would it be London or Paris or Rome or Washington?

But I forgot; the despatch, of course, was in French:

"Sa Majesté me donne pour ordre d'informer Votre Excellence qu'Elle est avancée au grade d'Ambassadeur——"

And, as I was saying, he hung on the next word. When it came it was:

"Honoraire——"

Only Honorary Ambassador, then! And the calm groups disclosed their cruel fate:

"—and retired from the service."

This night, then, with none but the most confused notions of what the world was thinking and saying of the Cavell case, we deciphered the despatch, and it proved to be from Mr. Lansing, and, like all his despatches, most thoughtful, generous and kind:

> The Department learns that your health is not good and realizing the responsibility and the strain under which you have been working, informs you that if you so desire you may take advantage of the leave of absence to which you are entitled and visit the United States. The manner in which you have discharged your duties is highly appreciated.

There are not many moments in a man's life like that; far better than all the *piqûres* in the world!

I went up those three flights of stairs at the jump—and the doctors say that one should not do that after one is forty-five. But to see America! That land where men know liberty and love truth and honour and respect women, where there are courts and laws and orderly processes and the traditions of the liberties of a thousand years; where the Dark Ages exist only in books to be read by the fire on winter nights, when one is weary of the manuscript on the table—that land where, in Ib-

sen's impressionistic and all-embracing phrase, "a freer air blows over the people."

My Government had not learned from me that I was ill; the news had got over into Holland and had been published at The Hague. I should never have asked for leave, and now, with that perversity that is implicit in human nature, when it had come unasked I could regret that I no longer felt the need of it.

And I could not leave just then. That very next morning there was another *affiche* on the walls, among *les Nouvelles Publiées par le Gouvernment Allemand.* It was an amazing *affiche,* in view of my interview with Baron von der Lancken, but we were beyond amazement by that time. This was the *affiche:*

Brussels, October 27:

The Ambassador of the United States at London has placed at the disposition of the English Government papers relating to the Cavell affair. These papers include the correspondence on the subject of the trial exchanged between the Legation of the United States at Brussels and the German authorities in that city. The English Government immediately gave these documents to the Press and had them published by Reuter's Agency. They reported the most essential facts in an inexact manner. They made it appear, especially, that the German authorities had, by false promises, put off the United States Minister and kept him ignorant of the fact that the death sentence had already been pronounced, and, by proceeding rapidly with the execution, to prevent him from intervening in favour of the accused.

In the comments published at the same time on this subject, Sir Edward Grey considers particularly reprehensible the fact that the German authority did not respect its engagement to keep the United States Minister informed of the progress of the trial. Such a promise was never given by the German authority, which, consequently, could not have broken its word. The Minister of the United States in Brussels, in the course of an interview with the German

authority, himself recognized that such was the case. The Ambassador of the United States in London has been misinformed; he has been led into error by the report of a Belgian lawyer who, in his quality of legal adviser to the American Legation in Brussels, has played a certain part in this affair. The United States Minister has declared that the publication of the documents in question had greatly surprised him, and that without delay he would apprise his colleague in London and his Government of the differences existing between the actual facts and the story published in the report written by the Belgian lawyer.[1]

---

[1] The French text:

Bruxelles, 27 octobre:

L'ambassadeur des Etats-Unis à Londres a mis à la disposition du gouvernement anglais des pièces relatives à l'affaire Cavell. Ces pièces se rapportent à la correspondance échangée au sujet de ce procès entre la légation des Etats-Unis à Bruxelles et les autorités allemandes de cette ville. Le gouvernement anglais a livré aussitôt ces documents à la presse et les a fait publier par l'agence Reuter. Ils reproduisent les faits les plus essentiels d'une manière inexacte. Ils font surtout supposer que les autorités allemandes ont, par de vaines promesses, fait patienter le ministre des Etats-Unis pour lui laisser ignorer que la condamnation à mort eût été déjà prononcée et, en procédant rapidement à l'exécution, l'empêcher d'intervenir en faveur des condamnés.

Dans les commentaires publiés également à ce sujet, sir Edouard Grey considère comme particulièrement répréhensible le fait que l'autorité allemande n'a pas respecté son engagement de tenir le ministre des Etats-Unis au courant de la marche du procès. Une telle promesse n'a jamais été donnée par l'autorité allemande qui, par conséquent, n'a pu manquer à sa parole. Le ministre des Etats-Unis à Bruxelles, au cours d'un entretien avec l'autorité allemande, a reconnu lui-même qu'il en était ainsi. L'ambassadeur des Etats-Unis à Londres a été mal informé; il a été induit en erreur par les rapports d'un jurisconsulte belge qui, en sa qualité d'avocat-conseil de la légation américaine à Bruxelles, a joué un certain rôle dans cette affaire. Le ministre des Etats-Unis a déclaré que la publication des documents en question l'avait fort surpris et qu'il instruirait

It made its sensation. There were some who came to see me about it, and they added to the difficulty of the situation because they wished me to begin issuing statements and placarding *affiches* myself, to *"opposer le dementi le plus formel,"* on the walls of Brussels. I trust that I was patient with them and recognized them as belonging to that order of mentality which thinks that the truth is affected by statements concerning it, and that only he is in the right who has the last and the loudest word. An old bit of epigrammatic philosophy came to my mind; I used to keep it on the wall of my office when I was mayor, to show to reporters: Elbert Hubbard wrote it, or found it somewhere; it sounds like a modern version of Emerson's advice about apologies:

> Never explain; your friends do not require it and your enemies will not believe you anyway.

Perhaps my friends did not quite understand it, because it does not adapt itself any more readily to translation into their language than it seemed to accord with their customs—which still embrace the *code d'honneur.* What I kept uppermost in my mind and before my eyes then, as during all those months and years in Belgium, was the *ravitaillement.* Explanations, and especially denials of German statements, could wait, but not the seven million hungry mouths.

"Mais," they would say, *"de Leval."*

They were troubled about the reflections the Germans had made on de Leval's veracity. It would seem

---

sans retard son collègue de Londres et son gouvernement des différences existant entre les faits réels et leur exposé dans le rapport écrit de l'avocat belge.

that German official statements should have been estimated at their proper value in Belgium in that time, and by the vast majority of people they were—by nearly all, indeed, except the few fatuous *naifs.* The Germans had tried to make the world believe, and by innuendos and suggestions they had tried to make it appear that I had said—when I had refused to make and had not made any statement whatever—that de Leval had misled me, that the published report was inexact; whereas it would seem quite needless to say that de Leval had not misled me and that the report was wholly and meticulously accurate, and that if it erred at all it was on the side of generosity. I do not know who was responsible for the *affiche;* Lancken had gone to Munich. And I was troubled about something more important in de Leval's case just then—namely, his liberty—perhaps, as was conceivable, his very life. The Germans had concentrated all their anger on him; there were threats of arrest, of imprisonment, of deportation. The Maître himself took it all calmly enough, but I felt that it would not be safe for him to remain in Belgium. I longed to see him away, and so reported to Washington.

It was a difficult moment in which to adjust such delicate matters. A thick cloud of terror, of hate, the emanation of the abominable deed, had settled over the town. Von Sauberzweig had a new *affiche* on the walls before which groups of people stood aghast.

On the Sunday before that awful Monday of the tragedy an aeroplane of the Allies had flown over Brussels. Marie had come up to my sick room to tell me. She had seen the aeroplane; there had been *un grand monde* on the Avenue de Tervueren; *"il filait à travers les coups de feu; il payait d'audace, mais on ne l'a*

pas atteint; il s'est échappé—tout petit, tout petit, comme un moineau!"

Then on that Monday another aviator, it was said, had dropped bombs on Berghem, where there was a hangar for the Zeppelins, though some said it was at Jette near by, where asphyxiating-bombs were said to be manufactured. The city was excited until the tragedy of the Cavell case overwhelmed all other thoughts, and thus the aviators were forgotten by the Belgians, but not by the Germans, and the new *affiche* recalled to the Belgians those aerial visitors. The *affiche* menaced the population with reprisals if the Allies' aviators threw any more bombs near Brussels, urged people to spy on each other, and threatened to lodge troops on the inhabitants, to escape which inconvenience the city of Brussels had to pay so many million francs the year before. The *affiche* announced that the promise not to quarter troops would be "annulled." [2]

---

[2] The French text:

Avis

1. Presque journellement, dans les divers quartiers de la ville, on découvre des armes et des munitions, bien que les habitants aient, à différentes reprises, reçu l'ordre de les remettre à l'autorité allemande. J'ordenne encore une fois que toutes les armes et toutes les munitions désignées dans l'avis du 10 janvier 1915, de Son Excellence le gouverneur général, soient remises aux autorités compétentes, à moins que leurs détenteurs n'aient reçu une dispense spéciale des autorités allemandes.

Si, après le 25 octobre 1915, des habitants sont encore trouvés en possession d'armes ou de munitions du genre susmentionné, je serai porté à croire qu'elles sont destinées à être employées contre les autorités et les troupes allemandes. Si la conduite du détenteur est considérée comme trahison commise pendant l'état de guerre, il sera passible de la peine de mort ou de 10 ans au moins de travaux

The population, as it had been at all times, was dignified, self-possessed, and calm, under this new affront. As a result of the *affiches* of the twelfth of October Bel-

---

forcés. On appliquera aussi l'arrêté 1er octobre de Son Excellence le gouverneur général concernant la défense de cacher des explosifs. En outre, toute commune dans le territoire de laquelle on trouvera, après le 25 octobre 1915, des armes ou des munitions prohibées, se verra imposer une contribution de guerre pouvant aller jusqu'à 10,000 mark pour chaque cas.

2. Dans les derniers temps, des aviateurs ennemis ont, à diverses reprises, choisi comme but de leurs attaques des bâtiments occupés par des soldats allemands. Il est hors de doute que l'emplacement de ces bâtiments et leur occupation par des soldats allemands ont été signalés à l'ennemi par des habitants. Toute la population est responsable d'une telle manière d'agir, car, ne fût-ce que dans leur propre intérêt, les habitants ont l'obligation de se surveiller les uns les autres. Si donc les aviateurs ennemis attaquent encore des bâtiments occupés, ainsi que les soldats que les occupent, je serai obligé afin de surveiller de plus près les habitants de l'agglomération bruxelloise et d'empêcher l'espionnage, de loger des troupes allemandes dans des maisons particulières. *Dans ce cas, la promesse, faite autrefois, de ne pas loger d'officiers ni de soldats allemands chez des particuliers sera annulée.*

Cette promesse sera également retirée si, après le 25 octobre 1915, des armes ou des munitions prohibées (voir premier alinéa) sont encore trouvées en possession de certains habitants de l'agglomération bruxelloise.

Bruxelles, le 16 octobre, 1915.

VON SAUBERZWEIG,
Général-major.

(Translation:)

NOTICE

1. Almost daily in various quarters of the city there are discovered arms and ammunition, although the inhabitants have on different occasions been ordered to turn them in to the German authorities. Once more I order that all arms and ammunition designated in His Excellency the Governor-General's notice of the 10th

gian soldiers and French soldiers presented themselves by the hundreds at the Rue de Meridien, and were sent off to Germany. Many of them had been *réformés* after having been wounded, and had returned to Belgium in

---

January be turned in to competent authorities, unless their holders have received a special permit from the German authorities.

If, after October 25, 1915, any inhabitants are still in possession of arms and ammunition of the kind above mentioned I shall be forced to believe that they are intended to be used against the German authorities and troops. If the conduct of the holder is considered to be treason in time of war he will be punished with the pain of death or with at least 10 years at hard labour. His Excellency the Governor-General's warning of October 1st concerning the prohibition of hiding explosives will also be enforced. Furthermore, each commune in whose territory is found, after October 25, 1915, prohibited arms or ammunition, will have imposed upon it a contribution of war of not more than 10,000 marks in each case.

2. Enemy aviators have recently on several occasions chosen as the object of their attack buildings occupied by German soldiers. There is no doubt that the location of these buildings and the fact of their occupation by German soldiers is signalled to the enemy by the inhabitants. The entire population is responsible for such conduct because the inhabitants are under obligation to watch one another, if only in their own interest. Therefore, if the enemy aviators attack the occupied buildings again, or the soldiers who occupy them, I shall be obliged, in order to watch more closely the inhabitants of Greater Brussels and to prevent espionage, to lodge German troops in private houses. *In this case the promise made before not to lodge German officers or soldiers in private houses will be annulled.*

This promise will be similarly annulled if, after the 25th October, 1915, forbidden arms or munitions (see statement above) are still found in the possession of certain inhabitants of Greater Brussels.

Brussels, October 16, 1915.

VON SAUBERZWEIG,
Major-General.

response to the invitation of von Bissing; many of the French had set up little shops, were in business in a small way, trying to reorganize their lives. And thus there was another broken vow, another promise "annulled."

The gossips of the town would have it just then that von Bissing was no longer the real power in Belgium, and that he had gone to Berlin to have von Sauberzweig removed. The gossips knew no more than gossips usually do, but if they were not well informed the same might be said of the Germans, who depended upon their spies for what they knew. I suppose it would do no very great injustice to the spies and informers in any service to say that they find what they think their employers wish them to find, and the German ranks were recruited from German *apaches,* who obtained most of their information from Belgian *apaches.* The Germans in authority, always obsessed by the fear of spies and plots and conspiracies, did not understand the Belgians, their life, or their character. They could not understand the communal organization of Belgium, or the communal pride. I was told, for instance, that when M. Lemonnier, the Burgomaster, went to see General von Sauberzweig he was ordered to speak in German, a language M. Lemonnier did not know. In such circumstances the régime that seemed to be established coincidentally with the arrival of General von Sauberzweig, whose début was the Cavell case, and with these new and harsh measures following on, caused many to fear that the population might be pushed to the verge of revolt.

I never met General von Sauberzweig, and I would not do him an injustice. He was described to me as a

tall, very powerful, and very handsome man, agreeable to meet and quite human. Perhaps he was as good as he looked. I say only that these things were coincidental with his advent to the tremendously influential post of Military Governor in Brussels. Whoever may have been responsible, the terror and gloom of his régime affected the whole atmosphere of Brussels.

The Germans were just then in that nervous state that always accompanied any important military movement. The great autumn offensive had its reaction on their nerves. There were not so many officers as there had been swanking along the boulevards, and there were none dashing about the city in snorting motor-cars. They were all at the front, and petrol and rubber were growing scarce. The war was not the joy-ride it had been a year before.

Those still at the comfortable rear—and Brussels was a post much sought after—were justifying their employment by redoubled activity. They made perquisitions everywhere; even the delegates of the C. R. B. were not spared. One afternoon two German spies made a raid on the apartment of Mr. Lewis Richards and Mr. Robinson Smith in the Rue St. Boniface. The two men were away and the concierge was forced by the two spies to open the apartment. The concierge sent word to the Legation, and Gibson went with Richards, told the agents what he thought of them, and then urged them to search. They turned everything upside down and, to their evident regret, found nothing. The indignities to which the Germans from time to time subjected our delegates were very great, and yet not one of all the scores who had been there had ever been de-

tected, by Americans or Germans, doing a wrong or incorrect thing.

I have spoken of the theatres, those of the lower order, that had sprung up to afford entertainment for the Germans—for no self-respecting Belgian would attend. They gave for the most part low *revues* that appealed to the underworld and to those who mentally and morally were of the underworld. But even the miserable actors—who, poor things, had to make a living some way—were ill-treated for their efforts to entertain their oppressors. At the Winter Palace two *soi-disant* comedians were giving impersonations: one of them put a red handkerchief to his throat as though it were a cravat, to impersonate Lobargy, of the Comedié Française; this done, he threw his red handkerchief on the floor and began to thrust a white napkin up his sleeve after the fashion of André Brulé, then tossed the napkin on the stage; then he took off his black coat and threw that on the floor; and then he and his partner boxed, and as they did so they stepped, of course, on the three articles, black, white and red, thus discarded. German officers complained at headquarters, that they had trampled the German colours under foot, and the actors were duly punished.

At the Théâtre des Galeries a little theatrical company was playing a French detective piece, a dramatization of that poor French imitation of Sherlock Holmes known as Arsène Lupin. The action of the play was supposed to be contemporaneous, and the actors wore such costumes as they could procure, those of the style—if it could be called a style—of 1917. In a trial scene the judge asks:

"Quand est-ce que le premier vol a été commis?"

And one of the personages answers:

"Il y a trois ans, au mois d'août, 1905."

The actor who was playing this part thought that to be dressed in costumes of 1917 and to say "three years ago, in 1905" involved a solecism that offended his artistic sensibilities, and he had a brilliant idea. One night he replied spontaneously:

"Il y a trois ans, au mois d'août, 1914."

There were Germans present, of course, and as a result the play was suspended, the actors fined, and the theatre dark.

But there were instances of nobler suffering. I heard of two French officers, in an aeroplane, who had to descend in the province of Limbourg. They went to the home of a teacher, from him borrowed civilian clothes, and in them made their way to the Holland frontier, near Maestricht; there they were arrested by the Germans and taken before the Kommandant. He would have them shot as spies, but they told him that they had come within the enemy's lines not as spies, but as officers in uniform, described the accident to their aeroplane, and offered—if he would give his word of honour not to punish the man who had helped them—to take him to the school and there show him their uniforms. The Kommandant gave his word of honour not to do anything to the professor, and went with them. They showed their uniforms and made their case—and the professor was condemned by the Germans to ten years at hard labour.

Not one of those autumn days, with their thick fog, that did not bring forth its instance of injustice suffered, sometimes quick and dramatic, sometimes slow and in agony long endured.

It was so with Le Jeune, the barber. They came one morning to tell me of his end. He had come a short while before to sell me some engravings, almost the last of his possessions. Then a little later he came to say that the Germans were pursuing him. I had sent him away with a word of reassurance—rather casually, I fear now. They told me that he had had a *crise de folie* a few nights before. For some time he had had the illusion of persecution; he thought every man's hand was against him and that the Germans were about to take him to the Kommandantur. Then suddenly one night he sat up in bed, with burning, staring eyes, and pointing his finger into the darkness where he beheld some horror, he cried:

"Oui, oui! Sont là! Ils commencent! Ils commencent!"

"Quoi?" asked his wife.

"L'échafaud! L'échafaud! Ils ne peuvent pas me tuer; Il faut chercher le Ministre; Qu'il me protège!"

The startled wife got up, called a policeman, a kindly Belgian, who assured Le Jeune that he would go with him to find me, and so took him to l'Hôpital St.-Jean. The physicians the next day said that his condition was hopeless and he was taken to an asylum.

Poor Le Jeune! His case was obscure enough, and with nothing of the heroic in it, save as there was a touching heroism in the cases of all those Belgians who anonymously suffered. He was no less a victim of the war, one of those countless thousands whose lives were brought prematurely to an end by the sheer horror of it. It was another instance of war's extravagant waste of human life. And who shall compute the waste of life even among those who lived on, and yet who saw

life slipping by all unfulfilled? But then it seems that such things must be in this world, in order that Emperors may have glory and their dynasties immortality in printed books called histories.

XIII

HOMEWARD BOUND

One morning in the Rue de Trèves, there before the Legation, I saw Horace Fletcher, in a great buff overcoat, cream-coloured hat on his white hair, and a large yellow autumn-leaf in his mouth. He was methodically fletcherizing the stem of the brilliant autumn leaf, deriving therefrom I know not what sustenance, but at sight of me he removed it from his mouth, having come for a talk. He was very enthusiastic about the feeding of Belgium and anxious to go back to America to create sentiment for another Christmas ship for the children. He had found himself in Brussels at the beginning of the war and had worked as a member of the C. R. B. as an expert in food values, and while I should hardly be justified in saying that he had convinced the Belgians that if they would fletcherize their food they would make it go farther, he had rendered the C. R. B. many valuable services. The Belgians preferred to hooverize their food—to use the verb which has been made of the name of another American. However, his visit put in my mind again the thought that had been lurking there ever since that kindly cablegram had been deciphered that night when I had felt that I could go no farther.

There was still much to do, and the situation had this difficult character: that one incident was hardly disposed of before another had developed. We were all

near the breaking-point; Villalobar was just then having a terrible time trying to save the lives of a Spaniard and a French woman condemned to death at Liége. Those dark days of soft, fine rain were surcharged with sorrow; I have the memory of the crowds of humble faces in the black of the universal mourning, streaming along the roadside under the dripping poplars toward the cemetery in the edge of the town on All Saints' Day. But I have happier memories, too, as of that evening when Dr. Derscheid said that since I could not go to Mont Doré for the cure, as in other circumstances he would have advised, he would prescribe music, and he himself provided it in the most delightful form by bringing the Quatuor Zimmer to the Legation to play for us. We made an intimate little group, and had a satisfaction almost royal in the situation while they played such things as Beethoven's *quartuor Op. 18, No. 6, Si b majeur,* and the *scherzo* and the *andante* of Debussy's *premier quatuor,* and a bit by the Russian Borodine.

Indeed, the kindness of those Belgian friends seemed ever to increase in the proportion that their own sorrows increased. Their gratitude was almost embarrassing at times; once I admired a painting in a gentleman's *salon*—the next day it arrived at the Legation with the gentleman's compliments! And it seemed almost a desertion to go away, even for a little holiday, when the others could have no holiday. When I spoke of it to Villalobar he said at once:

"Go;" and then he shook his head sadly, and said:

"Life is hard."

I speak of these little personal things in the effort to make clear how very close suffering brought us; it made of Belgium almost a nation of comrades.

Finally there came a telegram from Washington approving of my suggestion in regard to de Leval's difficulties, and I arranged the passports that permitted him to go to Holland, whence he was to cross to England.

It was of the inveterate irony of things that newspapers outside should have chosen that very moment to print sensational statements that the Germans wished to have me out of Belgium and away from Brussels. The Baron von der Lancken showed them to me and added that he wished to state officially that there was no ground for such statements; and when I told him that I was going home for a little vacation he hesitated a moment, then asked frankly if my going had anything to do with—the little difficulty of a few days before. It had not, as I told him. Then a few days later, my passes and *au revoir.*

Even if one does not need a vacation, and prepares to take one, one will need it after the ordeal of getting ready to go. Those November days were full of preparations, but a morning came—grey, overcast and cold, when, after the farewells of the *chers collègues,* we drove away from the Legation and out of Brussels and to Vilverde, between fields obscured by the silvery fog that rolled over them, and along the familiar road to Malines and to Antwerp, halted by sentinels at each town. After Antwerp, the flat, monotonous Campine Anversoise—sand and stunted pine-woods recalling on every hand pictures by Courtens—and on to Campenhout, the first outpost of the frontier. We were halted and our papers examined and *viséd;* a few rods further on we were halted again by the familiar red flag and a bar across the road, the first of the controls. The bar was raised and a soldier waved us on, the bar was let down behind

us and another let down before, and thus imprisoned, a red-headed sous-officier took our papers, went into a little shack, like those in the far West, of wood and tarred paper; he was gone a long time, telephoning, signing, and otherwise regulating and regimentating. But when he came out he smiled and saluted; the telephone from von der Lancken at the Politische Abteilung had been before us and worked its wonders. We turned then down a lonely broken road in a barren, sandy, tragic waste of country, overgrown with scrubby pines, and drove along the frontier with its three high fences of wire—the two outer barriers of barbed wire, but the middle higher than the others, far more forbidding, with its gleaming wires stretched taut on insulators, wires that had dealt their deadly bolts to many a brave Belgian lad. The grey soldiers patrolling the long lines of wire looked at us with their usual suspicion until we turned northward again toward the frontier, to be halted at the wires in a lonely wood where the sentinel was building himself a little rustic *guérite* of the branches of pine-trees. On the electric wires beside the double gates of this barrier there was a sign, with a zig-zagging symbol of lightning over the warnings it gave in German, Dutch, Flemish and French, that the wires were charged with electricity—*"haute tension"*—and then, with the lack of humour that distinguishes the Germans, unless it were a humour as grim as the warriors who employed it, the words *"danger de mort. . . ."*

The sentinel gave us back our papers, opened the gates, and we drove through, a young officer in puttees smoking a cigarette saluting us from the door of a little cottage in the woods. Surely this was all—we must be in Holland, but no, we were halted again at Esschen,

where there was a custom-house and German sentinels and the German flag, and across the line the Dutch flag, and two Dutch soldiers in their dark grey uniforms chatting with the German sentry across the line. When at last the sous-officier brought out our papers and saluted stiffly, and when I had distributed the last of my cigars to the German and Dutch soldiers, we rolled across the line and into Holland.

And then, suddenly, out of that grey, lowering sky, the sun burst forth and bathed all that lovely Holland scene in golden light. We were strangely moved. It was with a sense of calm, of peace, of repose, such as I had never known, that we rolled over the smooth roads along the dykes, with the windmills and the pretty homesteads, and Dutch soldiers on bicycles or walking with girls, joking, laughing, having a prodigious holiday. We loitered over our luncheon in the little inn at Rozendael; every one was interested in Mieke, my wife's faithful little Pekinese dog, and a Dutch maid, astounded as Marie talked to the intelligent little thing, said in all seriousness:

"Kan zy praten?" ("Can she talk?")

The sun was going down across the low fields and stars were gleaming in the clear sky as we drove onto the ferry at Noerdyk to cross the Hollandsch Diep to Dordrecht, and so at last to reach Rotterdam, strange and bewildering, with its streets ablaze with electric lights, its shops all open, and tram cars and taxis and happy people, engaged in homely, common tasks of thronging the sidewalks in careless freedom, laughing and singing, coming and going and doing as they pleased, just as if there were no Germans in the world. It quite overwhelmed us for a moment; it was so strange,

so wonderful, to see a city full of free people, living normal lives. And I realized with a shock how soon and easily one loses the use and habit of liberty; and then I inhaled rapturously that air of Holland, heavy, moist, with the odours of shipping and the sea, but free—for three centuries and a half, free!

It was too late and we were too tired to drive on that night to The Hague, where Dr. van Dyke was awaiting us. We went to a hotel, and all that night and far into the next morning I slept, and slept, and slept.

XIV

BACK IN BRUSSELS

After a month in America we were back in Brussels, as I had announced that I should be, the second week in January, and there seemed to be an added warmth in our welcome because it had been assumed that I had gone to return no more. No one in this old and disillusioned and cynical Europe ever believes anything a diplomatist says, but seeks in his utterances every meaning save that which they would seem to have been framed to convey. M. Lemonnier, the Burgomaster, called the next morning after our arrival, and the look in his eyes was of that surprise which I read in the eyes of all I met. The newspapers at Brussels were not permitted to publish the fact of my return; the notices they wrote were sent back with the blue pencil of the German censor drawn through them. But there I was, at any rate, and for many reasons glad to be back in Brussels.

The daughter of the old bookseller in the Rue de Tulipe, when I went to see what new old editions of the French masters had been relinquished by private libraries during my absence, stared at me with wide, sceptical eyes.

"Monsieur le Ministre!" she cried. *"Est-ce vrai!"*

"Oui."

"Et Monsieur le Ministre est à Bruxelles de nouveau?"

"Evidemment, puisque vous me voyez ici."

But though I had been away so short a time, there were changes. Old M. Lamertin, the bookseller in the Montagne de la Cour, had passed away during my absence, and Le Jeune, the barber, who had been taken to an asylum for the insane during those dark days of October, had died there. And to make up the arrears one had to learn who had been sent to prison or deported. In that respect Brussels had not changed; perhaps the city was a little sadder, that was all. The Military Governor had "annulled," as he had threatened to do, the promise that had been made to the city in the convention of 1914 not to quarter troops on the inhabitants,[1] and a new contri-

[1] Avis

En me référant à mon avis du 16 octobre dernier, je porte à la connaissance du public que des armes et des munitions ont encore été trouvées après le 25 octobre dans divers quartiers de l'agglomeration bruxelloise.

D'autre part, il a été constaté officiellement que les attaques des aviateurs ennemis contre les hangars et champs d'aviation allemands des environs ont été déterminés, facilités et favorisés par les indications de certains habitants de l'agglomeration bruxelloise.

Ainsi que je l'avais fait prévoir, la promesse donnée jadis de ne pas loger des troupes allemandes dans les habitations particulières est donc annulée. Pour autant que les mesures militaires le permettront, les soldats seront tout d'abord logés dans les maisons appartenant à des Belges ayant quitté le pays ou à des nationaux des Etats en guerre avec l'Allemagne.

Bruxelles, le 12 novembre, 1915.

Le Gouvereur Général en Belgique,
Baron von Bissing,
Général-colonel.

bution had been imposed on the city.[2] The Governor-General had levied on the Belgian population a new contribution of war of 40,000,000 francs per month, and there had been the usual number of persons shot or im-

(Translation:)

NOTICE

Referring to my notice of October 16 last, I bring to the knowledge of the public that arms and munitions have again been found, since October 25, in various quarters of Greater Brussels.

On the other hand it has been officially stated that the attacks of enemy aviators on the hangars and German flying fields in the vicinity have been guided, facilitated and aided by signals from certain of the inhabitants of Greater Brussels.

As I had given warning, the promise given before not to lodge German troops in private homes is therefore annulled. As far as military exigencies will permit the soldiers will be lodged first in houses belonging to Belgians who have left the country or to citizens of States at war with Germany.

Brussels, November 12, 1915.

The Governor-General in Belgium,
BARON VON BISSING,
Colonel General.

[2] CONTRIBUTION DE GUERRE

Ordre du gouverneur-général en Belgique, en date du 10 novembre, 1915, contresigné par le commandant supérieur de la IV^e armée, duc Albert de Wurtemberg.

Conformément à l'article 49 de la Convention de La Haye concernant la réglementation des lois et usages de la guerre sur terre, il est imposé à la population belge une contribution de guerre de 40 millions de francs par mois, payable jusqu'à nouvel ordre comme quote-part aux frais d'entretien de l'armée et aux frais d'administration du territoire occupé.

L'administration allemande a le droit d'exiger que les mensualités soient payées, en tout ou en partie, en argent allemand, calculé au change de 80 marks pour 100 francs.

Le paiement de la contribution est à charge des neuf provinces belges, qui en sont responsables comme débitrices solidaires.

prisoned at hard labour for "treason in time of war."

And there had been another tragedy—a sequel, it was said, to the Cavell case. There was a young Belgian, the son of a retired officer in the Belgian Army; he bore an honoured Belgian name of which he had proved himself so unworthy as to sell himself as a spy to the Ger-

---

La première mensualité devra se payer le 10 décembre, 1915, au plus tard, les mensualités suivantes, au plus tard, le 10 de chaque mois à la caisse de l'armée de campagne (Feldkreigskasse) du gouvernement général impérial à Bruxelles.

Si les provinces, pour se procurer les fonds nécessaires, doivent émettre des obligations, la forme et la teneur en seront déterminées par le commissaire-général impérial des banques en Belgique.

(Translation:)

CONTRIBUTION OF WAR

Order of the Governor-General in Belgium, dated November 10, 1915, countersigned by the superior commandant of the IVth Army, Duke Albert of Wurttemberg.

In conformity with Article 49 of the Convention of The Hague concerning the regulation of the laws and customs of land warfare, there is imposed on the Belgian population a contribution of war of 40 million francs per month, payable until further notice, as their share of the expense of the upkeep of the army and of the administration of the occupied territory.

The German Administration has the right to demand that these monthly payments, in whole or in part, be made in German money, calculated at the rate of 80 marks for 100 francs.

The payment of the contribution is the charge of the nine Belgian provinces, that are responsible for it as a single debtor.

The first monthly payment must be made on December 10, 1915, at the latest, the following payments, at the latest, on the 10th of each month, to the treasurer of the occupying army of the imperial General Government at Brussels.

If the provinces, in order to obtain the necessary funds, must issue obligations, their form and tenor will be determined by the imperial Commissioner-General of Banks in Belgium.

mans. It was he, so people said, who had betrayed Miss Cavell. One morning his body was found lying in the street, a bullet in the heart. Over the deed there hung the mystery of a profound and impenetrable silence. The Germans were piqued because the assassins were not at once discovered, and there were threats of fining the city 500,000 marks if justice was not immediately done. But no Belgian could be found, it seemed, who knew anything about the affair, and no one, in speaking of it, seemed to evince the horror and regret that such a deed should excite, though there was, in the gossip of the town, a universal sympathy for the old officer, the father of the recreant youth who had brought such shame upon his house.

But where death was so common such things were soon forgotten, and I had not been back in town two days before we had word from the German authorities that they proposed to seize certain food, and a message from London threatening the cessation of the *ravitaillement* altogether. Thus the situation seemed to be normal, the atmosphere familiar, and things in Belgium going on precisely as they had done before.

When Villalobar and I had an interview with the Baron von der Lancken the threat of seizure of food proved not to be so serious as the use of the word implied; what the Governor-General intended was to seize food that had been obtained fraudulently or in contravention of his orders, and to solve that problem we had only to suggest that the unfortunate word *saisir* be replaced by a term less likely to be misconstrued in the press of other lands.

The summons from London, however, was more serious. The *ravitaillement* of Belgium had not always had

the unanimous approval of Germany's enemies: there remained in certain formalistic minds the old preoccupation of The Hague conventions, according to which it was the duty of the occupying Power to assure the feeding of the population; and there were still those who did not hesitate to say that a hungry population in Belgium would render Germany more odious and increase her military difficulties. There were, too, never-quieted suspicions of the Germans; it was constantly being alleged that they seized the food and fed it to their soldiers. And when all these objections were answered, or in some way overcome, the claim was made that even if the Germans did not seize the food-stuffs imported by the C. R. B., they derived an indirect benefit by their own use of indigenous products of Belgian soil. It was to meet this objection that we had secured, in the previous summer, the guarantees that the Belgian crops would be reserved for Belgian consumption. And now another charge was made against the Germans—namely, that they profited by the seizure of Belgian cattle.

There was much, indeed, in the claim. Day after day, along the avenues of Brussels herds of kine went lowing to the slaughter, and some were diverted to German uses. I used to stand looking out of my window in the Rue Belliard watching the herds driven by on their way to the *abattoir,* bellowing in I know not what presentiment of the tragic fate, a sickening spectacle of the incorrigible cruelty that is so implicit a part of life, one kind devouring the other—that ceaseless and remorseless warfare between the species on this planet by which German philosophers, themselves not yet having attained that development in which the imagination could at least conceive of a better order, could justify

in profound scientific theses the German intention to devour Belgians, Frenchmen, Russians and, above all, Englishmen, and, in the end, when the visible supply of these gave out, Americans as well.

Many a German had explained this law to me, some of them Doctors of Philosophy, who ought to know everything, showing how every great nation was the result of countless contests between small States and peoples that ultimately, under this power, became great States and nations. Lombardy and Tuscany and Venice and Naples had been made into Italy; Normandy and Brittany and Picardy into France; England had absorbed Scotland and Wales and Ireland; Prussia had overcome Bavaria and Austria; even America had united a number of smaller States to make a nation, and, as they invariably liked to predict in their persistent, cynical misunderstanding of us, was about to seize others. And now that the peoples of the world had been thus far united, the process of agglutination must go on; Spain and France and England had had their day; it was Germany's turn. There was not in their minds anywhere, it appeared, a solitary ray that could reveal by its light any higher motives, any higher ideal, any higher law.

"And the process must go on?" I asked.

"Yes."

"Then what will become of Germany in the end?"

I can see the gilt epaulettes move in the shrug of the officer's shoulders.

"Some day," he said, "another people will devour us, perhaps the Russians, perhaps the Chinese, perhaps the Japanese—*qu'est-ce que je sais, moi!*"

He shrugged his shoulders again and sighed. Then,

with a sudden air of relief, as though he would be well out of it all by that time, he added:

"But that will not be for a hundred years. . . ."

Whether on this principle or on some other, the seizures of cattle were going on in the provinces. We had made an observation about it, Villalobar and I, some time before, and had been flatly told that it was none of our business. Officially, to be sure, it was not; there were no guarantees that covered the cattle in the Belgian fields. But the English felt that the seizure of the cattle was a violation of the spirit, if not of the letter, of the guarantees, and so they had sent word to say that if the seizures were not stopped the *ravitaillement* would be. Villalobar and I went to see Baron von der Lancken and broached the subject; we found him disposed to arrange the matter. We had numerous conferences. The German authorities had the feeling that the British Government would put an end to the *ravitaillement* if in so doing they could throw the blame on them; the Germans were not disposed to accept any such terrible responsibility, and yet they could not appear to have receded in the face of British threats. The affair was one of exquisite delicacy, and it is only to show how complicated and difficult it all was, then and always, that I mention the fact that while the *pourparlers* were going on, a telegram came from Mr. Hoover in London saying that if the assurances were not given at once and without further discussion the *ravitaillement* would cease. We could reply that the problem was in a fair way of solution, and ask for patience; it was a hard task to make Germans do what they did not wish to do, and to do it immediately, as others than we had already learned.

It was in the midst of these negotiations that the Governor-General invited me to lunch with him at Trois Fontaines, and one bleak day toward the end of January von der Lancken and I drove out there. General von Bissing had with him only the young officers of his staff, and we sat down to a simple luncheon in the dining-room that looked out into the park. The old Prussian soldier had just returned from shooting deer in the Ardennes, and, proud of the antlers he had just hung as trophies in the great hall of the château, was very affable that day. He seemed hale and hearty under his seventy-two years, and there was a good deal of laughter at luncheon. We were all speaking French, which, as I had been slowly discovering, he spoke fairly well, though at our first interview with him, more than a year before, he had had von der Lancken translate his German into French.

Remarking to me that day on the difficulties of his position, he said that he was expected to unite the subtlety of a diplomatist with the firmness of a soldier: if he did anything that the Belgians approved, which was seldom, he was blamed at Berlin; if he did anything that pleased Berlin, he was execrated by the Belgians.

It was a difficult position to occupy, no doubt, as the position of any satrap should be in our times. He said it was his desire to ameliorate conditions in Belgium, and was very enthusiastic over schemes of conserving waste. For instance, he had just established a reduction plant for dead animals. Months before, late in October, he had issued a decree, which was not posted on the walls, concerning the utilization of "cadavers of animals" (*"concernant l'utilisation des cadavres d'animaux"*), in which, with many details, he had directed that the dead bodies

of animals not fit for consumption as food be preserved and, by declaration at the local Kommandantur, held at the disposal of the Oil Central (*Oelzentrale*) to be reduced to grease.[3] He was delighted with his schemes

---

[3] Cadavres d'Animaux

Arrêté du gouverneur-général en Belgique en date du 29 octobre 1915, concernant l'utilisation des cadavres d'animaux et des animaux abattus et impropres à la consommation humaine:

Article 1er.—Lorsqu'un solipède (cheval, âne, mulet, bardot), une bête bovine, un veau, un porc (à l'exception des cochons de lait) vient à perir ou est abattu pour cause d'épizootie, la déclaration doit en être faite dans les douze heures à la "Kommandantur" competente pour la localité.

La même déclaration doit être faite en ce qui concerne les corps entiers d'animaux abattus dans les abattoirs publics, si ces corps ou ces parties ont été jugés impropres à la consommation humaine. Ces parties d'animaux doivent être conservées dans les récipients clos, fermés à clef; en outre on devra verser un désinfectant sur les parties, afin qu'elles ne se putréfient pas.

Les cadavres, les corps d'animaux et leurs parties doivent être remis aux établissements d'utilisation des cadavres que le Bureau central des huiles (Oelzentrale) fera connaître. Les moutons et les chèvres peuvent être également livrés à ces établissements.

Art. 2.—Sont tenus de faire la déclaration: (1) le propriétaire; (2) les experts vétérinaires et autres personnes chargées du contrôle de la viande de boucherie; (3) les directeurs des abattoirs ou les personnes sous la surveillance desquelles se trouvent le cadavre, le corps d'animal ou ses parties (art. 1er, premier et deuxième alinéas); (4) s'il agit de cadavres ou de corps d'animaux atteints d'épizootie, le vétérinaire appelé à constater la maladie.

La déclaration effectuée par l'une de ces personnes dispense les autres de l'obligation de déclarer.

Art. 3.—L'enlèvement des cadavres, des corps d'animaux et de leurs parties (art. 1er) se fait gratuitement par les établissements d'utilisation des cadavres: en été dans les vingt-quatre heures et en hiver dans les trent-six heures de l'avis donné à cette fin par l'au-

and spoke of it as a reform likely to result in benefit to the human race, and, though I never talked with him about it afterward, it must have been another disillusionment to him, and one more cause for feeling that his

---

torité compétente. Le transport aux établissements d'utilisation des parties d'animaux conservées en dépôt dans les abattoirs publics se fera dès qu'il y aura une quantité suffisante à transporter.

Art. 4.—Le propriétaire n'a pas droit à une indemnité pour les parties d'animaux abattus ni pour les cadavres ou les corps d'animaux (art. 1er) qui sont écorchés. Si le cadavre ou le corps d'un animal est livré avec la peau, une indemnité convenable doit être accordée pour la peau, à condition que, d'après les dispositions de police vétérinaire en vigueur, il soit permis de l'enlever du corps de l'animal.

Le maximum des indemnités est fixé ainsi qu'il suit:

Pour les peaux de chevaux de 17 kilos et plus, 18 mark pièce;
Pour les peaux de moutons, 2 mark pièce;
Pour les peaux de chèvres, 2 mark pièce;
Pour les peaux des bêtes bovines, 80 pfennig le kilo;
Pour les peaux le veaux, M. 1.20 le kilo;

Il n'est pas accordé d'indemnité pour les peaux de porcs. Pour toute peau de cheval qui pèsera moins de 17 kilos, en fera une déduction proportionelle au manque de poids.

Art. 5.—Les infractions aux articles 1er, 2 et 3 du présent arrêté seront punies d'une amende pouvant aller jusqu'à 5,000 mark et d'une peine d'emprisonnement d'un an au plus ou d'une de ces deux peines à l'exclusion de l'autre.

Les infractions sont de la compétence des tribunaux militaires et des autorités militaires.

DISPOSITIONS COMPLÉMENTAIRES

En vue de faciliter l'application de l'article 1er de l'arrêté ci-dessus, sont considérés, jusqu'à nouvel ordre, comme établissements d'utilisation des cadavres d'animaux, les chantiers d'équarrissage de Schooten près d'Anvers, Deurne lez Diest, Jette-Saint-Pierre près Bruxelles, Blaton (province de Hainaut), Châtelet près Charleroi, Libramont (province de Luxembourg), Andenne (province de

efforts were unappreciated, when he heard the story that was going the rounds of the press a few months later

Namur), Pont-Atlant près Maubeuge, Sluste près Tongres (mise en exploitation fin novembre, 1915).

Les cadavres, corps et parties d'animaux impropres à la consommation humaine et mentionnés à l'article 1er de l'arrêté précité, doivent être délivrés à l'établissement d'utilisation compétent pour le district où ils se trouvent; les limites des divers districts sont indiquées sur le croquis intercalé dans le texte allemand. S'il y a lieu, il sera désigné d'autres districts.

(Translation:)

BODIES OF ANIMALS

Order of the Governor-General in Belgium dated October 25, 1915, concerning the utilization of the bodies of animals, and of animals killed and unfit for human consumption:

Article 1.—As soon as a solid-hoofed animal (horse, ass, mule, pack-mule), a bovine beast, lamb, hog (with the exception of sucking-pigs), dies or is killed for epizoötic reasons, the declaration must be made within twelve hours to the Kommandantur of that locality.

The same declaration must be made concerning the entire body of animals killed in the public slaughter-houses, if its body, or parts of it, have been judged unfit for human consumption. These parts of the animal are to be saved in a closed receptacle and locked; also, a disinfectant is to be poured over the parts so that they will not putrefy.

The bodies, the carcasses of animals, and their parts are to be turned over to the establishments for the utilization of bodies which the Central Oil Bureau *(Oelzentrale)* will designate. Sheep and goats may be similarly turned over to these establishments.

Art. 2.—The declaration is to be made by: (1) the proprietor; (2) the veterinary experts and other persons charged with the control of butchers' meat; (3) the directors of the slaughter-houses, or the persons who have charge of the bodies of animals and their parts (Art. 1st, first and second paragraphs); (4) if it concerns the bodies or carcasses of animals tainted epizoötically, the veterinary called to determine the disease.

The declaration of one of these persons absolves the others.

to the effect that he was utilizing the bodies of dead soldiers to obtain grease to manufacture powder. I sup-

---

Art. 3.—The removal of the bodies, of the carcasses of animals and their parts (Art. 1st) is provided for free of charge by the establishments for the utilization of bodies, in the summer within twenty-four hours and in the winter within thirty-six hours after notice given to that end by a competent authority. The parts of animals saved in the public slaughter-houses will be transported to the utilization establishments whenever there is a sufficient quantity.

Art. 4.—The proprietor has no right to an indemnity for the parts of animals killed, nor for the bodies or carcasses of animals that are skinned. If the body or the carcass of an animal is given with the skin, a reasonable indemnity will be allowed for the skin on condition that, after the approval of the veterinary in power, he be allowed to remove it from the body of the animal.

The maximum indemnities are fixed as follows:

For the skins of horses, 17 kilograms or more, 18 marks apiece.

For the skins of sheep, 2 marks apiece.

For the skins of goats, 2 marks apiece.

For the skins of cattle, 80 pfennig per kilogram.

For the skins of lambs, marks 1.20 per kilogram.

No indemnity is allowed for the skins of hogs. For each horse skin weighing less than 17 kilograms a reduction will be made in proportion to the weight.

Art. 5—Infringements of Articles 1, 2, and 3 of the present order will be punished by a fine of not to exceed 5,000 marks and by the pain of imprisonment for not more than one year, or by one of these two penalties to the exclusion of the other.

Infringements are within the jurisdiction of the military tribunals and the military authorities.

Additional Information

In order to facilitate the application of Article 1 of the order herein, the slaughtering-yards of Schooten, near Antwerp, Deurne lez-Diest, Jette-Saint-Pierre, near Brussels, Platon (Province of Hainaut), Châtelet, near Charleroi, Libramont (Province of Luxembourg), Andenne (Province of Namur), Pont-Atlant, near Mau-

pose it was the use of the word *cadavre,* which has such a grisly sound in the western ear, that gave rise to the gruesome suggestion.

The Governor-General's talk, however, was all of physical or administrative and never of political organization; he spoke as though he could show the Belgians many an improvement in that line that would astonish them if only they were not so stiff-necked and so violent in their prejudice against any suggestions emanating from him. He talked with enthusiasm of his many projects of organization, his *Zentralen,* and all that; he had some notions about agriculture, and, had there been no war in the world, and no invasion, had he been in some executive position with a right and warrant that one could reconcile with justice, one would have found him a rather good-natured old man, something of a personality in his way, who worked hard, studied laboriously and took his duties seriously, and liked to think of himself as doing justice. The vast and essential difference between our points of view, the utter antithesis of his conception of the bases of authority and my own, was not apparent to him; neither he nor any of the young officers at his board that winter day had the least doubt as to his right to be where he was, or the slightest embar-

---

beuge, Sluste, near Tongres (put into operation at the end of November, 1915), are designated, until further orders, as establishments for the utilization of the cadavers of animals.

The bodies, carcasses and parts of animals unfit for human consumption and named in Article 1 of the preceding order, are to be delivered to the utilisation establishment indicated for the district where they are found; the limits of the several districts are indicated on the sketch attached to the German text. If it is necessary, other districts will be designated.

rassment in their position as invaders and interlopers. They thought his right to govern Belgium as incontestable as I should consider the right of the Governor of Ohio to administer the affairs under the Constitution. He regarded the Belgians precisely as the headmaster of a reform school might regard the incorrigible youth committed to his charge; he was willing to help them and to tell them how to be good, but he must be rigid in discipline and never let them once out of hand. My impression of him in the end was that, bound within constitutional limitations, he would have made a capable, rigidly firm, though not a brilliant, executive. As mayor, for instance, he would have policed the town remorselessly, kept the streets clean, tolerated no waste of the taxpayers' money, built no public improvements except those that were strictly necessary and utilitarian—and would never have been re-elected. As an untrammeled dictator he lacked the imagination that could even understand the mentality of the people he was called upon to rule, much less mitigate the hatred and detestation in which they held him.

Our talk was mostly casual, of course, and sounded no depths. There were too many topics upon which it seemed unsafe to venture if the luncheon were to pass off pleasantly. The General, in his husky old dragoon voice, was fully competent to talk about the war, a field in which I was not qualified. He told me, with the satisfaction a man always feels in winning a wager, that one of his officers long before had offered to bet him a dinner that peace would come before Christmas, 1915; he had taken the bet, and won. The relations between our two countries did not just then form a subject of conversation which, as the Germans say, would be *gemütlich,*

and I did not like to speak of the *ravitaillement* because that would have seemed like talking shop, and I had heard from one of his entourage that he did not like that: there was a certain young diplomat, said my informant, who used to play bridge with the old Governor and torment him all evening with requests for *laissez-passers* and other personal favours for himself and his friends. I had the subject of the *ravitaillement* on my mind, however; whether or not he had some prescience of that I do not know—he was not what one would call occult—but at any rate, suddenly, laughing at some story or other which I had been telling him, he turned, lifted his glass of red wine to his blue lips, paused, and said abruptly:

"Cette petite difficulté dans le ravitaillement—ça s'arrangera."

I thanked him and in my gratitude for the relief this sudden assurance gave me racked my brain for another funny story to tell him. Like most old men weighed down with executive cares he did not often have a chance to laugh, and the young, in their egoism and selfishness, are always forgetting that the old like to laugh too, and are grateful for any pains taken to that end—even gruff old German generals.

It was a good luncheon in the German cuisine, and stark in its simplicity. The Governor-General lived a frugal and a regular life and there was no waste on his table or in his household.

I was glad that my poor Belgians, too, were to continue to eat their own frugal repasts, and glad that I could go back to Brussels and tell Villalobar and the others that our latest troubles were in a way to be conjured.

XV

STRIPPING BELGIUM

Our discussions for a time, however, were interrupted because the King of Bavaria had come to town, and all the Excellencies in the German Government must be on hand to do him homage and to assist at the festivities given in the various ministries in his honour. The King was incognito, at least so far as the Belgians were concerned, for none of them ever saw him, or cared to, perhaps. We were always hearing of some great German personage in town, but we never saw him, though on this occasion one of the King's entourage, some Royal Highness or other, a Prince

> with a name of his own,
> And a certain use in the world, no doubt,

called on Villalobar and told him that they were all sick of the war.

My own callers just at that time were Belgian personalities who happened to have English nurses or governesses in their families, and they were all excited and concerned by the latest rumour that had gone through the town—namely, that all English women were to leave at once. Inasmuch as this rumour touched that most acute of all sensitive spots in the social organism, to wit, the servant problem, the Quartier Leopold was almost in revolution. For a long time we had been

sending to Holland by special trains, and under the escort of a representative of the Legation, such English women as desired to leave Belgium. Not all of them cared to go, for many who had good homes and good employment in Brussels had no homes in England. Then during my absence an English woman had gone to the Legation and asked Gibson, who was in charge, whether she should go to England or not. Like many others, she did not like to solve her problems herself and insisted on some one else's taking the responsibility, and in the end asked Gibson to write to London and ask for advice. He did so, and the reply, naturally, was that all English women who could do so should leave Brussels. The women thereupon spread the alarm and all the English women decided to go. The news not only alarmed the Quartier Leopold, but it reached the Germans and alarmed them; they saw menaces of attacks, offensives, bombardments, and I know not what else of the dreadful in a military way, and refused to allow any more trains to depart. This only increased the panic. From the first we had observed an interesting psychological phenomenon: most women were anxious to leave until we procured their passports and trains; then most of them decided not to go, having lost the desire to depart as soon as they were sure they could do so. When it was understood that there were to be no more trains they were unanimous in their decision to leave, and we had a trying time for weeks. It was more than weeks, it was months before we could get permission for any of them to go; even then it was only in isolated cases.

One evening very late the bell rang, and there came into the hall a little English woman, lugging an enor-

mous valise and dragging two very sleepy children after her. She had come that day from Lille, where her husband had been a teacher until the Germans sent him to Ruhleben with other Englishmen, leaving her alone in the strange city. Finally the Kommandantur at Lille gave her a *laissez-passer* to go to England, and, happy in the thought of seeing her home once more, she had started out, and, arriving at Brussels that night, had been told that her *laissez-passer* would not be honoured. We provided for her and for the sleepy children, poor little things; but, try as I would, I could never succeed in obtaining permission for that woman to leave. We did all we could for her, and the pretty children in new clothes went bravely to school and were soon speaking French; while for the mother, a quiet and competent little woman, we procured some pupils to whom she gave lessons in English. Nearly every Belgian who could not already do so was learning to speak English in those days, and the basic resemblance of the Flemish to our own language made it rather easy for them.

Such little dramas, oftentimes with more tragic *dénouements,* were of daily occurrence in our lives; and yet there were romances, too. The whole story of the C. R. B. is, in its way, a romance, and, as I have said, I often used to wish that Frank Norris had lived to write it as the third of his unfinished trilogy of the wheat. The young men—the Rhodes scholars and the other university men who came after the Rhodes scholars when these went back to Oxford, all reflected great credit on America and on the American universities, and Mr. Hoover wrought them into an organization that had all the esprit de corps of a crack regiment of Guards. They were received enthusias-

tically by every one, and the delegates were very popular among the Belgians, who did all they could to lighten the task they had voluntarily assumed.

Mr. Carstairs, for instance, the delegate down in the Hainaut, lived in the great château at Mariemont as the guest of Raoul Waroqué, the last of a line of men noted for their public spirit. They had been burgomasters for generations, and Waroqué was the representative of the Comité National in his region. Mr. Carstairs had won the hand of Mlle. Hélène Guinotte, one of those two charming and beautiful sisters whom I had met in the *salons* of the Baroness Lambert before the war, and one day in January a great company of us went down to Mariemont for the wedding. There was a dinner in the old château attended by the family and by a few members of the C. R. B.; the ironic fates were at the dinner too, as a matter of course, for the master of the house sat there, the last of his race with no heirs, amidst the guests he was so touchingly happy to have about him in honour of an alliance between Belgium and America—dying before our eyes. The wedding was solemnized the next morning, first in the town hall where the civil ceremony was conducted by the Burgomaster *faisent fonction.* He was an old peasant in his Sunday blacks and white cravat, with the black, yellow and red sash about his middle, and he drew out a pair of steel-bowed spectacles and read a little address in which he referred most movingly to what America had done for his country. He read it with the dignity with which an honest, simple, unaffected good man invests any ceremony in which he takes part. And then we all drove to the little church in the village, where the priest—a tall, gaunt, awkward young Walloon—celebrated the Mass

and pronounced the religious ceremony, his Latin in the Walloon accent sounding strange in our ears. There was the wedding-breakfast at The Pashy, the country home of the Guinottes, and then the bride and groom drove away for their honeymoon in Holland—their *passierscheins* all in order.

We could almost forget the war in scenes so normal, until back at Brussels that evening Mr. Poland, the Director of the C. R. B., came to report that he had just had a telegram from Mr. Hoover saying that the British Government had received word from its agents to the effect that the Belgian Committee at Antwerp had sold eighteen hundred tons of rice to the Germans! The further importation of rice had been forbidden—and, in short, we had another incident to deal with. The event proved that the agents were mistaken; the Committee at Antwerp had sold no rice, of course, though some of the peasants about Antwerp had either sold or traded their little rations of rice. The Belgians had never eaten rice, and did not like it when the Americans introduced it to them; and I could not blame them much, for I do not like rice myself, even when French *chefs* disguise it with all their cunning art. They did not like corn-meal either—*maïs,* they called it—and considered it fit only for cattle to eat; but that was because, unlike some dusky Kentucky cooks of my acquaintance, they did not know how to transform it into corn pone or johnnycake, or spoon-bread. The amount of rice they had disposed of was insignificant, and the incident proved not to be serious after all.

But there were new difficulties in securing from the Germans the promise not to requisition any more cattle. The old and never-conquered problem of the *chômeurs*

had arisen again; it would not down. The Germans wished to attach, as a condition to the guaranties, that the *chômeurs* be compelled to work, which meant they must work for the Germans, or else cease to receive their allotments from the Comité National. Von Sauberzweig was reported to have said that the diplomats had no right to be in Belgium, and that they should be sent away. The difficulties came, like most difficulties in the world as it was then and as it is now organized, from *Messieurs les militaires,* but they did not wholly have their way just then, for at the end of January Baron von der Lancken authorized us to say that the Governor-General had decided to give the guarantees, and that no more requisitions of cattle would be made.

However, if the Germans were willing to forego their seizures of cattle they were just beginning to requisition all the *noyers* in Belgium—those stately walnut-trees, the pride of many an estate, and, in those cases in which they belonged to peasants, the support of whole families. There was nothing that we could do to prevent that because the Germans wished to make stocks for their rifles, and as this was purely a military use it was no affair of neutral diplomats. Governor-General von Bissing, so the story ran, had been opposed to cutting down the trees and on a recent visit to Berlin had been reproached by the military authorities with the fact, and in the discussion that ensued had been outdone by *Messieurs les militaires,* as every one is in Germany, and had been forced to yield. And so the beautiful tall trees, many of them centuries old, were cut down, and not one ultimately was spared—not even those on the estate of the Prince de Ligne at Bel Oeil, nor those of the Prince Napoleon.

The Germans were seizing other things, too—the rails of the vicinal tramways, the metal in houses, rubber, wool, everything that could aid or comfort an army while it went about its systematic and scientific destruction of all that which centuries had been required to build or produce. Even the machinery in the factories was being shipped off to Germany, and Belgium faced a future in which she would find herself stripped naked of all she had.

XVI

THE FATE OF LOUIS BRILL

Life in Brussels became a little more difficult and a little more drear each day. Misery crept everywhere. Potatoes, under the Kartöffelzentrale, were more and more scarce; there were incipient riots in the commune of Molenbeek-Saint-Jean, women fiercely assailing the *maison communale* until the police and even the *pompiers* had to be called to disperse them. And misery reacting on character in the way it has, added to the cruelty and insensibility in which life so abounds. The herders of the cattle lowing down the Rue Belliard would carelessly beat them over the muzzles with their clubs and the beasts would close their eyes and toss their heads away to escape the pain of those blows. I was walking one day at noon in the Vieux Marché in la Place de Jeu de Balle, where all the rubbish of the town, the unclean and disgusting débris of broken and unsuccessful lives, was assorted and exposed for sale; the clatter of the wooden shoes on the cobble-stones had been stilled by the noon hour, and the market-women in their flimsy booths were drinking their coffee from great bowls and gossiping. And I saw a little girl crying bitterly as she watched her portly mother, indifferent to the child's appeals, slowly munch the *tartine* she would not share; the child watched it disappear bite by bite down the selfish maternal throat, and at last, when there was but one bite left, the mother gave her that.

Mr. Casper Whitney, of the C. R. B., had just returned with Mr. Walcott from a visit to Poland with sickening stories of the suffering there, and in Servia, ravaged by the Bulgarians; black misery, famine, pestilence everywhere, all the symptoms of martial glory and world-empire. And that was a situation which the C. R. B. could not help, much as it tried to do so; there were too many military or political difficulties in the way. And Germany, Mr. Walcott said, was preparing to begin a vast offensive in the West—three million bayonets already on the line, and the German General Staff, as a German officer had confided to him, prepared to sacrifice 500,000 of them. It sounded mathematically and scientifically military as long as one spoke of them as bayonets; it sounded less so when one abandoned that professional euphemism and spoke of soldiers, and if one resorted to human terms and spoke of them as men—one would be growing soft and sentimental.

The dark influences of the times lay heavily on all spirits in an universal depression from which there was no escape. There were not only such little scenes as those I have noted to illustrate the pain and tragedy of life. Now and then a spring day, straying too far in advance of the slowly advancing march of spring itself, would find itself the prisoner of February, and on the morning of such a day—the sunlight streaming, the ground damp from the constant rain, its drops glistening on the trees—the Belgian wounded prisoners brought in from the front were allowed to promenade in the park of the Palais des Academies, the great classical structure where the Belgian Academies of Letters and Beaux Arts, of Science and of Medicine, have their seat

—turned now by the Germans into a military hospital. The invalids wore the long gabardines of striped ticking which make the wounded in German hospitals look like zanies, but they had on their jaunty *bonets de police,* with the tassels of yellow or of red or of blue, and they hobbled up and down on their crutches and smoked and laughed—glad, no doubt, of the respite that *la bonne blessure* gave them, and happy even in this strange home-coming.

"Les bons diables!" cried one man in the throng that pressed up to the high iron fence around the yard to stare at them. The Belgian soldiers were not allowed to approach the grill and no one was permitted to speak to them, but men and women and children went up to the high grill and peered between the iron bars, German sentinels glowering ill-humoredly at them. Those in the crowd were very serious; they were trying to recognize among the prisoners some loved one. I saw a woman turn away from the crowd in anguish, her face drawn with the pain of a great grief and stained by tears. It had been less than two years since from that very spot I had seen those same boys, no doubt, and thousands of others like them, parading down the boulevard, hale, hearty, happy, with flags and trumpets and drums, celebrating the fête of their King.

The wounded were being brought in increasing numbers to Brussels; our courier had not been allowed to go out for days, and the frontier was closed. Mitilineu's brother, who was a diplomat at The Hague, had come to Brussels with his wife to visit the Roumanian Legation, and was no sooner arrived and retired for the night than he was routed out by a German officer and told that he and his wife must depart by train in the morning—

which they did, and at seven o'clock were away in a coach of which the blinds were drawn.

The town was pulsating with the news of the heavy movement of troops, and suddenly hope was high once more, since another great offensive had begun. The only way Brussels could get news was by deduction—a process that was oftentimes exaggerated in its results. I noted in my journal at the end of a trying day at about that time the rumours that I had heard that afternoon alone: America had broken off diplomatic relations with Germany; the American Legation was packing up and about to leave; there had been a revolt of troops at Ghent and the Military Governor there had been assassinated; there had been a naval battle in the North Sea and twenty German men-o'-war had been sunk; the Crown Prince of Turkey had not committed suicide, but had been put to death because he was pro-Ally; Tino, the King of Greece, had abdicated; there was a revolution in Bulgaria; all English women in Belgium were to be interned in a camp near Antwerp; a diplomat had arrived from Berlin with positive, but confidential information that the Germans were to make one last desperate effort to reach Calais, and failing that would retire to the Meuse.

These rumours served as topics for conversation at dinner when one had exhausted the subject of potatoes —as food for discussion merely; and it was a phenomenon attested or confessed by everybody, now that potatoes were no more to be had, that they had suddenly grown delicious; there was one displayed in the window of an antiquarian in the Rue d'Assaut, labelled:

"AUTHENTIQUE—VENDUE"

I was constantly appealed to as a diplomat—and therefore as an informed, or at least as an informing, person—to say whether such reports as these were true or not. I knew no more about most of them than any one else, and, as a conscientious realist, never believed any news but bad news. Poor Brussels never had any good news, which was doubtless the reason—since necessity, as the copy-book says, is the mother of invention—that it was invented now and then. Herbert Spencer might have explained the phenomenon. But to us the rumours did serve as topics for conversation, as I said, for the dinner-table was growing dull, and it was not in good taste to deny them. One no longer heard the sprightly talk about the war, the speculation as to its duration, the discussion of world-politics, and the probable changes that were to be produced in the surface of the habitable globe, as one heard it when all was thrilling excitement and emotion in those first days of the honeymoon of the war. The war had taken on its true colours as a hideous, an ugly, and a squalid thing, as all abundantly recognized. Even in the piping times of peace those who talk of ideals are few, very few indeed, and those who discuss ideas not much more numerous. Most people talk of other people; and though there are, perhaps, other people who are more interesting than ideas or ideals, that is not the reason why people talk of them. But most subjects seemed to have been exhausted in Brussels, save perhaps that of *la mentalité allemande,* and the principle of that had been grasped rather generally. We could be aroused from our after-dinner gloom only by being plunged into the deeper gloom of some new and concrete horror or injustice.

No one made an effort; the people one met seemed to have aged and grown careless and seedy and not good-looking any more. The women, poor things, never had any new gown, and were all in black. I can recall an evening in February—the 10th, my journal says—when, after a dinner at a house where once there had been only gaiety and light and sprightly talk, I was sitting and smoking a last cigarette and waiting for the old butler to come in and announce my motor. He came at last, but instead of the formula there was a whispered consultation with the master of the house, who beckoned to me, and we left the room and went to the dim *salon,* where a man was waiting for me; he had a white, drawn face—another had been condemned, was to be shot that night; could I do anything?

The name of the condemned man, Louis Brill, suggested nothing to me other than one more vague form among that host of wraiths whom German firing squads had hurried into the darkness and the silence, but in the first of the confused explanations that were made the name of Edith Cavell was mentioned. Then I had the story.

Louis Brill was a waiter in a restaurant in Brussels, and he had been tried and condemned to death that very day for having shot down that recreant son of the retired army officer, who was said to have betrayed Miss Cavell. The swarming spies and the secret agents, with inexorable patience, had prowled the mysterious underworld of Brussels until they had found the man who shot the traitor down in the street, and now he too was to die. I cannot pretend to know the whole story; it will be told some day, I suppose, with many another

like it, when the history of those dark times is all revealed. Perhaps it was but an element of the romanticism in which, since war itself is so wholly an expression of romanticism, all stories of war must be invested, that linked the dark event to the immortal name of the English nurse. There were those who said that Brill did not shoot him to avenge Miss Cavell, but to avenge those of his comrades whom the recreant Belgian had offered to guide when they wished to leave the country, and, luring them thus to the Holland border, had there miserably betrayed them to the Germans. He may in this way have learned of the group with which Miss Cavell was associated—I do not know; but it was for his treachery in one or the other instance that Brill dogged him, patiently, remorselessly, tracking him down until the night when, as he stepped from his own door into the street, Brill shot him down and left his body lying there on the sidewalk.

From that hour Brill, having been the hunter, became the hunted, and for weeks eluded German spies and German *polizei,* until he too was at last tracked down and captured.

The man who came to me that night wished to know how to present the *recours en grâce* that Brill's mother had signed, and I could tell him to whom to present it, at any rate. It had no effect, of course, and Brill was shot the next morning, as we were informed by the usual *affiche.*[1]

---

[1] This is the *affiche:*

AVIS

Par jugement du 8-9 février, 1916, le tribunal de campagne a, indépendamment d'autres personnes condamnées à des peines diverse, condamné

BELGIUM

LOUIS BRILL,
garçon de café à Bruxelles,
à la peine de mort
pour assassinat commis à l'aide d'une arme à feu.

Le jugement a été confirmé et exécuté.

Bruxelles, le 11 février, 1916.

LE GOUVERNEMENT DE BRUXELLES.

(Translation:)

NOTICE

By judgment of February 8 and 9, 1916, the military tribunal has, independently of other persons condemned to various punishments, condemned

LOUIS BRILL,
waiter in a restaurant in Brussels,
to the pain of death
for an assassination committed with firearms.

The judgment has been confirmed and executed.

Brussels, February 11, 1916.

THE GOVERNMENT OF BRUSSELS.

XVII

VERDUN

In principle the Germans had assented to the proposition that no more cattle were to be requisitioned in Belgium; but the details had not been agreed upon and the formal document had not been signed. We met them finally there in the yellow *salon* of the Ministry of Industry to reduce it all to writing—the Baron von der Lancken, Dr. Reith, Dr. Brohn of the *Vermittlungsstellen,* the Marquis de Villalobar, M. van Vollenhoven, M. Francqui and I. We met every afternoon for days, and agreed finally on the terms of a letter which the Governor-General was to address to the Protecting Ministers promising to forbid further requisitions of cattle. But there remained the difficult problem of the *chômeurs:* the Government of Occupation wished to attach the condition, so often proposed, that the lists of *chômeurs* be furnished by the Comité National. That question had been smouldering beneath all our discussions ever since the seizure by the Germans of the Belgian Red Cross, the funds of which the Germans had been distributing to the needy, mostly women, on condition that they work for them, sewing those sacks that, filled with earth, were used in the German trenches. We succeeded finally in securing the draft of a letter without conditions, and then, the second day, the Germans proposed a draft of a second letter, which,

to be sent with the letter containing the new guaranties, raised again and almost in the same form the whole question of the *chômeurs*. In our discussion of that day I pointed out that under any enlightened juridical system two letters in negotiations dealing with the same subject, written and signed and delivered at the same time, would be construed together, and that to approve the proposed letter would be to accept the very condition to which we were opposed; and when I appealed to Dr. Reith, himself a lawyer, reared in Antwerp and educated in Belgian schools, he agreed. We got over this difficulty then, and the second letter was not for the moment insisted upon, and at our third meeting the guarantee was agreed upon in its final form.

Then the Baron von der Lancken formally requested the Marquis to undertake a journey to London for the purpose of delivering the letter of guarantee; the Marquis bowed and consented, and asked that M. Francqui and the Baron Lambert be permitted to bear him company, and the Baron von der Lancken bowed and consented. And it was so ordered.

The plan to have the three gentlemen bear in person the letter of the Governor-General to London, instead of sending it by the courier as had always been done, had been under discussion for some time; Baron von der Lancken had mentioned it to me, as had others, and I was glad that they could have the relief of being for a while away from Belgium. Villalobar had not had a holiday, and he wished, among other things, to visit Madrid. And so, a few days later, they left Brussels.

That Friday, indeed, was a day of general exodus. Gibson had been granted leave and was going to London; Mr. Heineman was going home to America, and

was taking Mr. Hulse with him; and the motor-cars of all our departing friends trailed out along the road to Antwerp and to Esschen, abandoning us to a dull day of dreary rain.

The Baron Lambert, however, was at the very last almost cheated of his journey. The evening before the *polizei* made a sudden descent on his bank and began a perquisition in the grand style. It had been reported that he had a telephone-wire that enabled him to talk to Paris, and the thorough going *polizei* came to unearth it. What they found was only the telephone-booth, relic of old and happier days, which, with its private wire connecting the Baron's establishment with the Rothschild bank in Paris, was plainly marked on the outside with the name of that once gay city. Some Teutonic detective had seen the booth standing there in its place in the orderly row of telephone-booths and reading the word "Paris" on its door had made the illuminating deduction, quite in the Sherlock Holmes manner, that the Baron had a secret wire to the French capital, and imagined daily confabulations and dark and mysterious conspirations. The matter was reported to Baron von der Lancken, who quickly put an end to that nonsense, so that the Baron went with his *compagnons de voyage*, and the detective was left to the bitter reflections of unappreciated genius. And I, in the dreary rain, sauntered down to the Rue de l'Empereur for a chat with a little French antiquarian who collected, and I suppose sometimes sold, though never to me, relics of the Napoleonic wars—old busbies and shakos, the plumes of which had nodded in the reviews of the great Emperor, and postilions' jack-boots that had been spattered with the mud that splashed as he rode from glory to glory.

It was not these things, but the philosophic observations or the witticisms in the Parisian accent—with the r's well *grasseyés*—that I sought in him, though his philosophy was not so profound as that of another friend I had made in Ch. Desamblancx, an old bookbinder in the Rue Ducale, there where it twists down into the Rue de Louvain. Once the apprentice-boy in the long white smock had clattered in his wooden shoes across the pavement in answer to the jangling old bell, and let me in, and shut the big door behind, he had shut out the world at war, and Desamblancx himself in a white smock would come down from the atelier where the workmen with patient art were tooling the morocco bindings. They worked on during the war, mostly for the love of their ancient and honourable calling, and the old binder himself tried to teach his art to certain youths whom the war had deprived of work, organizing a class to which he went every afternoon. He always had a volume in his hand, and he caressed and fondled its morocco back lovingly all the while he talked of books. Whenever I found a volume in one of the old stalls I took it straight to him and waited with some anxiety for that expression in his eyes which told me, before he had spoken a word, whether I had been lucky or merely once again a fool. He knew editions as a racing gentleman knows the pedigrees of horses, or a baseball devotee the batting averages of the stars of the diamond. He could glance through any book and tell you if a single engraving was missing. He knew the history of every rare title-page, and was ever tearing up and sacrificing volumes in order that, by assembling all their oddities, he might produce the perfect copy.

He had that respect for the literary art which de-

manded that it respect itself, and present itself in a dress worthy of its noble rank. It was only now and then that he found a book worthy of full morocco; if in all respects, as to contents, printing, paper, all, it was not up to the standard, into half-morocco it went, and when his fingers touched the paper and detected it to be of wood-pulp he flung it aside in disgust, as if it sickened him, and would give it no dress at all. He could not approve of our American way of binding in cloth—*cartonné*. He thought books should be *brochés* and put on probation for a few years; if they amounted to anything they would make their way in the world, and then it would be time to bind them. He gloried in his own calling and made of it a rare and exquisite art, and worked for the love of it, strange anachronism that he was . . . !

It was only at Desamblancx's, or in the old book stalls like Nobel's in the Rue de la Tulipe, or in the studios of the artists, that I could escape the damning thing that let its pall down on the earth the moment I awoke in the morning and remembered. With the departure of the Marquis and the Baron and M. Francqui, and with Gibson and de Leval gone, life seemed to pause for a moment, and there were for a while only little things to occupy one. Even potatoes lost their preoccupying interest, for a supply had been sent in from Holland; we had been expecting them, and one afternoon in the Rue de la Régence, there not far from the old church of the Sablon, the long file of hooded women waiting at the *magasin communal* were chattering gaily, like starlings, and presently they trooped away in the rain, their wooden shoes clattering almost joyously, each carrying a bag filled with potatoes. It was a happy spectacle, for the poor were not so hungry that night.

The suffering, however, was increasing in the city, where extreme and sordid poverty had been almost unknown. There are no slums in Brussels as we know them in New York or Chicago or Boston, or as they are known in London and Liverpool and Glasgow and Edinburgh. Often when American visitors with a taste for sociology, came to town and asked to be shown the slums, they could only be directed or conducted to those poorer quarters which, in comparison with what they had seen and studied in other cities, were after all, so clean—without that haggard, woe-begone air of squalid poverty. I cannot explain the phenomenon except by hazarding the theory that it seemed that way because the Belgians are such a cleanly folk, washing and scrubbing and scouring and polishing all the day long. There was poverty there, alas! as there is everywhere, and as there will continue to be until economists and statesmen and peoples grasp a distinction so simple that it is not, perhaps, after all so strange that it has been so universally overlooked—the distinction, that it between private property and public property. But if the cleanly and frugal Belgians knew how to hide their poverty, the hardship of the war was beginning, nevertheless, to be more and more apparent. School-teachers noticed that the children could no longer give their wonted attention to their lessons, they were so often hungry; now and then one of them would faint for lack of nourishment. The workingmen were growing thinner. Physicians were noting an increase in tuberculosis and other diseases that flourish where there is malnutrition. There was no butter, not enough milk for the babies, and potatoes had been, and indeed continued to be, scarce, even with quantities in the land rotting because the distribution of them

had been almost automatically prevented by the Kartöffelzentrale.

The history of potatoes alone, indeed, under the German occupation, would provide a life-work for an economist and a philosopher. The walls bore many *affiches* explaining the reasons for the measures the Governor-General had decreed in regard to them—*affiches* denying that any potatoes had been shipped to Germany, declaring that the potatoes were being reserved exclusively for the use of the working classes, imploring the easier classes to replace potatoes by other foods,[1] forbidding

[1] The French text:

Avis

Il me revient qu'on a tenté de faire accroire à la population que des stocks considérables de pommes de terre auraient été exportés de Belgique en Allemagne et que, pour cette raison, l'approvisionnement de la population civile rencontre des difficultés. Toutes les insinuations de ce genre sont contraires à la vérité. En tout et seulement à titre provisoire, il n'a été expédié que 150 tonnes de pommes de terre à destination de l'ouest de l'Allemagne; en outre, 5,500 tonnes ont été envoyées en France. Ce total est insignifiant comparativement aux 1,700,000 tonnes qui représentent la production moyenne du territoire de Gouvernement général. La diminution de stocks de pommes de terre est la conséquence naturelle de l'augmentation de la consommation humaine et des besoins de l'alimentation animale.

Je mets expressément en garde contre la propagation de faux bruits concernant les causes de la disette de pommes de terre et je sévirai avec la plus grande rigueur contre les coupables.

Jusqu'à nouvel ordre et, en particulier, jusqu'à ce que les stocks qui, selon toute probabilité, existent encore et sont tenus cachés, aient été découverts, les provisions indigènes de pommes de terre seront, de préférence et autant que possible, mises à la disposition des classes ouvrières et nécessiteuses dont la subsistance est essentiellement fondée sur cet aliment. Il en sera de même des pommes de

hotels and restaurants to serve potatoes that had been

terre qui pourront être importées de l'étranger. Quant aux classes plus aisées de la population, j'espère qu'elles auront conscience du devoir social que leur impose la situation présente et que, pour se nourrir, elles recourront, le plus possible, à d'autres aliments, moins à la portée des petites bourses.

J'attends, d'autre part, que les autorités communales belges m'aident consciencieusement et énergiquement à appliquer les mesures que j'ai ordonnées uniquement dans l'intérêt de la population belge, en vue de régler et d'assurer son approvisionnement.

Bruxelles, le 26 février, 1916.

Le Gouverneur-Général en Belgique,
Baron von Bissing,
Général-Colonel.

(Translation:)

Notice

Word comes to me that there have been attempts to make the population believe that considerable stocks of potatoes have been exported from Belgium to Germany and that, for this reason, the feeding of the population is meeting with difficulties. All insinuations of this nature are contrary to the truth. In all, and only as a temporary measure, there have been exported only 150 tons of potatoes to the west of Germany; besides this, 5,500 tons have been sent to France. This total is insignificant in comparison with the 1,700,000 tons which represents the average production of the territory of the General Government. The diminution of the stocks of potatoes is the natural consequence of the increase in human consumption and of the needs of live stock.

I give express warning against the propagation of false rumours concerning the causes of the scarcity of potatoes, and I shall be rigorously severe with the guilty.

Until further orders, and particularly until all the stocks that in all probability exist and are hidden have been discovered, the native supply of potatoes will be by preference and as much as possible placed at the disposal of the labouring and needy classes whose subsistence is based essentially on this product. There will even be potatoes imported from abroad. As for the easier classes of the population, I hope that they will be conscious of the duty

peeled before cooking.[2] But all to no purpose: eco-

which the present situation imposes on them, and that for their nourishment they will have recourse as much as possible to other foods less within the reach of small purses.

On the other hand, I expect the Belgian communal authorities conscientiously and energetically to aid me in applying the measures that I have decreed particularly in the interest of the Belgian population with a view to regulating and assuring its food-supply.

Brussels, February 26, 1916.

The Governor General in Belgium,
Baron von Bissing,
Colonel-General.

[2] Avis

Par arrêté du 5 décembre 1915 (Bulletin official des lois et arrêtés, p. 1405), j'avais ordonné de procéder au relevé des stocks de pommes de terre pouvant servir à l'approvisionnement de la population civile.

Il me revient que certains détenteurs de pommes de terre n'ont pas déclaré tous leurs stocks. Parmi ceux-ci, il en est qui ont supposé avoir le droit de ne pas déclarer les quantités réservées à leur consommation personelle, à l'alimentation de leurs animaux et à la plantation. Cette opinion est erronée. L'obligation de déclarer porte sur toutes les provisions dont le total dépasse 50 kilogrammes.

Tenant compte de cette erreur, j'ai arrêté ce qui suit, afin d'épargner les peines prévues par l'article 4 de l'arrêté du 5 décembre, 1915 (Bulletin officiel des lois et arrêtés, p. 1405), à tous les détenteurs de pommes de terre qui complèteront leur déclaration conformément à la verité.

Bruxelles, le 26 février, 1916.

Le Gouverneur-Général en Belgique,
Baron von Bissing,
Général-Colonel.

(Translation:)

Notice

By the order of the 5 December, 1915 (Official Bulletin of Laws and Orders, p. 1405), I gave instructions that stocks of potatoes available for the feeding of the civil population be declared.

nomic laws would move majestically and contemptuously on in their own indifferent way, just as if there

---

I am now given to understand that certain holders of potatoes have not declared their entire stocks. Among them are those who have felt that they had the right not to declare the stocks reserved for their personal consumption, for the feeding of their animals, and for planting. This opinion is wrong. The obligation to declare applies to *all* stocks over and above 50 kilograms.

Taking this error into consideration I have issued the following order, in order to spare those holders of potatoes who complete their declarations in conformity with the truth the penalties provided in Article 4 of the order of the December 5, 1915 (Official Bulletin of Laws and Orders, p. 1405).

Brussels, 26 February, 1916.

The Governor-General in Belgium,
Baron von Bissing,
Colonel-General.

Order

The penalty provided in Article 4 of the order of the December 5, 1915 (Official Bulletin of Laws and Orders, p. 1405), will not be applicable to persons who not later than the 18 March, 1916, correct their former declarations, whether they are inexact or incomplete, making their report on the quantity of potatoes held by them. In this case the stocks of potatoes not yet declared will not be confiscated.

The corrected declaration must be returned to the communal administration of the territory where the potatoes are held.

Brussels, 26 February, 1916.

The Governor-General in Belgium,
Baron von Bissing,
Colonel-General.

Arrêté

La peine prévue par l'article 4 de l'arrêté du 5 décembre 1915 (Bulletin officiel des lois et arrêtés, p. 1405) ne sera pas applicable aux personnes qui, le 18 mars, 1916, au plus tard, rectifieront leurs anciennes déclarations, soit inexactes, soit incomplètes, se rapportant aux quantités de pommes de terre détenues par elles. Dans ce cas,

were no Hague Conventions or German Governments of occupation in the world; and the peasants, still clinging

---

les stocks de pommes de terre non encore déclarés ne seront pas confisqués.

La déclaration rectificative doit être remise à l'administration communale sur le territoire de laquelle les pommes de terre se trouvent.

Bruxelles, le 26 février, 1916.

Le Gouverneur-Général en Belgique,
Baron von Bissing,
Général-Colonel.

Arrêté
concernant le mode d'emploi des pommes de terre dans les hôtels et restaurants

Article premier

Dans les hôtels et restaurants, il est défendu de servir, soit comme plat à part, soit comme mets complémentaires, des pommes de terre épluchées *avant la cuisson.*

Art. 2

Les infractions à la disposition précédente seront punies d'une peine d'emprisonnement (de police ou correctionel) de six mois au plus ou d'une amende pouvant atteindre 5000 marks. Les deux peines pourront aussi être appliquées simultanément.

Art. 3

Ces infractions seront jugées par les tribunaux militaires allemands.

Bruxelles, le 26 février, 1916.

Le Gouverneur-Général en Belgique,
Baron von Bissing,
Général-Colonel.

(Translation:)

Order
concerning the method of using potatoes in hotels and restaurants

Article First

In hotels and restaurants it is forbidden to serve, either separately or as a side dish, potatoes peeled before cooking.

to the belief that the Germans only meant to seize them, would not declare their stocks, nor ever did.

There was nothing to be done about it: we had tried, Villalobar and I, by unofficial suggestions, to have the measures of the *Zentralen* relaxed, but the Germans, while realizing that the results of their plan were bad, clung to them with stubborn persistence. It was suggested that the potatoes be turned over to the communal authorities, but no, that could not be done; they must be distributed according to the German method or be left to rot—and they were left to rot, while the poor went hungry.

The communal authorities, and especially those of the agglomeration of Brussels, were subjected to constant indignities. A burgomaster of one of the communes in the Brussels agglomeration in writing letters always employed a French form that is, I believe, a relic of revolutionary days: *"Salut et respect."* And the Germans objected—said he must employ the consecrated form: *"Veuillez, Monsieur, agréer l'expression,"* etc.

And yet, latterly, when the German authorities ad-

Art. 2

Infringements of the preceding order will be punished by the pain of imprisonment (police or corrective) for not more than six months or by a fine of not more than 5000 marks. The two penalties may also be applied together.

Art. 3

These infringements will be judged by the German military tribunals.

Brussels, 26 February, 1916.

The Governor-General in Belgium,
Baron von Bissing,
Colonel-General.

dressed letters to the municipal authorities they did not observe any form of civility whatever.

The Germans at that time—the end of February, 1916, were not in good humour. The great offensive predicted by Mr. Walcott had begun; it was to be, according to one German officer, the *letzte Schlag*. The weather was very cold, the days were dark. There was snow one day and the boulevards all frostily white by evening. The whole town was restless and excited; every one was filled with foreboding. What if—after all——?

Then on Saturday, the twenty-sixth of February, the news ran through Brussels that the Germans had won a stupendous victory at Verdun. The next morning there was an *affiche*.[3]

---

[3] This is the affiche:

NOUVELLES PUBLIÉES

PAR LE GOUVERNEMENT GENERAL ALLEMAND

Prise du premier fort de Verdun

Berlin, 26 février (Communiqué du Grand Quartier Général). Le fort blindé de Douaumont, le pilier nord-est de la ligne principale des fortifications permanentes de la place forte de Verdun, a été pris d'assaut hier après-midi par le régiment d'infanterie du Brandebourg No. 24; il est solidement au pouvoir des troupes allemandes.

LE GOUVERNEMENT GÉNÉRAL EN BELGIQUE.

(Translation:)

NEWS PUBLISHED

BY THE GERMAN GENERAL GOVERNMENT

The Taking of the Principal Fort of Verdun

Berlin, February 26 (Communiqué from General Headquarters). —The ironclad fort of Douaumont, the north-east pillar of the principal line of fortifications of the fortified place of Verdun, was

The city was plunged in gloom all that Sunday. And yet, after a few hours the indomitable Belgian spirit arose. In a club in a certain little street in the lower town, where a group of Bruxellois were gathered, all sitting about that evening in sadness, they began almost spontaneously to shrug their shoulders.

"Ce n'est pas vrai," said one.

"C'est de la blague," said another.

"Ils mentent," said a third. *"Ils ont besoin d'argent pour leur nouvel emprunt."*

Then a man entered and said solemnly:

"Messieurs, je viens expressément pour vous dire que ce n'est pas vrai. Et même si cela était, ce n'est rien, puisque le fort à Verdun n'est d'aucune importance. Ça! Mais ça a été tout à fait démodé il y a quinze ans. Ce n'est rien."

And so they persuaded themselves. It was Brussels through and through, with its *insouciance,* its inexhaustible optimism. The next day, when two men met in the lower town and one asked:

"Quelle nouvelle de la guerre?" the response was:

"Quelle guerre?"

There was a rumour in town that a wireless telegram from the Tour Eiffel had been intercepted, saying that the French had retaken the fort; and yet, no one knew, not even any one at the Politische Abteilung. Then on Monday the Germans said, "It is not finished yet." But on Tuesday the story of the Eiffel Tower message was denied, and even the most optimistic felt the general depression.

---

taken by assault yesterday afternoon by the 24th Brandenburg regiment of infantry; it is firmly in the hands of the German troops.

THE GENERAL GOVERNMENT IN BELGIUM.

The snow had turned to rain, the trees in the deserted Bois were dripping lonesomely, the air was heavy, the skies leaden. Day and night the cannon rumbled like distant thunder. . . .

Then I met Hermancito in the avenue Marnix. He always had the latest news. They would take Verdun, he said. . . . I climbed to the attic where a French painter I knew had his little studio. Out of his garret window one could see Ste.-Gudule and all the tiled roofs to the west. He had on an old sweater and was in slippers, and his pipe was going. We talked a while, and of course, somehow the word Paris was pronounced. He turned suddenly about, his face had gone white; he took his pipe from his lips and with a terrible rage he said:

"Paris! Mais ils nous payeront cela!"

XVIII

AFTER THE WAR!

THE *letzte Schlag,* however, had failed, as Brussels knew when a fortnight had passed and Verdun had not fallen. And the people once more found courage, even though the newspapers printed in Brussels never permitted a cheerful bit of intelligence to appear. They had a daily article on the progress of military events, artfully written as though from an unbiased standpoint, but with a tendency to depress and discourage that was remorseless, implacable, almost diabolical. They gave the German communiqués and the French and British communiqués, especially when these latter acknowledged reverses and defeats. And the people learned to read those twisted and tortured tales as people learn to read between the lines of a censored press, though there was not so much a censored press in Belgium as there was an inspired and subsidized press, the basest prostitution to which human intelligence and the arts of writing and printing can be put. Perhaps, indeed, the Brussels folk exaggerated in an inverse ratio; they always thought that their friends and allies outside had good news of which they knew nothing, and they had a confidence almost touching that on the other side of the line in those March days, with their *giboulées,* their snows and rains and winds and bursts of sunshine, things were all going well. . . .

The walls were covered with those *affiches* beginning *à la peine de mort;* one day brought thirty-nine condemnations, eight of them victims shot at Mons for "counting trains"—another phrase that had been added to Belgium's coterie speech. One of the victims was a woman, and she was condemned, not because she had counted trains, but because she had not betrayed her husband, who had counted trains. The Germans were continuing to requisition indigenous food-stuffs, butter and pork, and now they began to seize the great patient-draft dogs that hauled the carts—those gentle, hard-working friends of the peasant; they were taken for use in the German army, though the Belgians found cause for hope even in that, and insisted that the Germans intended to use them for food in Germany.

The Cardinal had returned from Rome, had issued another pastoral, and the printing establishment that had printed it for his Eminence had been raided and every one concerned—except the Cardinal—arrested. A week later the Cardinal's private secretary, the Abbé Louein, was arrested on the charge of having aided *le mot de soldat,* an organisation formed to obtain personal news of soldiers in the Belgian army.

M. Davignon, the Belgian Minister for Foreign Affairs, had died at Nice; Maître Théodor had been released from his German prison and was in Switzerland. Such were the bits of news that found their way into the land that was being ground down under a heel heavier than that which had ground down Venice and Lombardy when they were under Austrian rule. People lived on some way, with one phrase constantly on their lips: *"Après la guerre!"*

After the war! What vast schemes and projects,

what gratified revenge, what dreams of joy, that phrase contained! The people turned their thoughts and their hopes into that future where, after this horrid interruption, they could resume life again. They would breathe again, after that choking atmosphere; they would go on journeys, make holidays, laugh, play, be happy—after the war. But the reality was always there—in those officers swanking along the boulevard, in those soldiers marching and singing, in those *polizei* with their spiked, squat helmets, boots, belts, revolvers, long knives, heavy rifles with fixed bayonets, their air of brutality; I used to fancy how they would look tramping down Broadway or on Pennsylvania Avenue or along the Lake Front. How would Americans feel? Could they realize what the occupation of a city means? No, no one could do that except, perhaps, some old Italian of Venice or Lombardy who could remember Ravetsky, whose rule was not so long as that Belgium knew. Yes, the reality was there, and if one fled the spectacle to go to Ravenstein or to the *Forêt* or to Groenendael, or even down the road toward Waterloo, or out to pretty Vlesenbeek, and fell each time more captive to the charm of the red roofs of the Flemish landscape, even then one must hear the distant thunder of the guns, saluting the ineradicable cruelty and hopeless stupidity of man along a front that stretched from the North Sea to the Vosges.

XIX

THE RAVITAILLEMENT IN DANGER

By the middle of March our three envoys who had gone with the Governor General's assurances to London had passed over to the continent; the Marquis had gone on to Madrid, and the Baron Lambert and M. Francqui were waiting in Paris for his return. Meanwhile, in the midst of all the rumours that flew about in the darkness of Brussels, Mr. Hoover came over from London with the news that the whole affair of the requisitions was practically settled. The Marquis, on his return, would bring the formal response of the British Government, but as Mr. Hoover had been privy to the preparation of this document, he could give me most reassuring information as to its character. So that we seemed to have got safely over another shoal, though in such stormy waves as those through which we were trying to navigate the bark that was freighted with the hopes of Belgium we could never be sure or take anything for granted, and, with the curious superstition that is revived in men by the excitement and anxiety of high enterprises, and grows more and more rife in time of war, we would have assumed no more that things would go well than we would have lighted three cigarettes with one match.

"All that I know," said Mr. Hoover, pausing and glancing at his watch, as he paced the floor of my room

on a morning of heavy snow, "is that at eleven o'clock on the morning of March twenty-four, 1916, the *ravitaillement* is still going on."

Mr. Hoover had come over to be on the ground when the discussions were in progress, and he could bring all the gossip, of which there was just then a great deal, of all the hazards and dangers resulting from all sorts of conflicting ambitions that threatened the great work into which he had poured all his enthusiasm, and for which he had made so many personal sacrifices. At one moment so intense were some of the conflicting ambitions involved that he had written to propose that the Americans withdraw in favour of some one else, but to this the British Government would not listen for an instant. The discouragements were many, and often of such a nature as to make us sick at heart. For my own part, I had long since placed above every other possible consideration the fate of the seven million Belgians whose lives depended on our feeding them, and I had only to turn my eyes toward them in any exigency to be able to put aside every other consideration; I had them constantly before me—their sufferings, their sorrows, their great and tragic need. When Mr. Hoover came to Brussels he would go down and have a look at the line before the soup-kitchens and come back saying that we must find a way.

He was projecting a journey to Lille. "Eating dogs down there," he said laconically that morning, as we talked of the conditions in the city so near the front. Infant mortality had increased 25 per cent. It was difficult to secure sufficient allotments of food for northern France, and Mr. Hoover wished to see for himself so that he could return and speak as one

having authority. Already many were being brought from there to Brussels hospitals, wholly demented.

While he was in Brussels he had many interviews, of course, with the German officers of the Vermittlungsstellen, who were being so constantly urged by *Messieurs les militaires* to inaugurate more rigid measure in regard to the *ravitaillement,* when that could be done without interfering with the food itself. The military men were growing almost savage in their insistence that the Belgians labour for them, and, while that was a matter that was outside the scope of the C. R. B., the delegates were constantly made to feel and to suffer, at least in their sympathies, the various pressures the German commanders sought to exercise.

But what did affect the C. R. B. was the intention, announced just at that time, to detail a German officer and attach him as a cicerone to each of the delegates. This system had always prevailed in the north of France, and it had been accepted by the C. R. B. as one of the necessities of the case, more excusable by the fact that the work there was carried on in the zone of actual military operations. There these cicerones, as I have said, never left the delegates alone for a second, day or night; it was an intolerable relation; it would have been an intolerable relation had the cicerones been very angels of light. At the end of a fortnight the delegates would return to Brussels nervous wrecks, so nervous and unstrung that they seemed likely to burst into tears. It had been impossible to secure older men to accept the posts; none but young men, animated by a certain spirit of adventure, would consent to do so. And now when the Germans proposed to inaugurate the same system in the *Occupationsgebiet,* Mr. Hoover promptly and deter-

minedly said no; to that he would never consent—rather than that the whole work might cease. The demand was not pressed. Mr. Hoover had learned, as others were to learn, that the only tone the Germans could comprehend was that which they employed themselves. . . .

One day, late in the afternoon, two motors, piled high with baggage and flying the Spanish flag, rolled along the boulevard and inside were the Marquis and the Baron, lifting their hats to us as they passed. And the next day there was Villalobar again, smart in a morning-coat, come, after many moving accidents by field and flood, to tell me the news of the world outside. One who had come back into our narrow and stifling prison, after days spent at The Hague, London, Paris and Madrid, with the gossip of the dinner-tables and chancelleries of the capitals, who had seen Their Majesties in the austere simplicity of their villa in the sand-dunes, who had been the guest of the Empress Eugènie at Farnborough—she had had a deep interest in the Marquis from his youth—was sure to have much to tell; and as Villalobar knew how to tell stories, enlivening them by his humour and by his power of minute observation, never a detail, never one of the thousand amusing, ridiculous or pathetic little incidents of the human comedy escaping him, there were, of course, long hours to bring up the arrears. He brought back the note containing the favourable reply of the British Government of which Mr. Hoover had already told me, and to conclude that *histoire* there remained now only the formal interview with Baron von der Lancken.

M. Francqui had arrived home, too, and there were other hours with him in which he could describe in his witty way, and even enact from time to time, the human

comedy as he saw it—a comedy which even in those tragic moments lent itself to much that was ridiculous in the antics of the jigging men who were playing it.

Mr. Hoover went down to Lille with Mr. Poland, and he came back sick with what he had seen and with plans for increasing the importations of food to aid the suffering French. And he had done another thing that to me was an immense relief. When our problems seemed for the moment all to have been solved I broached another question that had long been on my heart; it concerned the great, patient draft-dogs, those that the Germans had not requisitioned. They turned such pathetic eyes on me from under their carts, in what I could imagine as a dumb appeal:

"Ce qu'il y a de meilleur en l'homme c'est le chien."

I had a suspicion that those dogs had not enough to eat: I could share my own rations with my own dog, but what of those dogs of the street that worked so hard, leading a dog's life indeed, with no trade union, no *syndicat,* nothing to represent them, but trusting wholly to the capricious generosity of man?

"Oh," said Mr. Hoover, to my joy, "I've already thought of that. We are organizing a department to issue biscuits to *chiens de service,* but *chiens de luxe* must depend on the crumbs that fall from their masters' tables."

So the C.R.B. did not forget even the dogs of Belgium. Mr. Hoover, in speaking during one of those days of the work of the Commission, summed it all up under three heads. It had organized an almost perfect machine for securing justice and equality in the distribution of food, so that the poor had thereby been fed and kept up to the normal physical standard, enabling

them to offer spiritual resistance to the invasion; it had provided a moral rallying-point to the communes; its delegates as eye-witnesses had acted as a constant restraint on Kreischefs and so prevented much brutality. Of the one hundred and fifty men who had thus far entered the Commission's service in Belgium, two were in asylums for the insane and thirty were suffering from nervous breakdowns. And in addition to the one hundred and fifty in Belgium there were one hundred in the offices of the Commission in London, Rotterdam and New York, and five thousand local committees in America and elsewhere in the world. To all this he might have added that the indirect effect on the cause of the Allies of the appeals these committees were constantly making was by no means inconsiderable.

It was then that, feeling that our other troubles were settled, we devised the plan of a fortnightly meeting of the representatives of the C.N. and the C.R.B. with the Protecting Ministers, to avoid in the future the repetition of certain misunderstandings that had sometimes threatened to arise, as misunderstandings will arise whenever men meet, even when they all speak the same language; when they speak different languages they are more apt to arise than ever, and we wished to avoid any misunderstandings between such good friends as Belgians and Americans had come to be. We felt, I should not say happy, for that is a word that had fled the vocabulary of our world since that terrible August of 1914, but relieved by the solutions we had found for our difficulties.

We settled it all there in the American Legation in a meeting at which the countless details were discussed—a meeting that lasted all morning and far afternoon,

until M. Francqui, drawing out his watch, sprang to his feet and startled us by exclaiming:

"Mais mon Dieu! Est-ce que ces Messieurs déjeunent?"

Then all the afternoon we discussed it again, and at tea-time, just as we were drawing a long breath, startling news came from Holland—the Dutch army was remobilizing! There were panic and excitement everywhere! Troops were massing along the frontier because, as we were assured, England had sent an ultimatum to Holland and was about to invade the kingdom! And as if that were not enough, we had the news also that the Germans had blown up the *Sussex* and that diplomatic relations between Washington and Berlin were now about to be broken off. Mr. Hoover hurried off that night to London.

And then, when the men of the C.R.B. came to the Legation that evening for the reception my wife was holding in their honour, René Janssen, the young Dane who acted as courier for the Commission, came in from the frontier with the news that the excitement was all over; there was word from Marshall Langhorne at The Hague saying that the crisis was past. Perhaps it was because it was All Fool's Day, and, as Villalobar had just been saying, everybody in the world had gone crazy.

XX

THE UNIVERSITY OF GHENT

THERE were so many startling sensations in our world that enterprises of great pitch and moment now and then passed unnoticed. When I read my notes of those days I am sometimes amazed to find that I was often scribbling down at great length and in silly detail incidents of which the ultimate importance was very small, though they seemed of importance at the time, while I allowed to pass unnoted, or with only a word of casual reference, some event that bore heavily on the destiny of man. It must be that the ironic spirits, in their *espièglerie,* or in their justifiable contempt for the intelligence of man, continually spite him and use him for their amusement.

For instance, in my notes for the year under notice I find but brief and insufficient references to the first of those events that were destined in their ensemble to form the most evil of all the deeds committed by the Germans in Belgium. On the twenty-fifth of March, there appeared in *La Belgique,* the organ of the General Government, this *arrêté* of a German general:

UNIVERSITÉ DE GAND

Arrêté du commandant en chef de la IV^e armée, prince Albrecht de Würtemberg:

En modification de l'art. 5 de l'arrêté royal du 9 décembre, 1849, il est arrêté ce qui suit:

Les cours de l'Université de Gand se donneront en langue flamande. Le chef de l'administration civile près le gouverneur général en Belgique pourra, par exception, autoriser l'emploi d'une autre langue dans certaines branches de l'enseignement. Il est chargé de publier les dispositions réglementaires destinées à assurer l'exécution du présent arrêté.[1]

Why this sudden concern for the education of youth in Belgium? Why this solicitude for the culture of a people who were being harried and harassed and imprisoned and put to death? What military necessity was it that required a German general to interfere in the curriculum of a university there in an occupied territory, in the midst of savage warfare, in a city under martial law, and in such abnormal conditions that the University, unable to continue its functions, had been obliged to close its doors? What had the commander of an army in the field, there in the *Étappengebiet,* to do with education?

The subject, to be sure, was not new to Belgians; it was an element of the old difference between the Flemish and the Walloons, and the Belgians—and the Flemish first among them—saw at once the meaning of this manœuvre that wore the innocent air of a mere aca-

[1] University of Ghent

Order of the Commander of the IVth army, Prince Albrecht, of Würtemberg:

In modification of Article 5 of the royal order of December 9, 1849, it is ordered as follows:

The courses in the University of Ghent will be given in the Flemish language. The chief of the civil administration near the Governor-General in Belgium may, as exception, authorize the use of another language in certain branches of instruction. He is charged with the publication of regulations destined to the execution of this order.

demical measure. The Governor-General had already and long since ordered that in the budget for the year 1915 there be included provisions for transforming the University of Ghent into a Flemish university, and at the New Year he had published a statement that foreshadowed the order of Prince Albrecht of Würtemberg. The statement would have it appear that the Governor-General was inspired by concern for the proper education of Flemish youth and for the realization of the ideals of their race.[2]

The sequel, a year later, showed that this act was but

---

[2] Université Flamande

La question relative à l'érection d'une Université flamande, question qui à la suite des résolutions proposées à la Chambre belge, s'était résume en une réclamation visant à la transformation de l'Université de Gand en établissement flamand, vient de faire un pas décisif en avant.

En effet, M. le gouverneur-général a ordonné que, dans le budget pour l'exercise 1915, soient inscrites les sommes nécessaires pour acheminer la transformation de l'Université de Gand en haute école flamande. En outre, les mesures propres à organiser la réforme de l'enseignement devront être préparées et commencées avec le concours de personnalités compétentes.

C'est ainsi qu'un des voeux essentiels du mouvement flamand approche de sa réalisation, un voeu dont les Belges aussi ont, à longue, dû reconnaître la légitimité. En 1840, il y a précisément soixante-quinze ans, la première proposition de loi, tendant à l'organisation d'un enseignement supérieur en langue flamande, fut soumise aux Chambres, tandis que la dernière, celle des députés Franck, Cauwelaert et Huysmans, date de 1912-1913.

Il faut espérer que, désormais, tous les milieux intéressés voudront unir leurs efforts pour envisager et peser avec calme la préparation de mesures aptes à amener une solution conservant à la centenaire Alma Mater le prestige scientifique et la valeur morale qui font sa gloire et lui assurant, en même tamps et mieux que jusqu'ici,

the entering wedge of a policy intended to divide the Belgian nation, and ultimately to annex its territory to the German Empire. The policy was inaugurated, as all particularly odious policies of the German Government were inaugurated, with the unctuous hypocrisy

---

les moyens d'être la protagoniste de la culture flamande et la grande semeuse du savoir et du pouvoir en ce pays de Flandre.

La Belgique—No. 409.

(Translation:)

Flemish University

The question relative to the erection of a Flemish university—a question which, in accordance with the resolutions proposed in the Belgian Chamber, had been embodied in a demand calling for the transformation of the University of Ghent into a Flemish establishment—has just taken a decisive step in advance.

Indeed, the Governor-General has ordered that, in the budget for the expenses of 1915, there be provided the sums immediately necessary for the transformation of the University of Ghent into a high Flemish school. Moreover, the proper measures for organizing the reform in instruction will be devised and undertaken with the assistance of competent persons.

It is thus that one of the principal purposes of the Flemish movement approaches its realization, a purpose the legitimacy of which the Belgians also must all along have recognized. In 1840, exactly seventy-five years ago, the first draft of a law providing for the organization of a superior education in the Flemish language was submitted to the Chambers, while the last, that of the Deputies Franck, Cauwelaert and Huysmans, is dated 1912-1913.

It is to be hoped that henceforth all the classes interested will unite their efforts in order calmly to plan and to consider the preparation of appropriate measures to reach a solution, conserving to the secular Alma Mater the scientific prestige and the moral value which is the basis of its glory, assuring to it at the same time, and better than heretofore, the means of being the protagonist of Flemish culture and the great disseminator of knowledge and of power in this land of Flanders.

which is the essential quality of the German official lie. Whenever they adopted the pious tone it was an infallible sign that some new deviltry was brewing; whenever they announced in horror and surprise that the English or the French had performed some ugly and unheard-of deed it meant that they were about to perpetrate that deed themselves—just as, a fortnight before they used asphyxiating-gas for the first time in history, they announced at Brussels that the French had used it. Thus their sudden warm concern for the Flemings deceived no one, least of all the Flemings themselves.

The University of Ghent had been for a long time the centre about which the Flamingant movement turned. There were two State universities in Belgium, one in Liége and one in Ghent: both were French, in the sense that French was the language used officially in both, although certain courses of lectures had been given in Flemish at Ghent. For long years the leading Flamingants had laboured to have the University of Ghent transformed into a Flemish institution. It was proposed at one time to establish a new and exclusively Flemish university at Antwerp, which is the centre of the Flemish life and of the Flemish movement; but there were no funds available for such an ambitious scheme. Then, in March of 1911 the Flamingants in parliament brought forward a Bill enacting that at the University of Ghent all the lectures be given in Flemish. There was one of those bitter discussions which only questions relating to race, language, or religion can incite, and when the measure was found to be too radical to command the support of a majority a new Bill was presented that recognized the two languages as equal, and

lectures were to be given in both, even if a double staff of professors were necessary. This too was found to be too radical, and a third proposal was brought forward that the university be gradually transformed into a Flemish institution. The measure was pending when the war came on and put an end to public discussion in Belgium, for the Flemish and Walloons closed their ranks and stood shoulder to shoulder against the invader.

When the purpose of the Governor-General was revealed a protest was immediately sent to him, written, probably, by Mr. Louis Franck, a deputy for Antwerp and just then acting Burgomaster for that city, whose name headed the list of signatures. Mr. Franck is a lawyer of Antwerp, a Flemish man of culture and erudition, and recognized as the leader of the Flemish movement in Belgium. He is a strong, broad-shouldered man, with a great flowing red beard and a flashing eye, and endowed with all the qualities that make a fascinating popular leader. He speaks Flemish, French, German and English with equal facility, and is a remarkable orator. From the beginning of the war he had worked untiringly for his people: he had taken on his broad shoulders the direction of the affairs of his own city; he was a member of the Comité National and rendered services to the *ravitaillement* that were invaluable. He was always in intimate relations with the delegates of the C.R.B. and was popular among them. He wielded a large personal influence in Belgium, and as the leader of the Flemish movement, who had himself been in the Chamber of Deputies three years before the war, led the movement for the transformation of the University. The Germans thought, no doubt, that he and the other Flamingants would welcome their intervention in

favour of the old and darling project. Their first deception came when this very leader was the first to remark their hypocrisy and to resent their interference. He told them bluntly that the Flemish question was one that concerned Belgians, not Germans, and that Belgians would settle it among themselves and to suit themselves when the Germans were out of their country. The protest—and it was not to be the last in what is the darkest chapter of the whole dark history of these times—was another of those historic documents of the Belgian struggle for liberty, and it places Louis Franck among the first and most intelligent of the nation's patriots. In a flash of political insight he saw that the act was but the first manœuvre of a Machiavellian design to divide the Belgian people, and to destroy the Belgian nation. It was not enough that the country be violated, invaded, ravished and despoiled, stripped of all its resources, its industry ruined, and its machinery, even to the last belt or the last wheel, carried off to Germany, not enough that its cities and villages be bombarded and burned, not enough that its people be murdered; all that was not enough to satisfy the insensate savagery that laid waste the land—the very soul of the nation must be destroyed. This protest was signed by the presidents of the two great Flemish *bunds,* which have for their object the encouragement of Flemish culture, and by several members of the former commission for the establishment of a Flemish university. After this instant response of the Flamingants themselves there were protests from all the professors of the University and the leading personages in Belgium. *De Vlaamsche Leeuw,* the little forbidden newspaper, excoriated the manœuvre.

The Governor-General replied to the protest of the

Flamingants, and then proceeded to the execution of the measures; and there was more resistance. Among the professors who taught at Ghent were the historians Paul Frédéricq and Henri Pirenne, both celebrated in the intellectual circles of Europe and America. Professor Frédéricq was Flemish, imbued with the ideals of his race. Professor Pirenne was a scholar whose monumental history of Belgium is the authoritative work on the life of the sturdy little nation that had struggled up through the vicissitudes of a thousand years of turbulent history, determined to be free.

It was told everywhere in Belgium, until it became common talk, that when it was determined by the German authorities to set up a purely Flemish institution Governor-General von Bissing sent for Professor Pirenne and promised him the most splendid and dazzling emoluments if he would accept the position of Rector of the University, and that Professor Pirenne replied that he would be pleased and honoured to accept the position "if the patent naming me is signed by my sovereign, His Majesty King Albert." The story was hardly convincing and later von Bissing himself denied it in a letter written to a Swedish philologist.[3]

The whole of the truth will not be known until Professors Frédéricq and Pirenne are freed and in a position to give to the world their version of the facts; but at any rate, when the order was given to reopen and to transform the University into a Flemish institution all the professors, led by Professors Frédéricq and Pirenne, refused to obey. The Germans resorted to force;

[3] *Vide* "The Imprisonment of the Ghent Professors," by Kr. Nydron, Ph.D.; Hodder and Stoughton, London, 1917, p. 88.

the *polizei* appeared and on the eighteenth of March, 1916, arrested Professors Frédéricq and Pirenne, took them to Brussels, and threw them into prison. Ere long they were deported to Germany, where they were provisionally interned in an officers' camp, and later transferred to the prisoners' compounds at Holzminden and Güterslok, where they were treated like other civilian prisoners—numbered, marked, lodged and fed like the rest, with no consideration shown to their fame, their achievements, their standing or their age. Later on their lot seems to have been ameliorated, and they were treated with something of the respect which was their due.

The American Government interested itself in the fate of the two distinguished professors, and when I made inquiries at the Politische Abteilung I was informed that they had been deported as "undesirable"; no other explanation was given beyond an allusion to what was referred to as their "political activities." I should like to think that the interest shown by our Government had at least some effect of securing for them that better treatment which was later accorded, for it was stated that they had been allowed to go to Jena and to study there, and, after their experiences in Belgium, refresh their belief in the existence of a moral law by reading Kant, as it were, on the spot.

Another story was told at Brussels which would have it that before they were taken away the Governor-General ordered them brought before him, and that when Professor Frédéricq entered, von Bissing, addressing him and speaking in Flemish, said:

"You see, Professor, I have learned Flemish since I have been here."

The reply was said to have been instantaneous—and in French:

"And I," said Professor Frédéricq, "since you came, I have forgotten it."

The story was so good that I concluded at once that it must be apocryphal, and there is no doubt that it is, since the Governor-General said that he never saw either of the professors in his life. But that and the other story express the spirit that inspired the Flemish patriots. Not that they had forgotten their language, or wished to; not that they had abandoned their efforts to promote it; but they would not have it used as a means of helping Germany to destroy the only nation where it is spoken or has a chance to develop.

I suppose that fully to understand the Flemish question one would have to be Flemish oneself. It is not wholly a question of languages. The Belgians, indeed, are famous linguists; in the first place, they have two languages in general use—French and Flemish. Just to the north of them lies Holland, whose tongue is so akin to Flemish that the Belgians have no difficulty with it. The Flemish language has, too, certain similarities to the German, and it bears so close a resemblance in its roots to that part of our English tongue which is not of Latin derivation—that is, to the base of our language—that it is easy for the Flemish to learn English. The Flemish have no objections to speaking French when they possess it; it is the language of the Court and of the upper classes in Belgium. French was spoken in the Belgian Parliament by all, Flemish or Walloon—except, I believe, in the case of two deputies who were not sufficiently fluent in French to speak it publicly; when they spoke they used Flemish, and the Chamber

listened sympathetically. In the Belgian courts French is used unless the accused in a criminal case or the witnesses insist on Flemish. All the street-signs in Belgium are lettered in both languages—though in Bruges and in Ghent the Germans ordered the French names stricken off. All laws and public documents are published in both languages, with the French text given first; the Germans, however, changed the order and printed the Flemish first.

It is said that no matter how many languages one knows, there are three things that one always does in one's own mother-tongue—to wit, pray, count, and make love. I was talking one day about the Flemish question with a Belgian minister, himself a Flemishman and one of the leading exponents of the Flemish movement. He spoke habitually in French, though until the age of twelve he had never known any language but Flemish. French was the language used in his home; his children, indeed, could not speak Flemish—in fact, as he whimsically avowed, with which his political adherents among the Flemish did not fail to reproach him. I asked him in what language he habitually thought.

"In French," he replied. "I made all my law studies in French; I don't even know the terms in Flemish; all the sequences of my thought in such affairs are in French."

"In what language do you count?" I said.

"In French," he replied.

I did not like to be too indiscreet, and of the three topics which I have just cited as those on which one always thinks in one's mother tongue two of them seemed too intimate to raise.

"But," I ventured, "suppose, as happens sometimes

to the best of us, you were suddenly to lose your temper, grow very angry—in what language would you swear?"

"Oh," he said, without an instant's hesitation, "in Flemish, of course."

Flemish is the language of all the north and west of Belgium, and French the language of the south and east. In Wallonie the Walloons speak their French with a curious accent that goes back in the centuries for its origins. In Flanders Flemish is spoken in accents that differ almost from commune to commune. It is in Antwerp that the purest Flemish is spoken, but even there it differs in accent and intonation from the Dutch it so closely resembles. And yet the Flemish would have none of the Dutch; religion had much to do with that—the old conflict between the Catholic and the Orange. The Walloons would have none of the French either; even though their language is essentially the same. They were Belgian, and the Flemish and Walloons have always got on well enough together to form a nation. *"Walloon et Flamand sont des prénoms; le nom de famille est Belge,"* says an old adage of Brabant. They prefer to live together, and when there are little quarrels, to keep them in the family.

The Flemish movement, in the view of the most enlightened of its leaders, was, and in the true sense still is, not a political but a cultural movement, the effort of a race to develop its own powers and to realize its own destinies—though, like all those peculiar and baffling problems inherent in race differences, it has had its repercussion in politics, and politicians in Belgium have made use of it for their own needs, as politicians everywhere, frequently wanting in principles and feeling the

need of issues, appeal to the ugly spirit of sectionalism and particularism. The fact that the language of the ruling classes of the court, of society, is French makes no difference to the Walloon peasants and workingmen; their language is French also. But with the Flemish peasant it is otherwise: sometimes he is prone to feel that he is at a disadvantage; he has an uneasy sense of inferiority. The Flemish lad conscripted for the army felt embarrassed by the fact that the officers and many of his comrades habitually spoke a language that he did not know. The fact sometimes seemed to close the door of advancement to him; if he tried to learn French it was to speak it with a Flemish accent, and now and then be laughed at, and perhaps at the same time be accused by his own people of putting on airs, and the result of all this was a kind of resentment that any demagogue could easily fan into a flame.

The Flemish are conscious of their own glorious history; the story of Flanders from the battle of the Golden Spurs is a long story of resistance to French and Dutch and Austrian and Spanish domination. They have a great and wonderful tradition of art, glorified by the names of Rembrandt, Rubens, Jordaens and Teniers. They have a literature of their own in which, by such writers as Henrik Conscience, their heroism is celebrated. The Lion of Flanders is the oldest heraldic device in the world and the symbol of a brave folk that are not Dutch, nor anything but Flemish—and Belgian.

But there was another tendency that ran parallel to this, the tendency of particularism to mistake itself for democracy, and there were those who hold that there should be a separation of administrative functions in the kingdom; the government in Flanders to be admin-

istered in Flemish, that in Wallonie in French. No such advance had been made in this direction as had been made in the matter of transforming the Ghent University; the movement had the support of some socialists, even some Walloon socialists, and others who were victims of the old confusion of particularism with democracy. But the majority saw more clearly; they feared disunion and a cleft in the nation, and opposed it.

And then the Germans came. They knew, long before they arrived, all the currents of political and social thought. The Politische Abteilung studied these problems with minute care and a Machiavellian intelligence. The transformation of the University of Ghent lay ready to their hands, to be used as the thin edge of the wedge which, as they hoped, would divide the Belgian people and enable them to kill the very soul of the nation they had already violated and despoiled. And the sequel showed that they wished to do more; Flanders, and even Holland were included in the Pan-Germanic dream of conquest. Von Bissing had such great difficulty in procuring Flemish professors that he finally imported teachers from Holland and Germany, what the French call *célébrites inconnues,* and they turned out to be, for the most part, Germans, disclosing a sinister design to transform the University of Ghent, not into a Flemish, but into a German university.

XXI

THE RAVITAILLEMENT GOES ON

I HAD a letter from my colleague, Dr. van Dyke, at The Hague, saying that the news with regard to our relations with Germany was disquieting, that the tension was very great, that the President would not yield on the questions raised by the torpedoing of the *Sussex,* and that a rupture of diplomatic relations seemed inevitable. The volcano on which we had been sitting for eleven months seemed therefore at last on the point of eruption. It was in the midst of such uncertainty that we were about to take up the final discussion of the guarantees concerning the protection of the Belgian cattle from seizure by the German troops. My own feelings, had I cared to show them—and as an Anglo-Saxon I tried not to do that—were somehow expressed for me one afternoon at that very time by J——, the painter. We were in his studio, and I was looking at some of those quiet interiors he paints so well, evoking the sentiment and charm of little corners of peaceful *salons,* or cool dining-rooms with windows open on a garden—a kind of still life, in its way—when something was said about the war. J—— resented it as a tremendous and stupid interruption of the serious and vital affairs of life, and suddenly, as though he had had a seizure of some sort, he tugged at his hair with both hands, whirled round and cried out:

"Et moi! Le peintre de la tranquillité!"

As for me, however, a certain tranquillity was immediately enforced upon me in a trifling accident; I sprained my foot and was immobilized for weeks. It was unfortunate to be confined so stupidly to the house just when the spring was coming on, the woods all green, and their floor sprinkled with anemones as with snow. There were no regulations as to the spring as yet, unless the latest rule about dogs might be construed as having some relation to that subject. The Germans had decreed that all dogs be muzzled lest they bite somebody! *O Mores!*

One woman, we heard, had been fined a thousand marks for having a Griffon unmuzzled, and the thousand marks not being immediately forthcoming, her furniture was seized.

It was during those days too that I had a call from an elderly gentleman from Bruges, with snowy hair and beard, dressed scrupulously in black, even to black kid gloves, which he wore throughout the interview, speaking the most formal French with meticulous politeness, addressing me always in the third person. He had come to ask some little service, and somehow in the course of the conversation the name of Mentende Horne was mentioned, and I remembered the lieutenant of chasseurs who in the autumn of 1914 had sat there in that very chair, tired and downcast, in his dusty uniform of blue, and told me of the little drama that had been played in the asparagus-field near Malines—the peasant with uplifted fingers betraying him; then Dr. Georg Berghausen, and the effort at exchange. I asked my visitor from Bruges if he knew the Baron, if he could give me any news of him.

"Ah," he said, *"son colonel l'a forte blamé."*

And then he told me how, when released by the Germans, Menten de Horne had gone to Bruges, whence he had fled away, somehow got across the frontier, reached the army, and had fought most bravely and had been decorated by the King for gallant conduct in action.[1] The news did me good; it is reassuring always, and like a moral tonic, to have evidence that there is still justice in the world, and it was especially reassuring during those days in Belgium when one lived in the daily shadow of a great injustice.

The Marquis had come back from London, as I have said, with a memorandum of the English conditions in the matter of the requisitions, and stiff as they were the Germans, after much discussion, had virtually accepted them, and we were relieved on that score, when suddenly one day we learned that, while they would indeed accept them in principle, they would not admit the clause that bound them to recognize the C.N. and the C.R.B. as free from interference on their part; their response to our demands was prepared, but it had an unfortunate paragraph refusing any recognition of the two organizations. The Political Department was willing enough, but it seemed that there was constant friction between that department and other departments of the General Government, and especially with the Zivilverwaltung—even German efficiency and organization not being altogether exempt from human envy and jealousy.

Only another conference with the Baron von der

[1] When I came out of Belgium I had the confirmation of this story at the Belgian front. The baron had displayed such gallantry in action that he had been awarded the Order of Leopold and la Croix de Guerre with palm.—B. W.

Lancken could dispose of the problem, and if the General Government should refuse to recede, then—the *ravitaillement* would be disposed of altogether; for without recognition the C.R.B. would not remain. As Mahomet could not go to the mountain just then the mountain generously agreed to come to Mahomet, and one afternoon the Baron von der Lancken, Dr. Reith, Dr. Brohn, and a fourth man—a little round, blue-eyed German, and no doubt highly educated, since his ruddy face was terribly scarred by duels—came to the Legation, and there we met with Villalobar, van Vollenhoven and M. Francqui. The Baron von der Lancken made a little speech thanking us all for our pains, and especially Villalobar and M. Francqui for having undertaken their journey to London, and told us something of the opposition he himself had encountered in Brussels and in Berlin in reaching an understanding. I replied, thanking the Baron for all the skill and patience by which he had given proof of his interest, saying that I realized how very difficult it all had been, as indeed it had, thanking Villalobar and Francqui too, on behalf of von Vollenhoven and of myself, and then, the amenities having been observed, we settled ourselves in our chairs to listen to the reading of the note in which the Governor-General set forth the new guarantees.

We listened while Dr. Reith read the note in French, waiting, with not a little nervous apprehension, for him to come to the fatal paragraph about the C.N. and the C.R.B., preparing for a battle on that point. Dr. Reith read on, drawing near to the paragraph, came to it at last, but there it was, all perfect, with the recognition duly set forth, all we could ask, and we were all greatly relieved. There were felicitations all round, and—the

ravitaillement of Belgium went on. A few days later we had the notes all duly signed, as I could telegraph to Dr. Page and Mr. Hoover at London, so that they might have the satisfaction the good news would cause them.

XXII

VISITORS

THE suspense created by the uncertainty in the relations between America and Germany was accentuated by our lack of news. When the London newspapers arrived they were a week old, and when the American newspapers arrived they were a month old, and filled with sensations long since stale. The sheets that were printed in Brussels made no reference, or made very little reference, to the long sequel of events that were slowly drawing us into the maelstrom of the war. We had the Dutch newspapers when the Germans permitted them to cross the border; for the most part we depended on the *Nieuwe Rotterdamsche Courant,* which would have a paragraph or two each day about the *duikboot oorlog,* on the development of which the fate of civilization seemed to be more or less depending. The Dutch language was omitted from my imperfect education, but by dint of puzzling over the broad columns of the *Rotterdamsche Courant* I came to have a vague and shadowy apprehension of its meaning when it dealt with subjects relating to the war, especially if those subjects were sensational enough, though I never was quite certain as to how the sensations had turned out in the end. I had, of course, official news from Washington from time to time, but what was lacking was the sense of the atmosphere of any given political

situation, which only a thousand and one hints, personalities, references, incidents, bits of gossip, kindly or malicious—and especially the malicious—can provide. To be sure, there were the German newspapers, but one might as well have read nothing at all; to read them was to know as little about the war as the German people themselves.

Our conviction was that it would end by our leaving Brussels, for in the political conflict then going on in Berlin between the *civils* and the *militaires,* the *militaires,* if they were like the *militaires* in Brussels, would have the last word, and they were always for more and ever more war. We kept our trunks packed and were ready to go on the short notice we felt would be all that would be vouchsafed us, and if we were not precisely sitting on our boxes, we had the impermanent sensation of those in that cramped and benumbing posture.

We tried, however, to appear permanent. The subject was never mentioned in my visits to the Politische Abteilung, which may have been because just at that time I did not go to the Politische Abteilung, for walking was then impossible. But the spring had come once more and I could drive out to look at it, through the Forêt to Overesyche or La Hulpe, the country-side all a tender green and the woods in soft colours. One can not live in Belgium without wishing that one had been born a painter; the moist atmosphere blurs all sharp edges and rigid outlines with a halo as of radiant and delicate mist, and the cottages with their red tiles and old walls are all an indigenous part of the landscape in which they nestle. And yet it is a bad habit, I am sure, always to be looking at nature as the stuff for art,

and at life itself as literature. Canvas and copy! One is never happy so!

When Easter came I had a despatch giving the President's message, in its solemnity and its strength, conceived in that strain which was proper to the leader of the liberal thought of the world. The *Nieuwe Rotterdamsche Courant* that day said—in my clumsy reading of it at least—that Count Bernstorff, after an interview with Mr. Lansing, did not seem to be so optimistic as he had been the day before. There was nothing to be done, of course, so my wife and I drove out through Laeken to Mysse, where, behind its high walls, is the gloomy château of the Empress Charlotte, who lives on there in the perpetual shadow of the tragedy that ended the imperial Mexican adventure of half a century ago. We drove out that way often, and always, I fear, rather craned our necks in an indiscreet if human curiosity, thinking to get a fugitive view of the former Empress. But we never saw her; we could see the façade of the château, the windows staring baldly and sometimes flashing back the sun, when there was a sun. We felt, or perhaps we only imagined, that the place wore the melancholy air of the life that had prolonged itself there, amidst the faded glories of a court that always kept up its imperial pretense—though perhaps there was no more pretense than in other imperial courts, which are all based on pretense, even where crowds of snobs and flunkies sustain them by a gaping approval and truckling acquiescence. We wondered what news of the present dark tragedy of the world had found its way behind those bleak walls. I was brought into material contact with it when I was asked to arrange for the *ravitaillement* of the château, which I did. But that

was all; aside from that it ever remained a mystery that found an appropriate setting behind the foliage of the great trees in the park.

The sun was shining that Easter day and the fields were sweet in their tender green or brown, with the new plowed earth that gave forth its goodly odours, and there were anemones in the grasses and great masses of the yellow flowers in the fields of rape, and here and there along the wayside old walls over which the boughs of peach-trees were falling. It was that ever lovely Belgian scene, with the windmills and the church-spires in the distance, and the peasants winding slowly along a sunken road homeward from vespers. They came slowly and sadly because of the persistent sense of tragedy in the atmosphere, for the loathed uniform of field-grey and the crude red of the ugly little caps were never long out of their sight. . . .

The Germans had celebrated Good Friday by posting on all the walls of Brussels a great *affiche* in red announcing the latest condemnations for "treason in time of war," thirteen victims in all, four of them sentenced to death and the others to hard labour, some for life, some for fifteen years, some for ten years. Three of those condemned to death had already been shot; the sentence of the other had been commuted to imprisonment at hard labour for life.[2]

---

[2] Avis

Ont été condamnés par jugement des 11 et 12 avril 1916, du tribunal de campagne:

(a) *Pour trahison commise pendant l'état de guerre en pratiquant l'espionnage et en y prêtant aide,* à la peine de mort:

1. Oscar Hernalsteens, dessinateur à Bruxelles;
2. François Van Aerde, dessinateur industriel, à Anvers;

The day before the execution an échevin of the commune of Ixelles had been summoned to the prison of St.-

3. Jules Mohr, inspecteur d'assurances, à Valenciennes;
4. Emile Gressier, inspecteur des ponts et chaussées à Saint-Amand.

(b) *Pour avoir prêté aide à l'espionnage:*

5. Georges Hernalsteens, surrurier à Bruxelles-Boitsfort, aux travaux forcés à perpetuité;
6. Gustave Desmul, ouvrier du chemin de fer, à Gand, à 15 ans de travaux forcés;
7. Albert Liénard, entrepreneur à Valenciennes, à 10 ans de travaux forcés;
8. Oscar Delnatte, directeur de cinématographe, à Roubaix, à 15 ans de travaux forcés;
9. Constant Pattyn, terrassier à Lille, à 12 ans de travaux forcés;
10. Jacques Drouillon, marchand de volaille, à La Plaigne, à 10 ans de travaux forcés;
11. Lucien Cabuy, peintre à Bruxelles, à 15 ans de travaux forcés;
12. Joseph Vermeulen, propriétaire de briqueterie à Meirelbeke, près de Gand, à 10 ans de travaux forcés;
13. Joseph Goosenaerts, professor à Gand, à 10 ans de travaux forcés;

Alfred Gaudefroy, marchand de diamants à Bruxelles, a été acquitté.

Les condamnés à mort avaient consenti, moyennant payement, à pratiquer l'espionnage pour compte du service d'information de l'ennemi. Longtemps, conformément aux instructions qui leur avaient été remises, ils ont observés nos troupes, mouvements de troupes, transports par chemin de fer, autos, etc., et transmis ou fait transmettre les renseignements ainsi obtenus au service d'information de l'ennemi.

Les autres condamnés ont pratiqué l'espionnage ou y ont prêté aide de la même manière, mais dans une moindre mesure.

Les condamnés a mort Hernalsteens, Mohr et Gressier ont été exécutés.

Gilles, the high walls of which enclosed so many tragedies, to perform a marriage ceremony. One of the con-

---

En vertu du droit de grâce, la peine du mort prononcée contre Van Aerde a été commuée en travaux forcés à perpetuité.

Bruxelles, le 19 avril, 1916.

(Translation:)

NOTICE

The following have been condemned by judgment of the 11th and 12th April, 1916, of the court-martial:

(a) *For treason committed during a state of war by practising espionage and by giving aid to its practice,* to the pain of death:

1. Oscar Hernalsteens, draughtsman, of Brussels;
2. François Van Aerde, industrial draughtsman, of Antwerp;
3. Jules Mohr, superintendent, of Valenciennes;
4. Emile Gressier, inspector of bridges and highways, of Saint-Amand.

(b) *For having aided in espionage:*

5. Georges Hernalsteens, locksmith, of Brussels-Boitsfort, to hard labour for life;
6. Gustave Desmul, railroad workman, of Ghent, to 15 years at hard labour;
7. Albert Liénard, contractor, of Valenciennes, to 10 years at hard labour;
8. Oscar Delnatte, cinema director, of Roubsix, to 15 years at hard labour;
9. Constant Pattyn, excavator, of Lille, to 12 years at hard labour;
10. Jacques Brouillon, poulterer, of La Plaigne, to 10 years at hard labour;
11. Lucien Cabuy, painter, of Brussels, to 15 years at hard labour;
12. Joseph Vermeulen, proprietor of a brick-yard, of Meirelbeke, near Ghent, to 10 years at hard labour;
13. Joseph Goosenaerts, professor, of Ghent, to 10 years at hard labour.

demned men wished before he died to wed his *fiancée*. The échevin had taken his books and paraphernalia and had gone to the prison where the bride was waiting. The ceremony was performed, and in the place of the usual felicitations the échevin could only say to the bridegroom:

"Ayez du courage!"

"Je l'aurai!" he replied.

He embraced his wife and kissed her, and she was led away. And the next morning at dawn she was a widow.

Tragedy was all about us, and sometimes touched us, or threatened to touch us, even more closely. Early in the month I had news of two arrests that gave me concern for a long while. One of them was that of Senator Halôt, a Belgian who had been honorary consul in Brussels for Japan, and since Japanese interests had been committed to my charge, I tried to help him, even

---

Alfred Gaudefroy, diamond merchant, of Brussels, has been acquitted.

Those condemned to death had consented, in return for payment, to practise espionage for the benefit of the intelligence service of the enemy. For a long time, in conformity with the instructions that had been given them, they have observed our troops, the movement of troops, transports by railroad, automobile, etc., and have transmitted or caused to be transmitted the information thus obtained to the intelligence service of the enemy.

The others condemned have practised espionage or have given it aid in the same manner, but in a less degree.

The men condemned to death, Hernalsteens, Mohr and Gressier, have been executed.

By virtue of the right of pardon, the penalty of death pronounced against Van Aerde has been commuted to hard labour for life.

Brussels, April 19, 1916.

though the Germans long since had officially notified all governments that they would not recognize honorary consuls. Senator Halôt was implicated in a movement to assist young Belgians to cross the frontier, and since, according to the German rule, patriotism on the part of a citizen of another nation is treason against Germany, and Senator Halôt was charged with this high crime and misdemeanor, and since the Politische Abteilung in informing me that nothing could be done referred to the case as *"cette malheureuse affaire,"* it was evident that it was very serious.

The other arrest was that of Dr. Telemachus Bull, an Englishman, who was also charged with treason for having aided Belgian youths to cross the border to Holland. Dr. Bull was a man of seventy, very tall, and he wore a long beard that was said to give him a resemblance to the late King Leopold II. He was a dentist by occupation, and had professionally served the King whom he was said to resemble. He had been arrested early in the month with a Belgian priest said to have been associated with him in his treasonable action against Germany, and I had at once made representations and engaged a lawyer to defend him.

There was, too, just at that time another incident, which involved the arrest, not of one, but of many persons—an entire young ladies' school, indeed. The girls had refused any longer to take music lessons of a German professor, and the gallant professor at once complaining, the *polizei* descended on the *pensionnat,* arrested all the girls and imprisoned them at St.-Gilles. I suppose that was some kind of treason, too, but the young girls were not shot for it, and after a few days'

confinement were released and allowed to return home to their distracted parents.

The signs of spring and of the mysterious awakening in nature were not confined to the woods and fields; they were evident in man as well. The Zeppelins, for one thing, were active again. Now and then they could be seen sailing over the city, like some great silvern fish swimming in the ethereal element. They would come out in the morning, as though for their exercise, hover hideously over the city for an hour, then go back to their lairs. Then one evening—it was the Tuesday after Easter, I think—they all left and, pointing their noses westward, sailed away and disappeared. The next morning they were back, and two days later we read in the communiqué that they, or some Zeppelins, had flown over London and thrown their bombs in the city.

Another sign of the coming of spring was that the tables were all out again on the sidewalks before the *estaminets,* as they call the public-houses in Brussels, and those who were of that taste could once more sit in the open air and sip their beer or coffee and watch the passing show. It had been an old custom in Brussels, but when the Germans came the municipal authorities ordered all tables indoors to prevent disturbance and as in some sort an expression of the mourning Brussels had put on. The Germans, always sensitive to criticism, even when it was only implied, were not pleased, but the municipal authorities would not revoke their order, and the tables remained indoors until the Germans themselves ordered them out again, and instructed the proprietors of the cabarets to serve their patrons at them, and could thereafter point to them as

an evidence of their assertion that Brussels was normal under German rule.

Indeed, one of the most exacerbating of the little irritations that filled all the interstices of the larger pains and troubles of the time was the inconsidered and recklessly misleading statements that were published abroad in England and in America by those who made flying visits into Belgium, and then went away and wrote their impressions. Some of them, in what seemed like resentment at not finding the whole Belgian population fainting and dying of hunger in the streets, would say:

"But I thought the people were starving!"

I used to point to the wonderful organizations of the C.N. and the C.R.B. as the reasons why they were not, but even so they would go away and, as though they had been deceived, describe the state of affairs as normal. The display of the last poor remnants of a stock of tinned food in a shop-window convinced them that there was no need of carrying on the *ravitaillement,* and to see people calmly coming and going in the streets instead of lifting their hands to heaven and crying out in anguish and despair was enough to cause them to conclude that the population did not feel the heel of the conqueror. I recall one man who came to Belgium in that April of 1916 accompanied by a German officer, who showed him such sights as he cared to have him see, and then went away to write a series of articles in which he said that since the Germans had "taken charge in Belgium" there had been a complete cessation of contagious diseases, and that they had done wonders in reducing infant mortality. The fact was that there were before the war no more contagious diseases in Belgium than elsewhere, and during the war they increased to an alarming extent.

This was especially true of tuberculosis, as of other diseases due to malnutrition. At the very moment the man I have in mind was inspecting Brussels under the tutelage of his German guide, philosopher and friend, meetings of physicians and city officials were being held in the Hôtel de Ville to devise methods of combating the spread of tuberculosis. The work among the babies that was shown to the peripatetic student was that of *les Petites Abeilles,* to which I have already made reference—a work organized by Belgian women long years before the war, and under the auspices of the Comité National enlarged during the occupation. These errors were perhaps excusable, but what was beyond all imagining was the attitude assumed by some of these visitors toward the occupation, or toward the fact of the occupation itself. They either were insensible to its basic injustice or had the illusion that if things were not hopelessly evil under it, it was somehow justifiable. What few of them seemed to realize was that even though the country, since the Germans had "taken charge," was ruled with the united wisdom of a Moses, a Solon and a Justinian, it could not be justified. They seemed to be lacking in that culture which would have enabled them to imagine and to sympathize with the bitterness and anguish of soul, the humiliation and degradation of spirit felt by a proud, free and sensitive people, compelled thus to live under the domination of an invading host.

XXIII

SUMMER TIME

THE population was again suffering for the lack of potatoes, a staple article of diet among the poor. The supplies sent in from Holland were wholly insufficient, and the peasants, with bucolic stubbornness, still refused to declare their stocks; they hid them away, and when the soldiers went to hunt for them either remained silent in a wily pretense at ignorance or gave the soldiers to drink, and so much that they were soon incapable of recognizing potatoes even if they saw them. On Sundays crowds of the poor went into the country about Brussels and brought back clandestinely as many potatoes as they could conceal on their persons. The Germans were not long in learning of this, and thereafter late on Sunday afternoons the trams entering the town were stopped at Quatre Bras and all the occupants searched. It was forbidden, for some inscrutable reason inherent in the mysterious organization of the Kartöffelzentrale, to transport potatoes from one commune to another, and as a natural consequence there was much smuggling; men skulked through the Forêt and the Bois in the night, bearing small bags of potatoes. One day at Tervueren a man stealing across the fields with a little supply was shot down dead by the soldiers in pursuit. Any day at Quatre Bras German sentinels could be seen leading off groups of peasant-women who had

potatoes hidden under their skirts and had been seized from the trams. Finally Villalobar and I suggested at the Politische Abteilung that an armistice be declared for awhile in the hope that the peasants would consent to bring out their potatoes.

The almost universal discussion of potatoes, however, gave way on May Day to a new preoccupation; the Germans had posted an *affiche* commanding every one to adopt thenceforth summer-time (*l'heure d'été*). The penalty for failure to comply with the order was a fine of 3,000 marks and from six weeks to six months' imprisonment. The Herr professors had discovered that an extraordinary natural phenomenon occurs every summer—namely, that the sun rises earlier than in winter, and therefore that if one will get up with the lark and go to bed with the chickens, one can thus contrive to get in a full day's work without burning gas or electricity, and the authorities seized this opportunity to lay down a new rule and invent a new crime. Thus one more complication was added to the slavery of existence. We had already had German time for a year and a half, and the Belgians had ignored it and stubbornly continued to lie down and rise up by Greenwich time, or *"l'heure des alliés,"* as they called it. German time was already an hour earlier than Belgian, and under the new rule it would be two hours earlier, and it was apparent that those who, like the Legations, had relations with both camps, would have between the two little time left to doze in the morning and happily forget the madness of the world.

But I could never remember whether German time was earlier or later than Belgian time. Now I would start up frantically an hour earlier in order to keep an

appointment with von der Lancken, and on reaching the corner of the Rue Lambermont and the Rue Ducale find that no one but the boy scout had reported for duty; now I would loiter leisurely in the conviction that I had another hour before me, and when I got there find them all at luncheon. The prospect of two hours' difference was appalling. Besides this original and constitutional difficulty one had to remember in speaking to a German that *l'heure allemande* was intended, and in speaking to a Belgian to member that *l'heure belge* was implied.

The Belgians had not the slightest intention of adopting *l'heure boche,* as they unfeelingly called it, but they found a *modus vivendi* when the news reached Brussels that the French Government had established *l'heure d'été* and advanced, or retarded—whichever it is—their clocks one hour. Thus ultimately there seemed to be but one hour's difference between their time and German time, for they had been tardy by a year and more in yielding to the horological reform. The Belgian Government at Havre would no doubt follow the French example; hence, in Brussels the patriotic adopted *"l'heure de Havre."* Then we were where we were before. It was dark at eight o'clock by the sun, but that was nine o'clock by Belgian time, and ten o'clock according to the Teutonic Joshua.

The German order was enforced on the communal authorities, of course, and suddenly a surprising irregularity on the part of all the public clocks in Brussels was to be noted. Many of them developed the most startling eccentricities; they ran fast or ran slow, indifferently gained or lost time, seemed indeed to have abandoned all moral principle and to have lost their senses quite. From the most staid, reliable and reputable clocks in the world,

with the regular exemplary habits of an honest bourgeois, they became all at once light and frivolous in conduct, dissipated and wasted time, were no more to be depended on, and, when the Germans passed, almost put their hands up to their noses in the most mocking of *pieds de nez.*

The clock on the Hôtel de Ville, however, with a somewhat sorrowful mien, marked the hour according to the German principle or the German prejudice, whichever it was, and Villalobar adopted a method of designating the time that could offend no one; he referred to *l'heure de l'Hôtel de Ville:* the Germans could not object because it was their time, and the Belgians could not object because it was their clock.

And Brussels wit had its usual revenge. Up from the lower town, recalling the old French proverb to the effect that it is useless to look for noon at fourteen o'clock, came the latest *zwanze:*

"Les Allemands ont trouvé midi à quatorze heures."

But even the mockery of Brussels could not divert us long from the anxiety caused by the tension in the relations between Germany and America; it was that which was on every one's heart and on every one's tongue. The Belgians, as ever, were torn between the desire to have America enter the war and the dread of the effect on the *ravitaillement* if she did so. And then one Saturday evening, the twenty-ninth of April, Hermancito came up from the Rue des Colonies to tell us that Mr. Poland, who was then Director of the C.R.B., accompanied by all the delegates from the north of France, had left for Charleville, where the Grand Quartier Général was pitched. Mr. Gerard, our Ambassador at Berlin, had gone down there for an audience of the Kaiser at which

the submarine question was to be discussed. Mr. Poland had left on a summons by telegraph and the Germans had put a special train at his disposal; he and the C.R.B. men were to arrive there at six o'clock and dine with the Ambassador and the officers of the General Staff.

We awaited anxiously Mr. Poland's return in the hope of some news of the situation. He came back two days later; Mr. Gerard had had his audience of the Kaiser and was still hopeful, but the situation was very grave. So we knew little more than before.

However, Mr. Poland told us of an incident that was not without its interest and importance. The men of the C.R.B. had dined with the General Staff; Mr. Gerard was present, and the higher officers were evidently anxious to please and to impress the Ambassador.

"You see," said General Z——, with a liberal gesture to the men at the table, "the *ravitaillement* goes on splendidly; in fact everything goes on well, as Mr. Poland will tell you—*"nicht wahr,* Mr. Poland?"

And he deferred to the Director of the C.R.B. for confirmation and affirmation.

"Well," said Mr. Poland, who was not an ambassador and felt no need of Talleyrand's adage to guide him in his utterance, "the *ravitaillement* goes on, yes. But things are not going on well at Lille; what you are doing there is not right—in fact it is horrible."

"Why, what is that?" demanded the General.

"You are deporting women and young girls."

It was like a bomb in the middle of the board which the General Staff would have so harmonious, and when General Z—— recovered from his shock he said that he had not known of such goings on, demanded infor-

mation of his officers, threatened to break some one—in short, would take severe German measures.

I tell the story as I had it from the men of the C.R.B. The General, all the Generals in fact, were not pleased that their impression on the American Ambassador had been thus so rudely compromised. What they did about it I do not know; the deportations at Lille were not wholly stopped, at any rate, though I believe General Z—— said that they would be.

Mr. Poland's *boutade,* which did such credit to his feelings as a man, was wholly justified by the fact if not by the occasion. The Germans had instituted at Lille the abominable practice of impressing women for labour in the fields. The military authorities had ordered them to be seized, and thousands of them, many of them girls, were torn away from their homes without any notice, huddled indiscriminately together in trains and sent away in the charge of common soldiers to work in the harvest fields. Many a Frenchman in Lille, his day's work done, returned to his home to find his wife or daughter gone, he knew not whither, and had no way of knowing, or when or whether she would ever come back again.

I was told that 50,000 were ordered to be thus seized, and while I can not say that the figure is accurate, it is a fact that thousands were thus taken from their homes and set to labour like so many female slaves in the fields that summer, and doomed to what other dark fate one may easily imagine. . . .

Strange, the contrasts in this complex life, even life so sad as we knew it in Brussels! How such horrors could exist on the earth and people speak lightly of common things! That very evening, while those girls

and young wives of Lille were enduring such anguish of heart as no means can portray, I was sitting in a conservatory after dinner, in the home of a friend.

Then, in the light, inconsequential drift of conversation, some one mentioned denicotinized cigarettes, detestable things, of German invention, or more likely adaptation. And an old gentleman, turning toward a beautiful woman whose round arm, its golden bracelet far above the elbow gleaming through the thin tissue of her gown, hung over the back of her chair, said:

"Il faut un peu d'alcool dans le vin, un peu de nicotine dans le tabac, un peu de caffein dans le café, et un peu de coquetterie dans la femme."

The pretty woman removed her arm from the back of the chair, delicately raised her cigarette to her lips, and said:

"Et dans l'homme un peu de rosserie."

Of what antitheses is life composed! One might have expected, in the presence of that monstrous Lille injustice, an angry bolt from the skies to smite those Generals to the ground—unless, indeed, it smite us, who could hear of such horrors and a few moments later fall to talking lightly of other things.

XXIV

TOWARD WAR

We might have alleged in our own defense that we were not responsible, though when one ponders on the infinitely complex and insoluble question of personal responsibility one is not so sure of one's defense. I suppose it is best not to be too self-righteous since we all have somewhere our share of the injustices that are done in this evil, evil world. We used to talk about the war most of the time, discuss the question of the responsibility for it; most every one laid it directly at the door of the German Emperor. At the Politische Abteilung, with his hand on his heart, a German officer said to me, as though he would finally, once and for all, dispose of the question:

"I assure you on my honour that we did not begin or desire this war; it was all the fault of England."

Again it would be the fault of Russia; and one man traced its origin to Louis Napoleon and his annexation of Savoy; while another, the most erudite of all, carried it back to 1453 and the beginning of modern history with the taking of Constantinople by Mahomet II.

I have spoken somewhere in these pages of the fact that during the war men and women did not act up to the cinematographic standards. We had to get what little distraction we could, and get it how we could, and there was little in poor Brussels in those times to dis-

tract it from its tragic preoccupation. Had we given way to our emotions we should not have lived and done our work, even as imperfectly as we did accomplish it. M. Francqui returned from one of his journeys outside and told us of a scene in the Belgian trenches somewhere along the Yser. A group of soldiers were playing at cards in their muddy trench; immediately behind, on the damp and desolate Flemish plain, was a new-made grave, its occupant, killed that very morning by a shell, just buried there. Some one asked whose grave it was.

"My comrade's. I play the ace!" said one of the men, and with a triumphant flourish flung down the winning card.

No one who knew war as we had come to know it could wish his country to go to war as long as there was an honourable way of avoiding it, and yet, much as I loathed war myself, I had come to realize that there was a peace far more loathsome, and that was a peace bought by acquiescence in a monstrous and hideous injustice. We were coming to realize what this modern Germany was, what ruin and havoc it would create in the world if it was allowed to go unhindered on its way. And the fact that in that process it would naturally destroy itself was not sufficient reason for letting it destroy the structure that mankind had been so long in rearing. The feeling was deeper than that inspired by the atrocities; these things, though never on such a broad and scientifically organized scale, had been done before; Germany in her development in that respect seemed to be passing through the Stone Age. One could imagine some ultimate, sophisticated German, two centuries hence, sadly shaking his head and saying, "Oh

yes, our forefathers did shocking things when our empire was being founded." But the great difficulty was that the ultimate German could never exist at this rate, because the principle upon which such character is based was not only wholly lacking, but derided and denied.

"Your democracy, your idea of liberty, bah!" said a German officer to me one day; and another remarked, with less emphasis:

"It doesn't suit us; we have another way of looking at things."

Precisely; and that way of looking at things deprived them of that moral discipline, that inner subjective restraint independent of all external sanctions, which deters men from doing certain evil things. That subtle sense which we define and recognize as honour, however imperfectly we may live up to it, seemed to be unknown to them. "There are things a fellow can not do," says a character in one of Mr. Kipling's stories; it is a sentiment that Germans did not seem to understand; there was nothing a German fellow could not do provided he could say to himself that it was for the *Vaterland,* and provided, too, that he had the physical force to prevent others from interfering with his doing it. What was worse, he could prepare to do it by all sorts of pious hypocrisies so as to throw those whom it would injure off their guard, and afterward deny having done it at all. When he wished to invade Belgium he could say that French aviators had thrown bombs on Nuremberg; when he wished to sack and destroy Louvain he could say that the civilians had fired on him; when he wished to use asphyxiating gas he could say that the French were using it. When he wished to rescind the promise not to billet soldiers on the inhabitants, he could

say that these promises would be annulled as a punishment for the population if spying did not cease, and then lodge his troops in the residences of Brussels. When he wished to divide and annex Belgium he could pretend to fly to the relief of the persecuted Flemings; when he wished to restore slavery he could bewail the sad condition of the Belgian unemployed. The thing that vitiated the whole character of modern Germany and set at nought and cancelled all its other qualities was that subtle and implicit Lie—the lie of the despatch of Ems, upon which the Empire was founded; the lie as to the alliance of Belgium with France or England; the lie of the *franc-tireur;* the lie of the ninety philosophers about Louvain; the lie that was ever ready and available in any emergency. The lie was far worse than the gas, was indeed a noxious vapour in itself, which poisoned first of all those who invented it and stooped to its use.

The rise of the Prussian state over that old Germany, the blonde, gentle and dreamy Germany of idealism and humanitarianism, celebrated by Madame de Staël so long ago, was predicted by Edgar Quinet, the French historian, in 1831, but the danger to civilization was not realized by France until 1871. It was not realized by England until 1914, and in 1916 America had not yet realized it. We in Belgium did not wholly realize it even then. And so we lived on in a fond and foolish hope, trying to work from day to day, always with that troubling sense of incertitude and impermanence; the only permanent thing seemed to be the German occupation. But we began packing up, as I have said, and waited for the exchange of the final notes and the beginning of the unlimited submarine war—for no

one in his senses could believe that the Germans, having such weapons, would hesitate to use them. I began first by packing up my library, which foolishly I had dragged across the sea with me, but even in this I could make no progress because I stopped to read each book I started to pack, and at the end of the first day I had disposed of and packed three volumes. Then I turned the task over to one of Desamblancx's men.

That was early in May. The hatred of the Americans was growing so intense that even the common soldiers were affected by it; we began to note it in the sentinels, who performed their duties with that superserviceable and boundless zeal that is the product of the German soldier's gaping idolatry. When we drove in the country and patrols of Uhlans mounted on bicycles halted us, when they read my great C.G. *passierschein* they glared at us terribly. But there was compensation in the welcome of the little children in every village through which we passed, then and always. They danced and swung their caps, and shouted *"Vive l'Amérique!"* or *"Amerika!"* if they happened to be Flemish. The children of Belgium know that word, and I know no more patriotic wish than that it may come to mean to every one, even Americans, what it meant to those little Flemish children in wooden shoes.

After dinner that evening Hermancito came with the German note which was in the Cologne newspapers of that day. Mr. Poland came, too, to hear the news, and after we had got through the usual spiteful references to England we found the note less warlike than we had expected, and possibly sufficient to prevent a rupture, though we were not sure of the little paragraph tucked in at the end, which was susceptible of an interpreta-

tion that would impose a condition binding America to induce England to lift her blockade. Much of it was evidently to the galleries—*aus dem Fenster zu sprechen,* as the Germans' own phrase has it. It did not settle our problem or allay our uncertainty, and I felt that Gustave might as well continue packing the books. Five days passed, then the President's note was printed, fine, clear and strong, and two days later the Belgians, relieved at knowing that the Americans were not to leave, were congratulating me on the President's diplomatic victory, and even if they were convinced that the Germans one day would blow up another ship they took comfort in the respite, and I resumed the familiar task of trying to settle the latest difficulty in the *ravitaillement.*

It had arisen during that week of uncertainty when we were waiting to hear whether Germany would conduct her submarine war according to the rules of the game, or whether she proposed herself to change the rules while the game was in progress. The difficulty was this: The Governor-General, as I have said, had just given assurances that no more cattle and food-stuffs would be requisitioned. These assurances covered the *Occupationsgebiet,* but we heard that by a German order fifteen communes toward the south had been detached from the *Occupationsgebiet* and added to the *Étappengebiet.* The assurances did not run in the *Étappengebiet;* hence requisitions could be and were already being made in the fifteen communes just detached. It was of course no affair of ours how the Germans altered the boundaries of their *gebiets,* but if they continued to alter them so as to exempt territory from the application of the new guarantees it was plain that they might

as well never have been given. We went, Villalobar and I, to see Baron von der Lancken about it, and he said that the boundaries between *gebiets* were changed from time to time according to military exigencies, but we succeeded in securing recognition of the principle that once guarantees had been applied to territory in the *Occupationsgebiet* they should remain in force, and, as it were, run with the land, even when it was detached to be included in the *Étappengebiet*.

There were, however, many infractions of those later guarantees. It was not so simple a matter to enforce them as it was the others, either those relating to imported foods or to the indigenous crop. The imports were brought in by the C.R.B. and turned over to the C.N. which distributed them directly; they were always thus in our hands and subject to our control, and the indigenous crop, while in the control of the *Zentraleernte-Kommission,* or Crop Commission, was distributed by the C.R.B. The others—that is the latest guaranties—were pledges not to requisition cattle or food-stuffs, and over these cattle and food-stuffs, in the possession as they were of peasants, we had no possible effective control. Peasants were not above turning an honest penny by selling their eggs or their chickens or their pigs, and soldiers, proverbially prone to pilfer, would take those things where they found them. This was particularly the case just then. German officers told me that troops released from the inferno about Verdun and brought back for repose and recuperation into what was to them the paradise of Belgium would take anything fit to eat, and pig sties and hen-roosts suffered; there was no power, not even German discipline, that could control them. Doubtless their officers did not

give themselves great pains to control them, but winked at what were to them such minor infractions. We secured a reiteration of the promises, and more stringent orders were issued, and then we encountered another difficulty—the old desire of the Germans to be admitted to the sessions of the C.N. and its sub-organs. Just whence this insistence came we could not be sure, but there it was, at any rate, working behind the mysterious scenes of the organization, pushing the old Governor-General on to an interference that would have been fatal to the work. The demand was the old one that a German officer should attend all the meetings of the provincial committees. We had a conference—Villalobar, Francqui and I—one May morning with the Baron von der Lancken and Dr. Brohn, and explained to them the danger, the impossibility, of such a method. The Belgians would never consent to meet with a German officer at the head of the table; they would rather abandon the work and starve. I imagined the scene for them: the Belgian committeemen arriving and seating themselves around the table; then the Kreischef or his lieutenant coming in, in boots and spurs, with an enormous sabre at his side, a revolver in his belt, taking his seat at the head of the table, letting his fist fall on it—what kind of discussion could there be in such conditions? They smiled and actually saw the point. There was the old suspicion on their part of political manœuvres in the sessions, but, we asked, if the Belgians who formed those committees, and they were, of course, the leading men, the officials, the personalities of their respective communities—wished to discuss politics, did the Germans suppose that the presence of a German officer at their committee-meetings would prevent them from do-

ing so at some other time or place? Did they imagine that it would not occur to them to discuss political questions elsewhere? The Baron von der Lancken and Dr. Brohn did not fail to see this themselves, and we finally agreed upon a formula according to which the Belgian president of the provincial committee would go to the German provincial president at stated intervals, or whenever desired, and give him whatever information concerning the functioning of the *ravitaillement* he wished. And to settle the question once and for all we asked—Villalobar and I—for an audience of the Governor-General himself.

It was one rainy Saturday morning—the thirteenth of May—that the Marquis and I drove to the Ministry of Arts and Sciences in the Rue de la Loi to have our interview. The ante-chamber was thronged with German officers waiting for their turns at the source of favour and privilege and power in occupied Belgium. Juul, a grey little man with an unhealthy complexion, the head of the Brussels secret police, was there, and the Prince Hatzfeld, who directed the Red Cross which the Germans had taken over from the Belgians, and others, all bowing in the German military way as we entered. Von der Lancken came ere long, smart in his uniform and in elegant high boots, springing up the grand staircase like a boy, fearing he was late.

The Governor-General received us in the grand *salon* where he held his receptions, and asked us to be seated at a table that stood between the windows. After a word or two he produced a manuscript and read to us in French what he had to say, making curious mistakes in pronunciation now and then. He sat there with the great enamel cross of the Black Eagle dangling

at his wrinkled throat, and other crosses on his breast, while down below us there in the Place before the Palais de la Nation, the troops were at guard-mount. It was noon. A military band was playing, some prodigious German voice was bellowing martial commands and booted feet were striking the pavement in the goose-step; then more commands and the ring of the butts of muskets on the stones as they came to order arms. . . . Then it was still.

Greatly to our relief it was a mild address that the old Governor-General was reading to us: we had feared that he was going to impose very hard conditions, but nothing of the kind appeared; all he wished, he said, was that his authorities be kept informed as to what went on in the *ravitaillement* and that there be no political discussion, and he left the task of finding a formula to Baron von der Lancken and to us. Finding the Governor-General in such a favourable mood, we asked that other functionaries be not allowed to interfere in the *ravitaillement,* but to centre the discussion of its problems in the Politische Abteilung, and he nodded appreciatively and agreed. We chatted for half an hour, the Governor-General appealing to von der Lancken now and then when he sought a French word to express his meaning, and when the Baron whispered to me that some *haut personnage* was coming to luncheon we withdrew. The *haut personnage* was our former host of the château at Lille, the Crown Prince of Bavaria, but we did not see him, and came away with the satisfaction of knowing that the *ravitaillement* would still go on.

To be sure, there were always the potatoes to be worried about. The Governor-General, on our suggestion, had declared an armistice of a fortnight, saying to the

peasants that if during that time they would declare their stocks they would not be punished for having concealed them, but all to no avail. The peasants were more wily and stubborn than ever, and saw in this complaisance only a new and more subtle method to trick and outwit and despoil them.

XXV

DR. BULL

THERE was just then a season of Wagnerian opera at la Monnaie under official German patronage. Two years before, the *Ring* and all the other operas had been seen on the same stage—*Parsifal* a score of times—and all Brussels had been there; the town was enthusiastic; a medallion designed by De Vreese had been struck in commemoration. Now not a single Belgian would go near, and most of them would declare to you that they would never again consent to listen to so much as a *leit motif* of Wagner. They were thinking of another drama, far more representative of Germany as they had come to know it, just then playing out its tragic *dénouement* in the Senate chamber. These trials were secret, and for that reason the interest in them was all the more morbid and perverted; but one morning the news was whispered about that thirteen had been condemned to death, and many more to various penalties and forfeitures.

The accused were tried as spies, and it was alleged against them that they belonged to a large organization that furnished to the Allies information concerning the Zeppelins, the hangars where they were housed, and the movement of troops by rail—"counted trains," as the phrase was. The leader was said to be Charles Parenté, a telegraph lineman of Anderlicht, near Brussels, a patriot evidently of force and character. It was

said that during his trial there in the Senate chamber, worn out and perhaps weary of the long session, he fell asleep in his chair. One of the judges observing him was indignant and had him aroused, and then said:

"You are asleep, sir!"

"Yes," said Parenté calmly, "I must have a clear conscience to be able to sleep when I have one foot already in the grave."

They had no illusions as to the fate awaiting them, those obscure heroes of liberty in Belgium. Parenté and nine of his fellow-patriots were condemned to death, and nineteen others were condemned to hard labour in German prisons. And then immediately the stricken relatives and friends of the condemned came to the Legation to implore me to intercede, and day and night their pitiable appeals lay on my heart. At the end of one of these hard days Villalobar was there, sitting on the other side of my table. He was weary and showed the strain; he, too, had been besieged by all those suppliants.

"My dear friend," he said, looking up at me, "don't you think it is very long?"

It was very long, and there seemed to be no sign of its end. There was so little that we could do. These were all Belgians: there was no official ground on which we could base pleas for mercy; it was a matter of the greatest delicacy even to approach the subject. But we did what we could; we made unofficial and informal representations, and a few days later we had the satisfaction of hearing that the Governor-General would commute some of the death sentences. He did commute seven of them to hard labour for life, but three of the condemned—Parenté, Lefèvre and Kricke, were shot

by the firing squad that was assembled at the coming of almost every dawn.[1]

This sort of thing was going on all the while, as

[1] Avis

Par jugement du 8 mai, confirmé le 10 mai 1916, le tribunal de campagne a condamné à mort pour espionnage:

Charles Parenté, ouvrier du télégraphe, à Anderlecht;

Arthur Devaleriola, employé du télégraphe, à Berchem-Sainte-Agathe;

Louis Lefèvre, employé du télégraphe à La Louvière;

Gérard Hubert, employé du télégraphe à Schaerbeek;

Théodore Fisch, marchand de cigares, à Malines;

Prosper Krické, inspecteur d'assurances, à Gand;

Martin Bastiaensen, employé du télégraphe à Molenbeek;

Jules Deblander, ouvrier du télégraphe, à Nimy;

Gustave Dallemagne, secrétaire des fortifications, à Liége;

Antoine Lechat, contremaître du télégraphe à Nimy;

Parenté, Lefèvre et Krické ont été fusillés.

La peine de mort prononcée contre les autres condamnés à mort a été commuée en travaux forcés à perpetuité, en vertu du droit de grâce de Son Excellence le Gourverneur-général.

Dix-neuf autres accusés ont été condamnés à de fortes peines de travaux forcés pour espionnage ou pour avoir prêté aide à l'ennemi.

Les personnes condamnées appartenaient à une grande organisation qui avait pour mission de se procurer des renseignements sur nos hangars à dirigeables, nos transports par chemin de fer et autres points d'ordre militaire et de transmettre ces renseignements à l'ennemi.

Bruxelles, le 15 mai, 1916.

(Translation:)

Notice

By judgment of the 8 May, confirmed the 10 May, 1916, the court-martial has condemned to death for espionage:

Charles Parenté, telegraph workman, of Anderlecht;

Arthur Devaleriola, telegraph employee, of Berchem-Sainte-Agathe;

though Alva's Blood Council were sitting again in Belgium. If every trial did not bring its tragedy it brought its injustice and the very weather itself was in the mood of the times; cold and bitter rains were falling on the dull, drab city, the rains that come with *les saints de glace,* as the French call their cold days in the middle of May—*die drei strengen Herren* of the Germans. It was at that time that Brussels had another sensation in the arrest of one of her most prominent citizens, the venerable M. Armand Bloch, who for twenty-five years, by the unanimous choice of the Israelite communities, had been Grand Rabbi of Belgium. At Easter time he had preached in the synagogue of Brussels; scattered through the congregation were about forty German soldiers, and the following day the Grand Rabbi was arrested, charged with having offended their patriotic sentiments.

Now it happened that the sermon the Grand Rabbi

Louis Lefèvre, telegraph employee, of La Louvière;
Gérard Hubert, telegraph employee, of Schaerbeek;
Théodore Fisch, cigar merchant, of Malines;
Prosper Krické, superintendent, of Ghent;
Martin Bastiaensen, telegraph employee, of Molenbeek;
Jules Deblander, telegraph workman, of Nimy;
Gustave Dallemagne, secretary of the fortifications, of Liége;
Antoine Lechat, telegraph foreman, of Nimy.

Parenté, Lefèvre and Krické have been executed.

The death penalty pronounced against the others condemned to death has been commuted to hard labour for life, by virtue of the right of pardon of His Excellency the Governor-General.

Nineteen other accused have been condemned to severe penalties of hard labour for espionage or for having given aid to the enemy.

The persons condemned belong to a large organization which has for its object to procure information concerning our dirigible

had read that morning had not been prepared for the occasion but was, in fact, a sermon he had preached years before, in 1908; it had been published, and he read it from the printed copy. It did not contain, and by no possible means could have contained, any reference to the war, since it had been written six years before the war began, and had not been changed; and it made no allusion to the Germans. What the German soldiers present took umbrage at was the somewhat emphatic tone of certain texts read by the Grand Rabbi, texts which the Germans did not recognize as quoted denunciations of the old Hebrew prophets; they thought them original observations of the Grand Rabbi addressed directly to them and stigmatizing their deeds and those of their comrades. Perhaps common soldiers might be excused for having found the texts entirely apposite in their case and the boot so well fitting that they at once drew it on, but more discrimination might have been expected of the magistrate who presided at the trial. Rabbi Bloch submitted the printed copy of the sermon with the proof of its date, and expected that to establish his innocence, but, with characteristic lack of humour, the German magistrate failed to see in this any extenuating circumstance and condemned the Grand Rabbi to six months' imprisonment, and sent him forthwith to the prison of St.-Gilles, where, the gaol being already overcrowded, he was confined in a cell with two other prisoners.

The leading members of the community petitioned for his release, but all to no avail; the German authori-

---

hangars, our railroad transports, and other things of a military nature, and to transmit this information to the enemy.

Brussels, May 15, 1916.

ties were obdurate, and the Grand Rabbi remained in his cell at St.-Gilles for having cited a text of some Hebrew prophet that characterised in terms too explicit the deeds of modern Germans.

It was a few days later that the trial of Dr. Telemachus Bull was held. I had been very anxious as to his fate; in speaking of it the Germans had shaken their heads sadly and spoken of it as very grave, very grave, so that I was troubled about the possibilities. Dr. Bull was charged, of course, with treason, under the sinister clause of Article 90 of the German Penal Code and 58 of the German Military Penal Code, the penalty for which was death. And then—an aggravating circumstance—Dr. Bull was English. His offense consisted in having tried to send recruits across the Dutch frontier to the Belgian army. He had been betrayed by some of his accomplices. With nearly a score of other accused he was tried by a court-martial at Antwerp on May 19, 1916. I had engaged the services of Maître A. Dorff, of the Brussels Bar, to defend him, and he appeared with Maîtres G. Vaes and E. van den Bosch, of the Antwerp Bar. The court also appointed the Herr Dr. Lappenberg to aid in the defense, and, as Dr. Bull was charged with a capital offense, Dr. Lappenberg was instructed to plead especially for him. There was, indeed, less haste and more respect for the form and substance of justice in this trial—the result, perhaps, of tardy reflection on the procedure in the case of Miss Cavell. The lawyers were allowed to examine the *dossiers* and to converse with their clients before the trial. And besides the lawyers themselves there was another innovation—the brother of one of the accused was allowed to attend the hearing.

The old doctor was very fine and dignified, and the influence of his strong personality affected the court. He stood up, faced his judges and at once admitted having furnished two young Belgian medical students with the address of a person who he believed made a practice of clandestinely conducting young men to the frontier. He admitted also having given to the person in question a photograph of one of the students which had been employed in making a false card of identity for the young Belgian. When the prosecutor asked him to give the name of the person to whom he had sent the two youths, he refused to do so; he said that he wished himself to assume the entire responsibility for the deed.

And then, out of the throng of prisoners on trial, there arose a man in the black soutane of a priest, who bowed and said:

"I should like to thank Dr. Bull most heartily for his generous attitude, but I can not let him assume alone the responsibility; it was I to whom he sent the students."

And Dr. Bull, bowing in his turn, said:

"I thank Monsieur l'Abbé, but I can not consent to his making this sacrifice; I alone am responsible."

The priest was the Abbé de Vogel; he protested again, and the doctor protested; there was a veritable *duel d'élégance* between them.

The attitude of Dr. Bull produced a favourable impression on the court—won him, indeed, some sympathy. And this, together with another fact educed in evidence, worked a change in his favour. Two young medical students, who were among the accused, testified that they had had no intention to enlist as combatants in the Belgian army; one of them had intended to place him-

self at the disposition of the Red Cross, the other to finish his studies in a university in Holland and then to enter the medical service of the Belgian army. On this the *auditeur militaire* amended his information so as to charge Dr. Bull with having violated only Article 2 of the Governor-General's decree of July 11, 1915, punishing with imprisonment for not more than five years and a fine of not more than ten thousand marks those who aided the clandestine departure of Belgians between the ages of sixteen and forty years. On this charge, then, he asked that Dr. Bull be condemned to one year, and for having aided in preparing the false card of identity, to six months in prison. But the Court was even more lenient; it condemned him to three months' imprisonment and to pay a fine of five thousand marks. This judgment was confirmed on May 23, 1916. Dr. Bull had been in prison since the sixth of April, most of the time in solitary confinement, and to a man sixty-nine years of age this was in itself a hardship. The doctor insisted on this point and asked that the time he had already been in prison be included in his term of imprisonment, and this the court allowed.

The Abbé Vogel was condemned to twelve years' imprisonment at hard labour.

It was with a feeling of great relief that I heard of the result of the trial so far as Dr. Bull was concerned. According to German standards the punishment was light; there was, after all, some sense of justice in them! Arrangements were made to pay the doctor's fine, and with his British courage and fortitude he settled down to make the best of his confinement until that July day when he should be free.

XXVI

SOME NOBLE VISITORS

It had been stupid to be housed up as I had been for weeks, unable to walk and permitted only to go for a drive when the weather was fine. And the weather was not often fine; the rain fell dismally all the while—*le diable battait sa femme,* as the French say. I had been able to drive down to the old château of Seneffe one Sunday to see some friends, but that was the extent of my travels. Raymond Swing, the correspondent of the Chicago *Daily News,* had been in Brussels, and, like most newspaper men, could tell more news than he could print: the President's diplomacy had been a great victory, as the European Press, indeed, widely recognized, and he had at the same time helped the liberal element in Germany to a victory which seemed to give some hope to mankind; the fiery von Tirpitz had been temporarily suppressed, and though the *Tubantia* had been torpedoed by the military party to avenge his downfall, the sinking of the *Sussex* had been a mistake, and the *Lusitania* itself would never have been torpedoed, they said, had not the Germans thought it impossible that she could sink so quickly. Mr. Swing had come to Brussels to interview the Governor-General for his newspaper, and the interview was a remarkable one; in it we learned many things that we seemed never before to have fully grasped.

"The work of the Germans in Belgium," said General von Bissing to Mr. Swing, "is not appreciated at its full value by the Belgians, whose mind—and that is comprehensible—is enveloped in a cloud of patriotic sentiment. You yourself will have seen that the ravages in Belgium have not the extent claimed by a part of the foreign Press. Many things laid to the charge of the Germans and to my charge personally are highly exaggerated or wholly inexact. I can say that I can sleep with my conscience in peace."

When Mr. Swing asked him if the attitude of the Belgian people toward the Germans had ameliorated, he replied:

"It has considerably improved. Naturally, the country must be held by a firm hand, and in some cases—as, for example, where it is a question of obeying—rigorous punishments are imposed. I am forced to sign sentences of death—a grave responsibility that I have always sincerely regretted. But we find ourselves engaged in a war conducted on the principle of an eye for an eye and a tooth for a tooth, and the implacable obligation having been imposed on me, I have signed without trembling or hesitation."

The Governor-General said, too, that the German civil functionaries had put in vigour a number of Belgian laws that had "remained in the drawers."

"This is particularly true," he said, "in regard to measures of social betterment (*prévoyance sociale*) in favour of the women and children of the working class. Compulsory education, which Belgium has known only in theory, has now become a reality. The Flemish people, for the first time, have been put on an equal footing before the law with the Walloons. We have ac-

corded to them without obstruction the use of their own language, and given them their own schools; the Flemish University will be erected at Ghent. To these measures of civil administration there have just been added numerous ordinances concerning public hygiene—a domain in which the Belgians have never particularly distinguished themselves."

The Governor-General, speaking of the financial condition of Belgium and of the annual war contribution of 480,000,000 francs, said that he felt great reforms had been wrought in the system of taxation.

"Everywhere," he explained, "we have introduced a direct tax on capital. It is probable that this will excite recrimination, but this new system will distribute for the first time in Belgium, and in an equitable way, the burden of public finances, and compel the rich to contribute their just part."

And then he went on to say:

"I have applied myself especially to create progress in agriculture, that element indispensable to the economic life of a country of which the industries are practically dead. You will observe that the fields of Belgium are well cultivated and flourishing. Vast herds of cattle graze in the pastures. I have always made it a rule to order requisitions only within those limits which could not endanger the future of Belgian live stock. To the same end measures have been taken to protect the breeding of horses, and in maintaining a number of stallions and brood mares sufficient for reproduction. The statistics for this year show an increase of 49 per cent. in live stock compared with that of last year.

"Such have been the grand lines of my policy; the maintenance of agricultural industry, execution of the

social laws, equal rights for the Flemish and the Walloons, sound financial administration on the basis of equal taxation."

Thus von Bissing, the reformer. The interview was published in French in *La Belgique*. We read it, and rubbed our eyes, and then we smiled. We smiled most, I think, about the one statement in the interview that was worthy of any attention or explanation, and that was the assertion that the live stock in Belgium had increased 49 per cent. in a year. The "statistics" to which the Governor-General referred were based on the declarations of the peasants as to the amount of live stock they possessed. In 1915, when the Germans ordered them to make their declarations, they supposed that any live stock they declared would be seized, and made their declarations accordingly. In 1916 forage was rationed, and owners of live stock were ordered to declare the live stock that they had to feed, and again they made their declarations accordingly. Naturally there was a great increase in the quantity; and the Governor-General was right in estimating it at 49 per cent.; the wonder is that the statistical increase was not more.

The Governor-General's opinion that the work of the Germans in Belgium was not appreciated by the Belgians seemed to be generally shared by the officers in his reform administration. With the coming of summer many Belgians were trying to secure permits to go away to Holland or to Switzerland. A young lady of our acquaintance went to the Pass Zentrale in the Place Royale to apply for a *passierschein* to go to Holland, and the officer in charge asked her if she could not arrange some tennis-sets for the young German officers; they found life so dull in Brussels! The spirited girl

replied, "No! never!" told him frankly that Belgians would hate Germans so long as there was one Belgian and one German left in the world, and went away.

The women indeed were all splendid, and I might give many instances of their spirit. When German policemen were searching the house of Madame E—— at Brussels, seeking copper, they saw an old Turkish pistol lying on a table in the *fumoir,* where it was doing duty as an *objet d'art.*

"Mais, Madame, vous avez des armes chez vous?"

"Oui, mais ce n'est qu'un pistolet turc, et comme vous le savez très bien, une arme turque ne vaut rien."

Such stories were infinite in number and variety. There is not a *châtelaine* in Belgium or in the north of France who has not her adventure to relate; and she is apt to relate it with considerable feeling, born of her impotence to express the indignity of it all. It would be difficult to say whether the minor incidents that reveal a mere lack of taste are the more affecting, or those of a gross brutality. They range the whole gamut of impoliteness in the human species from that incident in which a German officer, having forced himself and his staff on a household for dinner, announced afterwards that when the war was over he would return and bring his wife, to the more exaggerated conduct of the royal prince of whom de C. told me. At the beginning of the war he found himself with his sister in their château south of Mons. They had established a Red Cross Hospital and had been nursing wounded soldiers, British for the most part, for the British army was then fighting in that region. Indeed, on the twenty-fourth of August General Sir John French stopped at the château. The next afternoon C. and his sister, after a fatiguing day,

had seated themselves for a cup of tea and a moment's rest when, glancing out of the window, C. saw a group of German officers approaching. They proved to be General von Kluck and his staff on their way, they said, to Paris. Von Kluck was correct, so C. told me, gravely, reserved and silent. But about the same time they had another guest, of much more exalted rank, no less a personage indeed than the Duke of S.-H., who had with him his nephew S.-M. They entered, clicking their heels, and with their hands held at the salute bowed again and again in the stiff German way, announced their names, and asked for a cup of tea. The Duke at first showed a determination to be exceedingly pleasant; there was a certain loud affability in his manner, but, seating himself at the tea-table he leaned across to C's sister and said:

"You know that you Belgians have treated us very badly. We came to you as friends, and see what you did."

C.'s sister resented this, but without bringing on any difficulties at the moment. There were several wounded English soldiers, in the house and these the Germans wished to see. A German doctor roughly pulled the bandages off the legs of one of the men to see if he really was wounded, saying that they were all probably shamming. And the Duke, taking the knife of one of the soldiers held it close to his face—the lad was half dead with double pneumonia—and said:

"You use these knives to kill German prisoners."

The imputation of dishonour roused the boy to protest, and indeed seemed to imbue him with some life for he recovered from that moment.

While the Duke was searching the château for hidden

English soldiers, concealed arms, and what not, S.-M. approached C.'s sister and asked her if she would not come to dinner with them that night—at her own table. She said that, of course, she would not.

"You are our enemies; you have invaded our land. We did not invite you here, we do not want you here, and you should understand that I can not, with propriety, take a seat at table with you."

Young S.-M. understood, and was indeed sympathetic, but when his uncle heard of the refusal he marched into the hall and began upbraiding C. and his sister, creating a scene, and making a spectacle of himself.

"You have poisoned the food!" he cried, quite beside himself with rage, "You have poisoned the food!"

Young S.-M. suffered from the vicarious shame of it, and taking C. aside, implored him to do something to placate his uncle. C. said then:

"Inasmuch as you charge us with having poisoned the food I shall go to table and taste it before you." And so he did.

The Germans had expected to spend the night at the château, but suddenly, without explanation, at nine o'clock they left and moved on to a country house not far away that had been abandoned by its occupants. It was a beautiful old mansion, full of artistic treasures, and a day or so after, when the Duke and his Germans had gone, C., visiting the house, found *objets d'arts* destroyed, tapestries and paintings ruined, and the bed chambers the scene of unspeakable bestial indecencies.

They did not all behave that badly. It was not long thereafter that the Duke of Mecklenburg-Strelitz came along and was quartered in the château. He apologized for what he said was an intrusion he was powerless to

avoid, acting as he was under a soldier's orders. He visited the British wounded, sat by their bedsides, talked to them in excellent English, kindly and sympathetically.[1]

The German officers were arrogant enough in Brussels, but the capital was spared many of the indignities that they visited upon the provinces. In the smaller towns civilians were required to salute German officers by raising their hats, and in some places in the *Étappengebiet* and in the *Operationsgebiet* the men not only had to lift their hats, but men and women both had to step off the sidewalks when the officers passed.

While in some cases indecencies were committed in the châteaux occupied by the officers, as, for instance, in the King's summer palace at Laeken, and, of course, often by the soldiers, there were officers who thought to show their good breeding by leaving their cards when they went, to thank the owner for what they seemed to consider as hospitality. Sometimes they did more. A friend of mine had a château that was seized and occupied by German officers. At Christmas time they had themselves photographed by flashlight as they sat at dinner in his house, drinking his wine. Then they wrote a letter presenting their compliments and thanks, telling him how much they had enjoyed themselves in his charming home, and enclosing one of the photographs. My friend was at a loss what to do. The latter was evidently a sincere effort to be polite, and he wrote back, thanking the officers and saying that he hoped that ere long he might have the pleasure of re-

[1] The Duke of Mecklenburg-Strelitz committed suicide in the spring of 1918.

turning the visit in their own country, and in the same manner.

The one thing that affected the Germans, the one thing they respected, was force, power in some form, military power first of all, but power, whether of wealth, station or rank, a name, a position, perhaps even a frock-coat—for they were tremendous snobs. They were much impressed by Villalobar's servants when they had on their royal liveries and powdered wigs; I used to wish that he would have them dressed that way always, and go about with us.

They displayed all the familiar phenomena of the new rich. I can see a certain Baron at luncheon in a diplomat's house; the scars of his students' duels were so disposed on his face that they gave it a worried and anxious expression. He went about turning up the plates to look on the bottoms, peering here and there in all the corners at the relics of centuries of culture, and asking where the like could be found.

The German officers indeed were always going to the Rue de l'Empereur to the antiquarians, and the Belgians shamelessly traded on their ignorance, sold them all the false and spurious pieces they had, and before long were manufacturing more to take their places. Le Jeune, the barber, sold as old engravings, and for a large sum, some prints on the walls of his barber shop.

It was not hard for a pretty girl to obtain a *passierschein;* for men, even men of advanced years, it was difficult. A friend of mine was anxious to go to Switzerland; he applied for a pass, giving his reasons for wishing to go, and stating his willingness to deposit any sum as a guarantee of his return. The application was returned as refused; the refusal was in the form of a

printed card with the blanks filled in, and with the one polite word in it crossed out, thus, the words and figures written in are in italics:

Ihrem Gesuch vom 10.2 um Reise-erlaubnis nach *der Schweiz* kann leider keine Folge gegeben werden.

Pass Zentrale Brüssel
v Marx
Rittmeister

The word *leider,* printed in the blank form, was crossed out with the stroke of a pen.

These things are trivial, to be sure, but in their aggregate they were great enough to produce their indelible impression and to furnish their evidence of what Brussels folk were never weary of discussing as *la mentalité allemande,* the phrase used in despair when they wished to account for some such attitude as that of the German officer who stepped out of the Astoria Hotel one evening, looked up into the serene, clear sky, in the profound depths of which a lovely moon was rising, and remarked to an American journalist:

"Ah! Fine night for the Zeppelins!"

Whatever it was, it led some of them to do shameful things, as when, finding Brussels too dull, they installed women for their pleasure in the homes of refinement which they had taken over in the city.

The very atmosphere of the city under their occupancy during those spring days was more and more suffocating; there seemed to be no grace, no beauty, no dignity left in life. And yet there was the inspiration of the hope and endurance of the Belgians, a never-ending marvel. They were already planning for the reconstruction of the ruined villages scattered all over the land. At one time, as I have already said, the Ger-

mans themselves had proposed to undertake this task; they had even proposed to have German architects plan the reconstruction, which would have been a calamity even worse than the invasion. To imagine the lovely Belgian scene, with its low nestling cots of the red roofs, its churches in the Flemish Gothic, marred by the intrusion of those baroque structures that are found all over Germany, was to prefer that the ruins be left as they were. But this idea was happily abandoned, and the Belgians were already studying the question in the spirit of the town-planning movement.

A committee was formed and prizes offered to the competition of architects, who were asked to submit drawings for the restoration of villages and of farms that had been destroyed. The work was to be a restoration as far as that was possible; when there was nothing left to restore the construction was to be undertaken in the spirit of what had been. In the case of reconstructed farm-houses the style for ages in use in that province was to be preserved and followed; modern improvements were to be in the interior, not on the exterior, and thus Brabant and Liége and the two Flanders were to be to the eye, and to the artist's eye, what they had been in happier days.

In May the committees held an exposition of the plans submitted, in the new Hôtel de Ville of the commune of Schaerbeek, and Villalobar and I went to open it. The Hôtel de Ville of Schaerbeek, itself a beautiful structure in the style of the old Hôtel de Ville that had been burned, was barely finished when the war began. It stands at the end of the vista of the Rue Royale at the opposite end from the church of Ste.-Marie. The communal pride is such that each commune, even in the ag-

glomeration of Brussels, must have its *maison communale.* Ixelles adapted for the purpose the lovely old residence of Malibran, whose tomb is in the church at Laeken, and St.-Gilles has a new Hôtel de Ville which I had formerly visited at about that time, to be received in State by the Burgomaster and the échevins; the Burgomaster read an address and two little girls in white recited some verses, and my wife and I signed the golden book, and we went through the stately halls and looked at the paintings by Brussels artists with which the walls are adorned.

There was something inspiring as well as instructive about the exposition of the town-planning committee, something hopeful, too, the first sign of construction after so much destruction.

One of the promoters of the movement was Emile Vinck, a socialist senator, and when I felicitated him he told me of an experience that showed that the appreciation of the æsthetic value of the movement was not altogether unanimous even in Belgium. He had gone a few days before, with the other members of his committee, to a certain village, and as they were standing with the Burgomaster looking down the main street of the town, its houses in ruins on both sides, the Burgomaster, pointing dramatically, said:

"Ah, Messieurs, pour vous montrer que nous sommes à la hauteur du progrès ici, je vais vous dire que toutes les maisons dans cette rue auront chacune un étage de plus—au moins!"

Mr. Hoover was in Brussels for a few days; he had come to discuss with M. Francqui certain of those misunderstandings that would arise now and then as to the details of the work which the two great organizations

were carrying on. Dr. Lucas, too, had just come to study child-welfare conditions, to be able to report intelligently on his return to America, where a campaign was to be undertaken for the Belgian children; and M. Francqui gave a dinner to the officials of the C. R. B. at that long table in his English dining-room, where from time to time the men of the C. R. B. met all the distinguished personalities of Brussels. I look back upon those occasions with the greatest pleasure, for M. Francqui was a good host, and the talk was always of the best.

XXVII

LUNCHEONS AND DINNERS

THE position of the diplomats at Brussels, as I have frequently indicated, was wholly anomalous, and continued to be so to the end. Most of our colleagues were at Le Hâvre, near the Belgian Government, and the Germans, especially those of the military clique, frequently wished us all there.

"What are you doing here?" asked a German officer one day of Villalobar, in blunt intimation of a feeling that we were all *de trop.*

The Marquis measured him with his haughtiest glance from head to foot, and said:

"And what are *you* doing here?"

During the occupation the Austrian Legation at Brussels was occupied by the Baron von und zu Franckenstein, designated as *commissionaire auprès du gouvernement d'occupation,* and Turkey, too, had a *commissionaire,* so I heard, though I never saw him. Among the neutrals, Mahmoud Khan, the Persian Minister, was still in Brussels, as were Mr. Albert Blancas, the Argentine Minister; the Count d'Ansembourg, *Chargé d'Affaires* for the Grand Duchy of Luxembourg; Mr. J. Lemoyne, the Bolivian *Chargé d'Affaires;* Mr. Cavalcanti, the Brazilian *Chargé d'Affaires;* Mr. Sven Poussette, the Swedish *Chargé d'Affaires;* Mr. Portellas, the Cuban *Chargé d'Affaires*; and Mr. Mitilineu,

the Roumanian *Chargé d'Affaires;* and Mr. Jules Borel, the Swiss Consul-General and diplomatic agent. Bulle, though serving in the C.R.B., still had the Mexican escutcheon on his house and on occasions flew the Mexican flag; but his diplomatic work went no farther.

Ouang Yung Pan, the Chinese Minister, lived on quietly in his pretty little Legation in the Boulevard Militaire. The Dutch Legation was under the direction of M. van Vollenhoven, as *Chargé d'Affaires,* and was very busy, as there were many thousand Dutch subjects in Brussels. There was the Papel Nunciatur, and there were the Spanish and the American Legations. And that was all that was left of the corps that had been so large, so representative. The other neutrals, as though discouraged, as well they might be, with the state of things in the mad world, had withdrawn their envoys and closed up their Legations. The protocol had fallen into general disuse; we remembered, all of us, or tried to remember, to leave cards on one another on the various national fête days, and we met occasionally, but never as a diplomatic corps, unless it was one morning when we all went to have our photograph taken in a rather sorry group.

And now it was June; the Nonce was going away, and we were sorry to have him go. I had come to have great respect for Monseigneur Tacci; he was so fine, so distinguished, so intellectual. He was a modest man who in the most delicate of positions had rendered in the discreetest way possible many little personal services during those trying times. He seldom went out of the Nonciatur that stood darkly in the Chausée de Wavre but the door bell was always clamouring tragically, and night after night he was trying to save the life of some

condemned person whose friends could appeal to him in his sacerdotal if not in his diplomatic capacity. Now that he was to go there was no one left to take the initiative in showing him the courtesies due his rank as the only ambassador at the Belgian Court and dean of the corps. But Cardinal Mercier came to the rescue and gave a luncheon in the archepiscopal palace at Malines. It seemed something of an adventure, for no one could be sure just how the Germans would view it, none of them, of course, being included in the invitations. Villalobar and I drove up in the clear, sharp air and brilliant sun of the perfect day that ushered in that month of June, and just as we were going into Malines we saw M. Becqu, the Governor of Brabant, Baron Capelle and Count Leo d'Ursel, both of the Belgian Foreign Office, who had gone all the way on foot in the dust of the highway, far otherwise than it had been the wont of Belgian officials to travel in the days when Belgium was not under the rude heel of modern Kultur.

The walls of the plain, severely ecclesiastical building were riddled by the balls that had spattered there in those August days nearly two years before, but in the court yard there was a pretty garden in bloom, and from the entrance we went up the long staircase and into a reception hall, large, light, but plain, severe, monastic, like the building itself and the life of its occupant. There were old portraits of former cardinals about the walls, and a new painting, just finished, of the present Primate of Belgium. The Cardinal's secretary received us, and there were standing about the room six or seven priests in black canocks, wearing the magenta-coloured *ceintures* of Monseigneurs. Almost immediately His Eminence came in, tall, vigorous, splendidly alive and

alert, the little red *calotte* on his head, a long cape of red silk floating from his broad shoulders and falling to the heels of his buckled shoes. He came forward with that long, eager stride, a smile hovering about the humourous mouth and clear blue eyes of the ascetic yet strong visage, reaching out both hands in welcome. He was a distinguished presence, his personality filling all the palace, very natural, simple, sincere, warm and generous of impulse, putting every one at ease.

He looked somewhat older, and his hair seemed somewhat greyer than when I had seen him last, though that may been of my own imagining, for despite a recent arduous journey to Rome, and an illness while there, he was hale and strong. I had not seen him for months; the journey to Rome had been fatiguing at best, and for him, in the circumstances of war, what with the everlasting question of *passierscheins,* the reluctance of the Germans to have him go, his heroic struggle with von Bissing, and the extreme delicacy of his position, it had been doubly so. He had endured much, and had before him in that dark and unknown future much still to endure. The Germans were always tempted to arrest him, and the German newspapers insulted him continually with coarse caricatures, but nothing ever daunted this splendid patriot and real shepherd of his people.

The Nonce arrived that day accompanied by his *auditeur,* and he in his violet and the Cardinal in his flaming scarlet made a picture better than any Vibert ever painted, though since Vibert could not paint very well that is not saying all that I should like to say about the impression I had of the two prelates.

We went out to luncheon in the large, barren refectory, its high ceiling broken, leaving a great, ragged

hole gaping over our heads, showing the new rafters that had been put in to restore the roof. The barren windows were broken, too—all tokens of Kultur in the autumn of 1914—and the Cardinal waved his hand carelessly and eloquently at all the wreckage, and said that he would have to apologize for the state of his house, but—and he laughed—he was not responsible, and it was the best he had to offer his guests.

He had his seat, according to the Belgian custom, in the middle of the table, with the Nonce as his *vis-à-vis,* and Villalobar and me on his right and left respectively. He said grace in Latin, and there were responses in Latin, and twenty of us sat down to a simple luncheon, waited on by two old serving-men in black.

His Eminence talked much to me throughout the meal; he was full of appreciation for all that America had done for his land and his people, and was cherishing a hope of going there after the war personally to thank the nation. Mr. Hoover had called on him, as had many of the delegates of the C.R.B.; he was deeply impressed, he said, by Mr. Hoover's force of character, and had formed an excellent opinion of the American delegates. He told me, too, much of interest concerning the visit he had just made to Rome. . . .

When the meal was over the Cardinal arose and made a graceful and touching little speech about the Nonce, expressing his sorrow at having him go, but felicitating him also, and paying a tribute to the services the Nonce had rendered Belgium. He spoke in the most flattering terms, too, of Villalobar and of me, and then went on to say that the Nonce had been called to a new post in the Vatican, as *major-d'homme* of the household, and in his humorous way recalled the saying that if the *major-*

d'homme of the Pope's household, who is always in the presence of the Pope, can not become a Cardinal, nobody can. The Nonce replied in a pretty speech which gained a charm from the fact that he speaks French with a trace of Italian accent. Then we all arose, the Cardinal returned thanks in Latin, there were responses in Latin, and we went back to the great reception room.

In speaking of the Nonce's new post His Eminence had divulged a secret; we knew, or some of us knew, that he was leaving, but he had not told us where he was going, and as we stood about with our coffee and cigarettes we could congratulate the Nonce all the more because of his prospects for the red hat.

We went at once after the Nonce had taken his leave, and the last glimpse I had of the Cardinal was of the tall figure in scarlet standing in the little entry-way to the reception hall, a young priest who was there that day from Holland falling suddenly to his knees before him, and in an access of fervent emotion kissing the Cardinal's ring. And Villalobar and I raced back to Brussels, Jan, the Marquis's beautiful shepherd dog, twisting nervously on his seat beside the chauffeur; there were bright new red tiles on some of the roofs of Eppeghem, and at Trois Fontaines there was the black and red flag showing through the green foliage with its reminder, its tragic connotations of the state of things in the world.

It was only a few evenings after that Villalobar gave a formal dinner in honour of the Governor-General and of the Baroness von Bissing. The question of social relations with the Germans had been of an exquisite delicacy; accredited as we were to the Belgian Government on the one hand, and yet neutrals at peace with Ger-

many on the other, and compelled, if we would aid the Belgians, to be in constant touch with the Germans, we had long been uncomfortable on the horns of a social dilemma. The Belgians were in mourning; they participated in no formal social functions, but a recognition of the mourning was in the nature of an offense to the Germans, who were not in mourning, but finding the war fresh and joyous, *der froehliche Kreig.* There was no reason known to them why they should not dine out if any one would ask them, and we heard now and then of complaints on the part of some of them that the Belgians were not hospitable, were not willing to forgive and forget, to let bygones be bygones. During my absence on leave in America the Governor-General had given a formal dinner at Trois Fontaines, the Baroness had come from Germany to preside at the table, and the neutral diplomats had been of the company. Now the Baroness was back in Brussels, and for that, and for other sufficient reasons, the Marquis had decided to give a dinner in their honour.

I used to tell Villalobar that if, instead of a Don and a Spanish grandee, it had been his fate to be born in America, and poor, compelled to make his own living and his own way in the world, he might have been anything he chose, lawyer, journalist, politician, artist, financier, so many and so varied were his talents, but that with his exquisite taste and his eye for effect and sense of the dramatic he would have made as great a stage-manager as Irving or David Belasco.

"Life is a comedy and we are all actors," he said. "How does your Shakespeare put it?"

His house in the Rue d'Archimèdes was a charming proof of his discreet and perfect taste. It expressed,

as a house should, and as, in some instances unfortunately, all houses do, the personality of its occupant. It was filled with the spoils of all his travels, the souvenirs of his services at many posts, London, Paris, Washington, Lisbon. There were gifts from Kings and Presidents and rulers and prime ministers and artists in all these capitals; there were old Spanish paintings and cabinets filled with *objets d'art* and family heirlooms. There hung in the air a subtle perfume; there was a finished and ultimate effect in everything. The room in which he worked was always in perfect order; not a paper was out of place on the table where he toiled indefatigably until the small hours of the night; each of its numerous and curious little silver boxes at its post, his seals set out at his hand, every detail noticed by his penetrating eye. The æsthetic effect of it used to fill me with envy. Sitting there chatting with him I would think of my own desk with loathing and despair. But then, to begin with, thought I to myself one day, I never had a chance to get such a desk.

"Where did you find that table?" I suddenly asked him, looking at its delicate legs, its lovely lines; it was pure Louis XVI.

"In Toledo," he said, "in a second-hand shop."

"Ah," I replied, "one must rummage about in these old European cities——"

He checked me.

"Oh, it wasn't in *my* Toledo, in Spain," he said, "it was in your Toledo, in Ohio. That time I was there, you remember, for the carnival; I was going down that street—what's its name? . . ."

Having decided to do a thing he would, of course, do it well, and for the first time since the war began we

were in full evening dress that night, and the festal effect of unwonted white waistcoats. All his footmen were in their royal scarlet liveries, with knee breeches and powdered wigs, and Olivo, the man who had been for so many years attached to his service, in black with satin breeches, quietly directing them in their tasks. The Germans had put on all their decorations; the Governor-General had a row of them across his breast. The Baroness was a slight, frail little woman, with a mild, somehow appealing face, very intelligent, speaking English in preference to French, for her mother, or perhaps her grandmother, was English. Besides her and my wife, whom Villalobar had asked to preside, there were only two other women, a Spanish marquise with snowy hair and great dark eyes, who lived in a country house in Belgium, and Madame Mitilineu, the wife of the Roumanian chargé. Von der Lancken was there, and a good looking young *aide* of von Bissing's, and Harrach, and von Marx, of the Pass Zentrale, and a German prince whose name I forgot—studious-looking person with a black beard—and Poussette, the Swedish chargé, and Caro, Secretary of the Spanish Legation, and Villalobar's military attaché.

As we sat down to dine the Governor-General said:

"We are to be congratulated to-night on our great victory."

The *affiche* of the day had claimed a glorious triumph for the German Navy in the North Sea, in the battle off Doggerbank, and the Germans that evening were all in high feather and very proud and happy, though I do not remember that any one congratulated them, unless they congratulated each other.

Brussels had been very much downcast over the report

of the victory; and for two days I had been tormented by the failure of my efforts to secure permission for Mr. Alexander J. Hemphill, the New York banker, and honorary treasurer of the C.R.B., to enter Belgium. He was waiting at the frontier, and Mr. Hoover, who was to meet him, and come on with him, had not arrived, detained, as we learned a day or so later when they were at last admitted, by the naval engagements which made the North Sea for the moment difficult to cross.

Von Bissing and von der Lancken were going to Berlin for Pentecost but the Governor-General told me that evening after dinner that on his return he would give still more stringent orders to remedy the ever-recurrent evil of the seizure of food by German soldiers, and he explained that it was difficult to prevent the soldiers from pilfering, especially when they came back from the front to rest in Belgium; they found the chickens and pigs irresistible.

Having given one dinner, Villalobar promptly gave another, two evenings later, this time in honour of the Cardinal. The Nonce was there, and Burgomaster Lemonnier, and M. Francqui, and the Baron Lambert, and the Baron Janssens, and the Count de Merode, the Grand Maréchal, and numbers of other gentlemen in the *ravitaillement,* and the table was done in white and yellow, the colours of the Holy See. Villalobar wore his latest decoration, the Grand Cordon of the Order of Leopold, which the King of the Belgians had bestowed upon him on the occasion of his recent visit to La Panne.

After dinner that evening we were having coffee and cigarettes in one of the *salons,* the one where was hung the new portrait the Baroness Lambert had just painted

of the Marquis. M. Francqui and I were standing apart, and I was leaning against the old sedan chair which had belonged to Villalobar's grandmother. M. Francqui was in his humorous mood that evening. He examined the sedan chair an instant, and then said to me:

"Est-ce que vous peuves vous imaginer qu'un de vos ancêtres est allé dans 'un machin' comme ça?"

Before I could reply he went on:

"Je le puis, moi; seulement——" and he paused and stepped around and took his place between the *brancards "—le mien était ici."*

XXVIII

COMMERCE AND CORRUPTION

WITHIN two days the town had fully reassured itself as to the result of the naval battle in the North Sea, and clearly discerned in it a great victory for the British. The more the Germans boasted the more were the Belgians convinced that they had sustained a defeat; they proceeded on the assumption that the Germans never by any chance told the truth about anything. The news that Mr. Hoover brought was not so entirely reassuring, and while the Germans had the undoubted advantage there is in being the first to claim the victory, the naval battle remained for us, as it will remain perhaps for historians fifty years hence, a subject for discussion, if not of dispute. On its very heels, however, came the report of the loss of the *Hampshire,* and of the tragic end of Lord Kitchener, and that event had the effect of depressing all spirits. It is much easier for the human imagination, which after all is a very weak and impotent thing, to envisage a single, personal, individual accident, than a large and general calamity. In the case of Kitchener there was something almost personal in the sense of loss that every one felt, because his fine figure, worthy of the best English traditions, had so long held its romantic place in the public mind, and his sudden death, announced by the Germans in their *affiches* without one generous word of appreciation of his life

or his character, without one tribute to a brave and chivalrous foeman who had fallen with his armour on, came to us as a calamity that for a moment brought something like despair.

But there was work, that best of all antidotes to depression, to be done, and I could count myself fortunate that there had just come to Belgium a friend, in whose society I was to find the sympathy and comradeship of a countryman whom I could be proud of and grateful for every day during the long hard months remaining before me in Belgium. That friend was Vernon Kellogg. He had been in Belgium as one of the officials of the Commission for Relief for a few weeks during the preceding autumn, and then had been called home by his duties as professor of biology in Leland Stanford University. But now he had returned, having left his classes and his lectures, sacrificing the book he was writing and all his personal interests, to assume the post of Director of the Commission. He came at the moment when his varied and various talents were needed most. Not only did this university professor, this student of biology, distinguished for his scholarly attainments and the services he had rendered to science, manage the details of a vast enterprise that distributed ten million dollars' worth of food every month, but, by his tact, his discretion, his fine and noble spirit, and his simple, honest manner, the charm of which was expressed in his winning smile, he maintained a harmonious equilibrium in all the complex relations of the work. Others in that work were sometimes criticized when they were not present; Mr. Hoover was, M. Francqui was, Villalobar was, and more than any I am sure, and with more reason than any, I was, but no one ever had any but

kindly words for Vernon Kellogg, and the character that was his is an honour not only to himself and to his country, at whose service he placed an intelligent patriotism, but to the university system of America, among whose *élite* he was so conspicuous. Dr. Barrows, Dr. Angell, Dr. Lucas, the Oxford students, and many others who came and went, gave the proof of its practical value; they were the exemplars of its high ideals, and in their work one could behold, almost in the very making, a standard and a tradition that should make one feel reassured as to the future of the Republic which in the trying ordeal of this gigantic and appalling war came to have a new meaning, and to inspire a deeper and more tender love. As though it were nothing at all, these men, unused to the counting-house and the market, turned their hands to the management of a vast and complicated business, one of the biggest, in the mere volume of its transactions alone, in the world of our day, and in its objects the most sacred of all.

Vernon Kellogg was the product of that university system, and he had continued his studies afterwards in German schools. He knew German, therefore, as he knew French, perhaps better than he knew French, and he could talk to the Germans in their own tongue, which was of great advantage to him and to the work. He had an innate sense of diplomacy; he was on good terms with everybody, and, what is more interesting, whether in the museum of the Solvay Institute, where I took him to see the skeletons of the score of iguanodons and the ichthyosaures and other animals of the epoch toward which the world was so enthusiastically reverting, or in the *salon,* or in a council of the Powers that were in Brussels, he was at home. He came, as I have said, at a

critical time, and he remained throughout all the storms we were to weather until the climax came in that greater storm which swept us into the war itself, and even then he turned back from England to help us at the very end. His services in the feeding not only of Belgium, but of the north of France, I should say especially in the north of France, were of a nature incalculable. He actually saved the situation in France. I think it is not an exaggeration to say that the work there would have broken down and the people have been left to starve, had it not been for his devotion and his perseverance and his tact, and yet he did it all so quietly and so modestly that he never had half the credit he deserved.[1]

Of course he did not care for credit; it was not that for which he was working and sacrificing himself and his career. He and the other men of the C.R.B. had in themselves their sufficient reward. When Professor Kellogg came we were in despair as to the continued and persistent seizures of the indigenous foods which the German soldiers persisted in making in despite, sometimes we were forced to believe in very defiance, of the assurances on that score which by such pains and efforts we had secured from the Governor-General. Von Bissing himself had explained to me that it was difficult to restrain the appetites of the soldiers when they came back from the trenches, and doubtless that was true,

[1] Mr. Kellogg's little volume, "Headquarters Night" (The Atlantic Monthly Press, Boston), is the best book that I know dealing with the conditions in Northern France, and the mentality that directed the hideous and atrocious deeds committed there and in Belgium. In the few pages of this remarkable book, which for sheer literary style alone is fascinating, Mr. Kellogg has compressed all the agony of those times.

especially since the officers in immediate command over them did not care whether they were restrained or not. The Governor-General had promised me, after Villalobar's dinner that night, to put a stop to this, and he did issue more stringent orders, even going so far as to threaten, no doubt as the heaviest punishment he could think of, to send to the Front all officers who permitted these seizures.

But we were learning; it was not altogether the fault of those soldiers, half crazed by the inferno of Verdun, nor of their complaisant officers. There was, back in the labyrinth of the German organization, farther back behind even the military clique itself, a system, dark, mysterious, sinister, well *camouflé,* working silently and remorselessly, through the *zentralen.*

Up to that time, I may as well confess, I had never understood the *zentralen.* I do not fully understand them now, but I know more about them than I did, enough to feel, at any rate, that they were infinitely more pernicious than the worst of our trusts as viewed by the popular eye, and without any of their practical features. I had supposed at first that the *zentrale* was simply another expression of what has been so widely extolled in the English-speaking world as German efficiency and genius for organization, but as time went on I learned more about them. Apparently a mere adaptation of the German theory of mechanical distribution of product—militarism, socialism and plutocracy working hand in hand—they were in reality limited companies to which the Government of occupation granted monopolies. That is, the *bütter zentrale* had a monopoly of butter, the *kartöffelzentrale* had a monopoly of potatoes, when it could get any, and so on, as to all sorts of

products. The *zentralen* multiplied; there was a *zentrale* for everything, in the end even one for jam. These *zentralen*, each with its monopoly, had behind them in every case decrees of the Governor-General forbidding all trading by others in the article in question. In some quarters it was said that half the profits they made went to the German army, in other quarters it was asserted that they went elsewhere. I know nothing as to the fact, only I used to suspect that if muckraking had not gone out of style, occupied Belgium might have afforded a good ground for adventure of this sort. It used to be one of our most cherished superstitions, a part indeed of our very stock in trade, in the old days of municipal reform in America, that Germans cities were ideally governed. I had accepted all that was written about them and never had any doubts, until, myself making certain studies in Germany, I was told at the Rathaus in Dresden, when I innocently inquired what salary the mayor was paid, that my question was indiscreet. I found some police scandals in Berlin of the familiar kind, and in another city some peculation, but I assured myself that these incidents must be exceptional, and, determined to be orthodox in reform, went on believing as before. But if there is any analogy between the methods employed in German cities and those that I observed on the part of certain Geheimraths in Belgium, I think they might be better muckraked than our own. I suppose now that German methods impressed us because they were foreign and mysterious, and we knew so little about them. Any machine in an American city will gladly govern the city, and govern it with more or less efficiency, on the same terms. We do not always put our best foot forward. The slightest irregularity, the

least mistake, is published from the house-tops and cried abroad. Sometimes, during those dark days in Belgium, reading the newspapers from home when they were a month old and their current interest had evaporated, I would frequently derive the impression that the welkin was always ringing with denunciations of some one, and the atmosphere darkened by the flying missiles of the universal and recriminatory accusation, charge and indictment that is always going on. No doubt it all has its effect as a police measure and proves us to be a very virtuous people, searching out with a remorseless and implacable conscience the sins of our neighbors. There was none of this in German cities, and there was none, and could be none, in occupied Belgium, and so the *zentralen* had pretty much their own way.

The managers of any given *zentrale,* holding as they did the monopoly, would buy the products of the producers, and, to justify its existence, would lay aside from 5 to 20 per cent. of it for Belgian consumption. The local brokers, sometimes renegade Belgians, sometimes Germans who came into the country to profit by the situation, would buy that product from the *zentrale,* but it was openly said that in order to obtain a stock of any commodity it was necessary to bribe certain employees of the *zentrale.* The brokers were always willing to pay large commissions—a thousand marks for a stock of sugar was said not to be unusual. The brokers could easily afford to pay this because, having a monopoly, they could extract from the consumers, who were among the easier class in Belgium, what prices they pleased, and I was told that brokers and the corrupt officials of the *zentralen* in this way built up considerable fortunes. Certain of the Boerenbunds, the Catholic co-

operative societies organized generally in the rural districts in competition with the co-operatives of the socialists, were not able to obtain coal, though they made application again and again at the *Kohlenzentrale,* because they would not offer bribes or commissions.

The German army was victualled through the central office at the Brussels known as the Proviant Amt, and the *zentralen* worked in close harmony with it, as did the brokers who were always to be found in the cafés around the Bourse. It was not only the brokers who profited, but certain tradesmen, too. There were, for instance, butcher's assistants who set up for themselves, and though they did not sell one pig a week bought fifty on market day. It was not a violent assumption to conclude that the forty-nine pigs went to the Proviant Amt, and so to the German army. The Proviant Amt, too, could exercise a great influence on the price, simply by instructing its agents to cease buying; the price, of course, would go down and then the brokers would obtain corners on the products thus affected, whether pork or sugar or coffee, beans or peas. Snug fortunes were undoubtedly made in sugar and in coffee as in the clandestine manufacture of soap; so that a man who got rich during the war came to be called "Baron Zeep"—a soap baron. The brokers who met, early in the morning and late in the afternoon, not in the Bourse, but on the curbstone near the Bourse, were for the most part professional speculators, men who had followed the racetracks, *habitués* of the *paris-mutuel,* and the like. There were among them, too, professional thieves, and waiters in cafés, and the profits they made went the way such profits generally go, in jewels or to women. These brokers bought not only of the *zentralen* but they

bought for awhile from stocks that had been hidden away in the early days of the war, and later from stocks of food that were made up either from small quantities smuggled across the frontier from Holland, or from bits of food purchased from the communal shops, or even, in some instances, the rations of the poor, as for instance, rice. There was for a time in operation what almost amounted to a system for the purchase of rice. The Belgians had not generally eaten rice before the war; they did not like it; and when the C.R.B. imported it and the C.N. distributed it, they sold their minute rations to agents who went about the country and small towns. And thus patiently the agents collected, as one might say, a grain at a time, and made up stocks which they sold to the brokers. They would have the stocks smuggled into Brussels, sold more or less clandestinely on the curb, and the broker would send a cart to their hiding place at night and fetch them.

German soldiers aided in the smuggling that went on at the frontier, as it goes on at all frontiers. There were certain inns and out-of-the-way cabarets where the smugglers and the soldiers and the renegades of all sorts met in comradeship, with the cigars or other luxuries that had been brought through the electric wires by the connivance of the soldiers, and there divided the spoils. Soldiers, too, used to go to the farms with large baskets and try to buy eggs or chickens, and the peasants were afraid to send them away empty-handed. There was an additional incentive to smuggling in the fact that it was forbidden by the Germans to transport food from one commune to another; it was always going on, with Brussels or Antwerp as the goal and final market. Women and young girls from the Quartier des Marolliens used

to go out into the country and slip back into town at night with baskets of various farm produce—butter, potatoes or flour. They passed the soldiers on sentry duty by giving them a few marks, and sometimes, so the gossips said, the sentries exacted a payment of a nature more indelicate and indiscreet.

With the German army seizing so many horses Belgium was for a long time a paradise for horse traders, who, with the versatile adaptability that seemed to distinguish the horse trader everywhere in the world, profited by the situation. For a long time they worked in conjunction with certain German officers said to be susceptible to bribes, and when a farmer's horse had been seized or requisitioned by the Germans the traders went to console the proprietor by selling him another.

It is not a pretty story, and its incidents were made possible by the complexity and intricacy of the German system that strangled all trades and commerce, and by the evil inherent in the times. Not all the Germans, by any means, nor all the German soldiers, were corrupt; sentinels, as I have shown, were constantly stalking smugglers in the Forêt de Soignes, stopping the trams at Quatre Bras, searching the women for potatoes and various produce, herding them off to prison, now and then shooting down dead in his tracks a wildly fleeing carrier of contraband.

The young men of the C.R.B. could tell the story in more enlightening detail than I can, for they were in daily contact with its unfolding. They came to have a greater understanding of German methods, too, and they must have expressed it in their gay, youthful way in the song they composed in that affectionate fun they were

always having with Hermancito, the chorus of which ran

> When Bulle is the King of Mexico,
> We'll all have good positions
> And live on requisitions,
> When Bulle is the King of Mexico.

XXIX

SAVING THE GOLF LINKS

It was, therefore, not alone with pilfering soldiers that the work of the *ravitaillement* had to contend, it was with an army of brokers, speculators, smugglers, knaves of all sorts who were trafficking in the misery and suffering of the land. We did our best, but we could not overcome with any means at our command the wily efforts of such a band; even old von Bissing, strive how he would, could not thwart them. On our constant and reiterated complaints, they were arrested and punished by the Germans; they were arrested and prosecuted by the Belgian courts; they were pursued by the Department of Inspection and Control of the Commission, under the direction of Mr. Joseph C. Green; but it was like contending with the rising tide of the sea. For such dark, subterranean systems of corruption there is no cure anywhere but the illuminating influence of publicity, and with conditions as they were in Belgium it was impossible to let in the purifying, antiseptic light. We struggled in despair, but we could never obtain, so far as the native foods were concerned, the results we were so proud of in the case of the imported food products. The loss in these was a small fraction of one per cent; no business anywhere could show such a result, no Government could conduct its customs houses with such a near approach to perfection. That was due, of course, to the

fact that the imported foods were always in the hands of the C.R.B. or the C.N. until they went into the Belgian stomachs, but we despaired of ever producing such ideal results with the native products, which we never touched and could not control.

Again and again we made representations as to the abuses to be attributed to the *zentralen;* there were in the German administration those who did not hesitate privately to recognize their evil, and in the limited circles where such things were known they became a scandal, but nothing was done, and under the *zivilverwaltung* new *zentralen* were constantly organized. There was always occult power, some real authority stronger than the apparent authority, some hidden spring of government, which we could not reach, much less dislodge.

That month of June brought a series of incidents varying in their importance from a discreet and tentative effort, quite unsuccessful, to secure the release of Professor Pirenne and Professor Frédéricq, to an attempt, almost equally ineffectual, to protect the property of the Bell Telephone Company at Antwerp. It was in charge of Mr. Clayton, and the Germans had seized much of it, giving their written engagement to pay its appraised value; they paid a portion of the sum, and then whenever Mr. Clayton tried to secure payment of the rest the German in charge of that business lashed himself into a fury, and fumed, and spluttered, and delivered a long harangue about Americans selling munitions to the Allies. Fond as they were of war, as devoted to it on principle, and as sure of the benefits it confers on the race, they seemed to prefer, as a condition for its exercise, an opponent without arms. One of the C.R.B. delegates for the north of France, who were always subjected to

personal indignities, told me that a German officer struck an English officer, just made prisoner, across the face with his sword, and when the subject was discussed at the officers' mess that evening the Germans pressed the American to approve them when they insisted that the German officer had conducted himself as a gentleman.

A Belgian of my acquaintance was one day summoned by a German officer to one of the departments in Brussels and subjected to a painful and humiliating scene; the German, in an unrestrained passion, abused him throughout a whole hour for a mistake for which, as the German well knew, another, and not he, was responsible. The Belgian gentleman endured it all in silence, and when the German's rage had worn itself out, said calmly:

"You are not generous, sir; I am a prisoner here; I must endure much that I would not endure in other circumstances."

It was in that month of June that soldiers under command of an officer of the Terveuren garrison entered the golf club at Ravenstein. They marched in one morning, and, perhaps imagining that the bunkers were trenches, began some sort of a drill in them. I spoke of the matter at the Politische Abteilung and orders were issued forbidding the soldiers to enter there. A week later German troops, under command of an officer, entered again, and drove mules all over the putting-greens. I appealed again and the orders were repeated. Not long afterward the soldiers were again on the course, under the command of an officer, making charges over the greens and practising raids in the bunkers. I went once more to the Politische Abteilung, carefully explained that a golf course was the result of long years of seeding,

of planting, of constant care, that the work of years could be destroyed in an hour. There were in the environs of Brussels, besides the vast plains where the Belgian armies had been drilled and manœuvred, many fields that could be used for drilling, and I asked once more that the golf club be protected; I produced an effect, however, only when I was fortunate enough to remember the deeds of the suffragettes on the golf links of England, and as the Germans did not like the comparison this had its impression. In the end, through the comprehension of Count von Moltke, who was acting in Baron von der Lancken's absence, I was fortunate in securing explicit orders that thereafter prevented a repetition of the offense, and one of the most beautiful golf courses on the continent, a gift of Leopold II, was spared.

They did not spare much, to be sure; they were just then taking a census of the fish in the fish ponds in Belgium, in itself another complication because fish were, by analogy, covered by the food guaranties. Again, we were especially concerned just then about the babies; it was partly in their interest that Mr. Hoover, following Dr. Lucas's visit, had just come again into Belgium. There was a difficulty about milk; the C. N. had long maintained a model farm which provided milk for under-nourished babies; the herds had been imported from Holland, but this had long since been unequal to the demand, which was constantly increasing with the spread of misery. The Countess John d'Oultremont was carrying on almost unaided an excellent charity; with the Germans' permission she would assemble hundreds of children and take them to Holland and there give them a fortnight's outing at Scheveninghen-by-the-Sea. But

charity under the best conditions can never keep pace with poverty in the world, even when the world is normal, and poverty in Belgium, and all its accompanying evils, was increasing beyond the power of all efforts made to resist its ravages. Mr. Hoover succeeded in a measure in increasing the supply of milk, and just before he went away after that visit he told me with tears in his eyes that the peasants in Liége had said that since it was the Americans who asked it they would give their cows.

Miss Larner about this time was called home to her duties in the Department of State at Washington, and her going made the work in the Legation harder. She had been in the Legation for nearly two years; she had competently filled the post of a second secretary, and we all regretted her departure. I had had no Secretary of Legation since Gibson went away, and now I had to attend personally to all the details of the Legation work. Villalobar had gone on another journey to Madrid, and the Baron Lambert, deeply affected and concerned by the sudden news that the Baroness had fallen ill in Paris, was able to obtain a *laissez-passer* and to go to Paris. War gives a new meaning to partings and adds to the loneliness of those who remain behind. Belgium, as I think I have made clear, was like a prison in its atmosphere; love it how we would, and loath as we were all of us to leave, we nevertheless looked with envy on those who went away because to us it seemed that all on the other side of the line must be brighter than on our side; our friends there, as we supposed, knew more of events, they had news and information, much to encourage them, and above all they breathed the atmosphere of liberty. Slowly and reluctantly we were beginning to

adjust ourselves to the idea of a long war; for a long while we would indulge ourselves in the illusion that it would soon end; we would fix a date, generously in the future, saying this winter will be the last, it will end in the spring; in the spring we would say it will end in the autumn, it cannot last another winter; for tasks are lighter and difficulties easier to bear when there is a definite term fixed for them. But we had been often deceived, and difficult as it is for human beings in this world to learn from experience, we were beginning to admit that it was impossible to see, to foretell, the end.

The Belgians were somewhat encouraged by the reports of the Russian advance that summer, and when the Germans would not permit the Dutch newspapers to enter they were more than ever persuaded that it was "serious"; but in Belgium nothing changed; the dull, almost hopeless existence dragged on as before. There were the usual court martials and condemnations and shootings. Yet the Bruxellois were persistently hopeful; one of them, when I asked him one day what the news was, remarked, with a twinkle in his eye that showed his humorous appreciation of the amiable optimism of the town:

"Oh, les nouvelles sont tellement bonnes qu'on n'ose pas en parler!"

It was curious to note how deeply all the Germans were impregnated with the spirit of hatred; even the individual soldiers seemed to be affected by it; they were generally morose and melancholy, they smiled seldom, but strode along with sullen or sad expressions, and at sight of the little flag on my motor scowled, and now and then, if they were in companies, even jeered. I was seldom, indeed almost never, personally made to feel this

hatred by those with whom I had dealings; there was always the correctness of the diplomatic attitude; but it made the daily task more difficult to know that the feeling was nevertheless there, and that Americans were rapidly succeeding the English as the objects of German animosity, and the latest subjects of the German prayer, *"Gott strafe Amerika."* . . .

One Sunday I had gone to the country for the day, and while there two Belgians came to see me. They were dressed in their Sunday blacks, and they revealed their mission with formal phrases, and with many apologies for disturbing me in my selfish outing, and yet they were in an agony of distress which all their careful manners and all their formal phrases would not conceal. Poor souls! I felt a great pity for them. It was for their brother that they came; he was at that moment under sentence of death. The case was that of Hervé Ameels, condemned for *trahison de guerre,* and a more desperate case could not be imagined. The young man had been in Holland and safe, and he came to the frontier to try by some means to send word to a friend in Belgium. At the frontier he spoke with a German sentinel who seemed friendly; the German, learning from Ameels his desire, told him to go into his booth and telephone. Ameels stepped across the frontier, and there, on Belgian soil, was at once arrested by the sentinel and sent to Antwerp. On his person the Germans found documents, the plan of an aviation field at Ghent, some statistics as to troops, and the names of two conspirators at Ghent. The supreme folly of Ameels made his fate no easier for his friends to bear, and they came in numbers to implore my aid. And while I did, of course,

ask mercy for him, it was, of course, refused and the sentence executed.

These were not the only tragedies. I have the memory of a sweet-faced English woman, married long before the war to a German who, at the time of the romance, was prospering in business in England. They had a home in the country and were getting on well. The husband was an officer in the reserves in the German army, and when the war came on he was ordered to Belgium, and took his wife and children with him. It was not long before the husband neglected his wife, began to hate her, he said, because she was English. The children, two little boys, were placed in one of the German schools which the Germans opened in Belgium, and there they were tortured by the German boys who taunted them with their English birth. Then the husband abandoned his wife, and she had but one hope, one desire, and that was to regain her lost England with her boys and have them reared as English. I tried to obtain permission for her to return to England, but failed in that, too, as in so much else in those times so sadly out of joint. The Germans would not permit her to leave Belgium because she was English, and the English would not permit her to enter England because she was German. . . . Day after day she came to the Legation, and the two boys leaned against her knees while the tears kept ever welling to her eyes. . . .

XXX

THE QUEEN'S HOSPITAL

As I cast my memory back over that cold and rainy summer of 1916 it seems to have been relatively calm and uneventful for a summer in Belgium under German occupation, and yet in looking over my notes I find repeated references to "Naturalized Germans," "Engrais," "The Queen's Ambulance," "La Banque Nationale," etc., incidents which at the moment incited in us their various emotions of indignation or despair. I do not know why those days should have left an impression of comparative peace; perhaps it was because the sun had deserted us in June and left us to the monotony of that constant rain which in the picturesque speech of Brussels is known as *la drache nationale;* perhaps it was because I was recovering from the lameness that had kept me practically immobile for so long. And then there is the mysterious and gracious process of forgiving Time itself, which kindly and considerately obliterates in memory the ugly and the painful, and leaves an impression from which the scars and blotches are all erased, and accounts for the charm that pertains to all that can be classed as auld lang syne. There was, too, what I can never forget, the kindness of my Belgian friends, the memory of whose gracious hospitality shall be one of the consolations to the end of my days. There are recollections of pleasant hours in the old château of

Baron Janssen at Wolvendael, and in the homes of those dearest of friends, the Josse Allards, de Sinçay, the de Beughoms, and others; they need the jottings in any journal to recall them to mind.

And yet, glancing over the entries for almost any day, I am reminded of much that would like to be recorded; and as I write I have the uncomfortable sensation that this record is growing much too long. For instance, turning to the first day of that month of July I find, in addition to the usual problems that each day brought, jottings such as, "the Russians have made another advance"; *"le Rotterdamsche"*—which meant the Rotterdam newspapers—"did not come in to-day"—always a sign of good news for the Allies; "fifty persons arrested and taken to St.-Gilles"—which portended new cases of *trahison de guerre,* more women's tears, more futile *démarches* at the Politische Abteilung; and "no peas to be sold after to-day," etc.

These were rather commonplace and typical entries; there are others which as I read them now seem incredible; I could scarce believe them had I not written them down at the time. For instance, the affair of the naturalized Germans; that of itself is a little chapter in the history of those times that would test the credence of any one reared under Anglo-Saxon institutions. I found it, or the problem it raised, awaiting me when I returned to the Legation in the afternoon of that first day of July, after a drive to Ravenstein where my wife and I liked to have our tea on the lawn when the weather was fine, or, when it was not fine, in the dining-room of the château, the window of which gave on to a little garden where the bowers bloomed gaily, just as though there were no war anywhere.

A memorial addressed to the Governor-General, signed by all the personages in the capital, protesting against the incorporation in the German army of young men who, born in Belgium of German parents, had opted for Belgian nationality, had been left there with the request that I present it to the German authorities.

There is an almost inexhaustible interest in the contemplation of the power of phrases, which are facts as solid as any, and out of their relation or in the wrong place become irritating foreign bodies like sand in machinery, or pebbles in shoes. I was referred to in the official correspondence with the Germans over the *ravitaillement* as Protecting Minister—*Ministre Protecteur*—which I was, as far as the *ravitaillement* was concerned. But the phrase got abroad and amplified itself, as phrases will, and, in that confusion as to the powers and duties of diplomatic officials that exists everywhere and causes even editors to use the words Ambassador, Minister, Consul, interchangeably, it transpired in time that I was the Ministre Protecteur, not only of the *ravitaillement* but of Belgium, and of every one in it.

One morning I had a caller in the person of a withered little man in black from Verviers, who came to report to me that the young men of German birth in his town, who had become Belgian citizens under the Belgian law, had been ordered by the Germans to report for duty in the German army. The little man was greatly excited and could not understand why I did not interfere at once and put a stop to what he considered an outrage and a flagrant violation of international law, as indeed it was, if such a thing as international law could be said to exist any more in the world.

"Mais vous êtes notre Ministre Protecteur!" he would argue again and again.

It had frequently been reported, though as often officially denied by the German authorities, that Belgians were to be incorporated in the German army. But an event had occurred that led people to believe that after all there might be much in the declared intention, and there was not only a new sensation, there was a new terror in town. At Brussels, at Verviers, in the *arrondissement* of Nivelles, and in Luxembourg, many young men born of German parents on Belgian soil had been summoned to the Meldeamt, where they were informed that notwithstanding the fact that they had opted for Belgian nationality, they had not thereby lost their German nationality, but would have to render military service to the German Empire. They had been forced on the spot to submit to a physical examination, and then provisionally allowed their liberty until the military authorities of Aix-la-Chapelle should decide where they were to be sent for duty.

To justify the levy of these troops the Germans cited a new law, of July 22, 1913, which became effective January 1, 1914, defining the method whereby German citizenship could be lost. This law provided, among other things, that German citizens who should become citizens of any foreign nation thereby lost their German citizenship, but the German claim was that all Germans who had been naturalized as citizens of any foreign Power prior to January 1, 1914, when this law went into effect, had not come within its purview—that is, had not been, as it were, authorized to divest themselves of their German citizenship, and so had not lost and would not lose their German quality, but remained German citi-

zens, and were therefore liable to perform military service for the German Empire. The preposterous claim opened immeasurable new possibilities of trouble in the world; what, for instance, if this was the German attitude, of the thousands and thousands of Germans naturalized as American citizens before the year 1914? Was the hour to come when some German General Staff would summon all of them to duty under the black, white and red flag?

The memorial that was given to me to present was an able document, which while citing this law and referring to certain German legal opinions that were opposed to the view that the authorities just then took of it, based its argument on the international conventions of 1899 and 1907, signed at The Hague and ratified by Germany and by Belgium. These treaties required the occupying Power to respect the laws in force in an occupied country, and it was contended that thereby the right of option for nationality, prescribed by the Belgian code, was protected. The memorial protested against the declared intention of the Germans to incorporate in the German army all male persons of military age born in Belgium of German parentage, who, according to the Belgian law, on attaining their majority, had opted for the land of their birth, and so become Belgian citizens. According to international law such a practice was recognized as conferring complete citizenship, but the German view was different; it held that such men were German citizens because their fathers had been German citizens, and hence were called upon to bear arms for the German Empire. There were hundreds of young men whom this rule affected, young men whose parents had come from Germany to Belgium, there to

be welcomed by the hospitality of a kindly, generous people, to found their homes, to make their fortunes and to rear their families. The sons of these folk had never known Germany, most of them had never seen it; their interests, their associations, their friends, their sympathies, were all Belgian; on coming of age they had opted for the Belgian nationality; many of them had served in the Belgian army, and when the war came on they had been loyal to Belgium. Now they suddenly found themselves confronted with impressment in the German army, after which they would be marched to the Front and forced to fight against those with whom their hearts and hopes were united.

The memorial presented in its formal and legal aspect, the problem that was presented to me some days later in its human aspect. One morning a young man sat before me in my room, and with feelings he could scarcely control begged me to do something for him. He sat there fixing his dark eyes upon me and nervously clasping and unclasping his hands as he talked. He was a young lawyer, already well known at the Brussels bar, and he had felt before the war that he had a career before him. And now——

"Now," he said, "this!" And he spread his hands wide in a gesture of despair. "I was born in Belgium," he went on, "I grew up in Belgium; I went to school and college in Belgium; my friends, my associations, my sympathies are all Belgian; I took the oath of allegiance to Belgium; I am a Belgian citizen; I *am* a Belgian." He paused a moment, mastering an emotion. "I served in the Garde Civique; I pursued my law studies here; I was admitted to the Bar. For awhile I occupied a public position in the Belgian judicial service. And now,

to say that I must serve in the German army, and fight against Belgium!"

It was of course officially no affair of mine, as a representative of a neutral Power, and the fact that the relations of my own country with Germany were very much strained only made my position all the more delicate. There was always, too, the *ravitaillement,* which meant food for the people, the very life of the Belgian nation, that must be preserved at all costs until the rupture with Germany, which every one must have known to be inevitable—the von Tirpitzes were even then shouting "Out with the submarines!" There was no ground on which I could protest against the action that the German Government proposed to take. I was constantly confronted by that embarrassment so familiar to persons of public responsibility; each caller beholds his own trouble, is preoccupied by his own personal problem, considers it quite naturally the only and the most important problem in the world, and can not understand why the public person can not instantly isolate it as the one difficulty outstanding in the world; he can not understand, and it is impossible to make him understand, that in relation to other problems which it may affect it is not important.

However, after many conferences with the Belgians and with such delicacy as I could employ, I chatted informally with Baron von der Lancken about it and persuaded him without much difficulty, I must admit, to receive the protest. The only condition he imposed was that the Belgians present their own memorial, and this they ultimately did. I believe that the Germans did not insist on the matter in the end; one of them told me that after all they intended only to take a census of young

men who were thus situated, and I believe my lawyer with the German name and the Belgian citizenship was permitted to remain in Belgium.[1]

The question of the *engrais* was one that gave us endless difficulty. It was not causing the comment just then in Brussels that other and more dramatic questions were, as, for instance, the offensive of the English and French, which had its reaction as far in the rear as Brussels, where extra sentinels were posted everywhere, or as the Russian advance, or the Austrian retreat, or the question of the young naturalized Germans, or the story of an aeroplane that had flown over the city in the night, or the fantastic tale that the German Emperor had come to Brussels and had had a meeting in the Palais d'Arenberg with Villalobar, and that the Marquis had thereupon gone forth to arrange peace. *Engrais* was not so sensational, but it had possibilities—of ammonia, for

[1] I have since been informed that a certain number of naturalized Belgian subjects of German birth, some young, some old, were by force incorporated in the German army. While the German occupants seemed in the year 1916, the time of which I write, to have renounced all intention to apply their theory, it was in the following year resumed. In the months of September and October 1917, placards were posted in nearly all the Belgian cities ordering persons "without nationality, but of German extraction, and those of German birth who had acquired Belgian nationality," to present themselves at the Meldeamt of their vicinity to be incorporated in the German army. The Belgian Government solicited the intervention of the Pope and of the King of Spain, both of whom made representations to the German Government. The German authorities, while maintaining their right to treat Germans who had become naturalized subjects or citizens of other lands as liable to service under the German flag, abandoned, at least temporarily, the project. —B. W.

instance; taking *engrais* to Germany, the scientists there could extract the ammonia and with it make munitions of war. We discovered this one day by chance, and thereafter had long consultations to bring the *engrais* within the guaranties protecting Belgian products.

There was always some such problem in the *ravitaillement.* Coffee was scarce, and just then burned wheat was being sold as a substitute, and wheat was needed for bread. The Germans, when we approached them on this matter, delighted to have a new subject for the exercise of their talent of organization, said that they would at once create a new *zentrale* to control the burned wheat, and in the despair that such methods produced I told them that if they continued they would undoubtedly have a superb organization for *ravitaillement,* but nothing to eat.

The question of la Banque Nationale was intrinsically more interesting, since it concerned that product at once the most necessary and the most contemptible known to man—money. At the outbreak of the war, as I have said, the Banque Nationale transferred all its funds to London, because several of the branch establishments of the bank in various villages of Belgium had been entered by German soldiers and their funds seized at the point of guns. When the German authorities asked the Banque Nationale to reopen its doors and to resume the transaction of business, the directors cited these instances of brigandage as reasons for not complying with the request, and von der Goltz Pacha gave the Banque a written promise to the effect that if the doors were reopened the institution would not be molested. On the strength of this assurance, then, the Banque Nationale threw open its doors, but it threw them open to trouble,

which promptly entered in the form of the representatives of the Bank Abteilung. The difficulties that were harassing the directors that summer were primarily connected with the contribution of war imposed on Belgium. This contribution had been fixed in 1914 at 40,000,000 francs a month, and the sum was augmented each year until for 1917 it had attained 60,000,000 francs a month. The nine provinces of Belgium had been ordered to issue bonds to pay this contribution, and this the provincial councils had refused to do; then the Germans removed the Belgian provincial governors; installed German governors (*Präsidenten für Zivilverwaltungen*) in their place, and issued the bonds themselves in the name of the provinces and had the Präsidenten sign them. These bonds having thus been issued, the private banks of Brussels were ordered to buy them, and when they refused, they were informed that the Bank Abteilung would sequestrate and liquidate their property, and apply the assets to the purchase of the bonds. Placed thus between the alternative of buying the bonds or of being wrecked, the banks bought the bonds. The Germans ordered them to pay for the bonds in marks, and these marks were thereupon deposited by the officials of the Bank Abteilung in the Banque Nationale, which was ordered to issue against them an equivalent amount of Belgian banknotes. This was done—under the usual menaces—and then the Banque Nationale was ordered not to pay out these marks, but to keep them in its vaults. Thus, in the course of time, millions of paper marks were accumulated in the vaults of the old buildings there in the Rue de Ligne behind Ste.-Gudule, several millions of marks that represented deposits. Then, early in July, 1916,

the chief of the Bank Abteilung, von Lumm, whose *ante bellum* visit to Brussels and to the Banque Nationale has already been referred to, ordered the Banque Nationale to transfer, against a receipt from his department, all those millions of marks to the Reich Bank at Berlin. The directors of the Banque Nationale, as patriots, refused. Von Lumm became more and more insistent, and, persuasion having failed, began to menace the directors with various punishments if they did not yield.

It was a troubled group of financiers that assembled day after day about the council table in the directors' chamber of the bank and discussed the problem that confronted them. They had prepared solemn protests and had made representations. The financial situation of the country, already so seriously compromised, was more and more threatened; there were rumours; other banks were fearing like measures and already there had been small runs on them; frightened depositors were beginning to withdraw their accounts; and in the midst of all this the Bank Abteilung demanded of every bank in Brussels a list of its depositors, with the amounts to the credit of each, and especially of foreign depositors.

Then one day came a demand from von Lumm that 500,000,000 marks be immediately transferred to Berlin. The directors of the Banque Nationale formally refused; if the Bank Abteilung wished that amount of funds it would have to take it at the point of a gun.

Von Lumm hesitated, and there, for the time being, the matter stood. It was, of course, no official concern of mine, though from youth I had had the uncomfortable habit of being stirred to indignation and, too often perhaps, to protestation by the numerous spectacles of

injustice that this life presents, I could turn to other things.

As, for instance, the incident of the Queen's Ambulance. Anything connected with the Queen of the Belgians acquires something of the interest, something of the delicate charm of Her Majesty's personality, and thus one morning in July—the 10th, as my notes record it—when certain gentlemen came to tell me that the Germans were about to take over the Queen's Ambulance, and to ask my assistance, I was at once not only interested, but moved.

When I speak of the Queen's Ambulance I mean, of course, the hospital that Her Majesty had installed in the Royal Palace at the outbreak of the war. It would be more correct to say that the Palace had been transformed into a hospital, and a very large hospital, for the whole of it, save the private apartments of the royal family, had been made over into wards, with long rows of white beds and numerous operating theatres, all fitted out with the latest appliances of modern surgery. Her Majesty had done me the honour to show me through it herself only a few days before she left for that noble exile in the bleak, yellow dunes where the first of her royal spouse's dynasty had set foot on Belgian soil. Through all those stately halls she had passed, down the rows of cots, their white coverlets thrown back for the occupants who were at that moment in full health, awaiting the fate that was about to send them there to suffer and to die; there was a little Belgian flag on each cot.

"The children put them there," Her Majesty had said, with that faint, exquisite smile.

I never passed the Palace without thinking of that

day, without thinking of those little Belgian flags on the white cots, and of "the children." The flags were not there when I went to visit some British wounded prisoners; nor would the Belgian flag that used to float over the Palace greet my eyes when I passed, almost daily. I used to wonder when I should see it there again, whipping out the edges of its brightly coloured bars in the wind; sometimes I would invent a hope, or at least a pleasure, in imagining the brilliant scene—the wide, vacant Place, the grill, and the broad façade of the Palace, the Guides again, and the Lancers, the Carabiniers, le Neuvième de la Ligne, and all the other gallant regiments, and the King, tall and broad, with his simple manner, and the Queen, and the children, and the vast crowd, and the wild huzzas and the tears, and men falling down dead for very joy, as once more that standard of the honour of nations, the flag of black and yellow and red, was run up the royal staff to announce to mankind that justice had returned once more to the earth. Then we would take up life where we left it off on that hideous day, and be happy. . . .

Happy? But things never come to pass in this life as we plan them; and the scene of my impressions could not be as I imagined it. The flag will go back there some day, or else there is no meaning or order in the universe, but we shall not take up life where we left it off; that was only a fond, persistent dream that sustained many through years of the horrors of the Occupation. Life is change, and what it once was it can never be again; it will be other, and let us hope better, than the old; but it will be for the children of a generation that will not know war, and not for us, any more than for those *mutilés* who hobbled on canes or swung on crutches up and

down behind the high gilded grills on sunny afternoons. We, too, shall be among the *mutilés,* even we of the rear, hobbling on, with broken illusions and frustrated hopes, to the end of our short days. . . .

The flag was no longer there over the Palace; instead there floated the white flag with the red cross; and all the Palace windows, once so mysterious, stared blank with whitened panes on which the red cross of Geneva was painted; and at the entrance there were those ugly sentry boxes of the Germans, striped black, white and red, incongruous blotches of colour all foreign to the scene, and German sentinels in that dirty field grey, sullen, morose, with ugly glances, far other than those Grenadiers in their tall bearskins, who used to present arms when we drove in. . . .

And now, on that morning in July, my callers told me that the Germans had ordered the hospital to be closed. It should be said, to the credit of the Germans, that they had always respected the Royal Palace; their flag never floated from its roof. But the order to dismantle might be, so it was feared, but the precursor of the entrance that had been so long dreaded. There had been innumerable Red Cross hospitals in Brussels at the outbreak of the war; many a handsome house was thus transformed. The Red Cross flag flew everywhere; there were those so determined either to extend to others its privileges, or to avail themselves of its protection, that they had it painted on their roofs. The Germans in time had ordered all these red crosses down, and in place of the hundreds of ambulances which they denote they established four large hospitals, one in the Palais des Academies, one in the Avenue de la Couronne, one in

the Place Daily at the Caserne Baudouin, and another, if I remember well, in the Hôpital de Schaerbeek.

I broached the subject of the Queen's Ambulance to von der Lancken that day there in the Louis XVI *salon,* after we had disposed of other matters. He was in full uniform, I remember, and wore his decorations, for the Governor-General was lunching with him that day. I asked him if it were true that they were about to dismantle the Queen's Ambulance.

"Mais oui." And he went on to give me the varied reasons why it should be done; the four large hospitals were ample for the needs of all the wounded brought to Brussels; in the hospital at the Palace for a long time there had been only a small group of Belgian wounded who could as well be cared for in one of the other hospitals. There was no argument to oppose to his logic; he was surreptitiously glancing at the little watch on his wrist; it was near the hour for luncheon and the Governor-General might arrive at any moment. And yet I detained him long enough to say that it was to be regretted; I told him about the children and the flags on the cots; and then—it was the Queen's hospital, and after all one had a certain feeling about those things that appertained to a Queen; there was the question of taste; *ça ne serait pas chic;* but, of course, nothing to be done.

At the word *chic* von der Lancken looked up and reflecting a moment, said:

"Vous avez raison."

And he made a note on a piece of paper.

As I went out into the courtyard the Governor-General was entering; I had a glimpse, like an impressionistic painting, of the grizzled old General, his collar of white broadcloth and the red facings, the decorations

dangling at his throat, his great clanking sabre, his staff officers trailing along behind.

And when three days later Lancken told me that the order had been revoked, and that the Queen's hospital would not be dismantled, I was glad to thank him, and to congratulate him on having been *chic*.

XXXI

FÊTE DAYS

I HAD gone to see von der Lancken that day to present to him Mr. Albert Billings Ruddock, the new Secretary of Legation, whose coming was such a relief to me. He had been a secretary in our Embassy at Berlin, and his acquaintance with the German language, his knowledge of German ways, no less than his various abilities, made him an invaluable aid. He and his charming wife made life less difficult in a thousand ways, and it was our good fortune, too, just at that time, to be able to welcome Mrs. Vernon Kellogg to Brussels. She had come to join her husband, and it was her distinction to be the only woman ever officially connected with the C.R.B. She made an especial study of the charity that was being done by the women of Belgium, and she devoted herself unsparingly to furthering it, and to work among the children, and in her Belgium found a devoted friend whose tireless efforts for Belgium have never ceased, and have produced the largest results in gaining sympathy for Belgium's cause. These good friends did much to sustain our spirits, drooping then, as spirits must in such an atmosphere, without respite or relief or holiday of any kind.

July brought our national holiday, and we had our celebration of the Fourth with the same ceremonies that had marked that of the preceding year. All day the

people of Brussels came and left cards and flowers, and signed the book. M. Lemonnier, the Burgomaster, and his échevins, came and the Burgomaster with tears in his eyes made a little speech of felicitation, speaking with deep feeling of the work of the Commission and of what America had done. These days were full of the excitement and the hope created by the battle of the Somme; we could hear the thunder of the mighty guns, and Brussels was anxious to believe that they were sounding her deliverance.

Anniversaries, however, were acquiring a significance that was saddening, since they served to remind us that the war was lasting long; *"ça dure,"* the Belgians would say.

We had all the men of the C.R.B. to luncheon again on that Fourth of July, and in the little speech they insisted on my making I expressed to them the pleasure I felt in these annual gatherings, and when I said that as we gathered there year after year, the bonds that united us, etc., they gave a groan, and, as determined and neutral optimists, insisted that the war would soon be over.

The delegate from Liége, Mr. Arrowsmith, brought word to me of the terrible plight of the Russian prisoners, two thousand of them, whom the Germans had taken into the Province of Liége to work on the railroad. The story was told in revolting detail, how the German taskmasters beat them, kicked them, flogged them, fed them on miserable and insufficient rations, so that, when weak from exhaustion and all the brutality they had endured they sank on the ground, they were left to die. Belgians, and Russians in Belgium, tried to aid them, but the Germans, who had no charity for them them-

selves, refused to allow them to profit by the charity of others.

I returned to the Legation late that afternoon to learn from my colleague, Mahmoud Khan, the Persian Minister, that Senator Halôt was to be condemned on the following morning, and probably to death. I had had no means of knowing that the matter was so serious, though Baron von der Lancken, in discussing it with me, had referred to it as *"cette malheureuse affaire."* Mahmoud Khan and I made an effort to save the Senator, who was a friend of Mahmoud's; we drew up a *requête en grâce,* had it signed by all the diplomats, and presented it to the authorities. Four days later we were informed that Senator Halôt had been condemned to fourteen years' imprisonment in Germany, and I should like to think that our efforts had had some effect in softening the hearts of his judges.[1]

That Fourth of July was filled with incidents. In the morning, at the very moment when M. Lemonnier was making his little speech of felicitation in the *salon* of the American Legation, the German *polizei* were making a search at his residence, and, after causing her to pass *un mauvais quart d'heure,* had arrested Madame Lemonnier.

And there was an occurrence at Antwerp which, though it fell on the day before the Fourth, associated that city with the celebration of the day. The banks of Antwerp had all announced that in honour of the anniversary of American independence they would close on the Fourth of July. At this announcement Herr Fuchs, delegate of the Bank Abteilung, summoned a prominent banker of Antwerp and said that inasmuch as political

[1] Senator Halôt has since been released and is in France.—B. W.

demonstrations were not permitted, the banks of Antwerp, if they closed on the Fourth of July as a tribute to American independence, would no longer be treated with moderation. The Belgian bankers said that they would not give way before any menace, that the banks of Antwerp had determined to close as a testimony, the only kind which under the circumstances they were permitted to give, of their gratitude to "the noble American people and their Government," and that if the Germans tried to prevent such a testimony it would be because of a secret hostility against the American people.

"And you wish it to appear as if we shared your hostility? Never! The banks will close to-morrow, whatever you say or do."

And the delegate of the Bank Abteilung yielded, and said:

"Well, let it be as if I had said nothing."

It was evident from many indications, indeed, that the hostility to America was growing. During that summer Belgian merchants received in the letters written them by German merchants little cards on which was printed:

Gedenket der unzähligen Opfer
die an Amerikas Granaten
verbluten

There were no felicitations from the Germans on our national fête day that year; it may have been mere oversight, though oversights in diplomacy are not excused. I wondered if it could be because the Germans could not felicitate a *people* on their birthday as they could felicitate a King. On the fête day of the King of Spain the Governor-General in full uniform, accompanied

by his *aide,* had gone to the Spanish Legation expressly to pay his compliments, but it was doubtless a mere oversight in our case, and of no consequence in any event. The sentinels seemed to be growing uglier in their manner with every day, and that was only a reflection of their environment, or perhaps the war, not so joyous as it had been, was getting on their nerves; they never had a kind word from their own officers nor from the Belgians about them, and I can still see the gloomy face of the old man of the landsturm on guard at Quatre Bras, and how his face lighted up one day when, as he came up to look at my *passierschein,* I spoke a few words of German to wish him good afternoon, and he looked up with open, astonished mouth that widened into a smile, the only one I ever saw on the face of a German soldier, as he exclaimed:

"Ach! Ich danke Ihnen!"

And I rode on my way thinking that if the question of wars were left to the people, untroubled by Generals, Ministers, Excellencies and editors, wars would not last long in our world.

We had noted on the agenda at the Legation that Dr. Bull was to be released on the Fourth of July, and after three months' imprisonment we felt that he would be in a humour to appreciate liberty and to celebrate it with us. The Fourth came, but no Dr. Bull, and when I went to the Politische Abteilung to ask why he had not been released, Count von Moltke said that he would inquire. He called up the Kommandantur on the telephone that stood on his desk, spoke a few moments, hung up the apparatus, turned to me, and said:

"He is implicated in another affair and is being held pending an investigation."

I had drawn my sigh of relief prematurely; and here that anxiety was to be lived all over again! And there at the Kommandantur I had to leave Dr. Bull and resume the familiar discussions as to the *ravitaillement.*

Dr. Reith, who represented the Politische Abteilung in the Vermittlungsstellen, had been to see me on behalf of the Governor-General, who asked my opinion on several questions that had arisen; the Governor-General wished to know whether it would be proper to send to Germany linseed oil that was the product of seed grown by the Germans themselves on Belgian soil; whether or not German soldiers might eat fish caught in Belgian waters; what attitude would be assumed with reference to the purchase of cattle made by the Germans before the recent convention; what to do in the case of a Belgian peasant who insisted that the Germans buy his cattle, which, he claimed, were contaminated with disease by contact with German cattle; whether an officer's wife who had bought some hares would be permitted to take them with her to Germany. I said that if some old man of the landsturm went fishing on Sunday and caught a carp he might eat it, but as for draining the fish ponds and whipping streams of Belgium, and as for seining the rivers, that would never do; I consented, too, that the Belgian whose cattle had been contaminated by disease might be paid for them; but officers' wives might take too many hares to Germany, and as to recognition of contracts made before the convention was signed, it would open such a breach in the guaranties that all the cattle in Belgium might be driven through it. It was the linseed oil that was most difficult, and I referred that to the experts of the C.N. for their advice.

The month of July seems to have been prolific in

births of free nations; we had celebrated our own national holiday, and on the fourteenth the French fête was observed by many merchants closing their shops, and, two days later we were reminded of the approach of the Belgian national anniversary by the posting of an *affiche* prohibiting any demonstration by the Belgians on that day. Von Sauberzweig had gone, having been sent to the Front in the north of France, and his functions as Military Governor of Brussels were then being discharged by General Hurt, Governor of Brabant. General Hurt, having been reminded no doubt of the celebration of the year before, included in his proclamation a prohibition of the closing of shops at unusual hours as well as the laying of flowers on public monuments, and the penalty of disobedience this year was increased to six months' imprisonment and a fine of 20,000 marks.[2]

---

[2] Avis

Il est defendu de célébrer d'une manière quelconque la fête nationale belge du 21 juillet 1916, déclarée jour férié légal par la loi delge du 27 mai, 1890.

Je préviens la population qu'elle devra s'abstenir de toutes démonstrations, telles que:

Réunions publiqués, cortèges, rassemblements, harangues et discours, fêtes scolaires, déposition de fleurs devant certains monuments, etc., pavoisement d'édifices publics, ou privés;

Fermeture des magasins, cafés, etc., à des heures exceptionnelles.

Les infractions seront punies soit d'une peine d'emprisonnement de 6 mois au plus et d'une amende pouvant atteindre 20,000 marks, soit d'une de ces deux peines à l'exclusion de l'autre; seront passibles de ces peines non seulement les auteurs de ces infractions, mais aussi les fauteurs et les complices.

J'attire, en outre, l'attention du public sur ce qu'il est défendu

Once more then Brussels set itself to the congenial task of outwitting the Germans. By one of those mysterious and tacit understandings that no one could trace to their source, everybody that day appeared wearing a green ribbon, green being the colour of hope, and while

---

de répandre des écrits non censurés ou de porter des insignes d'une manière provocatrice.

Bruxelles, le 12 juillet, 1916.

Der Gouverneur von Brüssel und Brabant,
Hurt, Generalleutnant.

(Translation:)

Notice

It is forbidden to celebrate in any manner whatsoever the Belgian national holiday of the 21st July, 1916, declared a legal holiday by the Belgian law of the 27th May, 1890.

I warn the population that it must refrain from all demonstrations such as:

Public reunions, parades, assemblies, harangues and speeches, academic ceremonies, the placing of flowers before certain monuments, etc., the decoration of public or private buildings;

The closing of stores, cafés, etc., at unusual hours.

Infringements will be punished either by imprisonment for not to exceed 6 months and a fine of not more than 20,000 marks, or by one of these two penalties to the exclusion of the other; not only the originators of the infringements will be liable to these penalties, but also the abettors and the accomplices.

Furthermore, I draw the attention of the public to the fact that it is forbidden to circulate uncensored writings, and to wear insignia in a provocative manner.

Bruxelles, July 12, 1916.

The Governor of Brussels and of Brabant,
Hurt, Lieutenant-General.

Avis

Mon interdiction de célébrer la fête nationale belge a déterminé un petit groupe de personnes irréfléchies à engager le public à résister à l'application de mon arrêté.

it was no doubt discouraged it was not yet forbidden the Belgians to hope. And so the colour was everywhere. Plants stripped of their flowers, and only their green leaves, were shown in shop windows, and the colour was worn in great knots of ribbon by the little Griffons that went trotting with their mistresses along the boulevard, where the frock-coat and the high hat, the classic symbols everywhere of impeccable respectability, were to be seen. The weather was fine, and great crowds were already preparing to spend the day in the leafy Bois when I drove through there in the morning on my way to see Franz von Holder, the painter, in the studio hidden away in the pretty garden of his home in the Avenue Mont Joi. The people, in the satisfaction of the plan they had hit upon to celebrate their *fête,* were all in

---

Afin d'éviter tout incident désagréable, je mets formellement les habitants en garde contre ces excitations, qui ne peuvent que nuire aux intérêts de la population paisible du pays.

La peine prévue sera appliqués avec la plus grande rigueur et sans indulgence à toute personne qui, le 21 juillet, 1916, ou *ulterieurement,* participera à une démonstration quelconque, y compris la cessation du travail.

Bruxelles, le 20 juillet, 1916.

Der Gouverneur von Brüssel und Brabant,
Hurt, Generalleutnant.

(Translation:)

Notice

My prescription against the celebration of the Belgian national holiday has caused a small group of unthinking persons to arouse the public to resistance against the application of my order.

In order to avoid any disagreeable incidents, I formally put the inhabitants on guard against these excitations, which can only harm the interests of the peaceable population of the country.

The penalty provided will be applied with the greatest rigour

smiles. The shops were not closed, but they were empty; it was made a point of honour not to enter them, and most of the proprietors had given their clerks a holiday so that in none of them was there any one to wait upon any intending customers who were not privy to the universal conspiracy, and if any one wished to make a purchase he found the prices of articles outrageously and impossibly high.

"How much is that hat?" a man asked in a shop in the Rue de Namur.

"Fifty thousand francs," replied the patron.

Many shop windows had been emptied for the day, and in others there were significant allegorical arrangements of stock. In one shop in the Boulevard du Nord the proprietor displayed the portraits of the King and the Queen of the Belgians; he was at once arrested and shop closed, and a little *affiche* put in the window giving the reason, and when a crowd gathered to read the *affiche* the *polizei* charged them, clubbing the people, men, women and children, with the butts of their guns.

There were many little scuffles. An officer at the head of a troop of the Guards rode into the Place de Brouckère and began to harangue the crowd in German. He raged and fumed in his gutturals, and was met by a great shout of derisive laughter; he grew red with rage, but the crowd only laughed the more loudly, and the Place de Brouckère was finally closed, and the

---

and without indulgence to every person who, the 21st July or *afterward,* participates in any demonstration whatsoever, including the cessation of work.

Brussels, July 20, 1916.

THE GOVERNOR OF BRUSSELS AND OF BRABANT,
HURT, Lieutenant General.

Place des Martyrs roped off, but the people passed there in great throngs, and as they passed the men reverently lifted their tall hats. Many people wore combinations of the Belgian colours; one woman promenaded in the boulevards with her three daughters, one dressed in black, one in yellow and one in red.

At high noon the church of Ste.-Gudule was filled with throngs that invaded every corner of the stately old church. M. Lemonnier and the échevins of the city were there, with senators and deputies, investing the scene with the distinction of official presence. But there was a vibrant quality in the atmosphere, a palpitation of expectancy; men with eager faces stood on tip-toes and strained their eyes, awaiting an impressive scene; the Cardinal was expected. After the Evangel the throngs were suddenly agitated with excitement, and there he was, a striking figure, in a gold cope, his extraordinary height accentuated by the mitre on his brow. He came out of the sacristy, through the choir, bearing his crozier, preceded by a procession of priests. He came down into the aisle, and half-way down the nave moved on to the famous pulpit of carved oak, made by Henri Verbruggen in 1699, in the bizarre style that has become classic in Belgian churches; he ascended into the pulpit and there, amid the silence that fell upon the throng, he began his sermon.

"*Jerusalem facta est habitatio exterorum; dies festi ejus conversi sunt in luctum.*" He recalled the fact that it was the eighty-fifth anniversary of the national independence and looked forward to that day when, in the restored cathedrals and the rebuilt churches of Belgium, crowds like this, with their King and Queen and the royal princes, amid the sound of the bells, hand in hand,

would renew their oaths to God, to their sovereign and to their liberties, while bishops and priests in a communion of gratitude and joy would intone a triumphal Te Deum. But that day the hymns of joy expired on their lips; they were like the captives in Babylon who hung their harps upon the willow trees. But whatever their sorrows, he did not wish them to hate those who inflicted them. National concord among the Belgians united them to universal fraternity, and yet above this sentiment he placed the respect for right, without which no communion was possible either between individuals or nations. Violations of justice must be repressed. The conscience is given over to torture so long as the culpable is not put in his place, and to do this, to establish order, to restore equilibrium, peace must be founded on a basis of justice. St. Thomas Aquinas had proclaimed public vengeance as a virtue; how can one love order without hating disorder, how wish intelligently for peace without expelling that which troubles it? It was from these summits that one must consider the war in order to comprehend its amplitude.

He gave homage to the King and to his soldiers, the artisans of the moral grandeur of the nation. He asked the Belgians to pray for those who were no more, to exclude no one from their commiseration—the blood of Christ had flowed for all. The hour of deliverance was drawing near but it had not yet come. He urged them to be patient, not to weaken in courage, and to leave to divine providence the perfection of their national education. He adjured them to allow the great law of the austerity of life to penetrate them, and he concluded:

"And just as at the Front our heroes present the ad-

mirable and consoling image of that indissoluble union of a military fraternity which nothing can impair, so in our ranks, less serried and of a more fluctuating discipline, we should heartily observe the same patriotic concord. We will respect the truce imposed on our quarrels by the great cause which alone should employ and absorb all of our means of attack and of combat; and if the impious and vile, not understanding the urgency and the beauty of this national prescription, obstinately determine, in spite of all, to feed and to inflame those passions which separate us elsewhere, let us turn away our heads and, without replying to them, remain faithful to the pact of solidarity, of friendship, of good and loyal confidence which we, under the great impulsion of the war, have concluded with them despite themselves. The approaching day of the first centenary of our independence must find us stronger, more intrepid, more united than ever. Let us prepare ourselves for it in labour, in patience, in fraternity, and when, in 1930, we shall remember the dark days from 1914 to 1916 they will appear to us the most luminous, the most majestic, and, on condition that we henceforth know how to will it, the happiest and most fecund of our national history. *Per Crucem ad lucem*—out of sacrifice, the light."

The tall Cardinal went down out of the oaken pulpit. The strains of "la Brabançonne" filled the arches of the church. The cry of *"Vive le Roi; Vive la Belgique!"* rang above it, and the great wish of the Cardinal was realized in a kind of miracle of national reconciliation.

I had gone in the afternoon with my wife to the country place of the Madoux, hidden in the edge of the forest beyond Woluwë, and when we returned to the

Legation I found awaiting me two men and a woman. The man was in high hat and frock coat, with a ribbon in his buttonhole; the woman wore a large knot of green ribbon, while the other man had an effect of effacing himself as a kind of first citizen, to applaud what the rest said in the little colloquy that resulted. The elder man acted as spokesman, and removing his high hat, revealing a mass of hair as white as his snowy beard, he said that he had come to report to me that the *polizei* were "brutalizing" (*brutaliser*) the crowd on the Boulevard du Nord he reported this, and then stood as if awaiting some instant action on my part. I explained as sympathetically as I could the limitation of my powers and, when I had done the man stood there, his face grew long, a look almost of despair came to his eyes, and, as though his last hope were swept from him, he said pitifully:

"Mais Excellence, nous comptons sur vous!"

It was a constant source of poignant and unavailing regret with me that I could not perform the prodigies that those poor harried folk so touchingly expected; such was the unlimited confidence in the great Republic across the sea. Sometimes I had the uncomfortable feeling of being a kind of impostor, the pitiably little I could accomplish being so very small in comparison with all that I should have liked to do to help them in their sorrow and their pain.

XXXII

RETALIATION

It was not to be expected, however, that the Germans could allow in two successive years such scenes to pass without resentment, and in the evening of that day an event occurred that gave them an excuse for the reprisals which it was not in their nature or their philosophy to forego.

Cardinal Mercier during the afternoon had remained quietly indoors at the College of St.-Louis attending to the duties that had summoned him to Brussels. In the evening he left the College and was about to enter his motor-car to return to Malines when a group in the street caught sight of the tall figure, instantly recognized the patriotic Primate of Belgium, and broke into enthusiastic acclaim:

"Vive le Cardinal; Vive le Cardinal!"

His Eminence tried to still the applause by deprecatory gestures of the hands in the red gloves, hastily entered his automobile and at once disappeared down the Rue de Progrès. That was all that occurred.

The next day the city was fined one million marks. The punishment was announced to the Burgomaster in a letter addressed to him by General Hurt, Governor of Brussels:

Monsieur the Governor-General, the letter began, in view of the circumstances which Belgium traverses at this moment, had

supposed that a serious-minded population would of itself have renounced the idea of publicly celebrating its national holiday. Nevertheless, because of the experience of last year, he had decreed certain measures destined to prevent all demonstrations organized by the light and turbulent element.

In the well-understood interests of the population, the communal authorities of Greater Brussels have in good faith, intelligently and energetically, supported the prescriptions of the German authorities in such manner that it was possible throughout the day yesterday to avoid, until evening, unfortunate incidents, despite the fact that the unthinking portion of the population had invited the public, by an abundant distribution of hand bills, not to follow the prescriptions.

The German police paid no attention to the green ribbons, the public order not having been troubled by them.

On the other hand, when, in the evening, Cardinal Mercier crossed the city in an automobile, there were produced manifestations in direct opposition to the prescriptions of the German authority of a nature to incite the population to resistance and to thoughtless acts. You will agree, Monsieur the Burgomaster, that no occupying Power in the world could endure such a provocation.

In consequence I proposed to Monsieur the Governor-General to inflict a fine on Greater Brussels.

Monsieur the Governor-General has carried out my proposition and has inflicted a fine of one million marks. He caused it to be observed on that occasion that it is only out of regard for the loyal collaboration given by the communal authorities in maintaining order that the fine inflicted was fixed at such a moderate figure.[1]

---

[1] Monsieur le Bourgmestre,—M. le gouverneur général avait crue que, dans les circonstances que traverse la Belgique en ce moment, une population sérieuse aurait d'elle-même renouncé à fêter publiquement sa fête nationale. Néanmoins, il avait, eu égard aux expériences faites l'année dernière, décréte des mesures d'ordre, qui devaient empêcher toute démonstration de la part d'éléments légers et turbulents.

Dans l'intérêt bien compris de la population, les autorités communales de l'agglomération bruxellois ont loyalement, intelligem-

To this remarkable letter Burgomaster Lemonnier replied, pointing out its inconsistencies and injustices,[2]

ment at énergiquement soutenu les préscriptions de l'autorité allemande, de sorte qu'il a été possible, dans la journée d'hier, d'éviter jusequ'à la soirée des incidents fâcheux, quoique la partie irréflechíe de la population eût invité le public, par une abondante distribution de billets, à ne pas suivre ces préscriptions.

La police allemande ne s'est pas occupée du port du rubans verts, l'ordre public n'ayant pas été troublé.

Par contre, lorsque, dans la soirée, le cardinal Mercier a traversé la ville en automobile, il s'est des manifestations qui étaient en opposition directe avec les préscriptions de l'autorité allemande, et qui étaient de nature à inciter la population à la résistance et à des actes irréfléchis. Vous conviendrez, Monsieur le Bourgmestre, qu'aucune puissance occupante au monde ne peut souffrir une pareille provocation.

Par conséquent, j'ai proposé à M. le gouverneur général d'infliger une amende à l'agglomération bruxelloise.

M. le gouverneur général a donné suite à ma proposition et a infligé une amende d'un million de marks; il a fait remarquer à cette ocasion que c'est uniquement par égard pour la collaboration loyale prêtée par les administrations communales pour le maintien de l'ordre, que l'amende infligée a été fixée à chiffre aussi modéré.

Avec l'expression de ma considération,

(s) Hurt,
Lieutenant-général et gouverneur de Bruxelles et du Brabant.

[2] "It results from my information," said the Burgomaster, "that the manifestation aimed at resolves itself into cheers by which the inhabitants saluted His Eminence the Cardinal at the moment when he entered his automobile in quitting the College of St. Louis.

"In the letter in which he informs us of the penalty inflicted in the Brussels population the Governor-General recognized . . . that the communal authority took all the measures in its power to assure order. . . . In these conditions it is certain that the alleged acclamations—which did not however disturb the peace—should be considered as individual acts for which the entire population can

but the Germans did not recede, and the fine was collected.

---

not be held responsible. This condemnation, therefore, is in direct contradiction with Article 50 of The Hague convention:

> " 'No collective penalty, pecuniary or otherwise, can be inflicted upon a population because of individual acts for which it could not be considered responsible.'

"Besides, it is manifestly in opposition to the convention of the 12th of October, 1914, relative to the payment to the German authority by the city of Brussels and the agglomeration of twenty-five millions of francs as a new contribution of war. Article 2 of that Convention is as follows:

> " 'The indemnity thus paid by the agglomeration of Brussels being forty-five millions of francs, it is understood that there will not be imposed, either directly or indirectly, any new contribution on the inhabitants of the agglomeration of Brussels. In case, however, that a criminal attempt shall be committed against the German troops there will be imposed on the communes of the agglomeration in whose territory the attempt shall have been committed a contribution, or some other punishment.'

"Article 4 is as follows:

> " 'German troops will not be lodged in private houses of the agglomeration of Brussels; I count on your help to fix the price which German officers lodged in dwellings will have to pay, and I beg your Administration to put itself in accord on this subject with the Intendance Militaire.'

"I myself negotiated that convention with the German authority, and in order to obtain the adhesion of the communal authorities interested and to contract the loans necessary to the payment of the contribution, I called the attention of the communal administrations to the importance of these two clauses. The Administrations approved the Convention, we contracted the loans, and after

we had paid the sum demanded the German authority set at naught these two clauses. It lodged troops in a great many houses and imposed on us the expense of lodging not only the troops, but also German employees of the railroads. Under this head we have to meet to-day expenses which may attain a million francs, and at this moment, by your last decision, there is imposed on us a new contribution for causes wholly foreign to those foreseen by the aforesaid Article 2 of the convention.

"You will recognize, Excellency, that these decisions, incompatible with formal engagements, are of a nature to wound the sensibilities of our constituents. That which our population honours in Monsieur the Burgomaster Max and in His Eminence Cardinal Mercier, that which unites them in the same thought, is their attachment to the nation. In manifesting its sympathies for the Cardinal the population simply wished to express its patriotic sentiments.

"In his proclamation of the 2nd of September, 1914, did not the Governor-General von der Goltz say:

" 'I ask no one to renounce his patriotic sentiments.'

"And in the letter of Your Excellency of the 18th of July, 1915, we read:

" 'I ask no one to renounce his ideals, neither to disavow, sometimes by a hypocritical manner, his convictions, but what I must expect of each one is a recognition of the real situation. That is to say that I, and my administration, in accordance with the laws of war and the laws of man, have the legal duty, and from that also the legal right, to administer the country and to expect the collaboration of the authorities of the country, as well as that of its intellectuals, ecclesiastic or lay.'

"And yet because some citizens have manifested their patriotic sentiments in acclaiming the Cardinal, without any offense for the occupant, you condemn the whole population.

"It must be recognized, besides, that such penalties are really overwhelming for the agglomeration of Brussels, already so heavily taxed. Constantly the communes have to resort to loans to aid and succor the unemployed population. In the city of Brussels alone, which counts actually less than 170,000 inhabitants, nearly 60,000 persons are nourished by the communal soups, and a great many

other persons, who from a sense of dignity do not dare to appeal to that charity, must be helped privately.

"We have the profound conviction that after having taken cognizance of the situation the German authority will reconsider its decision, and that it will understand that the condemnation is unjustified as it tends to weaken the efforts of the communal administrations to assure public order and tranquillity.

"Le Bourgmestre FF,

(*Signed*) "MAURICE LEMONNIER."

XXXIII

THE ORANGERIE

The custom which always prevailed in Brussels, as in many capitals, for the diplomats to live in their Legations—that is, to have their chancelleries in their homes—while not without its advantages is not lacking in its drawbacks. In those conditions in which we found ourselves it was doubly trying, for the day never ended, the work was never done, the shop was never closed. I was called at all hours, and as the callers were usually on some desperate errand I could not deny them. Night after night I would go up to my chamber with the appeals of some half-frantic wife, whose husband was condemned and waiting to be shot, in my ears; and I used to listen to similar heart-breaking tales before I could make my toilet in the morning. Save for the brief and fatiguing visit to America we had scarcely been out of Brussels since the war began, and never out of its depressing atmosphere; an afternoon at Ravenstein now and then, a luncheon or a tea or a dinner at some friend's, were the only respites we had. With the coming of Mr. Ruddock I was relieved of much of the routine work in the Legation, and he could discuss and settle many questions with the Germans. And so when August came I took a house in the charming Faubourg of Uccle, which, though but a quarter of an hour from the Legation, nevertheless gave the illusion of being in

the country. It was known as the Orangerie and was a sort of dependency of the château of M. Josse Allard. It stood at one end of the park of the château in the midst of trees which, by their ingenious planting, concealed it from all the new houses that had sprung up in that quiet commune of Greater Brussels. It had a terrace that overlooked a pretty garden, planted that summer in beets, whose broad yellowing leaves replaced the green of the lawns, and the whole horizon was hedged about by trees, with red roofs showing through their interstices, and there were two tall sentinel poplars that looked like cypresses against the serene evening sky. It had a large *salon* furnished in Louis XVI, a library, a dining-room, a great veranda closed in glass for rainy days, and the master's chambers, all on one floor.

I could scarcely wait for the night to come when we should go there, so eager was I to escape the tramcars that, under the deprivations of the occupation, each day rattled more and more, and each night screeched around the corner of the Rue Belliard with louder squeals as grease grew rarer. To this was added the rumble of German motor-lorries, the snort of the motors of German officers, the fiacres rattling over the streets wherein the paving was never renewed any more, trains filled with soldiers bumping over the crossing, cluck-cluck, cluck-cluck, the crossing bell with its invariable five notes, out of tune and ending on a flat minor, the loud clumping of wooden shoes, the people talking in the streets, and all that. And above all, the imperative ring at the door—these were to be left behind, and would have to await the office hours in the morning. That first evening came, and I read Jean Christophe for

awhile, and then, with conscious relish, prepared for sleep. . . .

Such sylvan stillness! Only the trees rustling their leaves like whispered secrets outside my window! Then insects—strange, unknown, entomological noises; and then, slowly emerging one by one out of the silence, the howls and yelps of a whole countryside of dogs, baying the moon, if there was a moon. And our own dogs no better—Taï-Taï screaming in the room where Marie had interned her, and Kin-Kung whimpering with homesickness all night. There was a steeple clock, well enough, no doubt, in its time, those olden days of witches and evil spirits and sundials, before there was a clock in every household and a watch in every pocket, or at least on every wrist. It boomed away, its heavy notes borne on the east wind directly through my open window and to the very centre of the tympanum of my startled ear. It struck the quarter and the half hours, with trills and variations, so that after concluding one announcement it could have had only three or four minutes to prepare itself for the next, its mission being, I suppose, to keep mankind alert and ever on the *qui vive*. Somewhere a man was trying to master the art of playing the bugle. Then at dawn the birds began to scuffle and to sing—that joyous matutinal chorus. . . .

But one accustoms one's self to everything, even to sleeping in the country, and by and by I had adjusted myself to these sounds and they took their place in my subconsciousness, as had the rumbling trains and the squeaking trams and the roisterers turned out of the cabarets at the Gare de Luxembourg, singing at midnight, or the landsturm hymning at dawn the latest German victory.

And the little change was needed. The nerves of every one were overstrained. M. Francqui, suddenly ordered by his physician to take a rest, had gone to Emannuel Janssen's country place near La Hulpe; Villalobar was in Spain; M. Blancas, the Argentine Minister, had gone on the long voyage to his far-off home, and when all of one's associates have left town one has the impression that every one is out of town. The Germans had not left town, but there was a lull in our troubles, and when Mr. Kellogg and his wife came to us for the week-end we could talk of home and other things than war and the *ravitaillement* and German morals and manners. The Allards had gone to their château for the summer, and we had the presence of these delightful friends; van Holder, the painter, was not far away; Baron Janssen was at Wolvendael, not many rods from us on the other side of Uccle; and the Ruddocks had taken a château for the summer on the Drève de Lorraine, on the other side of the Bois. The morning ride to the Legation through the Bois was pleasant, and on Sundays there were strolls to St.-Job, which all Belgian artists love to paint, and to Drogenbusch, where there is a little church that is in the purest Flemish Gothic.

When Mr. Hoover came over from London we tried to induce him to relax, and through long Sunday afternoons we tried to talk of other things than calories. We failed in that; he would never rest; his tireless mind was always at work on the problem of food for the nations. I used to warn him that if he went on he risked the ironic fate of becoming the greatest authority on food on this planet, and of ruining his own digestion in the process, so that when he had it all scientifically ra-

tioned he would be unable to eat his own share. He would sit silently thinking, thinking, and one day out of his cogitations he said suddenly:

"How would it do to have each American city adopt a ruined Belgian or French city?"

And he began unfolding the new scheme then forming in his mind for the rehabilitation of the devastated portions of Belgium and northern France; he was evolving his plan to have each city in America adopt, as it were, a Belgian or a French town and provide for its reconstruction.

He had come to Brussels late in July, and, M. Francqui turning his dark eyes on him with that droll expression that always adumbrated some pleasantry, had asked:

"Any bombs?"

Mr. Hoover's visits were always and necessarily coincident with some new crisis in the *ravitaillement;* he would arrive and announce it while we sat shivering with apprehension, and M. Francqui called these announcements "bombs," insisting that Mr. Hoover always carried at least one in his pocket. M. Francqui would get up and walk briskly around the room with his short, sturdy steps, plunge his hands one after the other into his pockets, and withdrawing them quickly make brisk motions as though he were throwing bombs right and left, to illustrate Mr. Hoover's progress through the world. The bomb this time was a demand of the British Government that the whole of the crop in the north of France be reserved to the civil population of the invaded territory, and when we had discussed it, and Mr. Hoover had returned to London, Mr. Kellogg went down to Charleville, where the German General Staff

had its headquarters, to introduce the pleasant topic of conversation.

The work was growing constantly more and more difficult because the feeling against America was always mounting; the Germans resented that steady exercise of the pressure from Washington which prevented them from employing their beloved weapon of the submarine; the German newspapers were clamouring for submarine activities. Germany was proceeding to her logical and inevitable destiny of a military dictatorship; the only question was how long von Bethmann could resist the influence of *Messieurs les Militaires.* One of the officials at Brussels, when asked by an American newspaper correspondent, then lately in Brussels with a German cicerone, what they would do with the Belgians in case America were drawn into the war, had replied:

"We'd let them starve."

Thus Mr. Kellogg's work in the north of France was made more and more difficult, and we could count ourselves fortunate in having one of his intelligence and tact to discuss and arrange it.

M. Mitilineu, the Roumanian *chargé,* had had a letter from a friend in France, saying that *"on sent l'arome de la paix,"* but we had no such delicate olfactories. Indeed, our senses told us otherwise, and when Ouang Yung Pao, the Chinese Minister, came to tell me that he was going away, and that he had no intention of returning—and would I look after his Legation and help his secretaries if they had any trouble?—I could imagine thoughts behind his inscrutable countenance that showed him to be of our mind.

However, there was the usual condemnation to be concerned about; a Belgian railway employee named

Adelin Collon, with three others, had been condemned for spying or for treason, and was about to be shot. And we had the usual difficulty over the courier. The Germans were always reporting to us that the *Militaires* insisted that the diplomats were sending letters. I had not sent any, or delivered any, but new exactions were constantly being made.

"But what proof have we that you do not send them?" a German official bluntly asked me one day.

I looked at him in amazement an instant, and then:

"The best proof in the world," I replied. "Because I tell you so."

He stared at me uncomprehending, and incapable of comprehending. The Belgians called it *la mentalité allemande,* and the mentality was the result of the German system, which, holding all men venal, and moved only by selfish and mean motives, and convinced that honour and good-will do not exist and sway the majority of men, put its reliance on force instead of on reason. It was precisely that fact that made dealing with them so difficult; it was that which poisoned the very atmosphere we breathed. In it men became suspicious and distrustful, in spite of their better selves, and all through that summer we had petty difficulties that were even more wearying than the great ones. There were many complex questions in the exercise of the control of the imported food-stuffs and, what was much more difficult, of the native products, and much of our time was occupied in discussions of these details.

But for long weeks our preoccupying anxiety continued to be the disposition of the crop in the north of France, and Mr. Hoover and Mr. Kellogg went with the Baron von der Lancken to Berlin, where there was

to be a great war council over the question. They returned several days later with the encouraging report that the question was settled, in principle at least. They had found a human obstacle in the fact that the Germans complained of the Belgians having more to eat than the Germans, and there was much sentiment in favour of rationing the Belgians on the same economic scale to which the German appetite was then being restrained and adjusted. After Mr. Hoover and Mr. Kellogg had given me the news, sitting there on the glass veranda of the Orangerie, they gave me an interesting account of their meeting with General von Sauberzweig.

The former Military Governor of Brussels was then discharging the functions of Quartermaster-General on the General Staff at Charleville. He happened to be in Berlin, and through Baron von der Lancken asked Mr. Hoover and Mr. Kellogg if they would have tea with him at his hotel. They accepted, and the General at once entered into a justification of his course in the case of Edith Cavell. He referred to himself, in lugubrious irony, as "the murderer," as to her—he was speaking German, in which Mr. Kellogg was thoroughly proficient—as *"die Cavell."* His explanation, advanced in justification of his conduct, was that Miss Cavell had been at the head of an extensive conspiracy to send young men to the Front to kill Germans; his own son had just been the victim of a terrible wound, blinded for life by a bullet that traversed his head just behind the eyes; perhaps, argued von Sauberzweig, the boy had been shot by one of these very young men whom Miss Cavell had aided to reach the Front. He said that Miss Cavell was entitled to no sympathy as a nurse since she

was paid for her professional services, and that he could not have reversed or altered the judgment of the military court that had tried and sentenced her without reflecting on the judgment of his brother officers. General Sauberzweig insisted upon discussing the case, much to the embarrassment of his guests, who were of another mind about it, and he gave them the impression of a man haunted by remorse and pursued by some insatiable, irresistible impulse to discuss this subject that seemed to lay so heavily on his mind.

Mr. Hoover had brought to me some specimens of German numismatic art, among them a medallion struck in celebration of the sinking of the *Lusitania,* and a brutal caricature of our President, both of them amazing evidences of German taste and culture. On the theory, attributed to Talleyrand, that indelicacy is worse than crime, one could better understand the hideous and revolting deed that doomed the lovely ship and its precious cargo, than one could understand the mind that would seek some artistic expression of the national satisfaction in it. The expression was not artistic, but it was fitting in its own intrinsic ugliness, and placed beside Belgian or French medals, since those two nations excel in the art, it might perhaps serve in a collection as a fitting symbol of the Kultur it celebrated.

Before a week had passed, however, Mr. Kellogg was not so sanguine as to the agreement on the crop, the vast and insuperable difficulty in settling a question with the Germans being that it is never settled, even after an agreement has been reached. The matter had been arranged in principle, but more difficult problems were encountered when we came to apply the principles. It had been agreed at Berlin that the crops should be

reserved to the native population; then, one day, half sick with despair, Mr. Kellogg came to tell me that a German officer had arrived from Berlin to say that it would not be done. Then three weeks more of discussion, argument, debate, until, one Saturday afternoon, Mr. Kellogg arrived radiant and happy, his honest face all smiles, and he drew from his pocket and waved in triumph a paper, the signed agreement regarding those precious crops. He had won it fairly from the German General Staff, had obtained many concessions, preserving to the French four-fifths of all the food products raised on their own invaded soil. There was only one condition attached, and that was a characteristic one—England was to make no capital of the fact in her newspapers! It was a fine victory for Mr. Kellogg, and we were happy in felicitating him on it, and in that spirit we went over to the château to dine with the Allards, for the Kelloggs were spending the week-end with us.

A new Nonce had come to Brussels, Monseigneur Locatelli, and he was dining at the Allards that evening, as was Monsieur le Doyen d'Uccle, a delightful elderly man who seldom left the peaceful walls of his *curé* a few blocks away. He was rotund, as a *curé* should be, and jolly, and concerned for us, since he asked me if his clock troubled me. I reassured his kindly interest by telling him that I had soon grown used to it, and we fell to talking about a little drama, a kind of tragedy in its way, even in the midst of the great tragedy in which we lived.

Some time in the previous winter an American, Mr. N——, who, after long years in the Klondike, had emerged from the wilderness with the fortune he had accumulated, and made the long journey all the way from

Alaska to Brussels to settle some business pending there. He had come to call on me at the Legation, a pale, frail man, whose white hair and lean, wrinkled visage showed what price he had paid for his fortune and gave him the appearance of the prematurely old. He had left some papers in my charge, saying that he was going to enter a hospital for a few days to undergo some minor surgical operation. A few days later I heard that he was dead, and one morning, as he was our countryman, Mr. Watts, our Consul-General, Gibson and I had gone to the church to attend his funeral—the only mourners there. It was a grey day, and a dreary, pathetic little last scene in a life of such toil. The good *doyen* had been with him at the end, and the American had said, almost with his last breath:

"I was going to be a gentleman—and now I have to go away."

We had fixed on that Sunday for one of those excursions to which a friend of mine always refers as "pleasure exertions," and we were up and away in the rain the following morning to see the château de Gaesbeek, not far from Brussels. An ancient fortress of the Middle Ages, it stood there surrounded by its mast, lifting its battlemented towers into the grey sky just as it did in the days when it had withstood the repeated assaults of Spaniards and Frenchmen and of the malcontents of its own land, in those skirmishes that used to be called battles. Count Egmont once lived there, and there is a great staircase that bears his name. The Lion of Flanders is still rampant on the heavy walls of the tower above the postern gate and the portcullis. The benefits of sightseeing, however, depend upon the mood one is in, and we were too much in and of the monstrous

tragedy just then darkening and sickening the world to respond to the suggestion of the souvenirs of those other tragedies that have so regularly punctuated the progress of mankind. It seemed to me, indeed, as I wandered about, to be one of those sights which Dr. Johnson, speaking to Boswell of the Giants' Causeway, classified as worth seeing, but not worth going to see. Kellogg and I, in that comparative study of ancient and modern culture which our position in Belgium enabled us to make, were fascinated by the *oubliette* and looked down into it a long while, trying to realise the sensations of the poor victims who had perished in its dark and evil depths. The human race did not seem to us just then to have made much progress, except in the application of the mechanical arts to those various deviltries in which it grows more and more prodigal and proficient, and because of that fact the *châtelaine* of Gaesbeek, who lives there only for a short while in the summer, evoking perhaps out of its past some reminiscence of the olden grandeur that was built up in the pain and misery and cruelty of those times, had prudently hidden away the best of its collections and furnishings lest German visitors, in their search for culture, should have them hauled off to ornament other castles beyond the storied Rhine.

But Monday morning would come soon, bringing with it the cares of control and *zentralen,* the two problems that were to dog us to the very end. It would be as wearying to read of all those details as it would be to write them, almost as wearying as it was to live and to struggle with them. They involved the question of excess vegetables raised in Belgium, and of fats which the Germans were intent on getting into Ger-

many to eke out their exiguous nourishment, and we spent many hours in discussions with the Germans in the yellow Louis XVI *salon* and in the American Legation.

The *zentralen* continued to spring up like mushrooms of some noxious variety. The Germans had just organised a new one to monopolise and distribute butter, and had fixed a maximum price, and the result was—as it always has been in history from the time of the French Revolution, wherever maximum prices have been decreed by statute, the law of things in general being so much more potent than the laws of man—the result was that butter seemed to exist no more anywhere in the world.

Eggs, too, were another object of the rage for regulation; the Germans had taken a census of the hens in Flanders, and issued a decree scientifically based on the result, demanding a certain number of thousands of eggs—so many hens, so many eggs. And we wondered how the poor hens thenceforth were to keep out of the Kommandantur. It was quite impossible to live up to so many regulations. Mr. Prestiss Gray, one of the officials of the C.R.B., had an experience of the difficulty when he drove with another C.R.B. man to Vilvorde one afternoon in that month of August. The *passierschein* for the Commission motor in which he was riding authorised the car to contain five occupants; the sentinels at Vilvorde looked at the document, examined the car, and announced that as there were only two men in the car it could not pass. Mr. Gray explained, invoked the theory that the greater included the less, but no; that pass called for five men and there were only two; there was something suspicious in the circum-

stances, and Mr. Gray must produce three more men—or not pass.

The Germans were beginning to regulate the restaurants, reducing the number of courses and the amount of meat that could be served, to which we could have no objection, for the meals that the German officers could procure in restaurants, when the rumour of them got back to Germany, served to increase the difficulty of keeping the *ravitaillement* in operation at all.

It was in that month of August that the circle of our friends was still further reduced by the death of the Baroness Lambert. The authorities had consented to give her a *laissez-passer;* she had gone to Paris, and the Baron had followed in the anxiety of the news of her illness. She died in her house at Paris, another victim of the war which had brought her so much sorrow. Her passing left a void in Brussels, where her brilliancy, her beauty, and her hospitality had made her popular in her circle. She was a woman of stately beauty, and she had seemed to fade and to decline almost visibly under the burden of that black woe which the war had brought to her land. It affected her as something compromising her innate distinction, as though it were an affront, a personal humiliation. And Brussels was a sadder place without her. The *salons* in the great house on the Avenue Marnix had been closed ever since the war, but she had continued to receive her friends; there was always a little group of them there at tea-time, and we often dined there. There seemed, too, an added touch of regret that she could not live to see that day that was spoken of as "when the King comes back." It was what almost all were trying to live for, the one hope to which people clung, the one incentive that kept them

alive. "After the war," every one would say, in that imperative need of hope, in that supreme desire to return to normal life. And death seemed somehow more tragic and more sad in these circumstances, when every one wished to see the war end, prayed to wake from the long and monstrous nightmare.

The war seemed to add another tragedy to old age. I have a picture in my memory of that most charming of aristocratic old gentlemen, Count John d'Oultremont, sitting in the library of his ancient home there in the Rue Bréderode, behind the Palace of the King. It was a romantic, rambling old house, with wings and winding halls and passages, with an interior of soft, faded tapestries, Louis XIV furnishings, and the dull sheen of old portraits—one of them of the Count himself when he was a young and handsome officer of the Guides, in the days when they called him *"le beau d'Oultremont."* He sat there, as it were, waiting.

"Je suis né dans cette maison," he remarked to me one evening after dinner, *"et j'espère y mourrir."*

His step seemed not so firm as he took his morning constitutional along the boulevard, and his form was bending. When I heard not long ago that he had been roused from his bed at night by the *polizei* and within the hour hurried off to Germany as a hostage, I thought of what he had said that night. He was already ill, and when he got to Germany the Germans offered to release him to go home, but he refused to accept their favours unless his companions, other gentlemen of Brussels who had been arrested with him, were released also, an attitude worthy of the nobleman who as *Grand Maréchal* of the court of Leopold II had so gracefully

done the honours to the German Emperor when he was a guest of the Belgians in Brussels.

"J'espère y mourrir." It seemed very little to ask of fate, and the fates granted his prayer, perhaps sooner than might have been had he not been dragged off to a German prison as a hostage, for he barely reached home from his exile in time to die.

He was not the only one of the old family to be arrested; the Countess Georges d'Oultremont spent a while in prison in the summer under notice, on a charge of having despatched letters, I believe; she was ill at the time, and when the *polizei* ransacked her home, just around the corner from the Legation, they found and bore away some cards bearing the prayer: *"Sacre Cœur de Jésu, protège la Belgique!"* Even prayers, it seemed, were incriminating.

On August 29 the rumour ran through Brussels that Roumania had entered the war on the side of the Allies. There was a rush to the Avenue Louise to see if the blue, yellow, and red flag had come down. The next day the rumour was confirmed, and on the last day of the month M. Mitilineu—"Mittie," as we called him—came with his pretty wife to bid us *au revoir*. They were leaving the next day for Holland and thence to Havre. Two or three days later I met Mitilineu far out on the Avenue Terveuren walking with his bull dog along the *parterres* under the trees. At the last moment the Germans would not allow them to leave, alleging that the Roumanians had prevented the German Minister from leaving Bucharest. They were held there for a whole fortnight of anxiety, and then finally allowed to go to Holland—but by way of Denmark! They were escorted on the long détour by Count von Moltke through

Germany and Schleswig-Holstein, to the Danish frontier, and there, after Count von Moltke had left them, they were compelled to wait for days and to sleep at night with sentinels constantly at the door.[1]

The family of the Burgomaster, M. Lemonnier, constantly the object of pitiless and petty persecution, had again been involved in difficulties. One day, September 15, 1916, two Germans from the secret police appeared at M. Lemonnier's residence in the Avenue Louise and the Burgomaster being absent asked to see Madame Lemonnier. When she appeared they demanded eight hundred marks. Surprised, she asked why she should give them this sum, and they said it was because she had been condemned by the German tribunal at Namur to pay that amount as a fine.

Madame Lemonnier was stupefied. She had never been haled before the tribunal at Namur, had had no notice of any action against her, had never been informed that she was charged with any offense, had never been interrogated, had not been in Namur for more than two years, in fact knew nothing about it. The two German agents told her that unless she paid this sum at once they would seize her furniture. She refused, and they took away some vases and other *objets d'art.* Madame Lemonnier caused an inquiry to be made, and was informed that she had been condemned by the tribunal at Namur, without any notice, without any opportunity to be heard or to defend herself—on the unsupported statement of a person who claimed that she had received printed matter offensive to Germany, which had been sent by Madame Lemonnier. Some weeks

[1] M. Mitilineu has since died in a sanatorium in France, hopelessly ill.—B. W.

later German policemen came again to the residence of the Burgomaster, took out the furniture, piled it up on the sidewalk, loaded it on a cart, and a few days later, having inserted notices in the so-called newspapers published in Brussels that the furniture of the Burgomaster would be sold for the payment of debt, put the furniture up at auction and sold it.

XXXIV

BANK ABTEILUNG AND YEGG MEN

I LOOK back now on those autumn days at the Orangerie with gratitude for the seclusion that, when evening came, it gave from the depression, and sometimes the horror, of the days in town. It was not peace, but it was a semblance of peace, and we could pretend a peace even when we knew that peace existed nowhere in Europe. But as autumn advanced we had something more than a presentiment that peace was farther off from Europe than ever, and that before it came again to the earth our own country would be swept into the vortex of the war. The great conflict was growing more bitter, there was a lower, deeper note of savage hatred in the chorus of universal strife, the great tragedy seemed to be whelming to some awful doom. At evening we imagined a more portentous whirr in the Zeppelins sailing low and passing directly over our roof on their far flight across the English Channel, monstrous birds of night, grim and black in the deep purple skies. At morning we would feel it again when we were awakened by the burst of the bombs the English and French aviators were hurling on the hangars of those Zeppelins, and by the boom of the shrapnel the Germans were firing in their effort to bring them down, even if the efforts were unsuccessful; the morose old men of the landsturm were not very expert as marks-

men. Then at night there was always the thud of the guns along the Somme, deep, distant, lugubrious; the sound had come to have something of the permanence and persistence of the roar of some mighty waterfall, producing the appalling sense one has sometimes at Niagara, that almost insupportable impatience with the sound, a feeling that it must stop, if but for an instant's surcease in its mighty pain, and then the consciousness that it has gone on always, and will go on, forever and forever.

And yet there are impressions of mornings of pearly fogs, days of the glitter of the low September sun, and in the late afternoons the peasants digging potatoes, turning up the soft brown earth and burning the dead vines, the white smoke drifting off over the château. The whole world of Belgium was wearing the white scarf of those potato fires in those days, the children now and then roasting a potato in the coals, improvising a feast. Or perhaps the remembered impression is of van Holder squinting at me from behind his easel, or the ride home from the Legation through the Bois, long shafts of sunlight lighting the vivid green boles and gilding the fallen leaves. There were Corots everywhere in nature those days, with the melancholy light of the world's sorrow in them, and if there were not Corots everywhere painting them, there were painters everywhere squatting at their easels, painters who either dared the Kommandantur or were unable to resist the temptation to ask its permission. I recall Sunday afternoons, talking with the Allard children in the garden behind the greenhouses—Collette with the lovely eyes and the grave expression, Antoine with the golden hair, and little Olivier with his funny sayings. . . .

"Pourquoi as-tu mordu ta gouvernante, Olivier?" I asked him.

"Ah, elle m'ennuyait et—j'ai eu une crise de nerfs."

Alas! we were all more or less subject to *crises de nerfs* in those days; Brussels had not been so nervous and excited since the fall of Antwerp. The hopes raised by the battle of the Somme, the constant bombing of the aviators, the entry of Roumania in the war, the experience of the Mitilineus, something, I know not what, in the air, produced a curious psychology in the crowd; the rumours were never so thick, and the people were persuaded that the Germans were about to retreat.

They were at least sending every available man to the Front. There were no more sentinels at Quatre-Bras; the bridges even were often unguarded. Several of the minor employees we were accustomed to see in civilian dress at the Politische Abteilung wore faces that were long with Teutonic melancholy because they had been ordered to hold themselves in readiness to leave for the Front. In all the departments of the civil government there was a tremendous activity, everybody bustling about in the zeal of the functionary bent on justifying his existence and employment, trying to show how indispensable he was.

The bombing was a common occurrence. One warm evening we were dining at the home of friends; we were in the *salon* after dinner. We were standing, we men, somewhat aside, smoking. Suddenly there came three deep detonations. The evening was warm and we thought it was thunder, but the sound was followed by a veritable cannonade, and we all ran out on to the terrace, and there, in the clear, luminous sky, the moon hanging full and golden over the dark outline of the

trees, the flashes of exploding shells, very faint at first glance, then awe-inspiring, then terrible, as all the implications rushed upon one—that daring lad flying up there in the moonlight. We watched in silence. Then a shell seemed to fall in the park. We went indoors. Madame J—— was pale and shaken, thinking perhaps of her brother in the flying corps. Her father was there; perhaps he, too, was thinking of his boy, but he began playing at billiards with the Chevalier de W——, calmly knocking the balls about.

The aviator of that night, however, was another Brussels boy, and after dashing his bombs down on the hangar at Evere or on that at the Plaine de Manœuvres, he flew over the city, very low, below the trajectory of the anti-aircraft guns, grazing the roofs of houses, performing daring evolutions over the Place de Brouckère, throwing out some coloured lights and a bundle of papers, a kind of proclamation, all to the wild delight of the frantically cheering and applauding crowd. The papers which the aviator threw down were addresses, printed in French and in Flemish, saying:

"Belges! La fin approche! . . . Le moment de la délivrance approche! Vivent les Allies! Vive la Belgique! Vive le Roi!" [1]

---

[1] Belges

La fin approche.

Devant Verdun, l'admirable et héroïque résistance de l'armée française a brisé la formidable offensive allemande.

Sur la Somme, les armées françaises avancent victorieusement.

En Volhynie et en Galicie, l'armée autrichienne est mise en déroute par l'armée russe et ses débris, soutenus par des corps d'Allemands et Turcs, ne parviennent pas à enrayer la poussée continue de nos alliés.

Brussels was enthusiastic all the next day, but the escapade was not without its tragedy, for a shell fired over the city at the aviator fell in the Rue de l'Hôtel des Monnaies, and exploding, killed a poor shop girl, stand-

---

Les Italiens ont rejeté l'invasion du Trentin, et ont enlevé après des efforts magnifiques, les positions inexpugnables de Gorz.

Enfin, la Roumanie s'est rangée du côté de droit.

Belges, vous ne resterez plus longtemps sous le joug de l'envahisseur.

Votre courage, votre dignité, votre fierté indomptable font l'admiration du monde.

Votre vaillante armée vous rejoindra bientôt avec l'aide de nos puissants alliés, elle chassera l'ennemi du sol natal.

Le moment de la déliverance approche.

Vivant les Allies!
Vive la Belgique!
Vive le Roi!

(Translation:)

BELGIANS

The end is near.

Before Verdun, the splendid and heroic resistance of the French army has broken the formidable German offensive.

On the Somme, the French armies are advancing victoriously.

In Volhynia and in Galicia, the Austrian army has been put to flight by the Russian army, and its remnants, supported by the German and Turkish troops, do not succeed in checking the continued advance of our allies.

The Italians have checked the invasion of the Trentino, and have carried, after magnificent efforts, the impregnable positions of Goritz.

And lastly, Roumania has ranged herself on the side of right.

Belgians, you will not remain much longer under the yoke of the invader.

Your courage, your dignity, your indomitable pride, are the admiration of the world.

ing in the doorway of a house where she had just sought shelter in vain.

A few days later an *affiche* was posted announcing that as punishment for the cheers in the Place de Brouckère that evening, and for the signals that, as the *affiche* alleged, had been given, the people of Brussels, during eight days, must all be indoors by eight o'clock. But this was not all; the burgomasters of the communes of the agglomeration of Brussels were convoked by the German authorities and notified that at the next visit of aviators, accompanied by any demonstration on the part of the citizens, the city would be fined thirty million marks.

It was not a fortnight later that aviators came again, in the dawn, and I lay in bed and listened to the distant battle in the air. It is not a pleasant thing to be awakened out of sleep at dawn to hear the dull report of bombs thrown by aviators, even when one knows that they are come in pursuit of the Zeppelins one has heard whirring above one's roof at twilight on its evil westward mission across the channel! . . .

Fifteen houses were demolished in that raid, thirteen persons killed, and twenty-eight wounded by the shells fired by the German anti-aircraft guns. The Belgians were all persuaded that the deaths were not due to accident, but that the German gunners had been instruct-

---

Your valiant army will soon rejoin you and with the aid of our powerful allies, it will chase the enemy from the natal soil.

The moment of deliverance approaches.

Long live the Allies!
Long live Belgium!
Long live the King!

ed to train their guns, and to calculate the time of the explosion of their shells, so that they would fall in the city and work their havoc.

The Germans, in their *affiche*[2] announced, not it seemed without satisfaction, the result of the raid in

---

[2]Avis

Dans la nuit du 6 au 7 de ce mois, il a été constaté que différentes parties du centre de la ville on a donné des signaux lumineux à un aviateur ennemi. En outre, à cette occasion, des manifestations se sont produites dans les rues.

Pour la partie de la ville de Bruxelles située entre le boulevard de l'Entrepôt, le boulevard Barthélémy, le boulevard de Waterloo, le boulevard du Régent, le boulevard Bischoffsheim, le boulevard du Jardin Botanique, le boulevard d'Anvers et le square Sainctelette.

Pour le partie de Molenbeek-Saint-Jean située à l'est de la gare de l'Allée-Verte et pour tout le territoire de la commune de Saint-Josse-ten-Noode, j'ordenne ce qui suit:

1°—Du 12 au 18 de ce mois (ces deux jours y compris), tous les établissements publics servant aux divertissements, tels que les théâtres, cinémas, concerts, etc., tous les restaurants, cafés, magasins, maisons de commerce, devront être fermés à 9 heures du soir. Il ne sera fait exception que pour les restaurants, etc., qui auront obtenu de la Kommandantur la permission de rester ouverts plus longtemps;

2°—De 9 h. 30 du soir à 4 heures du matin, seules pourront circuler dans les rues les personnes qui en auront obtenu la permission écrite d'une autorité allemande.

La dite interdiction n'est pas applicable aux personnes de nationalité allemande et aux ressortissants des pays alliés ou neutres. Ces personnes devront prouver leur nationalité en montrant leurs certificats d'identité.

La dite interdiction n'est pas non plus applicable aux fonctionnaires de la police communale portant leur uniforme, aux employés de tramways et des sociétés de veilleurs de nuit et d'autres entreprises analogues, à la condition qu'ils portent l'uniforme de leurs sociétées et prouvent leur qualité d'employé.

the killed and wounded among the Belgian population, and I was asked to make representations, not only to

---

Les infractions aux prèsentes dispositions seront punies soit d'une amende pouvant atteindre 10,000 marks et d'une peine d'emprisonnement de trois mois au plus, soit d'une de ces deux peines à l'exclusion de l'autre. En outre, en pourra prononcer la fermeture, pour une période de temps plus ou moins longue, des établissements publics servant aux divertissements, des restaurants, cafés et magasins, etc.

Les tribunaux et commandants militaires sont compétents pour juger les dites infractions.

Bruxelles, le 11 septembre, 1916.

DER GOUVERNEUR VON BRÜSSEL UND BRABANT,
HURT, Generalleutnant.

(Translation:)

NOTICE

During the night of the 6-7th of this month it has been established that in different parts of the centre of the city luminous signals were given to an enemy aviator. In addition, on this occasion there were manifestations in the streets.

For that part of the city of Brussels situated between the Boulevard de l'Entrepôt, the Boulevard Barthélémy, the Boulevard de Waterloo, the Boulevard du Régent, the Boulevard Bischoffsheim, the Boulevard du Jardin Botanique, the Boulevard d'Anvers, and the Square Sainctellette;

For that part of Molenbeek-Saint-Jean situated east of the station of "l'Allée-Verte," and for the entire territory of the commune of Saint-Josse-ten-Noode, I order as follows:

1—From the 12th to the 18th of this month inclusive all the public establishments of amusement, such as theatres, cinemas, concerts, etc., all restaurants, cafés, shops, houses of commerce, must be closed at 9 o'clock in the evening. The only exception made will be for those restaurants, etc., which obtain from the Kommandantur permission to remain open for a longer time.

2—From 9.30 in the evening to 4 o'clock in the morning only those persons can be in the streets who have obtained for that purpose the written permission of a German authority.

the Germans, but to the Allies, in an effort to induce them to cease to send aviators over Brussels—a *démarche* which it was clearly not in my province to make.

Not many days passed on which I was not asked to make representations of some kind, and I did so when I could find any valid excuse for venturing where, considering the Germans' manner of receiving suggestions, even angels, unless they belonged to the very highest hierarchy, might have feared to tread. I recall one Saturday afternoon when I had gone to Ravenstein; a man came there to ask me to intercede for a Belgian who was about to be condemned as a spy; when I reached the Orangerie that evening another man came to ask me to help another Belgian; then Madame L—— came, on behalf of her husband, just then condemned to

---

The said interdiction is not applicable to persons of German nationality or citizens of allied or neutral countries. These persons must prove their nationality by showing their certificate of identity.

The said interdiction does not apply either to functionaries of the communal police in uniform, to employees of the tramways and of the societies of nightwatchers and other similar enterprises, on condition that they wear the uniform of their societies or prove their quality of employees.

Infractions to the present order will be punished either by a fine which may be as high as 10,000 marks and imprisonment of no more than three weeks, or one of these penalties to the exclusion of the other. Besides the establishments used for amusement, restaurants, cafés, shops, etc., may be closed for a period more or less long.

The military tribunals and commandants are competent to try the said infractions.

The Governor of Brussels and Brabant,
Hurt, Lieutenant-General.

Brussels, September 11, 1916.

fourteen days' solitary confinement, and to pay a fine of five thousand marks for having in his possession a copy of *La Libre Belgique.*

The same day I was informed that Professor Cattier, one of the leading intelligences of Belgium, had been seized the evening before, just as he got off a tramcar near his home, and was to be sent off at once to Germany as "undesirable." No reason was given for his arrest, no trial was allowed him. He was a lawyer, a professor in the university; he had been once a judge of the International Court at Alexandria. He had taken no part in the political movements in Belgium under the occupation, but had quietly continued to occupy himself with his own affairs. No one could imagine a reason, or even a pretext, for his arrest. It was supposed by the gossips that the deportation was in some way connected with the difficulties which the Banque Nationale was then having with the authorities, but that was due to a confusion of Professor Cattier with M. Cartier, a director of the Banque Nationale, who had just been arrested. I waited several days, and then one morning, a favourable opportunity presenting itself, I made an inquiry about him. He was accused of no military or political offense; the fact was simply as I learned at the Politische Abteilung that at one time before the war, in a difference of opinion he had had with a German, he had written a letter which offended this German, who, just then occupying a post in the Government of occupation, had used his position and the influence it gave him to take this unspeakably mean and cowardly revenge on one who had offended him. Professor Cattier had many friends in Brussels, and they were deeply concerned for him and his fate. He

was taken to Germany, and there was nothing to be done, then or later. But long weeks afterward word came from a prominent German official at Berlin to the effect that if the American Minister were to ask the man who was responsible for this persecution of Professor Cattier, he would relent and have him restored to his home. In order to save myself the possibility of a rebuff I had a man who knew the official sound him in order to see if it were true that he was so disposed, and I learned that far from welcoming such a request from the American Minister he would resent it, and that there was no prospect of rescuing Professor Cattier from the German's wild and implacable resentment.

It was only what might be expected anywhere when there were in force no principles other than that of autocracy, which always works by favour, interest, influence, or terror. Every deed was coloured by the personality of the official concerned in its commission, and this was why the rule in Brussels was not so terrible under some Governors as under others; this was why life was more endurable in the Hainaut, where a man of reason, and even of mildness, was governor. And this fact may explain, too, why the word Hasselt came to possess under the occupation a sinister connotation and a reputation which the quiet little provincial town of Limbourg, on the edge of the desolate Campine, had never done anything to deserve. There sat, almost constantly, in that town, a court martial whose bloody assizes seemed to be without end; to hear that some one had been sent to Hasselt was to shiver with dread and apprehension, for most people who were taken to Hasselt never returned.

There, during the latter part of that month of Sep-

tember, a great court martial was in progress, trying over sixty persons for spying or for treason in time of war; and that meant, in the Legation, women in tears, pleading in a confidence that was pathetic enough to break the heart they naïvely thought to be the only one it was necessary to touch, yet never sufficient to move the heart whose dictates alone could have availed. Before the month was over seventeen had been condemned to death, many of the others to imprisonment at hard labour for life, and most of the remaining to some rigid penalty in those German prisons whose horrid secrets are never revealed, whose pains are never even temporarily mitigated by those revulsions of public sentiment which now and then make for some reform in our own.

A woman came all the way from Luxembourg to ask my aid; her son and her daughter, too, were among the accused in that trial, as were others of her family; besides, she had sons in the Belgian army at the Front. She had had no illusions as to the fate reserved for her boy; it would be death, she felt, and she had not waited for the sentence to be pronounced. Accompanied by a sister and a niece she had set out on what, under the conditions that prevailed in Belgium, was a long pilgrimage to Brussels to plead for her son. At Brussels a lawyer told her that not only her son, but her daughter had been condemned to death and were about to be shot, and the mother collapsed. Thus it was her sister who came, and she and her daughter sat there in their black garb, weeping, begging, pleading, imploring—and I, who would have done so much, quite powerless in the midst of all that welter of woe in which the world had been plunged.

Among those condemned to death in that trial was

the Burgomaster of Namur, M. Gedenvaux. He was fifty years old; he had a wife and five children; he had toiled incessantly, early and late, from the beginning of the war, in the terrible situation in which those times placed the mayor of a Belgian town, with the German authorities on the one side ordering him to adopt one course, and his own population on the other clamouring for him to adopt another. Two persons among the accused had informed the Germans that the Burgomaster had acted as a spy for the Belgian Government; the Burgomaster denied this, but said that on three occasions he had received in his office a courier of the Belgian Government at Havre, and that he had given him reports on the conditions of the city of Namur, not of military value, but merely concerning the *ravitaillement.*

I made an appeal for mercy on behalf of the condemned. The Nonce did the same, and so did Villalobar—not long back from Madrid and San Sebastian, full of the gossip of all the European capitals—and we did what we could, hoping for some good effect of our pleas.

In the meantime Brussels was shaken by another sensation, which came as the *dénouement* of all those difficulties with the Banque Nationale. The Bank Abteilung, which had been so long trying to induce the Banque Nationale to deposit in the Reich Bank at Berlin its accumulation of German paper marks, and had invariably been told that if it wished this money it could have it only at the point of a gun, had at last hit on an expedient that impressed it as gracefully avoiding the crude methods sanctioned by bandits. In August it had written to the bank ordering that the pledges

which all banks in Brussels, in order to continue in business, were required to give the Bank Abteilung, either by the deposit of approved securities or by bonds with the names of Brussels's wealthy men on them, be paid in actual cash in German marks at Berlin. And by a happy coincidence the amount of security required was precisely the amount of German marks in the bank! The bank protested, and after three weeks of discussion and correspondence the Germans threatened to sequestrate and liquidate the Société Générale, another large bank in Brussels, which had no other than the ordinary business relations with the Banque Nationale. The threat that the Société Générale was to be liquidated swelled into a rumour that it had been liquidated, and there were the beginnings of a panic. The directors of the Banque Nationale, not wishing to involve the other institutions, then met with the directors of the Société Générale; the conferences lasted throughout several days, and the directors of the Banque Nationale decided finally that rather than involve another organization, they, under these threats, would cede. The only question was as to how it should be done. There were, as in all groups, two wings, the right and the left, the more conservative urging that inasmuch as they were compelled to yield to superior force a formal refusal was sufficient, the more radical insisting on actual physical resistance so that the Germans would be forced to take violent measures and to march in their soldiers with fixed bayonets. The final decision, I believe, was that the distinction was scarcely worth discussion, and in the end the Germans came accompanied by a dozen armed soldiers and took from the vaults of the Banque Na-

tionale 600,000,000 marks ($120,000,000) and from the Société Générale 200,000,000 marks.

There were those in Brussels who thought that the banks had allowed the marks to accumulate in their vaults because it was not considered good form in Brussels to pay anybody in German money. The German mark, under a decree of von Bissing, circulated at 1.25 francs in Brussels; it was a crime to refuse German money at that rate. If one entered a shop and gave a twenty-franc note, the proprietor in giving the change would say:

"Pardon, Monsieur, est-ce que Monsieur veut bien accepter l'argent allemand? C'est tout ce que j'ai pour le moment."

And as it was not good form to offer it, so it was not good form to refuse it. But the Banque Nationale had been permitted to pay out over its counters the notes that the Société Générale was authorized to issue, the notes that bore the picture of Rubens or of Queen Marie Louise, the Germans having refused to permit the notes to be adorned by the portrait of the reigning monarch, or by the Belgian arms, or by any emblem of Belgian sovereignty, or indeed anything that touched more nearly the patriotic sentiment of the people.

When the complicated financial transaction was finally understood, there was indignation all over Brussels. The effect of the mechanism devised by the Bank Abteilung was to compel Belgium to pay its war contribution twice, first in marks by purchasing the provincial bonds, then in Belgian bank-notes which they were compelled to substitute for the marks or deposit those marks which the Bank Nationale was not allowed to use, and which were "transferred" as the euphemism of the Bank Ab-

teilung would have it, to the Reichsbank at Berlin. Men of affairs could scarcely discuss the spoliation calmly. The Bank Abteilung, I believe, had a theory which justified it in seizing this money; [3] it was designed to reduce the cover of the Reichsbank at Berlin, and the Germans

[3] Bruxelles, 15 septembre, 1916.

Quoique les Alliés poursuivent impitoyablement contre l'Allemagne une guerre économique contraire à tous les principes du droit international, sur le terrain des affaires, l'Empire allemand ne traite pas la Belgique en ennemie; il n'a jamais été question de défendre d'effectuer des payements à la Begique et dès les premiers jours de l'année 1915, on a levé le séquestre pesant sur l'actif des banques belges en Allemagne, actif s'élevant à plus de 200 millions de francs. Les contributions de guerre imposées à la Belgique ont été si mesurées jusqu'ici, que le pays peut facilement les produire, sans nuire à sa vie économique; d'autre part, les dépenses des troupes allemandes dépassent sensiblement la contribution de guerre à fournir par la population belge. L'argent allemand coule largement dans le pays et a permis de rétablir normalement la circulation des valeurs. Les avantages de cette politique économique ont largement profité à la Belgique.

On ne pouvait cependant, à la longue, laisser à la Reichsbank la charge d'assurer la circulation fiduciaire en Belgique. C'est pour cette raison qu'a fin 1914 la Société Générale obtint le privilège d'émission jadis conféré à la Banque Nationale, pour la raison que cette dernière ayant transféré à Londres à peu près tout son actif, y compris son encaisse d'or et de métal, n'était plus en état de fonctionner comme Banque d'Emission. La Société Générale de Belgique fut autorisée, sur la base de ses statuts, à émettre des billets jusqu'à concurrence de trois fois la valeur de son avoir: en or—barres ou monnaies—en monnaies de métal coursables en Belgique, en billets de la Reichsbank allemande, en billets des caisses d'Etat et des caisses de prêts allemandes, aussi bien qu'en crédits sur les banques étrangères.

Il se produisit peu à peu d'extraordinaires disponibilités en Belgique, de telle façon que des quantités considérables d'argent allemand et principalement de billets de la Reichsbank, superflues dans

referred to it as a loan and offered to pay interest on it, but the interest was indignantly refused.

---

la circulation, s'amassèrent dans les caisses du Département d'émission de la Société Générale et de la Banque Nationale de Belgique. Pour faciliter aux banques l'utilisation des billets allemands qu'elles recevaient, l'on avait introduit dans les statuts du département d'émission de la Société Générale une clause disant que l'avoir à l'étranger et par conséquent dans les banques allemandes également, pourrait servir, tout comme les billets de la Reichsbank eux-mêmes, à couvrir les émissions de billets belges jusqu'à concurrence de trois fois leur valeur. L'intérêt financier bien entendu de la Banque Nationale et du Département d'émission de la Société Générale semblait leur commander d'employer leur encaisse, toujours plus considérable, de billets allemands et de billets de caisses, à se créer des crédits sur les banques allemandes.

On ne saurait trop dire quelles ont bien pu être les raisons qui ont déterminé les chefs des deux Banques à ne pas faire usage de cette possibilité.

Ce qui est certain, c'est que l'intérêt de la Reichsbank ne permettait d'aucune façon que pour des centaines de millions de billets s'entassent dans ces deux établissements d'émission. C'était amener une élévation du chiffre de la circulation de la Reichsbank, qu'aucune raison économique ne justifiait. C'est pour cette raison que l'administration allemande en Belgique a demandé que les encaisses de ces banques, en billets de la Reichsbank et en billets de caisses allemandes, inutiles à la circulation, soient employés à la création de crédits sur les Banques allemandes. Les conseils généraux des deux banques belges ont décidé de se rendre à cette demande. Ils ont pris cette décision pour le motif qu'elle ne heurte en rien les intérêts de leurs établissements, tandis qu'un refus de satisfaire au désir de l'administration allemande eut montré clairement que la gestion des deux banques était de nature à porter préjudice aux intérêts nationaux de l'Empire allemand, ce qui eut infailliblement amené la mise sous séquestre des deux banques.

Il est regrettable qu'il se rencontre en Belgique des gens qui n'hésitent pas à répandre à ce sujet des bruits mensongers, ne

It may be that terminology can change the quality of a deed and make it something less or something more

reposant sur rien et qui sont de nature à nuire aux intérêts de leur propre pays.

Il est inutile d'insister sur ces mensonges, qui ont naturellement été accueillis par la Presse favorable à l'Entente. Ce qui doit être dit expressément, c'est que d'aucune façon il n'a été question d'une main mise sur l'argent ou sur les valeurs, c'est qu'en second lieu l'arrestation des sieurs Carlier et Cattier, à qui dans certains milieux on voudrait décerner l'auréole du martyre, n'a aucune espèce de rapport avec toute cette affaire.

(Translation:)

Brussels, September 15, 1916.

While the Allies pursue pitilessly against Germany an economic war contrary to all the principles of international law, in the world of affairs the German Empire does not treat Belgium as an enemy. There has never been any idea of prohibiting payments to Belgium, and since the first days of the year 1915 the sequestration placed on the assets of Belgian banks in Germany has been lifted, assets amounting to more than two hundred millions of francs. The contributions of war imposed on Belgium have thus far been so moderate that the country could easily produce them without harming its economic life; besides, the expenditure of the German troops exceeds sensibly the contribution of war the Belgian population has to furnish. German money flows largely in the country, and has permitted the re-establishment of the normal circulation of values. Belgium has greatly profited by the advantages of this economic policy.

However, it is impossible in the end to leave to the Reichsbank the burden of assuring the note-circulation in Belgium. It is for this reason that at the end of 1914 the Société Générale obtained the privilege of emission theretofore conferred on the Banque Nationale, for the reason that the latter having transferred to London nearly all of its assets, including its gold and metal, was no longer able to function as a bank of emission. The Société Générale de Belgique was authorized, on the basis of its statutes, to issue bills to the extent of three times the value of its possessions

than it is. I do not know. I used to know a man years ago, of whom I drew a picture as accurately as I could

---

in gold—either in bars or money—in money that was legally current in Belgium, in bills of the German Reichsbank, in bills of the State Treasury or the Treasury of German Loans, as well as in credits on foreign banks.

Little by little there were thus produced amounts of money in Belgium to such an extent that considerable quantity of German money, and principally bills of the Reichsbank, superfluous in the circulation, were piled up in the safes of the Department of Emission of the Société Générale and of the Banque Nationale de Belgique. In order to aid the banks to use the German bills that they received, there was introduced in the statute of the Department of Emission of the Société Générale a clause saying that their foreign credits, and consequently those as well in German banks, could serve, like the bank-bills of the Reichsbank themselves, to cover the emissions of Belgian bills to the extent of three times their value. The well-understood financial interest of the Banque Nationale and of the Department of Emission of the Société Générale seemed to require them to use their own funds of German bills and bank-notes, increasing all the time, in the creation of credits in German banks.

It is impossible to say what could have been the reasons which determined the heads of the two banks not to make use of such a possibility.

What is certain is that it is the interest of the Reichsbank not to permit by any way hundreds of millions of bank-notes to pile up in the Departments of Emission. Such a course would elevate the circulation of the Reichsbank, which no economical reason would justify. For this reason the German administration in Belgium has demanded that the funds of these banks in Reichsbank bills and in German bank-notes useless in circulation shall be employed to create credits in German banks. The directors of the two Belgian banks have decided to accede to this request. They have reached this decision because it will nowise injure the situation of their establishments, while the refusal to satisfy the desire of the German administration would have shown clearly that the direction of

in the character of the yeggman Curley, in "The Turn of the Balance." Curley had a theory, too; he expounded it to me many times, sometimes in his cell during those long hours in which I used to talk to him that time I defended him for murder. He would have scorned to pick a pocket, even if he could have done so; he would not steal from the poor, he would not commit burglary, because he held that it was unfair to frighten people out of their sleep at night, and anyhow, that was not in his line. He would not harm women or children, and if a farmer had given him a meal at his home that farmer and all that he had was sacred in his sight and he would protect him from other thieves. (He always referred to himself baldly as a thief.) But he held that, for him at least—he would not impose his morals on others—it was justifiable to rob post offices, the Standard Oil Company, railroads, and banks.

I often thought in those days of Curley, and of the Singer, and of Old Sam, and others of his pals. I used to see their forms behind those bars and wonder why they could not have thought of organizing a Bank

---

the two banks was in the nature to injure the interests of the German Empire, which would instantly have brought about the sequestration of the two banks.

It is to be regretted that it should be found in Belgium persons that should not hesitate to spread on this subject lying rumours which repose on nothing and which are of the nature to injure the interest of their own country.

It is useless to insist on these lies, which are naturally being welcomed by the Press devoted to the Entente. What should be expressly said is that in no way has there been a question of seizing money or values, and, in the second place, that the arrest of Messrs. Carlier and Cattier, to whom in certain circles the aureola of martyrs has been given, has nothing whatever to do with this affair.

Abteilung. But, no, they could not have done that either; lawless as they were, and abandoned, there were certain laws they would not break; the laws of hospitality, for instance.

XXXV

"BELGIUM WILL LEARN WHAT WAR IS"

THERE was endless and horrid fascination in the sound of the guns that never boomed so loudly as in that month of September; people were discussing it all the time and bringing forth remarkable theories to explain why they were heard so much more clearly on some days than on others, so much more loudly in some places than in others. There were scientific explanations by the wise, in which they talked of curves of reverberation, and such things. All I knew was that sometimes at night at the Orangerie they sounded as though they were at the very gates of Brussels, and yet, alas! they were never any nearer. The aspect of the city underwent another striking change in the middle of that month. I must have spoken somewhere in these pages of the sudden revival of the old fashion of bicycle-riding in Brussels. The Germans had taken all the horses except those used for drawing the wagons of the breweries and finally they took those too, and that autumn the heavy *camions* were trundled through the streets by yokes of oxen. There were no motors except those of the Germans, of the C.N., the C.R.B. and the diplomats. People had taken to riding bicycles as a means of transport, and the boulevards and the Avenue Louise swarmed with them, two long streams coming and going. They wobbled about, so that it was an agony to

ride in a motor; indeed it was almost always something like that in Belgium, where there have never been any traffic rules, and where the communal spirit of independence is so strong, and the love of personal liberty so intense, that every self-respecting Belgian makes it a point of honour not to get out of the way if he happens to be standing in the middle of the road; he would almost prefer to be run down rather than to feel that he had been weak enough to yield.

There were few bicycles in Brussels at the beginning of the war, and German agents did a large business immediately thereafter in selling them, and then, as the Belgians insisted, simply because the Germans had sold all their bicycles, there was a new *affiche* revoking the permission to ride them, and commanding the people to turn in their rubber tyres. Then, another opportunity for *les zwanzeurs*—long lines of bicycles rolling recklessly on the naked fellies of their wheels, the riders, with their rubber tyres *en bandoulière* across their shoulders, on their way to give them up. And the next day the streets were all deserted from curb to curb.

Another change that had something of the sadness there is in all change befell that month in Brussels, though it was due only indirectly to the Germans. There were all over Brussels many *pâtisseries.* Brussels is equally famous with Paris for those dainty confections of the pastry cook's art—the *Madeleines,* the *petits fours, babas au rhum, tartelettes aux fruits, cornets à la crème*—what delights! And then those delicate and delicious buns, or muffins, or scones, *la brioche!* We were taught in school that Marie Antoinette, when told that the people had no bread, said: "Well, let them eat cake," and the remark, as quoted, has done her memory

much evil. As a matter of fact, however, she said no such thing; what she said was:

"Qu'ils mangent de la brioche." It makes all the difference in the world. . . .

But it all took flour, though pastry as light as that they made in Brussels could have taken very little flour, and the officials of the C.R.B. doomed the institution to extinction. It was a little tragedy in its way, only understood by those who knew what a part the *pâtisseries* played in Brussels life; they were hallowed by custom, they had almost the dignity of a constitutional institution. To doom their abolition was as though some one should decree the sudden suppression of baked beans in Boston, or of beaten biscuits in Virginia, or of tea and toasted muffins in England. The *pâtisserie* occupied in the affections of Brussels a place like that which the soda-water fountain holds in those of our own people. They were crowded every afternoon. Whole families repaired to them at tea-time to taste the delicious cakes, though instead of tea most of them drank coffee or chocolate. There the people would sit around the little tables, as at some genial social centre; it was a common meeting place for reunion, gossip and the day's gazette. The date of their last baking was a notable one, September 27, 1916. The patrons were as sad as the proprietors, but the *pâtisseries* had to go because flour was too precious, and the proprietors of the *pâtisseries,* instead of giving up, began making a sort of flour out of almonds and out of rice, and inventing new kinds of cakes.

There came to me one morning, when Baron von der Lancken sent me a formal note, an echo of an old tragedy in this world. He wrote to ask me to consent to the

exemption from the latest restrictions of the *ravitaillement* of the household of Charlotte, former Empress of Mexico, who lived on and on under the lengthening shadow of one of the imperial adventures of the third Napoleon. The Empress could not eat the grey bread, could she have white? I had already been appealed to in the matter of the provisioning of the estate, and I consented, of course, and we arranged the matter so that she might retain for the use of herself and her household the native produce of her restricted domain about the gloomy château at Meysse.

It was the one problem of the *ravitaillement* easily settled, and the problems seemed to be increasing each day. It was always the same—the impossibility to secure a reasonable compliance with the guarantees concerning native produce. The exceptions that we had admitted were being used by the *militaires* to justify every kind of infraction; cattle were being lifted and driven off across the border; butter was being seized—even from the farm of M. Solvay, the President of the Comité National. It was growing more and more difficult to exercise control; if the C.R.B. delegates reported that the soldiers were taking food, the *militaires* darkly hinted at spying; it was not permitted to make observations as to the conduct of soldiers. The Germans, too, and apparently with deliberation, tried to exasperate the C.N., to induce its members to do something of which complaint could be made; poor Kellogg was well nigh worn out. His secluded existence in the academic grove had not developed for him that protective colouration which long years of dealing with human nature in the ugly form it so often assumes in politics, provide—sometimes. . . .

It was indeed an impossibility that we had undertaken to carry out, a miracle we had impiously tried to perform. We could control the imported food because it remained in the hands of the Belgian or American organizations; but the native food the soldiers would take that where they found it, and when they went home to Germany they filled their valises with it. And the *zentralen*—there was no human way of circumventing them, and in despair we decided to ask for representation on those vicious contrivances for evil.

What made it all the more difficult was that the Germans were in bad temper as the result of the battle on the Somme and the advance of the British troops, whose distant unceasing drum-fire we could always hear. The Germans, indeed, were discouraged with the situation of their armies; never before, in fact, had they considered themselves so nearly beaten, probably never before were they so nearly beaten. Von Hindenburg, it was said, had been in Belgium and had criticized von Bissing, characterizing his reign as too lenient, urging new rigours—the city should be closed at six o'clock in the evening, all citizens of countries at war with Germany should be placed in detention camps, and, worst of all, there was the first suggestion of that monstrous cruelty, the deportation as slaves of Belgian workmen. There was a quarrel between the two, and von Bissing had hurried off to Berlin to protest against Hindenburg's interference. It was at the moment when the military party in Germany was getting the upper hand; von Tirpitz was clamouring, the reopening of the submarine war was being urged; von Bethmann was tottering to his fall; his speech in the Reichstag, warlike as it was, did not satisfy the mad warriors into whose hands

Germany was more and more confiding her destinies.

"Now Belgium will learn what war is," said one of the officers at headquarters, with what seemed almost like a personal satisfaction in the prospect.

We felt the reaction of all this ugly feeling in the meetings at which its effects were discussed, whether in the American Legation or in the Spanish Legation, where Villalobar received us with such ceremony there in the upper *salon* hung with the paintings of Goya, each of us with a little table to write on, at five o'clock his men serving tea and chocolate, and passing around cigarettes. The feeling gave a somewhat more sombre atmosphere to the reunions of the Comité National, and was adumbrated more and more in the serious faces of the members. But most of all it was apparent in the meetings we had with the Germans.

Discussion with the Germans was apt to be difficult because of the wide difference between our fundamental point of view; it seems to be almost constitutionally impossible for them to realize that there can be any other point of view than their own, and the methods they use in war they use sometimes in diplomacy. I can not say that it was a definite and studied policy to attempt to frighten the opposite party, and thus make him more amenable, reduce him to a frame of mind in which he would be more easily affected and impressed, but they generally opened all discussions by attempts to create terror and alarm, predicting all sorts of dreadful things, horrors and catastrophes, a kind of preliminary shelling of the trenches. At each new meeting we were met by statements to the effect that the Comité National would have to be abolished, that the *ravitaillement* would have to end, that the men in the C. R. B. would have to be

replaced by others, that perhaps all the diplomatic privileges would be suspended, etc. There were painful scenes, black looks, shouting, gesticulating, threats to pull down the whole work of the *ravitaillement,* and let the Belgians starve. And all to be gone through with every time before the discussion could be undertaken.

When October came the Germans turned back their clocks an hour to announce that summer time had been changed to the old time, and thus set their clocks with the Belgian clocks; but the Belgians turned their clocks back an hour—they would not have *l'heure boche.*

The resistance was firm, even if the spirits of Brussels were low. The hopes of a retreat had gone the way of so many other hopes; the winter was coming on, and there was in the very atmosphere of those rainy days of early autumn, not only the looming prospect of another dark and desperate winter, but some sinister, unnamed dread, summed up for me one day when M. Francqui said to me:

"Les choses se gâtent."

"Les choses se gâtent!" I can see the dark face, full of sorrow, full of pain; the world was looking dark those early October days. The low grey skies, like those of the old Dutch masters, the leaves falling in damp masses, the cold wind blowing in from the sea, gave a melancholy tone to nature that accorded well with the sadness in the heart of men. The conditions of life were more and more difficult; prices of necessities had increased to extravagant proportions. But more than all else there was some presentiment in the air, the portent of some vague, unknown and monstrous catastrophe. German submarines had appeared in American waters; the controversy begun by the blowing up of the

Lusitania would not down. The younger officers at the Politische Abteilung mentioning the U-53, could not restrain the enthusiasm that they invariably displayed in any new form of frightfulness.[1]

What was more serious, the delegates of the C.R.B. were reporting wholesale purchases, requisition and ex-

[1] Comparative Table of Prices of Staple Food Articles in Brussels (Autumn, 1916)

		Price before the war	Price, autumn, 1916	Increase Percentage
Flour	kilo	Frc. 0.20	Frc. 2.25	1025
Sugar	"	" 0.60	" 4.00	566
Coffee	"	" 3.00	" 11.00	266
Chickory	"	" 0.50	" 2.50	400
Bread	"	" 0.28	" 0.60	114
Beef, veal, mutton	"	" 2.60	" 7.00	169
Fresh pork	"	" 2.60	" 9.00	246
Salted pork	"	" 2.30	" 10.00	334
Cooked ham	"	" 3.50	" 15.00	328
Suet, etc.	"	" 2.00	" 8.00	300
Lard	"	" 2.50	" 11.00	340
Butter	"	" 3.75	" 12.50	233
Cheese	"	" 1.30	" 6.50	400
Milk	litre	" 0.22	" 0.50	127
Cream	"	" 2.00	" 7.00	250
Rice	kilo	" 1.20	" 4.00	233
Macaroni, noodles	"	" 0.95	" 4.00	421
Dried vegetables	"	" 0.95	" 4.00	421
Chocolates, cocoa	"	" 3.50	" 12.00	242
Olive oil	litre	" 3.00	" 25.00	733
Black soap	kilo	" 0.40	" 12.50	3025
"Sunlight" soap, 4 pieces		" 0.40	" 6.50	1525
Sal soda	kilo	" 0.60	" 0.55	1200
Seed oil	litre	" 1.50	" 17.50	1066

The price of cauliflower, carrots and turnips had increased ..... 300 per cent.
That of ordinary fruits had increased ..... 300 " "

portation of native products. Our agreement of April was being violated more and more. We had sufficient evidence on which to base the statement that there was a systematic attempt to help supply the needs of the military authorities in the occupied territory and the needs of the civil population in Germany. German troops in the commune of Néchin had ordered the Burgomaster to furnish before evening of a certain day 50,000 kilos of potatoes, and to load them on to the railway wagons, and it required the labours of the whole population to comply with the order. In the provinces of Brabant and Liége goats and sheep were being purchased for exportation to Germany or to the front. There was a lively market of speculators in food at Welkenraedt, on the German border. It seemed as though the whole work was about to break down under the difficulties that accumulated. We had made new and vigorous protests, asking for a more rigorous control and for representation on the *zentralen,* and in order to give additional force to those representations we had asked an interview with the Governor-General.

When he received us in the Ministry of Arts and Sciences that we might present our protest to him in person, Villalobar, van Vollenhoven and I, von Bissing was looking depressed and ill; he seemed older, and showed the haggard marks of care; I wondered if the quarrel with Hindenburg had had anything to do with this unaccustomed air, less vigorous than we were used to in him. Prussian soldier though he was, he was not always for Prussian methods; he had some conception of milder means, and he had often resisted the military element. But Hindenburg had risen to the position almost of dictator; the military were in the saddle and were

riding rough shod over all civilian scruples—and Bissing's power was waning.

When I asked if he were in good health he put his wrinkled hand wearily to his head, and said:

"No, the climate here does not agree with me."

Villalobar gave me the glance the remark must infallibly provoke. The old soldier had been shooting in the Ardennes, and bagged three deer and some wild boar; game was plentiful just then in those old forests where the animals had taken refuge from the dangers of those fields where men were hunting each other in the north of France. He wore no decorations as he stood there that day in the *salon,* in an almost shabby uniform, before a portrait of King Albert.

There was at times something very human about the old man. Catch him in the right mood, and one could obtain anything, if it was in the nature of a personal favour, from him. I had been greatly worried over some young American scapegraces who, dining, and perhaps indulging too liberally in a restaurant one evening, had mocked some German officers by caricaturing their manner of bowing, saluting, eating and drinking. The officers had had the young men arrested, and they were in a much more serious predicament than they realized. I had made numerous *démarches* in their favour, but had been unable to secure the dismissal of the charges against them; the military faction was for pursuing them. I had used all the arguments I could think of, but to no avail. I had even got Villalobar to speak a word in their favour, and he had written me a note in which he had said, in the tolerance he had for all human weakness, "It was only youth," and he had added a pensive and envious, "Alas!" That day, then,

when we had presented and discussed our protest, I lingered and asked the Governor-General to let off my American boys, and to give them passes to Holland. He had heard of the incident, and was not at first disposed to be lenient; the sacred uniform was involved. I argued with him, and finally, by a lucky stroke of psychology, I said bluntly:

"But they were drunk."

"Oh!" he cried, as if a sudden flood of light had been shed on the dark complication, "they were drunk, were they? Then I'll let them go. Don't worry any more about them."

He gave orders there and then to Lancken, and the boys were released immediately, and I adjured them never to minimize the reports of their state on that evening of their dinner until they were safe across the Holland border.

The second trial of Dr. Bull was coming on; we had just learned that he was accused of complicity in the complot which had cost Miss Cavell her life, charged with having given her a thousand francs to aid British soldiers. I obtained permission for Mr. Ruddock to attend the trial, and for two days he sat in the Senate chamber and looked on while a court martial decided the fate of sixteen persons accused of having conspired with Miss Cavell to aid young men in crossing the frontier. They had been betrayed by a letter written by one of the group. Dr. Bull did not make in this trial the favourable impression that he had made in the other; he enraged his judges by saying that he had given money to Englishmen because, as he said, since the Germans shot their English prisoners he could thereby save the lives of his countrymen. To our in-

tense relief, however, the prosecutor asked, not for the death penalty, as we had feared he would, but for six years' imprisonment. This penalty was imposed then, and we were once more relieved; and then a few days later we heard that Dr. Bull was implicated in another matter. Mr. Ruddock went to St.-Gilles Prison and saw the doctor, and while the presence of German sentinels discouraged conversation the old gentleman found a way of giving a gruesome suggestion of the plight in which he found himself by raising his hand to the position assumed by one who aims a gun; he dropped his head over the imagined stock, shut his left eye and gave a too realistic "Tschk!" with his tongue as he pulled the imagined trigger. Having thus dramatized the fate he anticipated, he was taken away the next morning to Hasselt, the very sound of which connoted tragedy. . . .

And Vernon Kellogg was going away. I have been rich in friendships in my life and have been shown a great deal of kindness by those who generously, in my case, have taken the will for the deed and the promise for the performance. I had formed many friendships in Brussels, I could feel as though surrounded with affection and regard, and

> I count myself in nothing else so happy
> As in a soul remembering my good friends.

But there was something in Vernon Kellogg, which I shall not limit by any attempt at definition, that made me like him, so that I was peculiarly sad at his going. The University of Stanford, an unwritten book, or something was calling him. It had been such a comfort to have him there; he got on well with every-

body, with the Belgians, with the Germans, with all the others, this slender man with the smiling, humourous countenance, this gentleman and scholar.

Already I was lonesome in his going. The seventeenth of October was a day of a dull sky that grew very dark as the afternoon wore on. The laggard guns sounded louder than ever, as if to show that while they could not advance, they could make more noise, reiterate their one and only argument in a deeper, heavier voice. Kellogg and I were playing truant; we had agreed to meet at Ravenstein to lunch alone and talk about the things of a world that once had been, of a world we sometimes feared could never be again. He came driving up to the terrace, and the smile he usually wore was gone from his pleasant countenance; in its place was the adumbration of evil tidings. And then he told me:

In Flanders the Germans had forcibly seized between twelve and fourteen hundred working men and carried them off to Germany to toil in the mines.

I remembered then the speech of Hellfrisch in the Reichstag a few days before, in which he had declared that the time had come when the empire must force the men in the occupied territories to work. And I recalled the repeated conferences with reference to the *chômeurs,* that incessant preoccupation of the Germans, a subject to which they had returned again and again with the nagging persistence that characterized them; once they had an idea in their head there was no way of dislodging it.

I was hardly surprised; not that I expected precisely this, but the Germans had tried every other means they could think of to compel the *chômeurs* to

work, and as they put all their trust in force they were not patient in argument or discussion—a waste of time, they felt, if one has the power to take what one wants.

And I recalled Hindenburg's quarrel with Bissing; the new policy was coincidental with the coming of Hindenburg to the Western Front; it was the work of *Messieurs les militaires* and they gloried in it openly, the first-fruits of the policy which was to teach Belgium, "what war is," as the threat had been at the time of Hindenburg's visit. The policy had not as yet been applied to the *occupationsgebiet;* von Bissing was said to be opposed to it, and von der Lancken had gone to Berlin to induce the Government, if possible, not to apply such measures to their jurisdiction.

At our bi-weekly meeting the next afternoon we talked of little else than the deportations, to employ the euphemism by which the slave-drive became known. Dr. Kellogg by that time had details, based on the reports of the delegates of the C.R.B., who had just come into Brussels for their weekly meeting. Demands to work for the German army were being made on unemployed, and even on employed men, not only in the Belgian *etappen* but in the territory of the General Government itself, as in Luxembourg and in the Hainaut. In Luxembourg the Germans had issued orders that certain public works undertaken by the Belgian Provincial and Communal authorities, in order to provide work for the unemployed, be discontinued, and further orders were given to the effect that the men thus thrown out of work were not to be employed by private persons. The men had then been invited by the German military authorities to work for them, and when they refused they had been seized by force. Men

had been taken thus at Liége, Dinant and Verviers. Thus, despite the Governor-General and before Lancken could get to Berlin, the policy was already in vogue in the *occupationsgebiet.*

In Tournai demands to work for the military authorities had been made on large numbers of men, who, when they refused, had been interned in prison camps and put on bread and water. The relief organization had been ordered to issue bread to them, but bread only; it was not allowed to provide any other part of the regular ration, such as bacon, lard, rice, peas and beans. Besides, numerous demands were made by the military authorities on the local committees of the relief organization for lists of *chômeurs,* the expressed intention being to use these lists as a means of determining what men should be impressed for labour in the service of the German army; and local civil authorities who had refused to give these lists had already been arrested and deported to Germany. These acts constituted an infraction of the undertaking with regard to the forcing of labour, not only the undertaking in The Hague conventions—no one ever thought of citing them any more—but of the undertaking in regard to the *ravitaillement.* If the Comité National and the Commission for Relief in Belgium should accept this situation without protest they would be acquiescing in an indirect infraction of the agreement between the Governor-General and the Protecting Ministers, and, by the limitation of the food ration, would even be a party to the punishment of these Belgian men.

This then was the *dénouement,* the end of all those efforts put forth by the Germans and so often frustrated, to inquire into the charity distributed by the

Comité National, and to obtain the lists of those to whom it was given—the *chômeurs.*

It was not difficult to imagine the effect of such proceedings on the *ravitaillement;* the next courier from England would bring a demand that either the deportations or the *ravitaillement* cease. And then? It was a sober and discouraged group that met that afternoon, but we could do no more just then than to await von der Lancken's return from Berlin in the hope, not very strong, that he would bring some sort of good news, and in the more likely event that the news was bad, to prepare to protest.

The press-gang was not a new institution in the zone of operations. It had been at work, in principle, as early as June 1915, in Lille, in Roubaix and in Tourcoing, where the civilians had been forced to make sacks for use in the trenches. The correspondence between the Mayor of Lille and the German commander had been given to me, and nothing could place in opposition more strikingly the two mentalities involved in conflict.[2]

---

[2] Lille, le 18 juin, 1915.

EXTRAIT DU RAPPORT DE LA SECTION DE TRANSPORT DU 16 Avril, 1915

N° 1142 AU GOUVERNEMENT.

Jusqu'à présent la fabrication de sacs à sable se faisait sans empêchement depuis des mois, il y a environ 4 semaines que pour la première fois se montraient dans la population des efforts de retenir les ouvriers et ouvrières qui sont employés dans la maison Couzineau par des menaces. Elles n'eurent tout d'abord aucun résultat, même quelques autres fabriques s'étaient déterminées à travailler, de sorte que ces derniers temps, environ 230,000 sacs avaient été confectionnés journellement.

L'agitation paraît cependant avoir continué et a amené 5 fabriques

More than a hundred men, mayors and leading manufacturers of that industrial centre of the north of France had been arrested and sent to Germany for having refused to aid the Germans in their press; I knew of a

---

sur 7 qui se trouvaient en activité à arrêter le travail faute de main d'oeuvre.

Comme on paie pour la fabrication d'un sac 7 centimes de salaire la dépense pour les 3 millions 800,000 sacs encore à livrer se monterait à 266,000 frs. qui devraient être payés par la Ville de Lille, si elle ne réussissait pas à déterminer les ouvriers à reprendre le travail.

(Signé) STALM.
Pour copie conforme,
(Signé) SODING, Capitaine.

(Translation:)

Lille, June 18, 1915.

EXTRACT OF THE REPORT OF THE TRANSPORTATION SECTION OF APRIL 16, 1915.

No. 1142 TO THE GOVERNMENT.

Up to the present time the manufacture of sandbags has been carried out without difficulty for several months; but about four weeks ago, for the first time, efforts were observed in the population to restrain the working men and working women who are employed in the Couzineau factory by menaces. These efforts at first had no result; even several other factories decided to work, so that lately nearly 230,000 sacks have been made daily.

However, the agitation appears to have continued, and to have induced five factories out of seven which still were in activity to stop work because of the lack of working men.

As seven centimes are paid for the fabrication of each sack, the expenditure for the 3,800,000 sacks still to be delivered would amount to 266,000 francs, which must be paid by the city of Lille if it does not succeed in inducing the workers to resume their labour.

(Signed) STALM.
A certified copy,
(Signed) SODING, Captain.

retired manufacturer, who had had a factory at Roubaix, who was locked up in a bathroom for twelve days

---

Gouvernement Lille

J. No. 14790. Lille, le 18 juin, 1915.

Copie a Retourner

Au Mairie de Lille.

Il est déclaré au Maire ce qui suit:

(a) Le Maire doit user de toute son influence pour déterminer les gens à reprendre le travail.

Pour garantir les ouvriers contre les désagréments après conclusion de la paix, le gouvernement est prêt à leur délivrer un certificat constatant qu'ils ont été forcés au travail.

(b) Pour le cas où le 22 juin, le travail n'était pas repris, la confection des sacs à sable sera donnée à la Ville.

(c) Si même ceci n'atteignait pas le but, les toiles réquisitionnées seront envoyées en Allemagne y seront travaillées et réexpédiées ici aux frais de la ville.

Je me réserve en outre d'imposer à la Ville une contribution en amende.

(d) Il será procédé sévèrement contre les instigateurs.

(*Signé*) Von Heinrich.

Pour copie conforme,

(*Signé*) Soding, Capitaine.

(Translation:)

Government of Lille,

J. No. 14790 Lille, June 18, 1915.

Copy to be returned

To the Mayor of Lille

The Mayor will take notice of that which follows:

(*a*) The Mayor will use his influence to induce people to resume work.

In order to guarantee the workers against difficulties after the conclusion of peace, the Government is willing to deliver to them a certificate stating that they have been forced to work.

(*b*) In case that work is not resumed by June 22, the work of making the sacks will be given to the city.

—he was ill at the time—simply because he refused to use his "moral influence" to compel his former employees to work.

(*c*) If this does not attain its end, the linens requisitioned will be sent to Germany to be made there and returned here at the expense of the city.

Besides, I have the right to impose on the city a contribution as a fine.

(*d*) The instigators will be dealt with severely.

(*Signed*) Von Heinrich.

A certified copy,

(*Signed*) Soding, Captain.

Lille, le 19 juin, 1915.

Le Maire de Lille

à Monsieur le Governeur de Lille

Monsieur le Gouverneur:

M. le Général de Graevenitz m'a transmis hier soir la copie de votre lettre relative aux ouvriers qui confectionnent les sacs à sable pour les tranchées.

Vous me dites qu'une certaine agitation dont l'écho n'est même pas venu jusqu'à moi, règne à ce sujet dans la population ouvrière, et tend à paralyser le travail.

Vous me demandez en conséquence, "d'user de toute mon influence pour déterminer les gens à reprendre le travail."

Je regrette devoir vous faire respectueusement remarquer qu'il m'est impossible d'entrer dans vos désirs.

Obliger un ouvrier ou un patron à travailler est absolument contraire à mon droit; lui conseiller de travailler, absolument contraire à mon devoir, que me dicte impérieusement l'art. 52 de la Convention de la Haye.

Vous avez reconnu vous-même la justesse de mes observations lorsqu'il s'est agi, au début de l'occupation, de trouver des ouvriers pour les tranchées et vous n'avez pas insisté pour que je m'y entremette. Ce sont les mêmes raisons que j'invoque aujourd'hui.

Quant à la solution que vous proposez de donner à la ville elle-même le soin de confectionner les sacs, elle ne peut même pas

Thus, first in the *operationsgebiet,* then spreading to the *etappengebiet* and now in the *occupationsgebiet* it

---

être envisagée, car mon devoir de Maire français me l'interdit plus formellement encore.

Quelque risque personnel que je puisse encourir, je regrette donc ne pouvoir vous donner satisfaction.

Vous êtes soldat, Excellence, vous placez trop haut le sentiment du devoir pour vouloir exiger que je trahisse le mien. Si j'agissais autrement, vous n'auriez pour moi au fond de vous-même que du mépris.

Veuillez agréer, Excellence, mes civilités.

LE MAIRE DE LILLE,
Ch. Delesalle.

(Translation:)

Lille, June 19, 1915.

THE MAYOR OF LILLE TO THE GOVERNOR OF LILLE

Mr. Governor,—General de Graevenitz has transmitted me yesterday evening the copy of your letter relating to the workers who are making sandbags for the trenches.

You say to me that a certain agitation of which the echo even has not reached me, exists among the population and has a tendency to paralyze work.

You ask me in consequence to use all my influence in order to induce the people to resume work.

I regret to be compelled to respectfully ask you to note that it is impossible for me to meet your desire.

To oblige a workman or an employer to work is absolutely contrary to my right; to counsel him to work is absolutely contrary to my duty, which is imperiously dictated to me by article 52 of the Hague Convention.

You have recognized yourself the justness of my observation when, at the beginning of the occupation, it was a question of finding workmen for the trenches, and you did not insist that I interfere in that. I invoke the same reasons to-day.

As to the solution which you propose, that is to impose on the city itself the task of making the sacks, that cannot even be con-

began—this kidnapping, this shanghaing, this crimping, this slaving, in those remote and obscure hamlets which

---

sidered because my duty as a French mayor forbids me still more formally to do it.

Whatever personal risk I may run, I regret, then, not to be able to give you satisfaction.

You are a soldier, Excellency; you place too high the sentiment of duty, to wish to compel me to betray my own. If I did otherwise, you will have for me in your heart only contempt.

I pray you to accept, Excellency, my compliments.

THE MAYOR OF LILLE,
CH. DELESALLE.

KOMMANDANTUR LILLE

8843 Lille le 20 juin, 1915,
3 h. 30 (allemande).

A MONSIEUR LE MAIRE DE LILLE:

Son Excellence, Monsieur le Gouverneur a retiré aux otages de la Ville de Lille, leur faveur, jusqu'à nouvel avis. Le nécessaire doit done être fait, pour que 5 otages se trouvent tous les jours, à 7 h. du soir, à la Citadelle, pour y rester jusqu'à 7 h. du matin.

L'appel doit se faire *aupjourd'hui* le 20 VI, 1915, à la Citadelle à 9 heures.

Son Excellence le Gouverneur répondra à part à la lettre du Maire.

(*Signé*) VON GRAEVENITZ.

(Translation:)
Kommandantur of Lille

8843. Lille, June 20, 1915.
3.30 (German time)

TO THE MAYOR OF LILLE

His Excellency the Governor has withdrawn from the hostages of the city of Lille the favours accorded to them, until further orders. The necessary steps must be taken then for five hostages to report every day at 7 o'clock in the evening in the City Hall, and to remain there until 7 o'clock in the morning.

knew so many more horrors than the cities because there the *feldwebels* and under-officers were supreme, under

---

The roll will be called to-day, June 20, at the Citadel at 9 o'clock.

His Excellency the Governor will reply separately to the Mayor's letter.

(*Signed*) Von Graevenitz.

Lille, le 20 juin, 1915.

Gouvernement de Lille

A Monsieur le Maire de Lille:

J'ai reçu votre lettre du 19 juin, dans laquelle vous me dites que vous n'aviez point le droit de forcer un ouvrier au travail, et qu'il était contraire à votre devoir de lui conseiller d'exécuter les travaux désirés par le Gouvernement, comme étant en contradiction avec la convention de la Haye.

Je n'ai nullement voulu que vous usiez de contrainte envers les ouvriers; j'ai plutôt espéré que vous ouvririez une voie de conciliation pour protéger la Ville et les ouvriers contre des désagréments.

Je ne saurais nullement partager votre opinion que la confection des sacs soit contradictoire au paragraphe 52 de l'accord du 18 octobre 1907. Je vous invite de nouveau à insister auprès des patrons et des ouvriers; je suis convaincu que la plupart des ouvriers ne demandent pas mieux que de pouvoir gagner leur vie.

Au cas où le 22 juin à 10 heures du matin, le travail ne sera pas repris, je me verrai obligé de prendre des mesures plus rigoureuses.

La faveur que j'ai accordée aux otages de la Ville, je l'ai fait cesser à partir d'aujourd'hui. Cinq otages devront passer la nuit à la Citadelle depuis 7 heures du soir à 7 heures du matin, jusqu'à la reprise de la confection des sacs.

(*Signé*) Von Heinrich.

(Translation:)

Government of Lille. Lille, June 20, 1915.

To the Mayor of Lille

I have received your letter of the 19th of June, in which you tell me that you have not the right to force a workman to work, and that it is against your duty to counsel him to execute the work

no supervising eye, and since in the German system there are no equals, but only superiors and inferiors,

---

desired by the Government, as being in contradiction with the Hague Convention.

I have never wished that you should use any duress on the workmen. I rather hoped that you would obtain a way of conciliation to protect the city and the workmen against trouble.

I could in nowise share your opinion that the manufacture of sandbags is contrary to paragraph 52 of the accord of the 18th October, 1907. I ask you again to insist to the employers and to the employees. I am convinced that the greater part of the workmen will ask nothing better than to be able to earn their livelihood.

In case that by the 22nd of June at 10 o'clock in the morning work is not resumed, I will find myself obliged to take the most rigorous measures.

The favour that I have accorded to the hostages of the city I put an end to from to-day. Five hostages will have to pass the night in the Citadel, from 7 o'clock in the evening to 7 o'clock in the morning, until the manufacture of the sandbags is resumed.

(*Signed*) Von Heinrich.

Le 21 juin, 1915.

Le Maire de Lille

À Monsieur le Gouverneur von Heinrich, Lille.

Monsieur le Gouverneur:

Je reçois votre lettre de ce jour, et m'empresse d'y répondre, je ne puis que vous confirmer ma lettre du 19.

Depuis plus de huit mois je crois avoir fait preuve du plus grand esprit de conciliation, et vous n'hésiterez pas, je l'espère, à reconnaître la loyauté parfaite que j'ai apportée dans mes rapports avec l'autorité occupante.

Les ouvriers qui travaillent dans les tranchées "prennent part aux opérations de la guerre contre leur Patrie." Je n'ai pourtant jamais cherché à les en empêcher, estimant que chacun de mes concitoyens ne relève que de sa propre conscience.

Mais quand il s'agit de mon devoir personnel, il n'y a pas de

so that every man is cowering before the man above him and bullying the man below, they could work their brutal and irresponsible will as they chose. Prowling thus in far and hidden corners of the land they pounced upon their helpless prey, rounding slowly, stealthily in on the larger cities, reserving Brussels and Antwerp to the last.

The stories of the seizures, with details of a cruelty and brutality the like of which one could recall only

---

conciliation ni de transaction possible. Mon devoir dans la circonstance est tellement net que je ne pourrais m'y soustraire sans forfaire à l'Honneur.

Vous me dites que si le travail n'est pas repris demain, des punitions rigoureuses seront infligées à la Ville.

Pourquoi voulez-vous rendre responsable une immense population innocente, et ne pas exercer vos rigueurs contre celui-là seul qui assume et accepte les responsabilitées de ses actes?

Veuillez agréer, Excellence, mes civilités.

LE MAIRE DE LILLE.

(Translation:)

June 21, 1915.

THE MAYOR OF LILLE TO THE GOVERNOR VON HEINRICH, LILLE

Mr. Governor,—I receive your letter of this day, and I hasten to reply to it. I can only confirm my letter of the 19th.

For more than eight months I have tried to give proof of the largest spirit of conciliation, and you will not hesitate, I hope, to recognize the perfect fairness that I have shown in my dealings with the occupying authority.

The working men who work in the trenches are taking part in the operations of war against their country. I have never, however, tried to prevent them from so doing, feeling that each one of my fellow-citizens has to obey only to his own conscience.

But where there is a question of my personal duty there is no conciliation and no discussion possible. My duty in the circum-

vaguely out of the memory of tales, long since read, of slave-drivers in the African jungle, came up to Brussels from the provinces, and after the first dazed incomprehension, the early scepticism, there was a rage and indignation far beyond that produced by the earlier atrocities. These, as I have said, had seemed to be accepted by the people in a kind of dumb fatalism, as they might have accepted some terrible cataclysm in nature. But this deed, with its monstrous and cynical cruelty, perpetrated upon a cultivated people, in the year of Our Lord 1916, at a moment in the history of the world when, despite all its disillusions, it believed human slavery no longer possible on any of its continents, created a rage that was black, implacable, remorseless, a hatred that found its savage intensity deep down in the primeval instincts of the race. I had never imagined, much less seen, any human emotion comparable to it; I hope never to have to look upon the like again. It transformed the faces of men I knew; they grew hard, dark, stony, until a livid hue of passion informed them, and then their eyes blazed, their jaws were set, and they could find no words to express their loathing of this foulest deed committed by man, or that hatred of the men who committed it.

---

stances is so clear that I cannot escape without forfeiting my honour.

You tell me that if the work is not resumed to-morrow rigorous punishment will be inflicted on the city. Why do you wish to render responsible a whole innocent population and not exercise your rigours against him who alone assumes and accepts responsibility for his acts?

I beg you to accept, Excellency, my compliments.

THE MAYOR OF LILLE.

"L'Esclavage!" they would say, with a harsh, rasping voice.

"L'Esclavage!" And they would repeat:

"L'Esclavage!"

And sometimes tears would start to their eyes, tears at their own impotence in the passionate and terrible longing for revenge.

XXXVI

TO ASSASSINATE A NATION'S SOUL

Von Bissing was just then maturing a plan over which he had long been brooding, a plan more audacious, more far-reaching, more imaginative, and more noxious in its effect on the life of the Belgian nation than the slave-drive of the military power impersonated by von Hindenburg. The von Bissing plan showed a certain *finesse,* it was no mere recrudescence of medievalism, no reversion to the ancient type. Both men wished to carry out the imperial German scheme of conquering and annexing Belgium in order to have a foothold whence Germany might strike at England and America. Hindenburg, heavy and ponderous, could think of nothing more original than to drag Belgians off into slavery, after the manner of conquerors in ancient times. But Bissing, old, wily, subtle, had a deeper scheme, the sequel of the inauguration of the Flemish university at Ghent; by an adroit appeal to the old racial feeling between the Flemish and the Walloons, he would divide the Belgian nation; he would give his policy the appearance of a spontaneous and generous act undertaken in the name of the very principle for which the Allies were fighting, the right of small nations to govern themselves. He would stand by benevolently, holding out a patronizing and protecting hand, while the Flemish set up for themselves the Flemish

State under a German protectorate, and in this way gain Antwerp and the Belgian littoral, the foothold on the sea, menacing the virile democracies of the British Isles and the American continent. This daring and ambitious scheme, with its imperial vision, never had any chance of success, because Bissing did not understand the Flemish people, but he did apprehend the fact that whatever chance his scheme may have had was destroyed at a blow by the savage policy of the burly hero into whose enormous wooden statue the Germans, like savages with some fetich or totem pole, were enthusiastically driving nails.

Von Bissing, having studied "The Prince," was already dramatizing himself amid the acclamations and the enthusiastic *Hochs!* of a posterity that would hail him as the first dictator of Belgium and as the man who had annexed it to the Empire, when Hindenburg, coming to the Western Front, ruined all his careful plans by his stubborn and impetuous will! And he had to swallow his chagrin and go off to Ghent, and there, on the twenty-first of October, to open the new Flemish university by a speech in which he sought to flatter the pride of the Flemish people.

It must have been a bitter and ironical moment for the old satrap who was trying to rule his province with a pretense of paternal concern, to think that at the very moment when, posing as a patron of learning and of art, and the saviour of the Flemish people, delivering an address in opening the Flemish University at Ghent, he could catch the strains of the "Lion of Flanders" sung by the Flemish workmen whom the stupid *militaires* were dragging off into slavery, leaving behind them in the land he was trying to conquer a hatred for the very

word German—*Duitch*—that would burn as long as there was memory in Flanders.

Baron von der Lancken returned from Berlin with the result that we had expected; there was nothing to be done. The German military authorities were stubbornly determined to go through with it at all hazards, even if it put an end to the *ravitaillement.*

That week, for the second time since the slave-drive had begun, the delegates of the C.R.B. came in from the provinces for their regular meeting, shaken by the scenes they had witnessed. Tuck, Richardson and Osborn came to tell me of it. Tuck had stood on the bridge at Mons and watched long trains of cattle cars, many of them open to the sky, pass under it, filled with Belgian miners, going into slavery, and singing "la Brabançonne" and "la Marseillaise" as they went. The people, gathered in crowds on the bridge, flung down to them turnips, potatoes, anything and all they had; the men seized these raw vegetables and ate them ravenously, like animals. The crowd joined in their cries, the single German sentinel on the bridge running about meanwhile and imploring them to be still. Every one of the delegates had some such tale to tell; they were half sick with the horror of it, but they had rendered all the help they could, even when that help was only the sympathy they could not refrain from expressing. We determined on a protest, and formally asked an interview with von der Lancken.

It was on Friday, the twenty-seventh of October, a day of cold rain and wet leaves falling dismally, that we went to discuss it. At five o'clock in the afternoon at the Politische Abteilung, the Marquis of Villalobar, M. van Vollenhoven, M. Francqui, M. Emmanuel Janssen

and I met the Baron von der Lancken and Dr. Brohn and Dr. Reith, of the Vermittlungsstelle. Before taking up the question of the deportations, von der Lancken, opening the meeting in his formal way, asked Dr. Reith to read us a letter just written by the Governor-General and addressed to the Protecting Ministers, according what we had asked at our latest interview with him, representation on the various *zentralen,* and a more stringent control. The letter was satisfactory to us, and then we made our formal protest against the deportations, and the Baron said that he would define the attitude of the General Government in regard to the question.

It was very still in the little *salon;* von der Lancken, sitting by the marble-topped table, undeniably handsome in his uniform of delicate blue grey, began his reply by saying that in Germany the old men and the women and the children were working in the fields, while in Belgium there were seven hundred thousand idle folk, more than half of them men; for the most part young and capable of working. His Excellency the Governor-General had twice, publicly and officially, offered work to the *chômeurs* but it had been refused; now, because of the lack of labour (*le manque de main d'œuvre*) in Germany the General Government was determined to force these Belgians to go to work. The General Government, he said, felt that it had not only the legal, but the moral right to do this; that idleness was always a menace, and that if the war continued a year or two longer these men would lose the habit of work completely (*ils perdront complètement l'habitude de travailler*). They would, therefore, be transferred to Germany—some ten thousand had

already been sent—and there they would be set to work in the fields, in the quarries, and elsewhere, but not one of them would be compelled to work for the army or for any military purpose whatever.

He paused a moment, with a wide, exculpating gesture as of one who admits some trifling exception, and said:

"Je ne dis pas que pas un seul ne travaillera à un rail sur lequel un train militaire passera—mais. . . ."

The decision had been made, he added, and—there would be no rescinding of it. Dr. Brohn, who was a director in the Krupp works, remarked that there were hundreds of Belgians working in the Krupp works but not in the munitions department. But, said one of us, Belgians had been set to work making trenches in northern France. But this the Baron denied; no Belgian, he said, had been employed at such labour save those who had come voluntarily and asked for work, though he did admit that some of them had been employed on the new fortifications at Antwerp.

Villalobar and I by turns called the Baron's attention to the storm that the reports of the seizures would produce in the world outside, and asked him if they had considered the effect the measure would have on the *ravitaillement.* The Baron replied that the Comité National and the Commission for Relief would be respected, and the engagements entered into with them would be kept. The Governor had not and would not ask the Comité National for the lists of *chômeurs.*

Then we called his attention to the state of affairs in the province of Luxembourg, where there were no *chômeurs;* the communes had undertaken public works in order to provide employment; they had begun to

build roads, bridges, town halls, ditches—any justifiable improvement that might lighten the needs of the people. But the German civil president had ordered all this construction discontinued; he had even gone so far as to prohibit workmen living in one commune to go into neighboring communes in search of work. Dr. Reith replied for the Baron, saying that these public works had been undertaken after the Germans had called for workmen, which was doubtless accurate enough, since the Germans had begun calling for workmen almost as soon as the occupation began, and that the Belgian authorities had inaugurated these works in order to defeat the German plan to secure manual labour.

It was a long and futile discussion; one after another we brought up all the objections that so readily occurred to the mind, but to no avail. There was once more that impregnable impasse, that magic phrase—military necessity; *Messieurs les militaires* had pronounced it, and that closured all debate. Baron von der Lancken shrugged his shoulders to show that he was powerless, and besides, he had not been in favour of the policy. . . . The discussion went on, was interminable, and at last despairing. There we sat, while the evening closed in, perplexed by the difficulty the modern mind experiences when suddenly called upon to establish any elementary and universally admitted principle, something long accepted as axiomatic; as that the earth is round, that tides are coincident with the phases of the moon, that there is a law of gravity, that liberty is a right, that human slavery is wrong—Villalobar, quiet in a wide fauteuil close to the little table with the marble top, playing with the *dossier* he always had before him,

picking up and letting fall the papers of his numerous affairs; Dr. Reith, the only one of the Germans in civilian clothes, wearing an extraordinarily high collar; Dr. Brohn, a big, mild, agreeable man in the dark blue uniform of the 2nd Alexandria regiment, caught in the cogs of the terrible German machine; van Vollenhoven, ruddy, taciturn; Emmanuel Janssen in scrupulous black, with never a word to say; M. Francqui, sitting sidewise in his chair, one short, fat leg crossed over the other, nervously smoking cigarette after cigarette, his eloquent dark eyes darting here and there their brilliant glances, which nothing, not even the shadow of an expression, ever escaped; and Lancken, with his air of youth, trim, well-groomed, in his uniform of delicate blue grey, his black hair clipped short and carefully brushed, his blue eyes fixed on the sheet of paper on his knees, the faint adumbration of an enigmatic smile about his lips. It was still in the *salon* when suddenly M. Francqui, with a nervous movement, uncrossed his legs, turned restlessly in his chair, crossed his legs again, and exclaimed, as if to himself:

"Nous sommes des nègres!" His dark eyes were flashing, and over the face of Baron von der Lancken there swept a scarlet flame; he turned quickly and exclaimed:

"Non, je ne peux pas permettre que vous disiez cela!"

Then silence again, very deep; a vast weariness of a common recognition of the whole impossible situation, of the madness and horror of the war. Villalobar sighed heavily, the sigh was audible all over the *salon,* and turning wearily toward the Baron, he said:

"Cette guerre dure trop longtemps; vous et l'Angleterre devriez y mettre fin."

The words wrung suddenly from von der Lancken a human cry:

"Cette guerre abominable doit cesser!" he cried, striking his knee with a clenched fist. *"Nous sommes prêts! Pourquoi les autres ne veulent-ils pas la paix aussi?"*

There was an instant, the only one, no doubt, in all the hours of all the different discussions we had had in that gay little yellow Louis XVI *salon,* with its closed piano, its chairs with the satin cushions wearing out by unwonted usage, its mirrors that had reflected so many strange and varied forms and features, when we were in accord. . . .

The discussion was fraying out into those vain and idle repetitions that mark the end of most conferences; some one, Villalobar, I believe, asked Lancken to state once more the official German position with regard to the *ravitaillement*—he had already stated it five or six times—and the Baron, emphasizing each word with a blow of his fist on his knee, said:

"Nous restons et nous resterons dans nos droits; nous respectons et nous respecterons nos engagements; nous ne toucherons en rien au Comité National."

That was all; the meeting was over, and we sat there, benumbed by the conviction, the absolute and disheartening certainty, that all argument, all discussion, all reason, all appeal, was useless. Lancken had no power; he was engaged in the impossible task of presenting the deeds of the *reiters* and *hobereaux* under a light that would somehow reconcile them with the ideals of western liberal culture, apprehended by him in his ten years at Paris; even Bissing, the Governor-General, whom all Belgium cursed and execrated, whose name was anathema, the old man who stood to Britain and to France

and to America as the very sign and symbol of all that was abominable in German theory and practice, even he had not been severe enough to suit the General Staff. There was but one argument that could impress the military power, and that was a knock on the head. I had come a long way and reluctantly to a conclusion so utterly at variance with all I had thought and dreamed for years. I had learned that there was but one hope, one salvation for the world, one hope and one salvation for the German people themselves, and that was that the military caste of Germany be defeated and passed under the yoke—literally; it was the only thing that they could understand.

The result of this formal protest, like the effect of information we had received in several private causeries, was the conviction that if any representations could avail they would have to be made at Berlin. In these circumstances I could only report the facts to Washington, and ventured to suggest that some action be taken at Berlin, where the power, if there was any power in Germany higher than the General Staff, alone resided. My course was approved and the suggestion adopted. Mr. Gerard had gone home and Mr. Grew was in charge at Berlin, and I sent him all the facts upon which to base a representation, and suggested to Mr. Grew that in case protests, appeals or representations should fail to stop the hideous thing, some policy at least be adopted by the Germans, that if the pretense of seizing only *chômeurs* were observed it would be something, and that if certain classes of exemptions could be created, such as would include married men or heads of families, or only men apt for military service, or some such thing, it might somewhat ameliorate the

situation. I suggested also that the camps in Germany be open to inspection by representatives of our Embassy there, or, since Spain was in charge of Belgian interests at Berlin, to the representatives of the Spanish Embassy.

November came, cold and gloomy, with the bells tolling on All Saints' Day for the dead; the bells in the ancient little chapel of Stalle, behind the Orangerie clanged dismally all day long. There were long, woebegone processions in black, winding toward the cemeteries, and there were thoughts of the dead in those new graves all over Belgium and down along the Yser; thoughts, too, of all those who were being herded by the slavers to living tombs in German mines and quarries.

The Kelloggs were about to depart; Mr. Warren Gregory, the lawyer of San Francisco, had arrived to succeed Mr. Kellogg at the most difficult moment in the history of the *ravitaillement*. Mr. Hoover had come over from London to discuss with M. Francqui an internal problem of organization of great difficulty and delicacy, and for days that discussion went on, with frequent references of its details to me. It was a trying week, and in addition to the trouble in which it was so prolific there was the uncertainty of the election at home. One morning Harrach sent me word from the Politische Abteilung to the effect that Judge Hughes had been elected. Two days later, he sent word that the result was in doubt, and then, the slowly emerging fact that the President's course had been vindicated by the people.

Baron von der Lancken had gone to Berlin again. He was about two days and immediately on his return (November 11) I had a long conversation with him, in

which he said that through one of the representatives of the Vermittlungsstelle had seen Mr. Hoover, he had heard that it had been suggested that the Belgian camps in Germany be open to American or neutral visitation and inspection; he said that he was heartily in favour of the suggestion, and wished to know if it had emanated from the American Government, or from Mr. Hoover, or from me. I told him that since we were living in a world where every one seemed to be much more concerned about the credit of a thing than about the thing itself, I wished not one to be deprived of what was his; the idea was Mr. Hoover's, unless it were Villalobar's, for Mr. Hoover had mentioned it to me after a conversation with Villalobar. It was, indeed, the idea of Mr. Hoover, who was still in Brussels, and indignant over the deportations, and Lancken said he would telegraph at once to urge it on his Government's consideration. I said, too, that bad as the whole policy was it would perhaps be less evil if there were some principle in its application, and I told him of the indiscriminate seizures that were being made all over the Hainaut and Brabant. The Baron said that they could not distinguish between *chômeurs* and *non-chômeurs* because they had not the lists. I replied that, of course, the Comité National could not give up the lists.

"Mon Dieu, non!" he said, lifting his hands with an ironical gesture as if of pious horror. *"Le Comité National est sacro-saint."*

There were the burgomasters, too, but without my having to remind him, he realized that they could not give up the lists.

"Ils seraient lynchés," he said.

I asked whether, if we were to bring to his notice cases

of what might be called injustice under the German policy as he had defined it, such as seizures of men who were employed, they would be considered and rectified, and he replied that they would. It was agreed that all Belgians employed either by the C.N. or by the C.R.B. should be exempt. Beyond this, which was so little, the Baron's visit to Berlin had been rather barren of results.

We were sitting in the little upper room where he worked; it was a chill, autumn day, but the small stove burning furiously made the room somewhat too *gemütlich*. We talked long that morning and I told the Baron that the policy of deportation would create horror and a furore of indignation in America and indeed everywhere in the world outside. The Baron said that the Governor-General was preparing an interview to be given to an American journalist for the purpose of explaining the deportations to the American people and for the purpose of affecting public opinion. There was a copy of *La Libre Belgique* on his table, the latest number to appear, and he pointed out in it to me an article which contained an appeal to neutral countries, and especially to the neutral countries then represented at Brussels.

"Ils tapent sur vous!" he said.

And then he asked:

"Est-ce qu'on doit vous féliciter des elections? Est-ce Wilson ou non?"

I could only tell him that I had no accurate news, and he rummaged through the newspaper file on his little table and found and read an Associated Press dispatch which said that the President had two hundred and seventy-seven votes and was elected; and then he asked

me many questions about the system by which our Presidents are chosen, and I explained it, as I had to explain it so many times, and to so many persons; it was then a mystery to Europe, like so many other things in our America!

The Belgians had somehow acquired the impression that the national conventions in June had decided that question; they thought Mr. Hughes had then been elected to succeed President Wilson, and the recrudescence, as it seemed to them, of political discussion on the other side of the sea, confused and puzzled them. They would say to me:

"Mais, je pensais que Monsieur 'Ugue'"—as they pronounced Hughes—*"a déjà été élu?"*

It was a result, or at least the defeat of the President was a result, for which the Germans, as some of them did not hesitate to say, were hoping.

XXXVII

FRANCIS JOSEPH'S REQUIEM MASS

By one of those ironies that are so implicit and so inevitable in the scheme of things that they must affect the purely philosophic observer of life as monotonous, the winter came on very early that year of the deportations, and was the most severe that Belgium had ever known. In November it was already cold, a cold the more bitter because of the humidity of the Low Countries. Fuel was scarce; the Germans were taking great quantities of coal from the mines down in the Borinage; they controlled the railways, and as they used all the wagons to carry their troops to the Front, or the *chômeurs* and coal to Germany, the barges on the canals were the only remaining means of transport, and before November was gone the canals were frozen over, the barges could not move, and coal for use of the Belgian population could not be brought to Brussels. One of the saddest sights of those sad times was that presented to me one cold morning as, in my selfish furs, I drove along the boulevard; the tramway had been torn up and working men were putting in ballast—some sort of slag or cinder, or what one will. Along those tracks for two blocks women and children were clustered like flies in a black, solid mass along the tramway, bent over with bags or baskets, grubbing with their half-frozen fingers for tiny bits of coal. It was one of those humiliating spectacles, not infrequent in times of peace,

but abounding in time of war, of the indignity that life heaps upon the poor.

It happened to be the day of King Albert's fête, and there were the usual Masses at Ste.-Gudule and at Saint-Jacques-sur-Caudenberg, the usual crowds, *"Vers l'Avenir,"* its last chords gliding into "La Brabançonne," then swelling loudly and more loudly, then the demonstration, the shouts, the cries for the King and the nation, and the usual arrests. The Germans were parading their *mitrailleuses* to cower the restless people, angered that day more than ever by the publication in the Brussels journals of a French translation of von Bissing's interview with the correspondent of the New York *Times,* in which, as Lancken had predicted, he explained and tried to justify the deportations.[1]

---

[1] La Question des Chômeurs

Le correspondant berlinois du *New York Times* a interviewé S.E. le Baron von Bissing, Gouverneur général en Belgique. En commentaire de cette interview, la *Gazette de l'Allemagne du Nord* publie un long article. On sait l'empressement que nous mettons à placer sous les yeux de nos lecteurs, à qui par-dessus tout la documentation est nécessaire à cette heure pour apprécier raisonnablement les évènements, les écrits officiels ou officieux desquels peut ressortir une saine appréciation des faits. C'est dans cet esprit que nous reproduisons ci-dessous l'article de la *Gazette de l'Allemagne du Nord:* il a trait à une question qui préoccupe au plus haut point en ce moment tous les Belges, et pour cette raison sera lu par tous avec intérêt.

Par suite de l'étranglement économique de la Belgique, dont l'Angleterre se charge sans aucun égard pour celle-ci, plus d'un million de Belges appauvris, hommes, femmes et enfants, voient aujourd'hui leur existence dépendre de la bienfaisance publique. En supprimant l'importation des matières et en interdisant l'exportation des produits finis, l'Angleterre a condamné près de 500,000 ouvriers belges à un état chronique d'inactivité qui les démoralise,

The interview was in the conventional tone of hypocrisy, though there was too much of Parisian sophis-

---

Eux et leurs familles sont aujourd'hui à la charge des communes. Pour mettre fin à cet état de choses devenu de jour en jour plus intolérable et aussi nuisible pour l'ensemble du peuple belge que pour les individus, j'ai tout d'abord pris des arrêtés ayant pour but soit d'amender les ouvriers belges désœuvrés à se rendre volontairement en Allemagne, soit d'y faire transporter ceux qui, d'instinct ont peur de travailler et qui refusent d'accomplir contre de bons salaires un travail adéquat à leurs capacités.

Telle est la thèse que le général colonel Baron von Bissing, gouverneur général en Belgique, a formulée lundi au cours d'un entretien d'une heure qu'il m'a accordé à son domicile à Berlin. Elle vaut qu'on s'y arrête. Son Excellence d'ailleurs a même été plus loin; elle a fait ressortir qu'elle considérait l'évacuation des sans-travail de "profession" comme une mesure de défense contre le blocus de la Belgique et de l'Allemagne par l'Angleterre, la guerre économique mondiale ayant atteint maintenant une nouvelle phase qu'elle semble la faire s'approcher de son point culminant.

Voici comment s'est exprimé le Gouverneur général:

En retenant les matières premières, l'Angleterre essaye de mettre sous sa coupe l'industrie belge. Elle tend systématiquement à mettre la Belgique sous le joug au point de vue économique, en prévoyant la possibilité de se servir d'elle; au cours de la guerre économique qu elle prépare contre l'Allemagne après la guerre militaire. Des hommes d'affaires belges m'ont dit que dans cette guerre économique, la Belgique n'aurait pas seulement à lutter contre la concurrence de l'Allemagne, mais encore contre celle de l'Angleterre et qu'ils estimaient indispensable, spécialement en vue de cette double occurrence, que l'industrie belge restât en activité. L'évacuation des ouvriers belges n'est un dur sacrifice ni pour le pays, ni pour la population. Nécessité provoquée par la guerre, elle est au fond un bienfait pour les ouvriers et un bien pour le pays.

Pour l'expliquer il me faut me reporter en arrière jusqu'au 1er décembre 1914, date de mon entrée en fonctions. Dès ce jour-là j'ai reconnu le danger que faisait courir à la Belgique la pénurie de travail et j'ai entrepris d'y parer.

tication in the Politische Abteilung to permit him to boast a patronizing intimacy with the Almighty; I do

---

L'implacable blocus économique de l'Allemagne par l'Angleterre a du même coup atteint la Belgique. Son économie politique qui dépend, comme vous le savez, de l'importation des matières premiéres et de l'exportation des produits fabriqués, a été frappée par ce blocus dans sa vitalité. Il en est résulté une forte augmentation du nombre des chômeurs et des secours qu'il s'imposait de leur assurer. La longue durée de la guerre a entraîné un emploi abusif de ces secours et provoqué une situation sociale intenable. C'est pourquoi j'ai invité les communes belges à donner de l'occupation au plus grand nombre possible de leurs chômeurs en décrétant l'exécution de travaux publics. Or, cette mesure a abouti avec le temps, à charger les communes de lourdes dettes, disproportionnées aux travaux entrepris par elles et momentanément improductifs. Il m'a fallu mettre un frein à ces dépenses et limiter les travaux pour sans-travail. J'ai fait alors de nouvelles tentatives en vue d'obtenir l'importation en Belgique de matières premières; je m'y suis efforcé au point d'envoyer des personnes de confiance en Angleterre avec la mission de s'y informer sur le point de savoir si rien ne pouvait être fait pour sauver la Belgique industrielle de l'arrêt économique dont elle souffrait. J'étais disposé à prendre l'engagement de ne pas utiliser pour les besoins de l'Allemagne les produits fabriqués à l'aide de ces matières premières par le travail belge et d'en autoriser l'exportation à 75 p.c. de leur valeur: l'Angleterre inexorable, a fait la sourde oreille à toutes les représentations qui lui étaient faites de notre part en faveur de la Belgique.

Avant que l'obligation m'ait été imposée de prendre de nouvelles mesures, 30,000 ouvriers belges environ se sont rendus volontairement en Allemagne: ils y ont été traités sur le même pied que les ouvriers allemands et y ont gagné des salaires d'un taux inconnu en Belgique. Ils ont pu envoyer à leurs parents l'argent nécessaire à leur entretien, ont obtenu des congés qu'ils sollicitaient pour se rendre dans leur pays et ont été autorisés à faire venir leur famille en Allemagne. J'avais espéré que ce travail volontaire prendrait de plus en plus d'extension. Par malheur est survenu l'effet d'une active propagande que nos ennemis menaient à l'aide de tous les

not know, indeed, that he was that way disposed; at any rate Brussels was spared that. It was all that

---

moyens imaginables, et en faisant surtout valoir comme argument qune les Belges qui s'enrôlaient pour aller travailler en Allemagne n'étaient pas des patriotes. Cette propagande se fit auprès des familles des ouvriers qui avaient trouvé de l'occupation en Allemagne ou voulaient y aller en chercher, et fut poussée au point que l'on dressa des listes noires pour y inscrire ces ouvriers. Elle finit naturellement par endiguer le départ des volontaires.

Cependant, les plaintes qui dans l'entretemps m'étaient adressées au sujet du manque de travail devenaient de plus en plus intolérables: ce sont elles qui m'ont engagé à publier mon décret du 15 mai de cette année. Ce décret ne prévoit l'obligation au travail que dans le cas oñ un chômeur refuse sans raisons valables d'accepter de faire, moyennant un salaire convenable un travail adéquat à sa capacité. Comme raison valable était admis expressément tout motif basé sur le droit des gens. Aucun ouvrier ne peut donc être contraint de prendre part à des entreprises travaillant pour la guerre; toutes les affirmations suivant lesquelles des ouvriers belges auraient été astreints à des travaux pour la guerre sont contraires à la vérité.

A une question de son interlocuteur, M. le Gouverneur général a répondu qu'il avait envisagé la Prusse Rhénane et la Westphalie comme les régions particulièrement idoines à recevoir les évacués belges, dont l'évacuation est effectuée de la manière la plus humaine.

M. le Baron von Bissing continue:

Nous nous efforçons d'éviter toutes les injustices quelconques. J'ai donné des instructions sévères pour que le choix des hommes à expédier en Allemagne se fasse avec les plus grands ménagements, sur la base des listes des chômeurs ayant refusé le travail qui leur avait été offert. Chaque cas est l'objet d'une enquête spéciale faite en présence du bourgmestre compétent. Les familles qui restent en Belgique seront aidées par nous jusqu'à ce que ceux qui ont charge de les entretenir soient en mesure de leur envoyer une partie de leur salaire. Leur salaire en Allemagne est en moyenne de 8 mark par jour, alors que le salaire moyen en Belgique n'est que de 3½ à 4½ mark. L'alimentation, en outre, est meilleure pour eux en

Brussels was spared; the interview added irony to insult and injury by the pretense that the deportations

---

Allemagne. Les offres de travail en Allemagne sont portées à la connaissance des intéressés soit verbalement, soit par la voie de grandes affiches murales: la masse des ouvriers qui demandent du travail augmente de jour en jour.

Malgré cela, dans les parties de la Belgique qui dépendent de mon administration, c'est-à-dire les deux provinces des Flandres non comprises, il reste encore entre quatre et cinq cent mille sans-travail-, ce qui vent dire qu'y compris leurs familles, il y a sur les cinq millions et demi d'habitants dont se compose la population belge, plus d'un million de personnes qui dépendent de la bienfaisance publique.

En ce qui concerne les motifs pour lesquels les ouvriers sont envoyés en Allemagne au lieu qu'on les force à travailler en Belgique, M. le gouverneur général dit:

Comme je vous l'ai dit tantôt, l'industrie belge dépend de manière absolue, en ce qui concerne les matières premières, des pays d'outremer. Le blocus anglais empêchant ces matières d'y arriver, l'Allemagne est le seul grand pays avec lequel la Belgique entretienne des rapports commerciaux. L'Allemagne n'a pas décrété contre la Belgique l'interdiction de paiement dont elle a fait une loi à l'égard des pays ennemis, et l'argent allemand y arrive de maniére continue. Des centaines de milliers de personnes étant sans travail en Belgique et le travail abondant en Allemagne, l'occupation des chômeurs belges en Allemagne est donc devenue une nécessité économique et sociale.

On m'a objecté que l'envoi d'innombrables ouvriers belges en Allemagne, détruirait la vie de famille de ces ouvriers. Je me bornerai à répondre à cette observation (que c'est précisément la situation belge actuelle qui y crée les plus graves dangers pour la vie de famille. D'ailleurs les ouvriers qui s'engagent volontairement en Allemagne peuvent rester en communication avec leur famille et ils obtiendront à des intervalles réguliers, s'ils de désirent des congés pour revenir dans leur pays. Il leur est même permis d'emmener leur famille. Plusieurs dizaines de milliers d'ouvriers belges sont déjà partis volontairement pour l'Allemagne: ils y sont

were in the Belgian interest. Whatever reluctance he may have had in adopting the policy, he now warmly

---

mis, je le répète, sur le même pied que les ouvriers allemands et y touchent des salaires d'un niveau inconnu en Belgique, de telle sorte qu'au lieu de vivre de la charité publique et de devenir des misérieux, il leur est possible de reconquérir l'aisance.

Les salaires qu'ils touchent ne profitent pas seulement aux ouvriers isolés et à leur famille, mais aussi à l'économie politique belge par le fait qu'ils augmentent le montant de l'argent expédié sur une grande échelle d'Allemagne en Belgique. Le nombre des ouvriers volontaires serait beaucoup plus grand, si l'on ne mettait en œuvre toutes sortes d'influences pour déconseiller aux ouvriers d'accepter du travail en Allemagne. Nous devons faire malgré eux le bonheur de ceux qui hésitent et qui tergiversent. Si nous exerçons vis-à-vis d'eux une contrainte, nous l'exerçons de la manière la plus humaine possible. Si dans certains cas isolés, il n'est pas possible d'éviter d'user de rigueur, ceux qui en sont victimes ne doivent s'en prendre qu'à ceux qui les ont empêchés de travailler de bon gré.

Translation:

THE QUESTION OF THE UNEMPLOYED

The Berlin correspondent of the *New York Times* has interviewed His Excellency Baron von Bissing, Governor-General in Belgium. Commenting on this interview, the *North German Gazette* publishes a long article. Every one knows the eagerness with which we place under the eyes of our readers, to whom above all information is necessary at this time in order that they may reasonably understand events, official and unofficial writings from which one may obtain a sane appreciation of facts. It is in that spirit we reproduce hereafter the article of the *Northern German Gazette*. It treats a question which concerns every Belgian in the highest degree at this moment, and for this reason will be read by every one with interest.

As a result of the economic strangulation of Belgium, which England undertakes without any regard for the latter, more than a million of impoverished Belgian men, women, and children find themselves to-day depending on public charity. By suppressing

justified its execution; as one might have anticipated, it was based on the customary premise that it was really

---

the importation of raw materials and by forbidding the exportation of finished products England has condemned more than half a million Belgian working men to a chronic state of inactivity which demoralizes them. They and their families are to-day a charge on the communes. In order to put an end to this state of things, which becomes every day more intolerable and as injurious for the whole of the Belgian people as for individuals, I first issued decrees in order either to induce unemployed Belgian working men to go voluntarily into Germany, or to cause to be transported there those who by instinct are afraid of labour and who refuse to accomplish for good wages a work adequate to their capacities.

Such was the thesis that the General-Colonel Baron von Bissing, Governor-General in Belgium, formulated Monday in the course of an interview that he accorded me in his home at Berlin. It is worth while to consider it. His Excellency, moreover went farther; he pointed out that he considered the evacuation of the "professional" unemployed as a measure of defence against the blockade of Belgium and Germany by England, the world-wide economic war having attained now a new phase which seems to approach its culminating-point.

The Governor-General expressed himself as follows:

In withholding raw materials England tries to bring Belgian industry under her control. She tries systematically to put Belgium under the economic yoke with a view of using her later in the course of the economic war that she is preparing against Germany after the military war. Belgian men of affairs have told me that in this economic war Belgium will have to struggle not only against the competition of Germany but also against that of England, and that they considered it indispensable, especially in view of this double competition, that Belgian industry remain in activity. The evacuation of Belgian working men is not a heavy sacrifice either for the country or for the population. It is a necessity of the war, and at bottom a benefit for the working men and a good thing for the country.

In order to explain it, I must go back as far as the 1st of Decem-

England who was to blame, in that by her blockade she had doomed the Belgian population to a demoral-

---

ber, 1914, the date when I entered upon the discharge of my functions. Ever since that day I have recognized the danger that Belgium was running by the lack of labour, and I have tried to remedy it.

The implacable economic blockade of Germany by England at the same time affected Belgium. Its economic policy, which depends, as you know, on the importation of raw materials and the exportation of finished products, was struck a mortal blow by it. The result is a great increase in the number of unemployed and of the charities which it is necessary to give them. The long duration of the war has brought about many abuses in these charities and provoked an impossible social situation. This is why I have asked the Belgian communes to give employment to the greatest possible number of their unemployed by undertaking public works. Now, this measure finally resulted in time in leading the communes with heavy debts disproportionate to the work undertaken by them, and momentarily unproductive. It was necessary, then, to put a check on this expenditure and to limit the works for the unemployed. I then made new efforts in order to obtain the importation in Belgium of raw materials. I went so far as to send those in whom I have confidence to England with the mission of informing themselves whether or not something could be done to save industrial Belgium and the economic standstill from which she suffered. I was disposed to agree not to use for the needs of Germany the products manufactured by Belgian labour out of these raw materials, and to authorize the exportation of 75 per cent. of them. But inexorable England turned a deaf ear to all representations that were made to her in favour of Belgium.

Before I was obliged to take new measures about thirty thousand Belgian working men had gone voluntarily to Germany. There they were placed on the same footing with German working men, and they gain wages at a rate unknown in Belgium. They were able to send to their relatives the money necessary to support them. They were given leaves of absence which they asked to return to their country, and were authorized to take their families to Ger-

ising idleness and prevented the success of his efforts for *la reprise du travail;* and this seemed to von Bissing

---

many. I had hoped that thus voluntary labour would more and more increase. Then, unfortunately, there was felt the effect of an active propaganda which our enemies carried on by the aid of all imaginable means, and by which they put forward the argument that the Belgians who enrolled themselves to go and work in Germany were not patriotic. This propaganda was made in families of working men who had found work in Germany or wished to go there to seek it, and was pushed to the point of drawing up a black list with the names of these working men. It finished, naturally, by stopping the departure of these volunteers.

However, the complaints which in the meantime were addressed to me because of the lack of labour were becoming more and more intolerable, and they caused me to publish my decree of the 25th of May of this year. This decree did not provide any obligation to work, except in the case of non-employed persons who refused without good reason to accept for an adequate salary labour equal to their capacities. Every motive based on international law was expressly admitted as a valid reason. No working man could be compelled to take part in war work, and every information according to which Belgian working men have been compelled to do such labour is contrary to the truth.

In response to a question of his interlocutor, the Governor-General replied that he had contemplated the Rhenish Prussia and Westphalia as the regions particularly proper to receive the evacuated Belgians, and that this evacuation was effectuated in the most humane manner.

Baron von Bissing continues:

We tried to avoid every kind of injustice. I gave severe instructions that the choice of men to be sent to Germany should be made with the greatest care, on the basis of the lists of unemployed who had refused work offered to them. Each case was the object of a special inquiry made in the presence of the competent Burgomaster. The families who remain in Belgium will be attended to by us until those who are charged with their support are able to send them a part of their wages The wages in Germany are fixed at a mini-

to be sufficient reason for "evacuating" the working men, who were "living on public charity." It was

---

mum of 8 marks a day, while the average wage in Belgium is not more than 3½ to 4½ marks. Besides, the food in Germany is better for them. The offers of work in Germany are brought to the attention of the interested persons either verbally or by means of great posters on the walls, and the mass of labourers who ask work is increasing every day.

Despite this, in those parts of Belgium which are included in my administration—that is to say, outside of the two Flanders—there still remain between four and five hundred thousands of unemployed; that is to say that, including their families, out of five and a half millions of inhabitants of which the Belgian population is composed, more than a million persons are dependent on public charities.

As concerns the motives for which the working men are sent to Germany rather than to be forced to work in Belgium, the Governor-General says:

As I said to you awhile ago, Belgian industry depends absolutely, so far as raw materials are concerned, on overseas countries. As the English blockade prevents these materials from arriving here, Germany is the only great country with which Belgium has commercial relations. Germany did not apply to Belgium, as she did to enemy countries, the law which prohibited payment, and German money goes into Belgium continuously. Hundreds of thousands of persons being without work in Belgium, and as there is plenty of work to be found in Germany, the use of the Belgian working men in Germany has become, therefore, an economic and social necessity.

I have heard it objected that the sending of innumerable Belgian working men in Germany destroys the family life of these working men. I shall only say that it is precisely the present situation in Belgium which creates the gravest dangers for the family life. Besides, those working men who voluntarily engage to work in Germany can remain in communication with their families, and will obtain from time to time permission to return to their country. They will even be permitted to take their families with them. Several

neither a "cruel sacrifice for the nation nor for the population," but a "necessity provoked by the war," and "a

---

thousands of Belgian working men have already gone voluntarily to Germany; they are placed there, I repeat, on the same footing as German working men and receive wages at a rate unknown in Belgium, so that instead of living on public charity and becoming paupers, it is possible for them to gain an easy situation in life.

The wages they receive are a benefit not only to isolated working men and to their families, but also to the Belgian economic policy, because they increase the amount of money sent on a great scale from Germany into Belgium. The number of Belgian voluntary working men would be much greater if they were not subjected to all sorts of influences to induce the labourers not to accept work in Germany. But in spite of themselves, we must make happy those who hesitate and who tergiversate. If we exercise any constraint on them, we exercise it in the most humane manner possible. If in certain cases it has not been possible to avoid using rigorous treatment, those who are the victims of it must blame only those who have prevented them from working on their own accord.

Bissing frequently gave out interviews, all of them "carefully prepared." About this time the following appeared in *La Belgique:*

L'Administration de la Belgique Occupée

Le *Düsseldorfer Tageblatt* reproduit un entretien accordé le 17 novembre à son directeur, M. H. Brauweiler, par M. le général-colonel baron von Bissing, gouverneur général en Belgique, au château de Trois-Fontaines.

L'entretien a roulé sur les plaintes formulées en ces derniers temps par divers journaux catholiques contre l'administration allemande en Belgique dans la question de l'égalité de traitement réclamée pour la religion catholique et la religion protestante. Le baron von Bissing a expressément protesté contre le reproche qu'on lui adresse de vouloir "protestantiser" la Belgique. Il estime avoir prouvé manifestement à différentes reprises qu'il est éloigné de semblable intention. Il suffit à ses accusateurs, pour reconnaître l'injustice de leur reproche, de constater que du côte opposé on lui a fait

godsend for the labourers and the country." He endeavoured to avoid "every possible injustice," and had

---

le reproche exactement contraire. Il se tient par conséquent dans le juste milieu.

En ce qui concerne l'occupation des postes de fonctionnaires en Belgique, M. le baron von Bissing dit qu'il regrette qu'au début ne lui aient été adressées que de très rares demandes émanant de catholiques, mais qu'en ce moment il est satisfait de pouvoir conserver ceux qu'il a. Il ne croit pas d'ailleurs qu'une augmentation du nombre des fonctionnaires catholiques serait d'une utilité essentielle pour l'administration.

Au sujet de l'Université de Gand, M. le gouverneur-général a déclaré que le petit nombre de professeurs catholiques trouve son explication dans le fait que les efforts tentés en vue d'engager des professeurs catholiques n'ont pas eu, à son regret, autant de succès qu'il l'avait espéré, ses efforts se sont heurtés à une résistance très nette.

Enfin, M. le baron von Bissing s'est exprimé comme suit concernant les intentions de son administration en général et les buts auxquels elle tend, en présence des réserves énoncées dans certains milieux de l'Allemagne qui lui reprochent une mansuétude excessive:

"Mon programme est simple. Je ne suis pas ici pour molester le pays ou y user de représailles, mais pour le gouverneur dans l'intérêt allemand.

"Quiconque se rend compte de la mission vraiment difficile qui consiste à porter la responsabilité de l'administration d'un pays occupé et d'y collaborer, sait que cette tâche ne peut être autrement assumée qu'elle ne l'est par moi. Il me faut tenir compte du particularisme du pays et du caractère de sa population dans la mesure du possible. Si j'agissais autrement, je rendrais non seulement mon travail plus difficile, ce qui d'ailleurs n'aurait pas d'importance, mais j'entraverais le succès de l'activité allemande. Je suis guidé par le droit et par la justice et j'ai le devoir de respecter les stipulations du Droit des gens. Quand je suis obligé de punir, je le fais—cela aussi est un devoir que me commande ma responsabilité—mais je ne punis qu'après avoir consulté mon devoir et selon ma conscience. Et n'est-ce pas un mérite que doivent me reconnaître même

given "strict orders that the selection of men to be sent to Germany should be performed with the greatest fair-

ceux qui me reprochent une excessive mansuétude, le fait que les principes de mon administration ont empêché des troubles de surgir dans un pays situé si près de l'arrière du front à l'Ouest.

"Je suis un vieux soldat et je ne me verrais pas de gaîté de coeur acculé à la nécessité d'agir par les armes contre une population sans défense. Le meilleur service que je puisse rendre à l'Empereur et à la patrie, c'est de gouverneur ici de telle sorte que de sanglants sacrifices puissant être épargnés à nos troupes et qu'il ne faille soustraire au front de bataille que des forces aussi minimes que possible. Si c'est de gouverner ainsi qu'on me fait le reproche, je consens volontiers à en prendre la responsabilité."

(Translation:)

THE ADMINISTRATION OF OCCUPIED BELGIUM

The *Düsseldorfer Tageblatt* reproduces an interview granted on the 17th of November to its Director, M. H. Brauweiler, by Colonel-General Baron von Bissing, Governor-General in Belgium, at the château of Trois-Fontaines.

The interview turned on the subject of the complaints expressed recently by several Catholic newspapers against the German administration in Belgium concerning the equality of treatment demanded for the Catholic and the Protestant religions. Baron von Bissing protested particularly against the reproach made that he wishes to "protestantize" Belgium. He feels that he has shown conclusively on different occasions that he is far from having such an intention. In order that his accusers may recognize the injustice of their reproach, it is sufficient to state that the opposite party has made exactly the opposite complaint. He follows therefore a middle course.

Concerning the appointment of functionaries in Belgium, Baron von Bissing says that he regrets that at the beginning only a very few applications were addressed to him by Catholics, but at this time he is satisfied to be able to retain the ones he has. He does not believe, moreover, that an increase in the number of Catholic functionaries would be of essential benefit to the administration.

Concerning the University of Ghent the Governor-General said

ness, on the basis of the lists of the unemployed who had refused the work offered them." In short, said the

---

that the small number of Catholic professors is explained by the fact that his efforts looking toward the retention of Catholic professors have not had, to his regret, the success for which he had hoped; his efforts have met with a very strong resistance.

Finally Baron von Bissing expressed himself as follows concerning the general intentions of his administration and the ends toward which it is aiming, in view of the criticisms uttered in certain circles in Germany which reproach him with an excessive mildness:

"My program is simple. I am not here to molest the country or to adopt reprisals, but to govern it in the interest of Germany.

"Whoever considers the truly difficult nature of the task of assuming the responsibility of the administration of an occupied country, and of collaborating therein, knows that it can not be assumed otherwise than as I have done it. I must bear in mind as much as possible the particularism of the country and the character of its population. If I acted otherwise I should not only make my work more difficult, which after all would be of no importance, but I should impede the progress of German activity. I am guided by law and by justice, and it is my duty to respect the provisions of international law. When I am obliged to punish I do so—that also is a duty which my responsibility requires of me—but I punish only after having considered my duty, and in accordance with my conscience. And is the fact not a merit, which even those who reproach me with having been too mild must recognize in me, that the principles of my administration have prevented disturbances in a country situated so near the rear of the Western Front?

"I am an old soldier and I should not be pleased to find myself forced by necessity to proceed by force of arms against a defenseless population. The best service that I can render to the Emperor and to the country is to govern here in such a manner that bloody sacrifices may be spared our troops, and that it may be necessary to withdraw from the battle-front only the smallest possible number of soldiers. If it is for governing in this way that I am reproached I consent willingly to assume the responsibility for it."

Governor-General, "we must bring happiness to those who in spite of themselves hesitate and are evasive. If we adopt compulsion toward them, it is done in the most human manner possible. If, in certain isolated cases, it is not possible to avoid rigorous treatment, the victims have only to blame those who prevented them from enlisting voluntarily."

The very same day there were *affiches* ordering the restoration of the ruined towns of Belgium,[2] and the

---

[2] Avis

L'administration communale a reçu de Son Excellence le Gouverneur général l'ordre de commencer, à partir du 1er janvier 1917, à démolir les bâtiments qui, par suite d'évènements de guerre, ont été endommagés ou détruits au point de ne plus répondre au but auquel ils étaient destinés autrefois.

Pour certaines ruines situées le long de la voie ferrée, la date fixée pour le commencement des travaux de démolition pourra être avancée.

Les propriétaires de semblables constructions seront exemptés, sur demande, de l'obligation de les démolir, s'ils etablissent qu'ils l'occupent sérieusement et sont à même de les reconstruire sans retard. Les demandes doivent être adressées à M. le Commissaire civil (Zivilkommissar) avant de 1er janvier 1917. Les auteurs des demandes sont tenus de déclarer en même temps par écrit à l'administration communale qu'ils ont remis une demande d'exemption.

La déclaration faite à l'administration communale pour lui annoncer qu'une demande d'exemption a été introduite, entraîne la süspension des travaux de démolition jusqu'à ce qu'une décision soit intervenue et notifiée à l'administration communale.

L'administration communale est tenue de prévenir les propriétaires de tous les bâtiments en ruines (même les propriétaires qui sont absents mais peuvent être avertis par la voie postale) qu'elle est obligée d'en commencer la démolition s'ils ne demandent et n'obtiennent pas une exemption.

Des demandes de subsides pour la reconstruction des bâtiments

injustice of such a demand deepened the indignation of the people. Indeed the *affiches* at that time seemed

endommagés par suite d'évènements de guerre peuvent être adressées à M. le Commissaire civil.

LUBBERT, *Oberst. und Kreischef.*

LOUVAIN, *le 13 décembre* 1916.

(Translation:)

NOTICE

The communal administration has received from His Excellency the Governor-General the order to begin, on January 1, 1917, to demolish the buildings which, as a result of operations of war, have been damaged or destroyed to such an extent which renders it impossible to use them for their former use.

For certain ruins situated along the railroad the date fixed for the beginning of the work of demolition may be advanced.

The proprietors of such buildings, on demand, will be exempted from the obligation to tear them down if they can prove that they really occupy them and are able to reconstruct them without delay. Such requests must be addressed to the Civil Commissioner before January 1, 1917. Those who make such requests will have to declare at the same time in writing, at the communal administration, that they have made a demand for exemption.

The declaration of such a demand of exemption, when made to the communal administration, will operate as a suspension of the work of demolition until a decision can be reached and the communal administration be notified.

The communal administration must notify the proprietors of all buildings in ruins, even those proprietors who are absent but who can be notified by the post, that the commune is obliged to begin to demolish them if they do not demand and obtain an exemption.

Demands for subsidies for reconstructing buildings that have been damaged by acts of war may be addressed to the Civil Commissioner.

LUBBERT, *Oberst. und Kreischef.*

LOUVAIN, *December 13*, 1916.

AVIS CONCERNANT LA RECONSTRUCTION DES BÂTIMENTS DÉTRUITS

Me référant à ma circulaire relative à la démolition et à la reconstruction de bâtiments détruits par suite d'évènements de

to rain down grief and calamity on the land. One of them a few days later announced that the contribution

---

guerre, j'engage les administrations communales à commencer intensivement les travaux de démolition visés par cette circulaire. Il y a lieu de faire observer qu'il s'offre ainsi une excellente occasion d'assurer une occupation stable aux sans-travail et que précisément la saison actuelle, où l'agriculture réclame moins de bras qu'en tout autre moment de l'année, se prête particulièrement à ces travaux.

Le prétexte souvent invoqué que la loi belge défend aux administrations communales de disposer de la propriété des habitants absents ou ne consentant pas à reconstruire, et qu'elles ne sont conséquemment pas autorisées à démolir les bâtiments visés, est réduit à neant par l'arrêté pris par S.E. le Gouverneur général en date du 12 septembre 1916.

En outre, l'attention est attirée tout spécialement sur le grand avantage résultant du fait que d'importants subsides sont assurés pour la démolition et la reconstruction des bâtiments détruits. Ces subsides sont accordés sans aucune obligation de restitution ou de payement d'intérêts. Il convient d'introduire le plus tôt possible les demandes tendantes à l'obtention de ces subsides, afin que le payement puisse s'en faire dans le plus bref délai.

L'autorité allemande attend des administrations communales qu'elles activent énergiquement ces travaux.

Der Zivilkommissar beim Kaiserl.
Kreischef Brüssel v. Wedderkop.

(Translation:)

Notice Concerning the Reconstruction of Destroyed Buildings

Referring to my circular relative to the demolition and to the reconstruction of buildings destroyed by acts of war, I charge the communal administrations to begin vigorously the work of demolition envisaged by this circular. It should be remarked that thus is offered an excellent occasion to give continuous work to the unemployed, and that the present season when agriculture requires fewer

to be paid by Belgium for the year 1917 would be fifty million francs a month, an increase of ten million francs a month over the former contribution, and von Bissing had signed the decrees the same day on which he gave out his interview, stating that the Belgians had been seized and borne off to German mines and quarries solely in the interest of Belgium, which was too poor to support idlers. Another decree of that same day announced that Brussels, Schaerbeek, and several other communes would thereafter be *communes flamandes,* which meant that only the Flemish language would be used in the criminal courts—a part of the plan for the division of the country, and the precursor, many felt, of a decree ordering Flemish as the sole language in use in the schools. And as though the *mitrailleuses* and

---

arms than at any other time of the year, is admirably adapted to this labour.

The pretext so often invoked that the Belgian law prohibits communal administrations from disposing of the property of those inhabitants who are absent or who do not consent to reconstruct their buildings, and that consequently they are not authorized to demolish the buildings in question, is reduced to nothing by the decree issued by His Excellency the Governor-General and bearing date September 12, 1916.

Besides, attention is specially drawn to the great advantage that will result from the fact that important subsidies are provided for the demolition and reconstruction of damaged buildings. These subsidies are accorded without any obligation of restitution or of payment of interest. It will be well to introduce as soon as possible the demands for these subsidies in order that the payment may be made in as little delay as possible.

The German authority expects that the communal administrations will energetically push forward this work.

The Civil Commissioner by the Imperial
Kreischel of Brussels, v. WEDDERKOP.

all this were not enough, a Zeppelin, with horrid whirr of motor, circled low and menacing over the city.

Then on the twentieth of November there was a great red *affiche* on the walls, and a red *affiche* was usually either the signal or the seal of tragedy. This *affiche* ordered that after the twenty-first of November all public establishments, hotels, shops, restaurants, theatres, cinemas in all Brussels were to close at eight o'clock in the evening. No one, unless he were a German or a citizen of a neutral country or of a country allied in war with Germany, could be abroad in the streets without a written permission from the Kommandantur. The reason given for this measure was that there had been "demonstrations" at Ste.-Gudule and at St.-Jacques-sur-Caudenberg on the King's fête, those pathetic demonstrations of sorrow, and of the hope that was trying so hard to keep itself alive. But Brussels thought it was a precautionary measure for the night when the slavers should come to Brussels.[3]

---

[3] Avis

Le 15 novembre, des démonstrations politiques considérables se sont produites dans les églises de Sainte-Gudule et de Saint-Jacques-sur-Caudenberg et continuées sur le parvis des deux églises.

A cette occasion, des Allemands ont été insultés par la foule.

Pour cette raison, j'ordonne ce qui suit:

A partir du 21 novembre, et jusku'à nouvel ordre, tous les établissements publics servant aux divertissements, les hôtels, restaurants, cafés et magasins, devront être fermés à 8 heures du soir.

Le présent arrêté est applicable à tout le territoire de l'agglomération bruxelloise.

Il ne sera fait exception que pour les restaurants, etc., qui auront obtenu de la "Kommandantur" la permission de rester ouverts plus longtemps.

De 8 h. 30 du soir à 4 heures du matin, seules pourront circuler

Indeed, turn where one would in Brussels or in Belgium those days one saw the evidence of some new in-

---

dans les rues les personnes qui en auront obtenu la permission écrite d'une autorité allemande.

La dite interdiction n'est pas applicable aux personnes de nationalité allemande et aux ressortissants de pays alliés ou neutres. Ces personnes devront prouver leur nationalité en montrant leur certificat d'identité.

La dite interdiction n'est pas applicable non plus aux fonctionnaires de la police communale portant leur uniforme, aux employés des compagnies de tramways et des sociétés des veilleurs de nuit et autres entreprises analogues, à la condition qu'ils portent l'uniforme de leurs sociétés et prouvent leur qualité d'employés.

Les infractions aux présentes dispositions seront punies soit d'une amende pouvant atteindre 10,000 marks et d'une peine d'emprisonnement de 3 mois au plus, soit d'une de ces deux peines, à l'exclusion de l'autre. En outre, on pourra prononcer la fermeture, pour une période de temps plus ou moins longue, des établissements publics servant aux divertissements, des restaurants, cafés, magasins, etc.

Les tribunaux et commandants militaires sont compétents pour juger les dites infractions.

Bruxelles, le 18 novembre, 1916.

Der Gouverneur von Brüssel und Brabant.
Hurt, Generalleutnant.

(Translation:)

Notice

On November 15 large political demonstrations were held in the churches of Ste.-Gudule and of St.-Jacques-sur-Caudenberg, and continued on the spaces before the two churches.

On this occasion the Germans were insulted by the crowd.

For this reason I order as follows:

On and after November 21 and until further orders, all public establishments serving for amusement, hotels, restaurants, cafés, and shops must be closed at 8 o'clock in the evening.

The present decree is applicable to the whole agglomeration of

justice. Whenever I drove past Quatre-Bras I would see the sentinels arresting the women with the potatoes which they had thought to take to their hungry children at home. I cannot forget that picture—the women, their meek heads bowed under their thin black shawls, and bent in the pathetic resignation of the patient poor, being led away to prison. *"L'emballage,"* the peasants called it, and to accomplish it there were new and zealous sentinels detailed at that spot which I had seen

---

Brussels. The only exception made will be for restaurants, etc., that have obtained from the Kommandantur permission to remain open for a longer time.

From 8.30 in the evening till 4 o'clock in the morning no one can circulate in the streets except those who will have obtained a written permission from a German authority.

The said interdiction does not apply to persons of German nationality, or persons of Allied or neutral countries. These persons must prove their nationality by showing their certificate of identity.

The said interdiction is not applicable either to functionaries of the communal police in uniform, or to employees of the tramway companies and the societies of night watchmen and other similar enterprises, on condition that they wear the uniform of their society and prove their quality of employees.

Infractions of the present regulations will be punished either by a fine which may go as high as 10,000 marks and by imprisonment for not more than three weeks, or by one of these punishments to the exclusion of the other. Besides, the public establishments serving for amusement, restaurants, cafés, shops, etc., may be closed for a period of time more or less long.

The tribunals and military commandants are competent to try the said infractions.

The Governor of Brussels and Brabant,
HURT, *Lieutenant-General.*

BRUSSELS, *November* 18, 1916.

change in three years from a gay and lively cross-roads, with a popular inn where cyclists and automobilists paused for luncheon or tea, to a grim sentinel-post where every passer-by was halted, and many searched, and often dragged off to prison.

Those who had so confidently hoped that the war would not endure another winter were giving up that hope; the offensive of the Allies, of which Brussels was just then incapable of appreciating the military results, had been to waiting Belgium but one more failure, and from Roumania there was the news of the German victory that seemed so inevitably to arrive with every autumn. And winter was already there—a winter whose snows, some said, would be the shroud of Belgium.

Thus, even when friends gathered together, this sorrow, this pervading sense of tragedy, was never absent. I had gone out one afternoon to van Holder's studio for the unveiling and presentation of a picture that had been painted in those summer days when van Holder's garden was all abloom with flowers and sweet with their perfumes. The steadily falling rain, the garden all sodden and dead, the line of men and women under dripping umbrellas, the gathering in the studio, every one depressed by the war and by personal bereavement, the touching little speeches—and van Holder just informed by his physician that he must go to Switzerland —all this made the moment one the impression of which endures. . . .

I got into my motor to go to the Orangerie; it was twilight, vague figures were scurrying through those sad, deserted streets, hurrying homeward before the hour of the German curfew. And this was Brussels,

once so beautiful and gay and light-hearted in its careless liberty.

Would the long nightmare ever end? Would the land that reeked of German injustice, and bled from German brutality, ever be delivered? Must the little nation, the brave little people that had preferred honour above all, and so instantly flung itself before the German legions at Liége and Namur, and saved Paris, and standing again along the Yser, saved Britain and America and all that their civilizations had wrought—must it drain the cup of sacrifice to the dregs? . . .

It is not a pleasant incident to record in connection with an old man's death, a man whose long life devoted to the pursuit of the vain pomp and glory of this world had been prolonged through so many dark and tragic years, but there was no sorrow in Brussels when the death was announced of the Emperor Franz-Josef. A diplomat told me that in the presence of the hideous deeds in which the last of the many wars the Emperor had known was so prolific, the aged Hapsburg had one day sorrowfully exclaimed:

"Der Krieg hat gar nichts elegantes mehr."

And perhaps that is why, when their old Imperial enemy died in the midst of a war in which not one of the tenets of chivalry had been left unbroken in its relation to them, the Brussels people lifted their eyes indifferently to the staff of the Legation in the Rue Montoyer where the flag of the dual monarchy hung *en berne.*

"L'increvable" they called him in their incorrigible Brussels mockery.

Villalobar and I went to offer our condolences to the Baron von und zu Franckenstein, the Austrian Com-

missioner who occupied the Legation where we used to go to see the Clarys in the old days, and a few days later we all went to the solemn requiem High Mass in Ste.-Gudule for the repose of the soul of his late Sovereign.

Ruddock and I drove to the old pile in the cold and clammy atmosphere of the fog that rolled its grey billows through the city. There on the *parvis* was a group of German staff officers, tall, massive men, gigantic in the dim refracting light of the fog. Standing there in their long, grey great coats, the grey covers on their helmets, strange, weird, terrible silhouettes against the grey fog bank, waiting for the Governor-General to arrive, they looked like monstrous grey ghosts of anthropoids. Villalobar was in one of the handsomest of his many uniforms, a great black cloak with an enormous silver cross on it, and a *chapeau de bras,* with plumes. I in my pelisse, glad for once that American diplomats have no uniform in which to hide themselves, since Marcy decreed that they should be democratic and conspicuous, took my place beside him in the choir—we were almost on the horns of the altar. Lancken was there, holding the great silver helmet that made him Lohengrin when he wore it. The chancel, hung in black velvet with silver ornamentation, was transformed into a *chapelle ardente,* the arms of the Hapsburgs high over the altar, and drawn up on either side were platoons of the Imperial Guards in their *opera-bouffe* uniforms of white with red piping, and with drawn swords. Then the high catafalque under its velvet pall, with a mass of gorgeous chrysanthemums. The choir was filled with German officers of high rank, and the nave and transept were thronged with officers of lower rank and with sol-

diers, and the diplomats were there, Mahmoud Khan and Blancas and Poussette in black, and Cavalcanti in uniform, and the Nonce, shown to the episcopal chair, making the sign of the cross and folding his hands in their violet gloves.

The Governor-General, with all his decorations, the broad orange ribbon of the Black Eagle *en sautoir,* entered, accompanied by Franckenstein and two of the Guards in the comic uniforms. He walked with those stiff, almost automatic, movements, a figure to remark, with his leather skin, shining pomaded hair, his brilliant sick eyes. But he entered with sovereign airs, to the ruffle of drums, to the prominent place reserved for him before the altar, bowed to left and right—and the Mass straightway began.

The celebrant was a chaplain of the German army, or perhaps it was the Austrian army, and he had another chaplain to serve him, their grey trousers and tan boots conspicuous below their priestly vestments. There were two other priests, but no altar boys—there were none to be had, I dare say—but instead there were common soldiers, grey haired, in soiled, ill-fitting uniforms of grey, but solicitous, painfully anxious to please, and besides a big boy scout with an adolescent moustache, and two tonsured monks, one of whom stood with piously folded hands wearing a vacant smile and an expression of silly, almost degenerate meekness.

After the mass, one of the army chaplains preached vehemently, growing very red, pouring forth his harsh gutturals from a thick throat; he extolled the late Emperor, to whom he referred as a Prince of Peace, and, with some inaccuracy in his historical knowledge, said that he had never drawn the sword in war until his

eighty-fourth year, when he was stabbed foully in the back.

I stood there in that cold church—one could see one's breath—with the reflections that always crowded on me in that place, whose scenes, were they reproduced, would form a pageant of the history of the world since the time Godefroi de Bouillon went forth to the crusades. Now it was filled with the grey hordes that had poured down out of northern fogs to overrun the world, led by those men standing there, stalwart, strong, with brutal, rapacious faces, yet gloomy, too, in sodden melancholy, but with no thought of receding—that grey deluge! Villalobar was at my right, whispering his interesting gossip, his amusing observations on everybody; Harrach was on my other side, pointing out now and then some notable, identifying some order on the grey breasts, assiduously assigning every one his rank. . . . There was an enormous man in uniform towering a head above the others, blond, with a heavy, preoccupied expression, enormous yellow moustache, purblindly peering through glasses. *"Un professeur d'histoire; très fameux,"* whispered Harrach. . . . You will have to peer deeply into our epoch, oh famous historian, and with clearer vision than any German yet has shown, to perceive the truth in this complicated mass of human deviltry! . . . Far across the chancel there was a Chinese face, grinning humourously, one of the military attachés down at the *Grand Quartier General,* come up with other attachés to see the show. . . .

The priests were walking slowly about the catafalque with candles and censer and aspersorium—*requiescat in pace.* Were the pale immaculate ghosts of Italian patriots who died in foul dungeons under Austrian mis-

rule half a century before pressing forward in hosts to behold the young monarch who had wronged them so, old now, his long reign ended at last? . . .

That afternoon Mr. Gregory came to the Legation to report that the slave gangs were seizing, more and more, the men of the C.N. and of the C.R.B. and I had a telegram from London to the effect that the British Government would stop the *ravitaillement* if the press continued.

The next morning Villalobar and I went over to the Politische Abteilung; Baron von der Lancken had gone to Berlin; we saw Count Harrach instead. We were as near to despair as we had ever been; we had tried every resource of diplomacy, of tact, of politeness; many and many a time I had put some particularly hard communication into French in order to soften its sometimes too peremptory tone, but now the time for all this was gone. There was a species of relief in the fact, the relief that comes now and then with desperation, those moments when fate may at last be defied to do its worst. I did not translate the latest British Note into diplomatic French; I flung it on to the table and said to the Count:

"Lisez-la."

He read it, and before he could comment I said:

"Et vos hommes saisissent les employés du Comité National et de la C.R.B. tous les jours; et ces Juifs enlèvent les bestiaux de nouveau, ils passent la frontière tous les soirs."

The Count looked up at us.

"Si vous voulez que le ravitaillement craque—qu'il craque," I said.

And the Marquis nodded grave acquiescence. The Count's face was serious and concerned.

"J'écrirai à Berlin," he said.

"Non, télégraphiez," said the Marquis.

"Non," I added; *"téléphonez."*

The Count left the room in a hurry. An instant later he was at the telephone, calling up Berlin.

XXXVIII

THE MONSTROUS THING

And now there was a new phenomenon in Brussels, theretofore unknown, one of those amorphous expressions of the psychology of the crowd, a thing indefinable, instinctive, atavistic, evoked out of the mysterious and unfathomable depths of human consciousness. No one identified it, it went unnamed, unrecognized; men entered into a tacit and spontaneous conspiracy not to mention it, yet each felt it and was himself its helpless victim. That vague, unnamed thing was fear, a monstrous, cruel, odious fear under the dominion of which men felt all the sensations that are ascribed to those who have seen ghosts, or hideous apparitions, vague, spectral emergences beyond the common experience of man. It was not that natural and human shrinking from danger which courage overcomes, it was not mere cowardice, it was deeper, more subtle and terrible, the instinctive dread that animals and savages know, a thing of human instinct that lay beyond the jurisdiction of the reason, from which there was no escape; it was not to be conjured or dismissed. The invasion of the German hordes, the long reign of terror, the persecutions and plottings, the spies and secret agents, the summary trials, the drumhead courts martial, the firing squads, all the enginery of a soulless military despotism, scorning all the restraints that men of honour have de-

vised, had never been able to produce that sensation, but now the gangs of slavers stealing through the land, appearing suddenly at night, tearing men from their beds, from their wives and children, to send them off into that shameful bondage, benumbed the very currents of the soul, destroyed the few of life's satisfactions that were left; men dreaded the coming of the night, and the dawn brought them no surcease or hope.

Brussels had not as yet witnessed any of the shameful scenes, but the great round-up, the man hunt, was closing in. One day it was announced that the *chômeurs* of Tervueren had been summoned, three hundred and seventy of them; they were to report on a certain day at a given hour. The day came, but not one reported. And nothing happened. Had the Germans abandoned their intention, recoiled before the flood of a moral indignation so overwhelming that it could daunt and change the purpose even of German militarism?

But no; they were insensible to moral influence—and the Burgomaster of Brussels had been summoned to give up the lists of *chômeurs*. The stout Lemonnier had refused, point-blank—let the consequences be what they might. And a little handbill was circulating through the city:

WE WILL NOT GO![1]

[1] The hand bill was as follows:

NOUS N'IRONS PAS!

Les Bruxellois se sont entendus. Ils ne se rendent pas à la convocation des Allemands. Ils ne vont pas comme des moutons se laisser conduire à la boucherie.

Dans un grand nombre de communes, beaucoup d'hommes ne se sont pas présentés; ils n'ont pas été inquiétés. Ceux qui s'y sont rendus seuls ont été emmenés.

The order for the men of Antwerp to report had been posted early in November; a similar order was expected to appear on the walls of Brussels at any moment. Harrowing tales were brought to town and told and retold; every one had the story of some friend, some acquaintance, in some village he knew; it made the

---

Honte à ceux qui se présentent par égoïsme, parce qu'ils ont un certificat de complaisance, ou parce qu'ils sont certains d'être laissés en liberté.

Tous pour chacun! chacun pour tous!

Un Belge qui travaille pour l'Allemagne se bat contre sa Patrie.

Qu'ils organisent la chasse à l'homme, nous nous cacherons.

PERSONNE NE SE PRESENTERA

Les Bruxellois se souviendront de MAX!

L'honneur de la Patrie est en leurs mains.

VIVE LA PATRIE! VIVE LE ROI!

NOUS N'IRONS PAS!!!

(Translation:)

WE WILL NOT GO!

The people of Brussels understand. They do not obey the demand of the Germans. They are not going to allow themselves to be led like sheep to the slaughter.

In a large number of communes many men have not presented themselves; they have not been disturbed. Only those who have handed themselves over have been sent away.

Shame on those who present themselves out of selfishness, because they have a certificate of compliance or because they are certain to be given their liberty.

All for each! each for all!

A Belgian who works for the Germans fights against his country.

Let them organize the man-hunt; we shall hide ourselves.

NO ONE WILL PRESENT HIMSELF.

The people of Brussels will remember MAX!

The honour of the country is in their hands.

LONG LIVE THE COUNTRY! LONG LIVE THE KING!

WE WILL NOT GO!!!

terror personal, brought it within the limits of the imagination.

"Do you think they will take men of our class?" a young nobleman asked me one day. He repeated the question a dozen times, and put it to me for days every time that I met him. When a man left his home he never knew, his family did not know, that it was not for the last time; there, ever before all eyes, was the vision, the slave pen, the long ride in open freight wagons in that bitter cold to Germany, the mines, the quarries, or perhaps the Front and the trenches. For it was known that the men taken from Tournai had been sent to dig trenches; it was known by the German *affiche* commanding the men of Tournai to report. *"Ils ne seront pas exposés au feu continu,"* that order concluded.

Written appeals poured into the Legation; pathetic notes and letters in French, in Flemish, looking to America in the latest hour of agony. Women came in person, often tramping in from distant villages, to tell of husbands and sons torn from their homes, boxed like cattle in freight trains, and sent off—they knew not where.

I received hundreds of letters, pleading, imploring protection; men wished to be attached to the Legation so that they might have diplomatic immunity; women came to ask that I take their sons into my home and give them asylum; there were innumerable requests for the cards issued by the C. R. B. testifying that the bearer was employed in the *ravitaillement,* and therefore immune. I even had anonymous letters threatening me if I did not, or if America did not, intervene

and stop the press-gangs. Men were quite beside themselves with fear.

Nothing else was talked of, and when men spoke of the Germans it was with deeper hatred in their tone. The story of the seizures took form and detail; men were herded into rooms, under-officers told them off, pronouncing two words that came to have a sinister and fatal meaning:

"Links, recht."

Those to whom the word *"links"* was spoken passed out one door; those to whom *"recht"* was spoken passed out another; the first meant slavery, the second liberty—at least for the time being; sometimes the slave gang came a second time to the village. Then, wives wailing and screaming, dragging themselves on their knees to the feet of the Uhlans, who, with their crops, whipped them off like dogs. Men and women shuddered at the mere phrase *"envoyé en Allemagne."* To complete the horror the weather grew more and more bitterly cold. Every day trainloads of men swept by, the men crowded like cattle in open cars, without overcoats, without food, seized and taken off before they had had time to provide themselves for the dreadful journey. And yet invariably they went singing "La Brabançonne" or "La Marseillaise," and shouting:

"Nous ne signerons pas!"

Living in this constant fear, this implacable terror of the morrow, men went heavily clothed, for those taken had to leave with what they had on their backs. Many carried large sums on their persons to be used in bribing the soldiers so that they would release them or connive at their escape after they had been taken.

For the net indeed seemed to be closing in; one day

in the middle of November it had been said that the impressments were to begin the following day in the *banlieues* of Brussels—in the communes of Auderghem, Forest, and Uccle.

Sometimes there were rumours, born no doubt of the need of hope; one of them was that President Wilson had sent an ultimatum to Germany saying that if the policy of enslaving Belgians was not abandoned, and the men returned to their homes within twenty-four hours, America would break off diplomatic relations with Germany, that there was nothing to be gained by equivocation, that the President had all the facts from his Minister in Brussels.

"Qu'est-ce que l'Amerique fabrique?" every one asked.

Herbert Spencer says somewhere that in every rumour there is some basis in fact, though the rule did not seem to be without its exception with our experience in Brussels, and there was truth in so much of that rumour as said that the President had all the facts from his Minister in Brussels, who had a cablegram from Washington approving the course he had followed, and saying that Mr. Grew had been instructed to make representations on the basis of the keen interest that the American Government felt in the Belgian civil population, and that the German Government had promised an explanation.

Then hope, for a space, returned again. The brave Lemonnier, having once refused to give up the lists of the *chômeurs* in Brussels, had been arrested for his resistance, but when the Germans could not daunt him he had been released again. He with his *échevins* had come to see Villalobar and me, not for himself—he

never asked anything for himself—but to ask if we could not do something to lighten the lot of M. Max, who, the report was, had been transferred to the cell of a common felon at Berlin.

Days passed; the hope grew. But German purpose is as inflexible as German patience is limitless. A plan once formed is never abandoned, and one day suddenly the Burgomasters of Greater Brussels and of Brabant received an identical circular. It was not posted on the walls, but it was no secret; it was the first explicit declaration that the turn of Brussels had come. The brutal letter ordered the communes "to be ready to hand over the unemployed to be taken away." [2]

---

[2] Gouvernment de Bruxelles et du Brabant

No. 2766, 1 b.

Bruxelles, le 12 novembre 1916.

Avis

À Tous les Bourgmestres du Grand-Bruxelles et du Brabant

Ce n'est pas la population belge qui profitera le moins de l'ordre donné par M. le Gouverneur général de transporter en Allemagne les sans-travail et les chômeurs volontaires qui sont à charge de l'assistance publique. Les classes laborieuses réduites à l'inaction depuis des années trouveront en Allemagne des salaires rémunérateurs, qu'elles ne peuvent trouver en Belgique, en raison principalement du manque de matières premières.

Il est du devoir de toutes les administrations communales belges de prêter leur aide à l'exécution des mesures. Tous les bourgmestres doivent immédiatement remettre au Kreischef—pour le Grand-Bruxelles à la Kommandantur—les listes exigées des ouvriers n'ayant pas d'occupation suffisante. Les communes doivent s'attendre de jour en jour, à partir de cette date, à préparer leurs chômeurs au départ.

Dans les communes où les listes ne seront pas fournies en temps

There was no hesitation, just time enough to meet in joint session, and the Burgomasters of the fifteen

---

voulu, l'administration allemande choisira elle-même les hommes à transporter en Allemagne. Mais elle n'a ni le temps ni les moyens de faire une enquête sur la situation de chaque personne. Si donc, au cours de ce choix, il se produit des cas pénibles ou des erreurs, la responsabilité en retombera sur les bourgmestres qui auront refusé d'aider l'administration allemande. J'insiste sur le fait que les ouvriers une fois transportés en Allemagne ne pourront revenir en Belgique que dans des cas exceptionnels d'extrême urgence ou justifiés par des raisons irrécusables.

Je sévirai avec la plus extrême rigueur contre les bourgmestres qui ne dresseront pas les listes ou qui les dresseront avec négligence, et cela non pas seulement pour désobéissance aux ordres allemands, mais aussi pour avoir méconnu leur devoir vis-à-vis de la population commise à leurs soins.

Der Gouverneur von Brüssel und Brabant,
Hurt, Generalleutnant.

(Translation:)

Government of Brussels and of Brabant
File No. 2766, 1 b.

NOTICE TO ALL THE MAYORS OF GREATER BRUSSELS AND OF BRABANT

Brussels, November 12, 1916.

It is not the Belgian population that will profit the least by the order issued by the Governor-General to transport to Germany the unemployed and those who refuse to work, and are a charge on public charity. The working classes, reduced to idleness for years, will find in Germany remunerative wages, which, principally because of the lack of raw materials, they cannot find in Belgium.

It is the duty of all the Belgian communal administrations to lend their aid to the execution of these measures. All the burgomasters must immediately transmit to the Kreischef —— in the case of Greater Brussels to the Kommandantur —— the required lists of workingmen not having sufficient employment. The communes, from this date, must be ready from day to day to prepare their unemployed for departure.

communes of Greater Brussels sent a reply, saying that they could not deliver to the German authorities the names of fellow-citizens to be torn from their families and constrained to forced labour in Germany without violating their consciences and their duty to their country.[3]

In the communes where the lists are not furnished within the required time, the German administration itself will choose the men to be transported to Germany. However it has neither the time nor the means to inquire into the situation of each person. If then, when the choice is made, there should be unfortunate cases, or errors, the responsibility for them will fall on those burgomasters who refuse to aid the German administration. I call attention to the fact that, once transported to Germany, workmen will be able to return to Belgium only in exceptional cases of extreme urgency, or those justified by irrefutable reasons.

I shall proceed with the most extreme rigour against those burgomasters who do not draw up lists, or who draw them up negligently, and that not only because of disobedience to the German orders, but also for having failed in their duty toward the population committed to their care.

GOVERNOR HURT, *Lieutenant-General.*

[3] ADMINISTRATION COMMUNALE DE BRUXELLES

Cabinet du Bourgmestre,

U-7831. Le 16 novembre 1916.

MONSIEUR LE COMMANDANT DE LA PLACE DE BRUXELLES.—A la suite de l'audience du 14 novembre 1916, les Bourgmestres de l'Agglomération Bruxelloise nous ont donné mandat de vous faire connaître, en leur nom, aussi bien qu'au nôtre, que nous estimons ne pouvoir déférer à l'invitation qui nous a été faite de dresser les listes des ouvriers chômeurs que nous aurions à remettre à l'autorité allemande.

Nous ne pouvons que nous en rapporter aux diverses raisons qui nous ont déjà été produites à l'appui de cette décision. Avant tout, nous pensons que nous ne pourrions, sans méconnaître à la fois la

And Brussels waited in that agony of fear, the shadow of which lay on every home, even the most lux-

---

voix de notre conscience et nos devoirs envers notre Patrie, livrer à l'autorité allemande les noms de concitoyens qui vont être arrachés à leurs familles pour être soumis en Allemagne à un travail forcé.

En nous exprimant ainsi, nous avons la conviction d'être les interprètes des sentiments unanimes de la population tout entière.

Agréez, Monsieur le Commandant, l'assurance de notre parfaite considération.

COMMUNAL ADMINISTRATION
OF BRUSSELS
Office of the Mayor
File U. 7831

Brussels, November 16, 1916.

MR. COMMANDER:

Following the meeting of November 14, 1916, the Mayors of Greater Brussels have authorized us to inform you in their name as well as in our own, that we are of the opinion that we can not accept the invitation made to us to prepare lists of workmen without employment to be remitted to the German authorities.

We can but refer again to the different reasons which have already been cited in support of this decision. First and foremost, we think that we could not deliver to the German authorities the names of fellow-citizens who are to be torn from their families, to be constrained to forced labour in Germany, without misinterpreting the voice of our conscience and our duties to our country.

In expressing ourselves thus we are convinced that we are voicing the unanimous sentiments of the entire population.

Accept, Mr. Commander, the assurances of our high consideration.

The Council of Aldermen,
(Signed) MAURICE LEMONNIER.

Secretary of Council,
(Signed) M. VAUTHIER.

To the Commanding Officer of the City of Brussels.

urious. I recall one of them; there were pictures by Rubens and van Dyck on the wall, and an exquisite refinement of taste in the *objets d'art* all about. We sat

---

Administration Communale
de Bruxelles

Cabinet du Bourgmestre
U 7698

Bruxelles, 27 octobre 1916.

Excellence:

J'ai l'honneur de communiquer à Votre Excellence copie de la lettre que le Collège échevinal de Bruxelles a adressée à l'autorité allemande, au sujet des listes de chômeurs.

Je prie Votre Excellence d'agréer les assurances nouvelles de ma haute considération.

Le Bourgmestre f.f,
(Signé) M. Lemonnier.

À Son Excellence Monsieur Brand Whitlock,
Ministre des États-Unis, Bruxelles.

Communal Administration
of Brussels
Office of the Mayor
File U 7698

Brussels, October 27, 1916.

Excellency:

I have the honour to transmit herewith to Your Excellency a copy of the letter which the Council of Aldermen of Brussels has addressed to the German authorities regarding the lists of unemployed.

I beg Your Excellency to accept the renewed assurances of my high consideration.

Acting Mayor,
(Signed) Maurice Lemonnier.

in silence after dinner; there was no expression for this monstrous thing, beyond that of one of the gentlemen

---

His Excellency Mr. Brand Whitlock,
Minister of the United States,
Brussels.

U 7682 le 26 octobre 1916.

Monsieur le Commandant:

Nous avons l'honneur de répondre à votre lettre du 20 octobre 1916, n 11 M.P. 2515, par laquelle vous nous demandez d'établir une liste des ouvriers actuellement inoccupés.

Nous ne possédon pas une liste de ce genre et nous ne pourrions dès lors vous la fournir.

Vous nous faites observer que le relevé des ouvriers sans travail est rendu nécessaire par des considérations d'intérêt général.

La population n'ayant pas cessé d'être parfaitement calme, nous devons supposer que les circonstances que vous invoquez sont exclusivement d'ordre politique.

Nous pensons que les Administrations communales ne sauraient être tenues de prêter leur concours au pouvoir occupant pour la réalisation de toutes les mesures que celui-ci estime être commandées par des circonstances de cette nature.

Nous ne saurions oublier, en outre, que des promesses ont été faites par les autorités allemandes occupant la Belgique; ces promesses garantissaient à nos concitoyens, de la part du Gouvernement allemand, une complète liberté de travail et elles nous ont inspiré une entière confiance.

Vous trouverez ci-annexées les réponses des quinze communes de l'Agglomération bruxelloise.

Agréez, Monsieur le Commandant, l'assurance de notre parfaite considération.

(Signé) Le Collège Échevinal de La Ville de Bruxelles.

Monsieur le Commandant de la Place de Bruxelles.

U 7682. October 26, 1916.

Mr. Commandant:

We have the honour to reply to your letter of October 20th, 1916, No. 11 M.P. 2515, by which you asked us to send up a list of

present, who sat gazing vacantly before him and, from time to time, all unconsciously, saying as if to himself:

"Quelle horreur! Quelle horreur!"

---

workers at the present time without employ. We do not possess a list of this nature and we could not, for that reason, furnish you with it.

You call our attention to the fact that the statement of unemployed workmen is made necessary by considerations of general interest. As the population has not ceased to be perfectly calm we must suppose that the circumstances which you invoke are exclusively of a political nature. We think that the communal administrations could not be obliged to lend their assistance to the occupying Power to carry out all the measures that the latter deems necessary through circumstances of this nature.

We could not forget, above all, that promises had been given by the German authorities occupying Belgium. These promises guaranteed to our fellow-citizens, on the part of the German Government, a complete liberty of work. These promises have inspired us with complete confidence.

You will find enclosed the replies of the fifteen communes of Greater Brussels.

We are, Sir, etc.

(Signed) The Council of Aldermen of Brussels.

To the Military Commandant of Brussels.

XXXIX

DOCUMENTS IN EVIDENCE

As in looking over my notes and reading memoranda furnished me at the time, I live over again those terrible days of the autumn and winter of 1916, with their darkness and their cold and their hourly tale of horror, I wonder how we ever lived through them at all. The pitiless and insensate cruelty, the brutal indifference to all human rights and human dignity that characterized this restoration of human slavery in our time, the violence to every moral sentiment and the strain imposed upon the sympathies by the ruthless deeds that were all about us, made those days in many ways the saddest that Belgium had endured. There were no words for it then; there are none now. I could only write to my Government that it was enough to cause one to despair of the future of the human race, and find the words weak and inadequate to the expression of all that I felt, all that I suffered, and know something like shame that I could write calmly of it at all in the cold and formal terms of an official report. Better, I often thought, yield to the constant and importunate temptation to cry out against it, in some hot flash of rage and indignation, to have done with the too polite expressions of diplomacy, to call things, for once in the world, by their right name, and, when one meant slavery to say slavery instead of deportation. But we were still officially neu-

tral, we of America, and in any position of public responsibility one must think of many things at a time. And there was always the *ravitaillement,* to which I had clung that those poor wronged people might at least have their daily bread, that the brave little race that had had the excruciating and immortal honour to stand in history as the symbol of heroic resistance to tyranny might live, and with it the liberty which it had conquered so long before and in which it had felt itself so secure.

The policy of carrying off into slavery the people of a conquered territory was characteristic of the military chiefs who celebrated their accession to undisputed power in Germany by its inauguration, and they carried it out amid the amazement and horror of the civilised world, with brutal accompaniments that affirmed the essentially savage qualities of their creed. And that no hideous detail might be wanting, with a face of brass they justified it by hypocrisies that were as revolting as the acts they sought to excuse.

A description of the deeds of those field-grey press-gangs in any one of the lovely little villages of Flanders or Brabant might serve as a résumé of what went on everywhere, if it were not for the fact that the slight differences in detail and method, marking the varied taste and the virtuosity in cruelty of local commandants, throws a flood of light on the essentially irresponsible nature of the whole German organization. The earlier pretense that they were taking only those men who were living in idleness on the charity of their absent Government was abandoned even as soon as it was put forth. It is perhaps well that it was, since that position was as untenable under international law and the code

of morals professed by every nation that had a sovereign and a seal, as the indiscriminate slave-driving that followed. And the excuse that the men wished to labour was equally stupid and void, for the men would not work when offered it, and were not even shown the consideration inspired by those economic motives which, when human motives were wanting, once led masters to feed their slaves sufficiently to support them in a physical state fit for labour. And if, among the intellectual classes of Germany, among journalists or priests or pastors or professors, or among bourgeois or working men or even Socialists preaching Karl Marx's evangel of the dignity and authority and international solidarity of labour, there was any objection or any opposition, any moral repugnance anywhere in the German nation, then or later, it never found, so far as I know, any public voice or utterance. I was told that Bissing disapproved, and that certain of his henchmen disapproved, and I heard stories to the effect that soldiers in executing the orders actually wept at the scenes they were compelled to witness, and that even certain officers turned away in shame, but not one ever gave any public expression to the sentiments that did them such unusual credit.

The policy, in defiance, one would say, of the conventions of The Hague, if it did not seem ridiculous to invoke again those mutilated charters wherein short years ago we thought to record the progress of the human species, had been instituted, as I have shown, as early as 1915 in the zone of operations, that inferno whose history will not be written until its rightful occupants shall have been released to recount their hideous sufferings. But that was not surprising; anything was to be

expected of the *operationsgebiet.* It spread up into the lowlands of Flanders where old men of the landsturm were quartered in peasants' homes, living in some sort of understanding under a *modus vivendi* by which they got on well enough, carrying water for the housewives, helping with the household tasks, able to converse in those vocables that are so much alike in Flemish and in low German, and perhaps paving the way, as Bissing shrewdly divined, to some sort of an understanding with the population, which he hoped by his subtle schemes to turn to the Imperial advantage later on.

But the Governor-General's determination to bring happiness to the unemployed of Belgium in spite of themselves by the humane compulsions of the press-gang, was not, as the Governor-General might have anticipated, appreciated by the people, and there were presented to him many protests, the first of which was that of the great Cardinal himself.

As early as the nineteenth of October, when the news of the deportations was spreading abroad, His Eminence had written to the Governor-General a letter which he sent to the Baron von der Lancken to be delivered to his chief. The Cardinal's note transmitting the protest to the Baron contained a paragraph of the highest spirit, which itself would have disposed of all the Governor-General's specious reasons, if the Cardinal could have got his letter published.

"I hope," he wrote to Baron von der Lancken, "that you will employ all your influence with the superior authorities to avoid such an outrage. And do not talk to us, I beg you, of the need of protecting domestic order or alleviating the burdens of public charity. Spare us that bitter irony. You know well that public order is not threatened and that all the moral and civil influences would lend you spontaneously their aid if it were in danger. The unemployed

are not a burden to the official charity, and it is not your money which aids them."

Von Bissing had no sooner received and replied to the Cardinal's protest, and then read the Cardinal's rejoinder,[1] than he was involved in another correspond-

[1] Malines, le 19 octobre 1916.

Monsieur le Baron:

J'ai l'honneur d'envoyer à Son Excellence Monsieur le Baron von Bissing une lettre dont je joins ici une copie.

Monsieur le Gouverneur général a exprimé tant de fois, même publiquement, sa volonté de réserver une large part de sa sollicitude aux intérêts du pays occupé; vous-même, Monsieur le Baron, avez si souvent affirmé le désir des autorités allemandes de ne pas perpétuer, sous le régime d'occupation, l'état de guerre des premiers jours, que je ne puis croire à la mise à execution des mesures dont votre Gouvernement menace les ouvriers réduits, bien malgré eux, au chômage.

J'espère que vous userez de toute votre influence auprès des autorités supérieures afin de prévenir un pareil attentat.

Et ne nous parlez pas, je vous prie, du besoin de protéger l'ordre extérieur ou d'alléger les charges de la bienfaisance publique. Epargnez-nous cette amère ironie. Vous savez bien que l'ordre n'est pas menacé et que toutes les influences morales et civiles vous prêteraient spontanément main-forte s'il était en danger. Les chômeurs ne sont pas à la charge de la bienfaisance officielle; ce n'est pas de vos finances que leur vient le secours.

Jugez s'il n'y va pas de l'intérêt de l'Allemagne autant que du nôtre, de respecter les engagements souscrits par deux hautes personnalités de votre Empire.

J'ai confiance que mes efforts auprès de M. le Gouverneur-général et auprès de vous ne seront ni mal interprétés ni méconnus, et je vous prie d'agréer, Monsieur le Baron, l'assurance de mes sentiments les plus distingués.

(Signé) D. J. Cardinal Mercier,
Archevêque de Malines.

ence, this time with the workingmen themselves who, on the thirtieth of October, through the Socialist organiza-

---

A Monsieur le Baron von der Lancken,

Chef du départment politique près le Gouverneur général,

Bruxelles.

(Translation:)

Malines, October 19, 1915.

Baron:

I have the honour to send to His Excellency the Baron von Bissing a letter of which I add here a copy.

The Governor-General has expressed many times, even publicly, his wish to reserve a large part of his solicitude for the interest of the occupied country. Yourself, Baron, have so often affirmed the desire of the German authorities not to perpetuate, under the régime of occupation, the state of war of the first days, that I cannot believe that the measures by which your Government menaces the working men reduced, in spite of themselves, to unemployment will be placed in execution.

I hope that you will use all your influence with superior authorities in order to prevent such an outrage.

And do not talk to us, I beg you, of the need of protecting domestic order or alleviating the burdens of public charity. Spare us that bitter irony. You know well that public order is not threatened, and that all the moral and civil influences would lend you spontaneously their aid if it were in danger. The unemployed are not a burden on official charity, and it is not your money that aids them.

Consider if it is not in the interest of Germany as much as in our own, to respect engagements signed by two high personalities of your Empire.

I have confidence that my efforts towards the Governor-General and towards you will not be misinterpreted or misunderstood, and I beg you to accept, Baron, the expression of my most distinguished sentiments.

(Signed) D. J. Cardinal Mercier, Archbishop of Malines.

To Baron von der Lancken,

Chief of the Political Department near the Governor-General,

Brussels.

tions and the independent labour unions, protested against the deportations. The Governor-General re-

---

Archevêché
de
Malines

Malines, le 19 octobre 1916.

Monsieur le Gouverneur Général:

Au lendemain de la capitulation d'Anvers, la population affolée se demandait ce qu'il adviendrait des Belges en âge de porter les armes ou qui arriveraient à cet âge avant la fin de l'occupation. Les supplications des pères et mères de famille me déterminèrent à interroger M. le gouverneur d'Anvers, le baron von Huene, qui eut l'obligeance de me rassurer et de m'autoriser à rassurer les parents angoissés. Le bruit s'était répanda à Anvers, cependant, qu'à Liége, à Namur, à Charleroi, des jeunes gens avaient été saisis et emmenée de force en Allemagne. Je priai donc M. le gouverneur von Huene de vouloir me confirmer par écrit la garantie, qu'il m'avait déjà donnée verbalement, que rien de pareil ne s'effectuerait à Anvers. Il me répondit tout de suite que les bruits relatifs aux déportations étaient sans fondement et, sans hésiter, me remit par écrit, entre autres déclarations, la suivante: "Les jeunes gens n'ont point à craindre d'être emmenée en Allemagne, soit pour y être enrôlés dans l'armée, soit pour y être employés à des travaux forcés."

Cette déclaration écrite et signée fut communiquée publiquement au clergé et aux fidèles de la province d'Anvers, ainsi que Votre Excellence pourra s'en assurer par le document ci-inclus, en date du 16 octobre 1914, qui fut lu dans toutes les églises.

Dés l'arrivée de votre prédécesseur, feu le baron von der Goltz, à Bruxelles, j'eus l'honneur de me présenter chez lui et lui demandai de vouloir ratifier pour la généralité du pays, sans limite de temps, les garanties que le général von Huene m'avait données pour la province d'Anvers. M. le gouverneur général retint dans ses mains ma requête, afin de l'examiner à loisir. Le lendemain, il voulut bien venir en personne à Malines m'apporter son approbation et me confirmer, en présence de deux aides de camp et de mon secrétaire particulier, la promesse que la liberté des citoyens belges serait respectée.

Douter de l'autorité de pareils engagements, c'eût été faire injure aux personnalités qui les avaient souscrits, et je m'employai donc à raffermir, par tous les moyens de persuasion en mon pouvoir, les inquiétudes persistantes des familles intéressées.

Or, voici que votre Gouvernement arrache à leurs foyers des ouvriers réduits, malgré eux, au chômage, les sépare violemment de leurs femmes et de leurs enfants et les déporte en pays ennemi. Nombreux sont les ouvriers qui ont déjà subi ce malheureux sort; plus nombreux ceux que menacent les mêmes violences.

Au nom de la liberté domicile et de la liberté de travail des citoyens belges; au nom de l'inviolabilité des familles; au nom des intérêts moraux que compromettrait gravement le régime de la déportation; au nom de la parole donnée par le gouverneur de la province d'Anvers et par le Gouverneur général, représentant immédiat de la plus haute autorité de l'Empire allemand, je prie respectueusement Votre Excellence de vouloir retirer les mesures de travail forcé et de déportation intimées aux ouvriers belges et de vouloir réintégrer dans leurs foyers ceux qui déjà ont été déportés.

Votre Excellence appréciera combien me serait pénible le poids de la responsabilité que j'aurais à porter vis-à-vis des familles, si la confiance qu'elles vous ont accordée par mon entremise et sur mes instances était lamentablement décue.

Je m'obstine à croire qu'il n'en sera pas ainsi.

Agréez, Monsieur le Gouverneur général, l'assurance de ma très haute considération.

(Signé) D. J. Cardinal Mercier,
Archevêque de Malines.

Son Excellence Monsieur le Baron von Bissing,
Gouverneur général,
Bruxelles.

(Translation:)

Archbishopric of Malines

Malines, October 19, 1916.

Mr. Governor General:

The day after the surrender of Antwerp the frightened population asked itself what would become of the Belgians of age to bear arms or who would reach that age before the end of the

occupation. The entreaties of the fathers and mothers of families determined me to question the Governor of Antwerp, Baron von Huene, who had the kindness to reassure me and to authorize me to reassure in his name the agonized parents. The rumour had spread at Antwerp, nevertheless, that at Liége, Namur and Charleroi young men had been seized and taken by force to Germany. I therefore asked Governor von Huene to be good enough to confirm to me in writing the guarantee which he had given to me orally, to the effect that nothing similar would happen in Antwerp. He answered me immediately that the rumours concerning deportations were without basis, and unhesitatingly he sent me in writing, among other statements, the following:

"Young men need have no fear that they will be taken to Germany, either to be there enrolled in the army or to be employed for forced labour."

This declaration, written and signed, was publicly transmitted to the clergy and to those of the faith of the province of Antwerp, as Your Excellency can see from the document enclosed herewith, dated October 16, 1914, which was read in all the churches.

Upon the arrival of your predecessor, the late Baron von der Goltz, at Brussels, I had the honour of presenting myself at his house and asking him to be good enough to ratify for the entire country, without time limit, the guarantees which General von Huene had given to me for the province of Antwerp. The Governor-General retained this request in his possession in order to examine it at his leisure. The following day he was good enough to come in person to Malines to bring me his approval, and confirmed to me, in the presence of two aides-de-camp and of my private secretary, the promise that the liberty of Belgian citizens would be respected.

To doubt the authority of such undertakings would have been to have reflections on the persons who had made them, and I took steps therefore to allay, by all the means of persuasion in my power, the anxieties which persisted in the interested families.

Notwithstanding all this your Government now tears from their homes workmen reduced, in spite of their efforts, to a state of unemployment, separates them by force from their wives and children, and deports them to enemy territory. Numerous workmen

have already undergone this unhappy lot; more numerous are those who are threatened by the same acts of violence.

In the name of the liberty of domicile and of the liberty of work; in the name of the inviolability of families; in the name of the moral interests which the measures of deportation would deeply compromise; in the name of the word given by the government of the province of Antwerp and by the Governor-General, immediate representative of the highest authority of the German Empire, I respectfully beg Your Excellency to be kind enough to withdraw the measures of forced labour and of deportation threatened the Belgian workmen, and to be good enough to reinstate in their homes those who have already been deported.

Your Excellency will appreciate how painful would be for me the weight of the responsibility that I would have to bear as regards these families if the confidence which they have given you through my intermediary and at my request had been lamentably deceived.

I persist in believing that it will not be thus.

Accept, Mr. Governor-General, the assurance of my very high consideration.

(Signed) D. J. Cardinal Mercier,
Archbishop of Malines.

Annexe à la lettre récédence: Lettre du Cardinal Mercier (16 octobre 1914), au Clergé de la Province d'Anvers.

Archevêché
de
Malines

Malines, le 16 octobre 1914.

Chers Confrères et dévoués Collaborateurs:

Le clergé de la province d'Anvers est, en partie, dispersé, et je n'ai pas de moyen sûr d'entrer en communication directe avec vous tous. Je prie donc ceux d'entre vous qui recevront ces lignes de vouloir les transmettre aux confrères avec lesquels ils sont en relation.

Il est urgent que MM. les curés et vicaires rentrent dans leur paroisse, s'ils l'ont quitée. Les voies sont libres, d'ailleurs, et la sécurité publique est partout garantie. Le retour de clergé raffermira les courages; à mesure que les foyers se repeupleront, les honnêtes gens feront la chasse aux maraudeurs, se remettront au travail, et la vie normale reprendra sensiblement son cours.

M. le gouverneur d'Anvers, Freiherr von Hoiningen, général Huene, m'a autorisé à vous faire en son nom et à communiquer, par votre obligeante entremise, à nos populations, les trois déclarations suivantes:

1°. Les jeunes gens n'ont point à craindre d'être emmenés en Allemagne, soit pour y être enrôlés dans l'armée, soit pour y être employés à des travaux forcés;

2°. Si des infractions individuelles au règlement de police sont commises, l'autorité en recherchera les auteurs responsables et les punira, sans faire retomber la responsabilité sur l'ensemble de la population;

3°. Les autorités allemandes et belges ne négligeront rien pour assurer des vivres aux populations.

Même dans les paroisses où l'église et le presbytère sont dévastées, j'invite instamment le pasteur à rejoindre son troupeau, à organiser le culte dans un local provisoire, soit dans une salle de patronage, soit dans une grange ou dans une maison particulière, et à demander pour lui-même un gîte chez un de ses fidèles paroissiens.

Le premier soin du curé, après sa réintégration au milieu des siens, sera de former un Comité de Secours qu'il dirigera et qui sera composé des personnes influentes et généreuses de la paroisse.

Ce comité aura pour mission de procurer un abri, fût-il provisoire, aux familles en détresse; de les aider à trouver des moyens immédiats de subsistance; de les exhorter à reprendre les travaux des champs, les semailles, les métiers, de rouvrir, au plus tôt, aux enfants, les écoles et les catéchismes; et, en général, de donner à tous le réconfort moral et la confiance religieuse dont tant d'âmes ont besoin aux heures douloureuses que nous traversons.

Les paroisses sur lesquelles le malheur s'est moins lourdement abattu ont un devoir strict de charité à remplir envers les populations les plus éprouvées. Elles aussi auront donc leur comité de secours, elles enverront leurs aumônes à l'archevêché, qui en fera la distribution selon les besoins du diocèse.

Les Pouvoirs publics interviendront, assurément, pour la reconstitution définitive des maisons détruites par la guerre, mais l'initiative privée de la charité doit pourvoir d'urgence aux frais de premier établissement et de premiers travaux de culture; c'est à cette

initiative généreuse que notre vaillant et dévoué clergé doit faire appel.

Les personnes qui ont de la fortune doivent considérer comme une obligation rigoureuse de charité de venir en aide aux malheureux et de nous mettre en mesure d'exercer auprès d'eux notre ministère.

Jusqu'à nouvel ordre, nous accordons, le vendredi et les jours de jeûne, la dispense du maigre.

Recevez, je vous prie, chers confrères et dévoués collaborateurs, les assurances de mon religieux dévouement.

D. J. Cardinal Mercier,
Archevêque de Malines.

Translation:

Archbishopric of Malines.

Antwerp, October 16th, 1914.

Dear Confrères and Devoted Collaborators:

The clergy of the province of Antwerp is largely scattered and I have no direct means of communicating with all of you. I therefore request those among you who read these lines to be good enough to transmit them to their confrères with whom they are in communication.

It is urgent that the curés and the vice-curés return to their parishes if they have left them. The highways are open and public security is guaranteed everywhere. The return of the clergy will strengthen the courage of the people; as the homes are repopulated the honest people will expel the robbers; they will resume work, and life will soon return to its normal course.

The Governor of Antwerp, General the Baron von Huene, has authorized me to inform you in his name, and to communicate by your obliging intermediary to our population, the three following declarations:

(1) The young men need not fear being taken to Germany, either to be enrolled in the army or to be employed at forced labour.

(2) If individual infractions of police regulations are committed, the authorities will institute a search for the responsible parties and will punish them, without placing the responsibility on the entire population.

(3) The German and the Belgian authorities will spare no effort to assure the distribution of food to the population.

I earnestly request the pastor to rejoin his flock, even in the parishes where the church and presbytery have been destroyed, and to conduct the services in some improvised place, either in a hall or in a barn or in a private house, and to ask shelter for himself in the home of one of his faithful flock.

The first duty of the Curé, after his return amidst his parishioners, will be to form a relief committee, which he will supervise and which will be composed of the notable persons in the parish. The mission of this committee will be to provide shelter for families in distress, even though it be only temporary; to help them to find immediate means of subsistence; to urge them to take up again their work in the fields, sowing, working at their trades, etc.; to open as soon as possible the schools for the children and to instruct them in their catechism; and, in general, to give to every one the moral comfort and religious confidence which so many souls require in the unhappy hours we are passing through.

The less unfortunate parishes have a bounden duty to perform toward the populations who have suffered more. They must also organize their relief committees and send their monetary assistance to the Archbishopric (the administration of the Archbishopric, if it please God, will be reinstalled at Malines on the 20th instant), which will distribute it according to the needs of the diocese.

The public authorities will, of course, assure the rebuilding of the houses destroyed by the war, but charitable private initiative must provide at once for the first buildings and for the first work of farming, and it is to this generous initiative that our devoted clergy must make its appeal.

Persons who are possessed of some means must consider it a rigorous obligation of charity to come to the assistance of the unfortunate and to enable us to perform our duties in our religious capacity. Until further orders abstinence from fasting will be allowed on Fridays and other fast days.

Please accept, my dear confrères and devoted collaborators, the assurances of my religious devotion.

(Signed) D. J. Cardinal Mercier,
Archbishop of Malines.

Bruxelles, le 26 octobre, 1916.

MONSIEUR LE CARDINAL:

Dans son honorée lettre du 19 octobre, Votre Eminence m'a adressé la demande que les chômeurs belges ne soient pas transportés en Allemagne. Tout en appréciant à sa juste valeur le point de vue sur lequel Votre Eminence se place, je crois devoir vous répondre que vous n'avez pas envisagé tous les aspects du problème, plein de difficultés, du chômage en Belgique. Ce sont surtout les circonstances tout à fait anormales amenées par deux années de guerre dont Votre Eminence ne tient pas compte dans toute leur portée. Les mesures prises, dont vous désirez le retrait, ne sont que l'expression d'une nécessité impérieuse, conséquence inévitable de la guerre. Vous en trouverez plus loin l'exposé.

Votre Eminence commence par rappeler les déclarations faites par mon prédécesseur et le gouverneur militaire d'Anvers, au mois d'octobre 1914. Ces déclarations se rapportaient à des faits liès encore directement aux opérations militaires. Elles concernaient les Belges aptes au service militaire qui, suivant les coutumes de guerre généralement admises, auraient pu être emmenés comme prisonniers civils en Allemagne. A cette époque, l'Angleterre et la France enlevèrent sur les bateaux neutres naviguant en haute mer tous les Allemands âgés de dix-sept à cinquante ans, pour les interner dans des camps de concentration. L'Allemagne n'a pas appliqué la même mesure à la Belgique. Les déclarations faites à Votre Eminence pour pouvoir rassurer la population ont été strictement suivies. En tout cas, ces déclarations étaient une preuve des bonnes intentions avec lesquelles le Gouvernement général allemand prenait en main l'administration du territoire occupé. Par suite de l'émigration clandestine en masse de jeunes gens voulant joindre l'armée belge, les autorités allemandes auraient été bien justifiées d'imiter l'example de l'Angleterre et de la France. Elles ne l'ont pas fait.

L'emploi des chômeurs belges en Allemagne, inauguré seulement après deux années de guerre, diffère essentiellement de la mise en captivité des hommes aptes au service militaire. La mesure n'est donc plus en rapport avec la conduite de la guerre proprement dite, mais est motivée par des causes sociales et économiques.

L'isolement économique de l'Allemagne, poursuivi par l'Angleterre sans merci et avec la dernière rigueur, s'est étendu et a pesé de plus

en plus sur la Belgique. L'industrie et le commerce belges dépendent largement de l'importation de matières premières et de l'exportation d'objets fabriqués furent frappés dans leurs bases vitales. La conséquence inévitable était le manque de travail dans les masses de la population. Le système de subventions allouées aux chômeurs sur une grande échelle pouvait paraître acceptable sous condition d'une courte durée de la guerre. La longue durée comportait une exploitation abusive de ces allocations et produisait un état de choses intenable au point de vue social. Des Belges clairvoyants se sont, déjà au printemps 1915, addressés à moi, pour en démontrer les périls. Ils ont insisté sur le fait que, quiconque fournisse les moyens à présent, les allocations retomberont en fin de compte à la charge des forces vives de la Belgique. Ils ont exposé, en outre, que les allocations induisent les ouvriers à s'adonner et à s'habituer à la paresse. La suite inévitable du chômage de longue durée serait la décadence morale et physique des ouvriers. Particulièrement, les ouvriers qualifiés perdraient les aptitudes techniques de leur métier et deviendraient, au temps de paix à venir, inutilisables pour l'industrie. C'est sur ces instances et en collaboration avec le ministère belge compétent, que mes ordonnances du mois d'août 1915 contre le chômage volontaire ont été élaborées. Elles furent complétées par l'ordonnance du 15 mai, 1916. Ces ordonnances ne prevoient la contrainte que dans le cas où un ouvrier refuse, sans motif valable, d'accepter un travail approprié à ses aptitudes et offert à un salaire convenable, et tombe ainsi à la charge de la charité publique. Tout refus motivé par le droit des gens est formellement reconnu valable. Par conséquent, aucun ouvrier ne peut être contraint à participer à des entreprises de guerre. Votre Eminence voudra reconnaître que ces ordonnances sont fondées sur de saines considérations de législation qui, il est vrai, mettent les intérêts généraux au-dessus de la liberté individuelle. Les plaies sociales constatées en 1915 s'étant avec le temps développées en calamité publique, il s'agit à présent d'appliquer efficacement les ordonnances en question.

Dans sa lettre, Votre Eminence invoque le haut idéal des vertus familiales. Il m'est permis de répondre que je place cet idéal, comme Votre Eminence, très haut, mais pour cette raison même, je dois dire aussi que les classes ouvrières courant le plus grand danger de perdre complètement tout idéal, si l'état actuel, qui

ne peut qu'empirer, perdure. Car la paresse est le pire ennemi de la famille. Certainement, l'homme qui travaille au loin pour les siens—ce qui d'ailleurs se faisait de tous les temps, parmi les ouvriers belges—contribue mieux au bien-être de sa famille que le chômeur restant chez lui. Les ouvriers acceptant du travail en Allemagne peuvent d'ailleurs rester en relations avec leurs familles. Ils obtiennent dans des intervalles réguliers des congés pour revenir au pays. Ils peuvent emmener leur famille en Allemagne, où ils trouveront aussi des prêtres connaissant leur langue.

Dans son simple et bon sens, le peuple a, pour une bonne partie, bien compris ses vérités et par dizaines de milliers des ouvriers belges sont allés de leur plein gré en Allemagne. Placés au même rang que les ouvriers allemands, ils gagnent des salaires élevés qu'ils n'ont jamais connus en Belgique. Au lieu de tomber dans la misère comme leurs camarades restés chez eux, ils se relèvent aussi bien eux-mêmes que leurs familles. D'autres, en grand nombre, aimeraient suivre cet exemple. Ils n'osent pas, parce que dés influences exercées sur eux systématiquement les fond hésiter. S'ils ne se libèrent pas à temps, ils doivent subir les contraintes de la loi. La responsabilité pour des rigueurs qui ne pourraient pas être évitées retomberait sur eux qui les ont empêchés de travailler.

Pour juger enfin de la situation dans l'ensemble, je prie Votre Excellence de vouloir donner son attention aux explications suivantes qui sont l'essence même du problème:

L'isolement pratiqué par l'Angleterre a contraint les territoires occupés à entrer dans une communauté d'intérêts économiques avec l'Allemagne. Presque le seul pays avec lequel la Belgique peut entretenir des échanges commerciaux, c'est l'Allemagne. Bien que ce soit contraire à l'usage entre pays ennemis, l'Allemagne n'a pas défendu d'effectuer des paiements en Belgique et, par conséquent, il y a toujours de l'argent allemand qui rentre dans le pays. Les salaires des ouvriers travaillant en Allemagne augmenteront encore le flux. D'ailleurs, l'occupation en général apporte continuellement de l'argent en Belgique et cela en l'ajoutant aux contributions de guerre qui, comme il est établi et reconnu, sont dépensées entièrement dans le pays. La communauté d'intérêts résultant des faits impose par la logique des choses, aux deux parties, la nécessité

d'échanger et d'équilibrer les éléments de la vie économique. Des centaines de milliers étant sans travail en Belgique, tandis que, en Allemagne, on manque de bras, il devient un devoir, aussi bien au point de vue social qu'économique, d'employer les chômeurs belges en un travail productif en Allemagne, nécessité par la communauté d'intérêts. S'il y a des objections à faire contre cet état de choses, il faut s'adresser à l'Angleterre qui, par sa politique d'isolement, a crée cette contrainte.

Votre Eminence voudra bien voir dans ce qui précède que le problème est très complexe. J'en éprouverais une satisfaction si, après mes explications, vous vouliez l'examiner au point de vue social et économique.

Agréez, Monsieur le Cardinal, l'expression de ma très haute considération.

(Signé) Frh. von Bissing,
Generaloberst.

A Son Eminence le Cardinal Mercier,
Archevêqué Malines,
Malines.

Translation:

Brussels, October 26, 1916.

Mr. Cardinal:

By his honoured letter of the 19th October, Your Eminence made the request that the Belgian unemployed be not taken to Germany. While appreciating to its just value the point of view taken by Your Eminence, I believe I must reply that you have not considered the problem in all its aspects, full of difficulties as it is. Your Eminence seems not to take into account the abnormal circumstances created by two years of war. The measures taken, the repeal of which you desire, are but the expression of an imperative necessity, an inevitable consequence of the war. You will find below the *exposé*.

Your Eminence begins by recalling the declarations made by my predecessor and the Military Governor of Antwerp in the month of October 1914. These declarations referred to incidents closely related to military operations; they concerned Belgians fit for military service who, according to the customs of war generally recog-

nized, might have been taken to Germany as civil prisoners. At that time England and France were taking off neutral steamers on the high seas all Germans between the ages of 17 and 50, in order to intern them in concentration camps. Germany did not apply the same measures to the Belgians. The declarations made to Your Eminence in order to reassure the population have been strictly observed. In any case these declarations were a proof of the good intentions with which the German General Government assumed the administration of the occupied territory. Owing to the clandestine emigration *en masse* of young Belgians bent upon joining the Belgian army, the German authorities would have been perfectly justified in imitating the example of England and France. This they did not do. The employment of Belgian unemployed in Germany, which has been inaugurated only after two years of war, differs essentially from the placing in captivity of men fit for military service. The measure, furthermore, is not related to the conduct of war so called, but is influenced by social and economic causes.

The economic isolation of Germany pursued by England without mercy, with the greatest rigour, has been extended and has weighed more and more upon Belgium. Belgian commerce and industry, being largely dependent on the importation of raw materials and the exportation of finished products, were attacked at their very bases. The inevitable consequence was lack of employment for the greater part of the population. The system of subsidies allotted to the unemployed upon a great scale might appear acceptable on condition that the war be of short duration. The long duration of the war entailed an abusive exploitation of these subsidies and produced a state of things untenable from the social point of view. Far-sighted Belgians called upon me in the spring of 1915 to show its perils. They insisted upon this point—that whosoever supplies the funds at present the subsidies will finally have to be paid by Belgium. They set forth, furthermore, that the subsidies tend to induce laziness among the working men. The inevitable consequence of enforced unemployment would mean the physical and moral decadence of the workmen; especially would expert workmen lose their technical cunning and upon the signing of peace would become unfit for any work. It was upon these representations and in collaboration with the competent Belgian administration that my

orders of the month of August, 1915, against voluntary unemployment were elaborated. They were completed by the order of May 15th, 1916. These orders did not contemplate the employment of force except in cases where workmen refused without any valid motives to accept work of a suitable nature and offered at a reasonable salary, and who thereby became a charge upon the public charity. Every refusal based upon international law is formally recognized as valid. Consequently no workman can be forced to undertake work of a military nature. Your Eminence will recognize that these orders are based upon sane considerations of legislation which properly place the general interest above that of individual liberty.

The social plagues noticed in 1915 having with time evolved into public calamity, it becomes imperative to apply at once the orders in question.

In his letter Your Eminence invokes the high ideal of familial virtues. I may be permitted to reply that, like Your Eminence, I place this ideal very high, but for that very reason I must say also that the working classes run the great risk of completely losing all ideal if the present state of affairs, which can but become worse, continues. For laziness is the family's worst enemy. Surely the man who works far away from his folk—a state of affairs which has existed always for the Belgian workman—contributes much more to the welfare of his family than by remaining at home in idleness. Workmen accepting work in Germany are permitted to remain in relation with their families. At regular intervals they will be allowed leaves to return to their country. They may take their families to Germany, where they will find priests acquainted with the languages.

In their own common sense the people have to a great extent well understood those truths, and by tens of thousands Belgian workmen have gone to Germany of their own free will. Placed on the same level with German workmen, they earn high salaries which they have never known in Belgium. Far from falling into misery, like their comrades who have remained in Belgium, they, as well as their families, have become self-supporting again. Others in large numbers would like to follow their example. They do not dare because influences are brought systematically to bear upon

them. Responsibility for rigours which can not be avoided would fall upon those who have prevented them from working.

Finally, to judge the situation as a whole, I pray Your Eminence to be so kind as to give His attention to the following explanations, which are the very essence of the problem:

The isolation imposed by England has forced the occupied territories to enter into closer economic relations with Germany. Practically the only country with which Belgium can entertain commercial relations is Germany. Although it is the custom between enemy countries, Germany has never forbidden the payment of funds into Belgium, and consequently German money is continually coming into the country. The salaries of workmen in Germany will increase that flow. Moreover, in a general way the occupation brings money into Belgium continually and adds it to the war contributions which, as it is admitted and established, are spent entirely in the country. The community of interests resulting from these facts imposes, by the logic of things, on both parties the necessity of exchanging and of stabilizing the elements of economic life. Hundreds of thousands being without work in Belgium while Germany needs labourers, it becomes a duty both from an economic and a social point of view, to furnish the Belgian unemployed with the productive labour in Germany necessitated by this community of interests. If there are any objections to offer to such a state of affairs they must be addressed to England, who, by her policy of isolation, has created the situation.

Your Eminence will see from the above that the problem is very complex. I should feel a satisfaction if after my explanation Your Eminence would consider it from a social and an economic point of view.

(Signed) Frh. von Bissing,

To His Eminence, Cardinal Mercier,
Archbishop of Malines,
Malines.

Réplique du Cardinal Mercier
au Gouverneur Général von Bissing (10 novembre, 1916)

Archevêché
de
Malines

Malines, le 10 novembre, 1916.

MONSIEUR LE GOUVERNEUR GÉNÉRAL:

Je me retiens d'exprimer à Votre Excellence les sentiments que m'a fait éprouver sa lettre (1.10051) en réponse à celle que j'avais eu l'honneur de lui adresser, le 19 octobre, au sujet de la déportation des "chômeurs."

Je me suis rappelé mélancoliquement la parole que Votre Excellence, martelant ses syllabes, prononça devant moi, à son arrivée à Bruxelles: "J'espère que nos relations seront loyales. . . . J'ai reçu la mission de panser les plaies de la Belgique."

Ma lettre du 19 octobre rappelait à Votre Excellence l'engagement pris par le baron von Huene, gouverneur militaire d'Anvers, et ratifié, quelques jours plus tard, par le baron von der Goltz, votre prédécesseur au gouvernement général à Bruxelles. L'engagement était explicite, absolu, sans limite de durée: "Les jeunes gens n'ont point à craindre d'être emmenés en Allemagne, soit pour y être enrôlés dans l'armée, *soit pour y être employés à des travaux forcés.*"

Cet engagement est violé, tous les jours, des milliers de fois, depuis quinze jours.

Le baron von Huene et le baron von der Goltz n'ont pas dit conditionnellement, ainsi que le voudrait faire entendre votre dépêche du 26 octobre: "Si l'occupation ne dure pas plus de deux ans, les hommes aptes au service militaire ne seront pas mis en captivité." Ils ont dit catégoriquement: "Les jeunes gens, et à plus forte raison les hommes arrivés à l'âge mûr, ne seront, *à aucun moment de la durée de l'occupation, ni emprisonnés ni employés à des travaux forcés.*"

Pour se justifier, Votre Excellence invoque "la conduite de l'Angleterre et de la France qui ont, dit-elle, enlevé sur les bateaux neutres tous les Allemands de dix-sept à cinquante ans, pour les interner dans des camps de concentration."

Si l'Angleterre et la France avaient commis une injustice, c'est sur les Anglais et sur les Français qu'il faudrait vous venger et non sur un peuple inoffensif et désarmé.

Mais y a-t-il eu injustice? Nous sommes mal informés de ce qui se passe au delà des murs de notre prison, mais je suis fort tenté de croire que les Allemands saisis et internés appartenaient à la réserve de l'armée impériale; ils étaient donc des militaires que

l'Angleterre et la France avaient le droit d'envoyer dans des camps de concentration. La Belgique, elle, n'avait inauguré chez elle, que depuis le mois d'août 1913, le service personnel général.

Les Belges, de dix-sept à cinquante ans, résidant en Belgique occupée sont donc des civils, des non-combattants. C'est jouer sur les mots que de les assimiler aux réservistes allemands, en leur appliquant l'appellation équivoque: "hommes aptes au service militaire."

Les arrêtes, les affiches, les commentaires de la presse, qui devaient préparer l'opinion publique aux mesures mises, en ce moment, à exécution, invoquaient surtout deux considérations. Les chômeurs, affirmait-on, sont un danger pour la sécurité publique; ils sont une charge pour la bienfaisance officielle.

Il n'est pas vrai, disait déjà ma lettre du 19 octobre, que nos ouvriers aient troublé, ou simplement menacé, nulle part, l'ordre extérieur. Cinq millions de Belges, des centaines d'Américains sont les témoins émerveillés de la dignité et de la patience impeccable de notre classe ouvrière.

Il n'est pas vrai que les ouvriers privés de travail soient à la charge ni du pouvoir occupant ni de la bienfaisance à laquelle préside son administration. Le Comité National, auquel l'occupant n'a aucune part active, est le seul pourvoyeur de la subsistance des victims du chômage forcé.

Ces deux réponses sont restées sans réplique.

La lettre du 26 octobre essaie d'un autre procédé de justification; elle allègue que la mesure qui frappe les chômeurs est motivée par des causes sociales "et économiques."

C'est parce qu'il a à coeur, plus chaudement et plus intelligemment que nous, l'intérêt de la nation belge, que le Gouvernement allemand sauve l'ouvrier de la paresse, l'empêche de perdre ses aptitudes techniques. Le travail forcé est la contre-valeur des avantages économiques que nous procurent nos échanges commerciaux avec l'Empire.

Au surplus, si le Belge a à se plaindre de cet état de choses, qu'il adresse ses griefs à l'Angleterre: elle est la grande coupable; "c'est elle qui, par sa politique d'isolement, a créé cette contrainte."

A cette plaidoirie qui est, dans l'original, embarrassée, compliquée, il suffira d'opposer quelques déclarations franches et brèves:

Chaque ouvrier belge libèrera un ouvrier allemand, qui fera un

soldat de plus pour l'armée allemande. Voilà, dans toute sa simplicité, le fait qui domine la situation. L'auteur de la lettre sent lui-même ce fait brûlant, car il écrit: "La mesure n'est pas non plus en rapport avec la conduite de la guerre *proprement dite.*" Elle est donc en rapport avec la guerre "improprement dite"; qu'est-ce à dire, sinon que l'ouvrier belge ne prend pas les armes, mais dégage les mains de l'ouvrier allemand qui les prendra? L'ouvrier belge est contraint de coopérer, d'une façon indirecte mais évidente, à la guerre contre son pays. Ceci est en contradiction manifeste avec l'esprit de la Convention de La Haye.

Autre déclaration: le chômage n'est le fait ni de l'ouvrier belge ni de l'Angleterre, il est l'effet du régime d'occupation allemande.

L'occupant s'est emparé d'approvisionnements considérables de matières premières destinées à notre industrie nationale; il a saisi et expédié en Allemagne les machines, les outils, les métaux de nos usines et de nos ateliers. La possibilité du travail national ainsi supprimée, il restait à l'ouvrier une alternative: travailler pour l'Empire allemand, soit ici, soit en Allemagne, ou chômer. Quelques dizaines de milliers d'ouvriers, sous la pression de la peur ou de la faim, acceptèrent, à regret pour la plupart, du travail à l'étranger; mais quatre cent mille ouvriers ou ouvrières préférèrent se résigner au chômage, avec ses privations, que de desservir les intérêts de la patrie; ils vivaient dans la pauvreté, à l'aide du maigre secours que leur allouait le *Comité National de secours et d'alimentation* contrôlé par les ministres protecteurs d'Espagne, d'Amérique, de Hollande. Calmes, dignes, ils supportaient sans murmure leur sort penible. Nulle part, il n'y eut ni révolte ni apparence de révolte. Patrons et ouvriers attendaient avec endurance la fin de notre longue épreuve.

Cependant, les administrations communales et l'initiative privée essayaient d'atténuer les inconvénients indéniables du chômage. Mais le pouvoir occupant paralysa leurs efforts. Le Comité National tenta d'organiser un enseignement professional à l'usage des chômeurs. Cet enseignement pratique, respectueux de la dignité de nos travailleurs, devait leur entretenir la main, affiner leurs capacités de travail, préparer le relèvement du pays. Qui s'opposa à cette noble initiative, dont nos grands industriels avaient élaboré le plan? Qui? Le pouvoir occupant.

Cependant les communes s'évertuèrent à faire exécuter par leurs chômeurs des travaux d'utilité publique. Le Gouverneur général subordonna ces entreprises à une autorisation qu'en règle générale il refusait. Les cas ne sont pas rares, m'assure-t-on, où le Gouvernement général autorisa des travaux de ce genre à la condition expresse qu'ils ne fussent point confiés à des chômeurs.

On voulait donc le chômage. On recrutait l'armée des chômeurs. Et l'on ose après cela lancer à nos ouvriers l'injure: paresseux!

Non, l'ouvrier belge n'est pas un paresseux. Il a le culte du travail. Dans les nobles luttes de la vie économique il a fait ses preuves. Quand il a dédaigné travail à gros salaire que lui offrait l'occupant, c'est par dignité patriotique. Nous, pasteur de notre peuple, qui suivons de plus près que jamais ses douleurs et ses angoisses, nous savons ce qu'il lui en a coûté parfois de préférer l'indépendance dans la privation au bien-être dans la sujétion. Ne lui jetez pas la pierre. Il a droit à votre respect.

La lettre du 29 octobre dit que la première responsable du chômage de nos ouvriers, c'est l'Angleterre, parce qu'elle ne laisse pas entrer les matières premières en Belgique.

L'Angleterre laisse entrer généreusement en Belgique les moyens de ravitaillement, sous le contrôle des Etats neutres, de l'Espagne, des Etats-Unis, de la Hollande. Elle laisserait pénétrer assurément, sous le même contrôle, les matières nécessaires à l'industrie, si l'Allemagne voulait s'engager à nous les laisser et à ne point mettre la main sur les produits fabriqués de notre travail industriel.

Mais l'Allemagne, par divers procédés, notamment par l'organisation de ses "Centrales" sur lesquelles ni les Belges ni nos ministres protecteurs ne peuvent exercer aucun contrôle efficace, absorbe une part considérable des produits de l'agriculture et de l'industrie du pays. Il en résulte un renchérissement inquiétant de la vie, cause de privations pénibles pour ceux qui n'ont pas ou qui n'ont plus d'économies. La "communauté d'intérêts," dont la lettre vante pour nous l'avantage, n'est pas l'équilibre normal des échanges commerciaux, mais la prédominance du fort sur le faible.

Cet état d'infériorité économique auquel nous sommes réduits, ne nous le représentez donc pas, je vous prie, comme un privilège qui justifierait le travail forcé au profit de notre ennemi et la déportation de légions d'innocents en terre d'exil!

L'esclavage, et la peine la plus forte du Code pénal après la peine de mort, la déportation! La Belgique, qui ne vous fit jamais aucun mal, avait-elle mérité de vous ce traitement qui crie vengeance au ciel?

Monsieur le Gouverneur général, en commençant ma lettre, je rappelais la noble parole de Votre Excellence: "Je suis venu en Belgique, avec la mission de panser les plaies de votre pays."

Si Votre Excellence pouvait, comme nos prêtres, pénétrer dans les foyers ouvriers, entendre les lamentations des épouses et des mères que ses ordonnances jettent dans le deuil et dans l'épouvante, elle se rendrait mieux compte que la plaie du peuple belge est béante.

Il y a deux ans, entend-on répéter, c'était la mort, le pillage, l'incendie, mais c'était la guerre! Aujourd'hui, ce n'est plus la guerre; c'est le calcul froid, l'écrasement voulu, l'emprise de la force sur le droit, l'abaissement de la personnalité humaine, un défi à l'humanité.

Il dépend de vous, Excellence, de faire taire ces cris de la conscience révoltée. Puisse le bon Dieu, que nous invoquons de toute l'ardeur de notre âme pour notre peuple opprimé, vous inspirer la pitié du bon Samaritain!

Agréez, Monsieur le Gouverneur général, l'hommage de ma très haute considération.

(Signé) D. J. Cardinal Mercier,
Archevêque de Malines.

A Son Excellence Monsieur le Baron von Bissing,
Gouverneur Général,
Bruxelles.

Translation:

Archbishopric of Malines,

Malines, November 10, 1916.

Mr. Governor General:

I refrain from expressing to Your Excellency the sentiments which his letter have evoked in me, in reply to the letter which I had the honour to address to him on October 19th, relative to the deportation of the unemployed.

I have recalled with melancholy the words which Your Excel-

lency, scanning each syllable, pronounced in my presence after his arrival at Brussels: "I hope that our relations will be loyal. . . . I have received the mission of dressing the wounds of Belgium."

My letter of October 19th recalled to Your Excellency the engagement undertaken by Baron von Huene, Military Governor of Antwerp, and ratified a few days later by Baron von der Goltz, your predecessor as Governor-General, at Brussels. The engagement was explicit, absolute, unlimited as to time: "The young men need not fear being taken to Germany, either to be enrolled in the army *or to be employed at forced labour.*"

This engagement is being violated every day, thousands of times in the last fortnight.

Baron von Huene and Baron von der Goltz did not say conditionally, as your communication of October 26th would like to imply: "If the occupation does not last longer than two years, men fit for military duty will not be taken into captivity"; they said, categorically: "Young men, and with greater reason, *men who have reached an advanced age, will not be at any moment of the occupation either made prisoners or employed at forced labour.*" To justify himself, Your Excellency invokes the conduct of England and of France, who, so he says, "took off neutral steamers all Germans between the ages of 17 and 50 in order to intern them in concentration camps."

If England and France have committed an injustice, it is upon the English and the French that you should avenge yourself, and not upon an inoffensive and disarmed people. But has an injustice been done? We are poorly informed as to what goes on outside the walls of our prison, but I am strongly inclined to believe that the Germans who were seized and interned belonged to the reserve of the imperial army, they were therefore soldiers, and England and France had the right to send them to concentration camps. Belgium had inaugurated only since the month of August, 1913 the system of compulsory service for all.

Belgians between the ages of 17 and 50 residing in the occupied portion of Belgium are therefore civilians, that is to say, non-combatants. It is to juggle words to assimilate them with the German reservists in applying to them the equivocal appellation "men fit for military service."

The decrees, *affiches,* comments of the press, which were intended to prepare public opinion for the measures to be taken, invoked chiefly two considerations: the unemployed, so they declared, are a danger to public security; they are a charge upon the public charity.

It is not true, as I said in my letter of October 19th, that our workmen have troubled or even threatened public order anywhere. Five million Belgians, hundreds of Americans, are the astonished witnesses of the remarkable dignity and patience of our working class. It is not true that workmen deprived of labour are a charge upon the occupying Power for the charity which is dispensed by their administration. The Comité National, in which the occupying Government plays no active part, is the sole provider of subsistence to the victims of enforced idleness.

These two replies remain unanswered.

The letter of October 26th attempts another process of justification; it alleges that the measure affecting the unemployed is influenced by "social and economic" causes.

It is because the German Government has taken to heart more warmly and more intelligently than we the interest of the Belgian nation that it is saving the workman from idleness and preventing him from losing his technical fitness. Forced labour is the equivalent of the economic advantages that we obtained from our commercial exchanges with the Empire.

Furthermore, if the Belgians complain of this state of things let them address their grievances to England; she is the great guilty one; "it is she who has brought about this situation by her policy of isolation."

To this argument, which in the original is confused, complicated, it will suffice to oppose a few frank and brief statements:

Each Belgian workman will liberate a German workman, who will add one more soldier to the German army. There, in all its simplicity, is the fact that dominates the situation. The author of the letter seems himself to feel this burning fact, for he writes, "nor is the measure affecting the conduct of war *proprement dite.*" It is therefore connected with war "improperly so-called" (*improprement dite*); what does this mean, if not that if the Belgian workman does not bear arms he will free the hands of a German workman who

will take up arms? The Belgian workman is forced to co-operate in an indirect but undeniable manner in the war against his country. This is manifestly contrary to the spirit of the Hague conventions.

Another statement is this: unemployment is caused neither by the Belgian workmen nor by England; it is brought about by the régime of German occupation.

The occupying Power has seized great quantities of raw materials intended for our national industry; it has seized from our factories and workshops machinery, tools and metals, and shipped them to Germany. The possibility of national employment being thus suppressed, there remained one of two alternatives to the workmen—to work for the German Empire here or in Germany, or to remain idle. A few thousand workmen, under the influence of fright or hunger, agreed, the greater part with regret, to work for the enemy; but four hundred thousand workmen and workwomen preferred to resign themselves to unemployment, with its privations, rather than to betray the interests of their native land; they lived in poverty, with the aid of a meagre relief allowed them by the Comité National de Secours, under the supervision of the Ministers of the United States, Holland and Spain. Calm, dignified, they bore without a murmur their painful lot. In no section of the country was there a revolt, or even the semblance of one. Employers and employees awaited with patience the end of our long martyrdom. The communal administrations, however, and private initiative endeavored to alleviate the undoubted inconveniences of unemployment. But the occupying force paralysed their efforts. The C. N. attempted to organize a professional school for the benefit of the unemployed. This practical instruction, respectful of the dignity of our workmen, was intended to preserve their skill and to increase their capacity for work, in order to prepare for the revival of the country. Who opposed this noble movement, the scheme of which had been devised by our large manufacturers? Who? The occupying Government.

Nevertheless, the communes made every effort to give work to the unemployed by undertaking public improvements; the Governor-General limited these enterprises to a permission, which as a general rule he refused to grant. There are, I understand, numerous cases where the General Government authorized work of this kind upon

the express condition that it be not undertaken by the unemployed.

They were seeking to create employment. They were recruiting the army of the unemployed.

And they dare, after this, to insult our workmen by calling them lazy.

No, the Belgian workman is not lazy; he has a taste for work. In the noble struggles of economic life he has proved his fitness. When he refused to work at a high wage offered him by the occupying Government, it was on account of a dignified patriotism. We, the pastors of our people, who are sharing more and more closely its sufferings and anguish, we know what it has cost them sometimes to choose independence, with its privations, instead of well-being in a state of subjection. Do not throw stones at them; They are entitled to your respect.

The letter of October 26th says that the party primarily responsible for the unemployment of our workmen is England, because she has not allowed raw material to enter Belgium.

England has generously allowed food-stuffs to enter Belgium for the *ravitaillement,* under the control of neutral nations such as the United States, Holland and Spain. She would also allow, under the same control, raw materials for industry to enter the country if Germany were to agree to leave them to us and not to seize the finished products of our industrial labours.

But Germany, by divers processes, notably by the organization of its "Zentrales," over which neither the Belgians nor their protecting Ministers can exercise any efficacious control, absorbs a large portion of the agricultural and industrial products of our country. The result is an alarming increase in the cost of living, which causes painful privations for those who have no longer any savings. The community of interests, of which the letter speaks so highly, is not the normal equilibrium of commercial exchange, but the predominance of the strong over the weak. Do not represent, I beseech you, this state of economic inferiority to which we are reduced as a privilege that should justify hard labour to the advantage of our enemy and the deportation of legions of innocent people to the land of exile!

Slavery, and the heaviest penalty of the penal code after that of death—that is deportation! Has Belgium, who never did you

any wrong, deserved this treatment from you which calls down vengeance from heaven?

Mr. Governor-General, in the beginning of my letter I recalled the noble phrase of Your Excellency: "I have received the mission of dressing the wounds of Belgium."

If Your Excellency could penetrate into the homes of working men as our priests do, and hear the lamentations of wives and mothers whom his order has cast into mourning and into dismay, He would realize far better that the wound of the Belgian people is wide open.

Two years ago, we hear people say, it was death, pillage, fire, but it was war! To-day it is no longer war; it is the cold, calculating spirit, the desire to annihilate, the victory of force over right, the lowering of the human personality, the cry of defiance to humanity.

It rests with Your Excellency to quiet these cries of a revolted conscience; may the good Lord, upon whom we call with our whole soul for our oppressed people, inspire Him with the pity of a Good Samaritan!

Accept, Mr. Governor-General, the homage of my consideration.

(Signé) D. J. Cardinal Mercier,
Archbishop of Malines.

A Son Excellence Monsieur le Baron von Bissing,
Governor-General,
Brussels.

Le Gouverneur Général
de Belgique,

P. A. I. 11254. Bruxelles, le 23 novembre, 1916.

Très vénéré Monsieur le Cardinal:

J'ai l'honneur de faire savoir à Votre Eminence que j'ai bien reçu l'honorée lettre du 10 de ce mois ainsi que la lettre autographe du 15 de ce mois, concernant le retard dans l'envoi. J'ai à répondre ce qui suit:

Le 19 octobre de cette année, Votre Eminence m'a adressé une requête en vue d'obtenir que l'on cesse d'employer les chômeurs belges en Allemagne. Dans ma résponse du 28 octobre de cette année, tout en appréciant à sa juste valeur le point de vue auquel vous vous placez, j'ai exposé les raisons et les considérations qui ont engagé le pouvoir occupant à prendre les mesures concernant la

question des ouvriers. Ces mesures n'étaient pas la conséquence de l'arbitraire ou d'une étude insuffisante du problème difficile, mais le résultat d'un mûr examen des circonstances qu'il convient de considérer et de la nécessité qu'il faut reconnaître inévitable. Dans l'ensemble, je me vois donc obligé de renvoyer à nouveau Votre Eminence à mes déclarations du 28 octobre. Ce que vous répondez à ces considérations, ou repose sur une explication erronée de mes déclarations, ou resulte de conceptions que je ne puis approuver quant à leur essence. Car le chômage qui a pris une extension considérable en Belgique est une grande plais sociale, tandis qu'il est un bienfait social pour les ouvriers belges de les mettre au travail en Allemagne. Il est vrai que, à mon arrivée en Belgique, j'ai dit à Votre Eminence que je voulais panser les plaies que la guerre avait causées au peuple belge; mais les mesures prises ne sont pas en contradiction avec ces paroles. Je dois dire également que Votre Eminence méconnaît les faits, quand elle veut écarter mes efforts, souvent couronnés de succès, pour rétablir la vie économique en Belgique, par la remarque que l'on a créé au contraire un chômage artificiel. L'Angleterre a mis des conditions inacceptables à l'importation en Belgique des matières premières et à l'exportation des produits fabriques. Ces questions ont été, au cours de la guerre, le sujet de negociations serieuses avec des personnes compétentes tant de nationalité belge que de pays neutres; mais il nous mènerait trop loin de les exposer ici. Je répète seulement que les situations lamentables sont, en dernière analyse, une suite de la politique d'isolement de l'Angleterre, comme auparavant les réquisitions des matières premières furent une consequence inévitable de cette même politique. Je dois aussi maintenir absolument que, au point de vue économique, le pouvoir occupant garantit au pays tous les avantages qui, vu la contrainte crée par l'Angleterre, peuvent lui être assurés.

L'exécution des mesures prises au sujet des chômeurs a cause à mon Administration quantité de difficultés, qui occasionnent également des désagréments à la population. Tout cela eût pu être évité, si les administrations communales avaient permis, par une intervention appropriée, de rendre l'exécution plus simple et mieux adaptée à la fin proposée. Dans les circonstances actuelles, on a dû tendre les mesures à un cercle plus grand, de façon à y englober d'abord un nombre plus considérable de personnes. Mais

des précautions ont été prises pour restreindre autant que possible les erreurs. Des catégories déterminées de professions sont exclues de l'obligation de se présenter et des plaintes individuelles sont ou bien examinées immédiatement, ou bien remises pour un examen ultérieur.

Des considérations qui précèdent, Votre Eminence voudra bien conclure qu'il est impossible de faire suite à sa demande de retirer les mesures prises; que néanmoins, dans l'application de ces mesures, on a fait, malgré les difficultés qui se sont présentées, tout ce qu'il était possible de faire dans l'intérêt commun.

Veuillez agréer, Eminence, l'expression de ma très haute considération.

(Signé) Fhr. von Bissing,
Generaloberst.

À Son Eminence Monsieur le Cardinal Mercier,
Archevêque de Malines,
Malines.

(Translation:)
The Governor-General
of Belgium,
P. A. I. 11254.

Brussels, November 23, 1916.

Very Venerable Cardinal:

I have the honour to inform Your Eminence that I have duly received the honoured letter of the 10th of this month, as well as the autographic letter of the 15th of this month concerning the delay in sending it. I reply as follows:

On October 19 of this year Your Eminence addressed to me a request with a view of inducing us to cease to employ the Belgians unemployed in Germany. In my response of October 28 of this year, while appreciating at its true value the point of view at which you place yourself, I have exposed the considerations and the reasons that I have moved the occupying power to take measures concerning the question of workmen. The measures were not the consequence of an arbitrary will or of an insufficient study of a difficult problem, but the result of a ripe examination of the circumstances which it is proper to consider and of the necessity that

we must recognize as inevitable. Under the circumstances I find myself obliged to again invite the attention of Your Eminence to my declaration of October 28. Your response to these considerations either reposes on a misunderstanding of my declaration or is the result of conceptions which, in their essence, I cannot approve. The unemployment has taken a wide extension in Belgium and is a great social sore, so much so that it is to the social benefit of the Belgian working men to put them to work in Germany. It is true that on my arrival in Belgium I told Your Eminence that I wished to dress the wounds the war had done to the Belgian people; but the measures taken are not in contradiction with this declaration. I should say also that Your Eminence recognizes the facts when he tries to put aside my efforts, often crowned with success, to reëstablish economic life in Belgium, by the remark that we have created on the contrary an artificial unemployment. England has imposed unacceptable conditions on the importation of raw materials and exportation of manufactured products. These questions have been, during the war, the subject of serious negotiations with competent persons, not only of Belgian nationality, but of neutral countries. But we would be led too far if I had to expose them here. I only repeat that the lamentable situation is in the last analysis a result of the English policy of isolation, as formerly the requisitions of raw materials were the unavoidable consequence of the same policy. I must absolutely maintain that from the economic point of view the occupying power guarantees to the country all the advantages which, in view of the constraint created by England, can be assured to it.

The execution of the measures taken with reference to the unemployed has caused my administration many difficulties, which occasion also difficulties for the population. All this could have been avoided if the communal administrations had permitted us, by an appropriate intervention, to render the execution of these measures more simple and better adapted to the end proposed. Under the present circumstances we have had to extend the measures to a larger circle, in order in the first place to take in a larger number of persons. But precautions have been taken to avoid errors as much as possible. Those in certain professional categories are exempted from the obligation to present themselves, and individual

complaints either are immediately examined or postponed for future examination.

From the foregoing considerations, Your Eminence will be good enough to conclude that it is impossible to respond to his request to withdraw the measures that have already been taken. However, in the application of these we have done all that it is possible to do in the common interest.

Pray accept, Eminence, the expression of my very high consideration.

(Signed) Baron von Bissing,
Colonel-General.

To His Eminence Cardinal Mercier,
Archbishop of Malines,
Malines.

Archevêché
de
Malines, Malines, le 29 novembre, 1916.

Monsieur le Gouverneur Général:

La lettre (1,11254) que Votre Excellence me fait l'honneur de m'écrire, sous la date du 23 novembre, est pour moi une déception. En plusieurs milieux, que j'avais lieu de croire exactement renseignés, il se disait que Votre Excellence s'était fait un devoir de protester devant les plus hautes autorités de l'Empire, contre les mesures qu'Elle est contrainte d'appliquer à la Belgique. J'escomptais donc, pour le moins, un délai dans l'application de ces mesures, en attendant qu'elles fussent soumises à un examen nouveau, et un adoucissement aux procédés qui les mettent à exécution.

Or, voici que, sans répondre un mot à aucun des arguments par lesquels j'établissais, dans mes lettres du 19 octobre et du 10 novembre, le caractère antijuridique et antisocial de la condamnation de la classe ouvrière belge aux travaux forcés et à la déportation, Votre Excellence se borne à reprendre, dans sa dépêche du 23 novembre, le texte même de sa lettre du 26 octobre. Ses deux lettres du 23 novembre et du 26 octobre sont, en effet, identiques dans le fond et presque dans la forme.

D'autre part, le recrutement des prétendus chômeurs se fait, la plupart du temps, sans aucun égard aux observations des autorités

locales. Plusieurs rapports que j'ai en mains attestent que le clergé est brutalement écarté, les bourgmestres et conseillers communaux réduits au silence; les recruteurs se trouvent donc en face d'inconnus parmi lesquels ils font arbitrairement leur choix.

Les exemples de ce que j'avance abondent; en voici deux très récents parmi une quantité d'autres que je tiens à la disposition de Votre Excellence. Le 21 novembre, le recrutement se fit dans la commune de Kersbeek-Miscom. Sur les 1.323 habitants que compte la commune, les recruteurs en enlevèrent 94, en bloc, sans distinction de condition sociale ou de profession, fils de fermiers soutiens de parents âgés et infirmes, pères de famille laissant femme et enfants dans la misère, tous nécessaires à leur famille comme le pain de chaque jour. Deux familles se voient ravir chacune quatre fils à la fois. Sur les 94 déportés, il y avait deux chômeurs.

Dans la région d'Aerschot, le recrutement se fit le 23 novembre: à Rillaer, à Gelrode, à Rotselaer, des jeunes gens soutiens d'une mère veuve; des fermiers à la tête d'une nombreuse famille, l'un d'entre eux, qui a passé les cinquante ans, a dix enfants, cultivant des terres, possédant plusieurs bêtes à cornes, n'ayant jamais touché un sou de la charité publique, furent emmenés, de force, en dépit de toutes les protestations. Dans la petite commune de Rillaer on a pris jusque vingt-cinq jeunes garçons de dix-sept ans.

Votre Excellence eût voulu que les administrations communales se fissent les complices de ces recrutements odieux. De par leur situation légale et en conscience, elles ne le pouvaient pas. Mais elles pouvaient éclairer les recruteurs et ont qualité pour cela. Les prêtres, qui connaissent mieux que personne le petit peuple, seraient pour les recruteurs des auxiliaires précieux. Pourquoi refuse-t-on leur concours?

A la fin de sa lettre, Votre Excellence rappelle que les hommes appartenant aux professions libérales ne sont pas inquiétés. Si l'on n'emmenait que des chômeurs, je comprendrais cette exception. Mais si l'on continue d'enrôler indistinctement les hommes valides, l'exception est injustifiée.

Il serait inique de faire peser sur la classe ouvrière seule la déportation. La classe bourgeoise doit avoir sa part dans le sacrifice, si cruel soit-il et tout juste parce qu'il est cruel, que l'occupant impose à la nation. Nombreux sont les membres de mon clergé

qui m'ont prié de réclamer pour eux une place à l'avant-garde des persecutes. J'enregistre leur offre et vous la soumets avec fierté.

Je veux croire encore que les autorités de l'Empire n'ont pas leur dernier mot. Elles penseront à nos douleurs imméritées, à la réprobation du monde civilisé, au jugement de l'histoire et au châtiment de Dieu.

Agréez, Excellence, l'hommage de ma très haute consideration.

(Signé) D. J. Cardinal Mercier,
Archevêque de Malines.

A Son Excellence Monsieur le Baron von Bissing,
Gouverneur général,
Bruxelles.

(Translation:)

Archbishopric
of
Malines, Malines, November 29, 1916.

Mr. Governor-General:

The letter (1,11254) that Your Excellency does me the honour to write under date of November 23 is a disappointment to me. In many circles that I had reasons to believe well informed, I was told that Your Excellency had felt it a duty to protest before the highest authorities of the Empire against the measures that he is obliged to apply in Belgium. I reckoned then at least on a delay in the application of these measures, until they can be given a new examination or an amelioration of the processes which put them in execution.

But now, without a word of reply to any one of the arguments by which, in my letters of October 19 and November 10, I establish the anti-judicial and anti-social character of the condemnation of the Belgian working classes to forced labour and to deportation, Your Excellency confines himself to repeat in his dispatch of November 23 the very text of his letter of October 26. His two letters of November 23 and October 26 are in effect identical in matter and almost in form.

Besides, the recruiting of pretended unemployed is made, the greater part of the time, without any observation of the local authorities. Several reports that I have in hand attest that the

clergy is brutally put aside, the burgomasters and common councillors are ordered to keep silent; the recruiting officers find themselves then faced by unknown people, among whom they arbitrarily make their choice.

There are abundant examples of this; here are two very recent ones among quantities of others that I hold at the disposal of Your Excellency. On November 21 recruiting was going over in the commune of Kersbeek-Miscom. Out of the 1323 inhabitants of the commune the recruiting officers took away ninety-four in a mass, without discussion as to the social conditions or professions—sons of farmers, the supporters of aged and infirm parents, fathers of families, leaving wife and children in poverty, all as necessary to their families as daily bread. Two families had torn from them each four sons at a time. Out of the ninety-four deported there were two unemployed.

In the region of Aerschot the recruiting was made on November 23. At Rillaer, at Gelrode, at Rotselaer, young men, the supporters of a widowed mother, fathers at the head of large families—one among them who had already passed fifty years, has ten children, cultivating the ground, possessing several horned beasts, having never touched a sou of public charity—were carried away by force, despite their protestations. In the commune of Rillaer they took as many as twenty-five young boys of seventeen years.

Your Excellency would have wished the communal administrations to be the accomplices of these odious seizures; by their legal situation and in all conscience they could not do it, but they could have enlightened the recruiting officers and were able to do this. The priests, who knew better than everybody the common people, would have been for the recruiting officers very able aids. How did they refuse their help?

At the end of your letter Your Excellency recalls that the men belonging to the liberal professions are not troubled. If they took away only the unemployed I would understand the decision; but if they continue to enrol without distinction able men, the exception is not justified. It would be iniquitous to allow the deportation to weigh solely on the working classes. The middle class should have its part in the sacrifice, however cruel it may be—and precisely because it is cruel—which the occupant imposes on the nation. The

plied on the third of November, and the workingmen rejoined on the fourteenth of November.[2]

---

members of my clergy, who have prayed me to ask for them a place in the vanguard of the persecuted are numerous. I register their offer and submit it to you with pride.

I should like to believe that the authorities of the Empire have not said their last word. They will think of our unmerited sufferings, of the reprobation of the civilized world, the judgment of history, and the punishment of God.

Accept, Excellency, the homage of my very high consideration.

(Signed) D. J. Cardinal Mercier,
Archbishop of Malines.

To His Excellency Baron von Bissing,
Governor-General,
Brussels.

[2] Protestation des Syndicate Socialistes et Indépendants
Lettre au Gouverneur Général von Bissing:
Bruxelles, le 30 octobre, 1916.

Excellence:

Les mesures que votre Administration prépare pour forcer les chômeurs à travailler au profit du pays de l'envahisseur, la déportation déjà commencée de nos camarades de la région des étapes, soulèvent une profonde émotion parmi toute la classe ouvrière de Belgique.

Les secrétaires et les représentants des grands syndicats socialistes et indépendants estiment qu'ils manqueraient à leur devoir s'ils ne portaient pas à votre connaissance les sentiments douloureux qui agitent les ouvriers et l'écho de leur plainte émue.

Ils ont vu enlever les machines de leurs usines, réquisitionner les matières premières les plus diverses, s'amonceler les obstacles pour la reprise d'un travail régulier, disparaître les unes après les autres les libertés publiques dont ils étaient fiers.

Depuis plus de deux années la classe ouvrière, plus que toute autre, gravit le plus pénible calvaire, souffrant la misère et parfois la faim, alors que là-bas, au loin, ses fils combattent et meurent sans qu'elle puisse leur orier la reconnaissance dont ses coeurs débordent.

And the six documents that compose this correspondence express not only the two parties to the conflict, but

---

Elle a subi tout dans le calme le plus parfait et avec la dignité la plus imposante, réprimant toutes ses souffrances, ses plaintes, ses douleurs pénibles, sacrifiant tout à son idéal de liberté et d'indépendance. Mais voilà que les mesures annoncées vont lui faire ressentir la plus grande douleur humaine: des prolétaires, pauvres, parce qu'ils chôment contre leur gré, des citoyens d'un Etat libre vont être condamnés en masse au travail forcé, sans avoir enfreint aucun arrêté ni aucun règlement.

Au nom des familles d'ouvriers où règne à l'heure présente la plus grande inquiétude et où seront encore versées tant de larmes de mères, de fiancées et de petits enfants, nous venons demander à Votre Excellence de vouloir empêcher l'accomplissement de ces actes vexatoires, contraires au droit des gens, contraires à tout se qui constitue la dignité et la grandeur de la personnalité humaine.

En vous priant de vouloir excuser notre émotion, nous vous offrons, Excellence, l'assurance de nos salutations respectueuses.

(Suivent les signatures des membres du Comité national de la Commission syndicale.)

Translation:

COMMISSION SYNDICALE
DE LA BELGIQUE — Brussels, October 30, 1916.

EXCELLENCY:

The measures under consideration by your administration to force the unemployed to work for an invading power, the deportation of our unhappy comrades which has begun in the region of the *étape*, have most profoundly moved the entire working class in Belgium.

The undersigned members of the large socialist and independent syndicates of Belgium would consider that they had not fulfilled their duty if they did not express to you the painful sentiments which agitate the labourers and convey to you the echo of their touching complaints.

They have seen the machinery taken from their factories, the most diverse kinds of raw materials being requisitioned, the accumulation of obstacles to prevent the resumption of regular work, the

set side by side in the light of their bright contrast, the two systems that are grappling in the world to-day. The

disappearance, one by one, of every public liberty of which they were so proud.

For more than two years the labouring class, more than any other, has been forced to undergo the most bitter trials, experiencing misery and often hunger; while their children far away fight and die the parents can never convey to them the affection with which their hearts are overflowing.

Our labouring class has endured everything with the utmost calm and with the most impressive dignity, ignoring its sufferings and heavy trials, sacrificing everything to its ideal of liberty and independence. But now the measures which have been announced will make the population drink the last dregs of the cup of human sorrow; the proletariat, the poor upon whom unemployment has been forced, citizens of a modern state, are to be condemned to forced labour without having violated any regulation or order.

In the name of the families of workmen among which the most painful anxiety reigns at present, whose mothers, whose fiancées and whose little children are destined to shed so many more tears, we beg Your Excellency to prevent the carrying out of this painful enterprise, contrary to international law, contrary to the dignity of the working classes, contrary to everything that makes for worth and greatness in human nature.

We beg Your Excellency to pardon our emotion and we offer Him the homage of our distinguished consideration.

(Signed by the members of the National Committee and of the Commission Syndicale de la Belgique.)

A Son Excellence Monsieur le Baron von Bissing,
Gouverneur Général en Belgique,
Bruxelles.

Réponse du Gouverneur Général von Bissing:

Bruxelles, le 3 novembre, 1916.

A la Commission syndicale, Bruxelles:

En réponse à votre lettre du 30 octobre 1916, par laquelle vous me priez de renoncer au transport des chômeurs en Allemagne, je vous fais part qu'il ne peut être donné suite à votre demande.

Governor-General's views were published in Belgium, but those of his opponents and victims were not, though

Depuis le début de la guerre une grande partie des ouvriers belges ont abandonné le travail. La raison en est, d'une part, l'arrêt de nombreuses entreprises industrielles, par suite du manque de matières premières occasionné par l'isolement créé par l'ennemi, d'autre part, le refus de travail.

La longue durée de cette situation commence à entrainer des conséquences fâcheuses et, comme administrateur du territoire occupé, j'ai pour devoir, conformément au principe du droit des gens, de prendre les mesures adéquates.

Des Belges clairvoyants, déjà au printemps 1915, sont venus vers moi et ont attiré mon attention sur les dangers du chômage et du dégoût du travail. Ils ont démontré que les secours, de quelque côté qu'ils viennent, constituent en fine de ccmpte une charge pour l'économie politique belge et qu'ils entraînent également les ouvriers à l'oisiveté. Il en résulte que les ouvriers s'amoindrissent physiquement et moralement, qu'on particulier les ouvriers instruits perdent leurs talents et leur savoir-faire et qu'ils seront aussi devenus inutilisables lorsque le temps de paix sera venu pour l'industrie belge.

C'est guidées par ces motifs, qu'ont été prises avec la collaboration du ministère belge compétent, en août 1915, mes ordonnances contre l'oisiveté, qui furent complétées par l'ordonnance du 15 mai 1916.

Ces arrêtés ne prévoient le travail forcé que lorsqu'un sans-travail, à qui un salaire confortable a été offert en rapport avec scs capacités de travail, refuse de travailler sans raisons suffisantes et, par là, tombe à la charge de la bienfaisance publique. Sera reconnu expressément comme motif de refus légitime celui qui se base sur le droit des gens. Ainsi aucun travailleur ne peut-être forcé à participer à des entreprises de guerre. Les ordonnances reposent sur des considérations saines et conformes au droit qui, sans aucun doute, subordonnent la liberté de l'individu aux intérêts de la collectivité.

Il s'agit, après que les situations existant déjà en 1915 nous ont menés depuis ce temps-là à une calamité publique, de donner simplement une interprétation plus efficace à cette ordonnance.

they found their way at last into the freer and more luminous world outside. There were other protests, too,

---

Dans ce but, les listes nominatives des chômeurs doivent être données par le bourgmestre. Aux chômeurs qui sont inscrits sur ces listes, on offre, dans des réunions de présentation, du travail moyennant un bon salaire, et il est vrai, comme dans le domaine du Gouvernement général il n'y a qu'une quantité restreinte de chômeurs qui puisse être utilisée, que ce travail doit être accompli en Allemagne.

Les chômeurs qui n'acceptent pas le travail qui leur est offert dans ces réunions de présentation sont conduits de force en Allemagne. Ils reçoivent aussi néanmoins un salaire, mais moindre que celui de ceux qui se sont laissés enrôler comme travailleurs libres.

J'espère que l'on ne devra faire application de ces mesures que dans des cas exceptionnels. Une grande partie du simple peuple a, dans son intelligence saine, justement compris cette affaire, et c'est par dizaines de milliers que des ouvriers belges se sont rendus déjà en Allemagne, où, placés sur le même pied que les ouvriers allemands, ils ont mérité des salaires plus élevés que ceux qu'ils avaient jamais connus en Belgique et où, contrairement à leurs compagnons demeurés en Belgique dans la misère, eux et leurs familles ont efficacement repris le dessus.

Vous devrez avouer, après détails, que, grâce au transport des chômeurs belges en Allemagne, les intérêts économiques de la Belgique sont entièrement sauvegardés.

Lorsque vous instruisez de cette manière les sans-travail, vous leur rendez un meilleur service que quand vous les amenez à refuser de travailler et quand vous obligez par là les autorités allemandes à prendre des mesures sévères.

S'il faut user de dureté lors de l'enlèvement et aussi si des travailleurs occupés sont enlevés, la faute en incombe aux bourgmestres qui se sont refusés à remettre les listes des chômeurs, ou dont les listes étaient incomplètes.

Le Gouverneur général,
(Signé) Baron von Bissing,
Generaloberst.

(Translation:)

DAS GENERAL GOUVERNEMENT
IN BELGIEN — Brussels, November 3, 1916.

TO THE COMMISSION OF LABOUR UNIONS:

In reply to your communication of October 30, 1916, in which you beg me to refrain from the deportation of the unemployed to Germany, I inform you that I am unable to grant your request.

Since the beginning of the war a large number of Belgian workmen have been unemployed. The reasons for this are, on the one hand, the inactivity of many industrial plants because of the lack of raw materials which the enemy's policy of isolation has brought about, and, on the other hand, a disinclination to work.

The long duration of this state of affairs has begun to manifest serious consequences, and as Governor of the occupied territory I am in duty bound, in virtue of the principles of international law, to take the necessary measures to prevent these consequences.

As early as the spring of 1915 far-seeing Belgians pointed out to me the dangers of unemployment and of the disinclination to work. They dwelt particularly upon the fact that charitable aid, no matter what its source, would in the end be harmful to the political economy of Belgium, and that it would induce idleness. The consequence of this state of affairs is that the workmen depreciate morally and physically; particularly qualified workmen will lose their capability and their dexterity, and also, when peace comes, will be incapable of working for Belgian industries.

In accordance with this idea, and in collaboration with the competent Belgian ministries, my notices against this antagonism to work were posted in August, 1915, and were afterward supplemented by the regulations of May 15, 1916.

These regulations did not provide forced labour except in case the unemployed labourer should refuse, without sufficient cause, to do work suited to his capacity and to be remunerated by a proper salary, his support, in consequence, falling upon the public charities.

Any rule contrary to international law is expressly recognized as forming a basis for justified refusal. Thus no workman can be obliged to take part *in military operations*. These ordinances rest

on high legal considerations, which properly place the interests of the commonwealth above those of individual liberty.

It is now a question solely of the efficacious application of these ordinances, after the anomaly which already existed in 1913 had been changed, in the course of time, into a public calamity.

For this purpose lists of names of unemployed are demanded of the mayors. When the men are assembled to be presented to the authorities, well-paid employment is offered to the unemployed whose names are on the lists; it is true that this work must be performed in Germany because in the territory of the General-Government only a limited number of unemployed can be used.

The unemployed who do not accept the work offered them at these meetings for registry are taken by force to Germany. They also receive a salary there, but less than that given to those who remit themselves to be enrolled as free workmen.

I hope that these measures will not have to be applied except in unusual cases. A large part of the ordinary population has, through its good sense, perfectly understood the conditions of affairs, and Belgian workmen by tens of thousands have already gone to Germany, where, placed on the same footing as the German workmen, they earn salaries higher than those they ever knew in Belgium, and where, instead of dying in misery like their comrades who remain in Belgium, they raise their economic situation as well as that of their families.

In view of these explanations you will readily understand that by transporting unemployed Belgians to Germany the economic interests of Belgium remain entirely safeguarded. The unemployed are not placed in starvation and misery, as you state in your petition, but they receive a salary more than sufficient, which permits them efficaciously to assist their families who have stayed at home.

By explaining to the unemployed this true situation you would render them a greater service than if you induced them to refuse to work, and thus obliged the German authorities to adopt severe measures.

The Governor-General,
(Signed) Von Bissing,
General en Chef.

DOCUMENTS IN EVIDENCE

Réplique des Syndicats Socialistes et Indépendants au Gouverneur général

Bruxelles, le 14 novembre, 1916.

A Son Excellence Monsieur le Baron von Bissing,
Gouverneur général de Belgique.

Excellence:

Les secrétaires et les représentants des syndicats socialistes et indépendants ont pris connaissance, avec une déception pénible, de la réponse que vous avez bien voulu donner à leur invitation du 30 octobre, concernant la déportation d'ouvriers en Allemagne, et c'est au nom de la classe ouvrière unie et consciente que nous risquons un dernier effort, pour empêcher l'attentat sans précédent fait à sa liberté, à ses sentiments et à sa dignité.

Vous nous dites que de nombreuses usines sont arrêtés "par suite du manque de matières premières provenant du blocus de l'ennemi."

Permettez-nous, Excellence, de vous rappeler que les Alliés ont clairement fait connaître leur intention de permettre l'importation en Belgique des matières premières nécessaires à notre industrie, à la condition toute naturelle que l'on ne ferait plus d'autres réquisitions que celles qui sont conformes à l'article 52 des Conventions de La Haye, c'est-à-dire nécessaires "pour les besoins de l'armée d'occupation," et qu'une commission international, la C. R. B. (Commission du ravitaillement belge), aurait le droit de contrôler la destination des produits fabriqués.

Au lieu de consentir à un pareil accord, nous avons vu enlever systematiquement par le pouvoir occupant: les machines-outils, les tours, foreuses et raboteuses, machines motrices et les matières premières: métaux, cuirs, laines, cotons, huiles; nous avons vu réquisitionner les produits fabriqués, limiter la production et augmenter sans cesse les difficultés pour le trafic commercial. Quand les communes et les comités ont voulu occuper les chômeurs à des travaux d'utilité publique, toutes sortes d'obstacles leur ont été opposés et finalement, en bien des cas, leur initiative a été entravée et brisée. En un mot, au fur et à mesure que les plus infatigables efforts etaient faits pour occuper le plus de bras possible, on créa sans cesse de nouveaux chômeurs.

Vous nous dites également que le chômage provient du mauvais vouloir. Tout le passé de notre classe ouvrière se dresse avec la

plus grande énergie contre cette inculpation. Où est, dans le monde entier, la classe ouvrière qui a fait d'un si petit pays, une si grande puissance commerciale et industrielle? Et nous qui, depuis vingt-cinq ans, avons été les témoins enthousiastes des efforts admirables accomplis par nos compagnons de travail, en vue de leur amélioration morale et matérielle, nous affirmons avec insistance que ce n'est pas dans leurs range que l'on trouvera des êtres assez bas pour préférer l'aumône d'un secours à peine suffisant pour se nourrir, à un salaire honnêtement gagné par un travail libre et fécond.

La vérité est que les ouvriers belges, d'accord avec le même article de la Convention de La Haye, lequel ne prévoit des réquisitions de main-d'oeuvre que "pour les besoins de l'armée d'occupation" et dans le cas "où elles n'entraînent pas l'obligation de participer aux opérations de guerre contre leur patrie," ont décliné opiniâtrément les offres les plus séduisantes parce qu'ils ne voulaient pas travailler aux tranchées, ni à la restauration des forts, ni dans les usines qui produisent du matériel destiné à l'armée. Ceci était leur droit et c'était leur devoir. Leur attitude mérite le respect et non pas la plus humiliante des peines.

Vous invoquez vos arrêtés du 15 août 1915 et du 15 mai 1916, qui prévoient des peines à l'égard des ouvriers assistés qui refuseraient un travail "correspondant à leurs capacités," qui leur serait offert contre "un salaire convenable." Ceux qui savent avec quel soin et avec quelle exactitude méticuleuse les conditions que doivent remplir les ouvriers pour avoir droit à des subsides sont rédigées et contrôlées, seront peut-être d'avis que ces menaces étaient pour le moins inutiles. Mais, comme vous dites, ces ordonnances mêmes stipulent dans leur article 2 que "toute raison motivant le refus de travailler sera admissible si elle est acceptée par le droit des gens."

Pour ces cas de refus, l'autorité se réservait de transferer les récalcitrants devant les tribunaux belges et plus tard devant des conseils de guerre. Il est, par consequent, certain que les chômeurs ont le droit de refuser le travail pour l'un ou l'autre motif approuvé par le droit des gens. Et on a beau dire qu'il ne s'agit pas ici de contraindre l'ouvrier à participer à des entreprises de guerre, il n'est, hélas! que trop clair que chaque Belge déporté en Allemagne va y prendre la place d'un homme qui, demain, ira

renforcer les rangs de l'armée ennemie. Nous voudrions par conséquent savoir, Excellence, si ces tribunaux fonctionnent.

Vous appréhendez que le chômage persistant ne diminue materiellement et moralement la valeur des ouvriers. Nous qui les connaissons, nous avons plus de confiance en eux; nous les avons vus souffrir avec une fermeté qui ne caractérise que les âmes fières et élevées. N'est-ce pas de leur milieu qu'est partie la belle idée d'organiser, dans tout le pays, un réseau étendu d'oeuvres d'enseignement pour les chômeurs, afin de développer leurs connaissances techniqués et pour relever le niveau de leurs capacités professionnelles? Le Comité national ne fut, hélas! pas autorisé à lancer cette grandiose entreprise. Pense-t-on que ce sera par un travail forcé, exécuté la mort au coeur, à la manière des esclaves, que nos frères conserveront leur énergie matérielle et morale?

Vous appréhendez également que "les secours, d'où qu'ils viennent, ne pèsent en fin de compte sur l'économie nationale belge." Nous avons de la peine à croire que des Belges aient, eu, comme vous nous le communiquez, le triste courage de reprocher d'une telle façon l'âpre morceau de pain et le peu de soupe dont beaucoup de familles d'ouvriers vivent depuis des mois. Au reste, que représente la douzaine de millions de francs que reçoivent chaque mois cinq à six cent mille chômeurs en comparaison des destructions innombrables de biens et de vies humaines qu'ont coûtées et que coûtent encore à notre pays les horreurs de la guerre, une guerre dont il n'est pas le moins du monde responsable? Avec la foi la plus inébranlable dans notre destinée future, nous, les premiers intéressés, savons qu'à cet égard la Flandre et la Wallonie se dresseront glorieusement devant l'histoire.

Excellence,

Notre coeur et notre raison se refusent donc à croire que ce soit pour le bien de notre classe, et en vue d'épargner un désastre de plus à notre pays, que des milliers d'ouvriers ont été enlevés brusquement à leurs familles et sont déportés en Allemagne. L'opinion publique ne s'est pas trompée, et, comme un écho des plaintes douloureuses des victimes, retentissent les protestations indignées de la population unanime, exprimées par ses mandataires, par ses magistrats communaux, par ses assemblées legislatives, qui sont l'incarnation la plus élevée du droit dans notre pays.

En outre, la façon arbitraire et brutale avec laquelle on procède dans l'execution de ces tristes mesures a fait disparaître tout doute au sujet du but visé: il s'agit avant tout de procurer de la main-d'oeuvre à l'Allemagne, à son propre profit et pour la réussite de ses armes.

Alors qu'à Anvers on ne choisit que parmi les jeunes gens soumis au contrôle, âgés de dix-sept à trente et un ans, dans le Borinage on a appelé tous les hommes de dix-sept à cinquante ans, dans le Brabant wallon tous les hommes de plus de dix-sept ans sans faire de distinction entre chômeurs et non-chômeurs. On a pris des gens de toutes professions et de toutes conditions; des boulangers, par exemple, qui n'ont jamais cessé de travailler dans nos coopératives du Borinage, des mécaniciens qui ont toujours travaillé, des agriculteurs, des commerçants. . . . A Lessines, le 6 de ce mois, 2100 personnes ont été déportées, tous les ouvriers jusqu'à l'âge de cinquante ans! On cite divers cas de vieillards qui sont exilés de force avec cinq ou six de leurs fils!

Des scènes déchirantes ont lieu partout; les malheureux, rassemblés sur les places publiques, font l'objet d'une rapide sélection; ils ont été invités à se munir d'un léger bagage; ils sont ensuite conduits à la gare et chargés dans des wagons à bestiaux; ils ne peuvent pas dire un dernier adieu à leur famille et n'ont pas le moindre temps pour mettre de l'ordre dans leurs affaires, pas même dans les plus urgentes; ils ne savent pas où ils vont, ni pour quel travail, ni pour combien de temps. Déportés à l'approche de l'hiver, après deux années de privations n'ayant plus de ressources, ils n'ont pas le moyen de se pourvoir de vêtements chaude ni des chaussures indispensables. Quelles privations auront-ils à subir? Comment vivront-ils là-bas? Comment en reviendront-ils? Mystère et anxiété qui font sans cesse verser des larmes aux mères et aux petits enfants. L'oppression et l'angoisse règnent dans les familles.

Excellence, ne restez pas insensible à ces souffrances et à ces larmes! Ne laissez pas souiller notre passé de liberté et d'indépendance! Ne laissez pas violer les droits de l'homme en ce qu'ils ont de plus sacré! Ne laissez pas fouler aux pieds la dignité de l'ouvrier que notre classe a travaillé à conquérir pendant tant de siècles!

C'est au droit et à l'humanité que nous faisons appel, solennelle-

ment, avec le vif espoir d'être écoutés, car, nous en sommes profondément convaincus, par notre voix, c'est la grande voix de la classe ouvrière du monde entier qui, en ce moment tragique, clame sa douleur et ses protestations.

Agréez, Excellence, l'assurance de notre plus profond respect.

(Suivent les signatures des membres du Comité national de la Commission syndicale.)

(Translation:)

COMMISSION SYNDICALE
DE LA BELGIQUE. Brussels, November 14, 1916.

TO HIS EXCELLENCY BARON VON BISSING,
Governor-General in Belgium.

EXCELLENCY:

The secretaries and the representatives of the socialistic and independent labour unions of Belgium have, with the most painful disappointment, taken cognizance of the answer that you were good enough to make to their petition of October 30, concerning the deportation of labourers to Germany, and it is in the name of the working classes as a united whole that we make a final effort to prevent the consummation of an act without precedent against its liberty, its sentiments and its dignity.

You say that many industrial works have been closed on account of the lack of raw materials which the enemy's policy of isolation has brought about. Permit us, Excellency, to recall to your mind the fact that the Allied Powers manifested very clearly their willingness to allow the importation into Belgium of raw materials required by our industries, provided—and it is a very natural provision—that no requisitions be made except those mentioned in Article 52 of The Hague Convention, that is to say, those necessary to the "occupying army," and that an international commission, the Commission for Relief in Belgium, have the right to supervise the destination of the manufactured products.

Instead of agreeing to such a proposal, we have seen the occupying authorities systematically remove the machinery, implements, machines of all kinds, engines and raw materials, metals, leather, wood, limit the production and continually aggravate the difficulties of the transactions. When the districts and the committees

have attempted to employ workmen without work in public improvements, so many obstacles were thrown in their way that in many cases their initiative was checked and broken. In a word, as fast as the most tireless efforts were strained to employ the greatest number possible, other men were thrown out of work.

You state also that unemployment is caused by the labourers' hostility to work. The whole past of our working class protests against this accusation with all the energy that is left in them.

Where is there to be found in the whole world a working class that has made of such a small country such a large industrial and commercial power? And we, who for the last twenty-five years have been the enthusiastic witnesses of the magnificent efforts of our brother-workmen regarding their material and moral betterment, we proudly affirm that it is not among their ranks that one can find men so debased that they prefer to receive charitable assistance, which barely furnishes them with sufficient food, to an honest salary given in remuneration for a free and profitable work.

It is true, however, that the Belgian workmen, conforming to the same Article 52 of The Hague Convention, which admits requisition of labour only "for the needs of the army of occupation and provided these requisitions do not imply an obligation to take part in the war against their country," have refused the most tempting offers, not wishing to build trenches or to repair forts, or to work in factories manufacturing war materials. This was their right and their duty. Their attitude deserves respect and not the most humiliating of punishments.

You refer to your decrees of August, 1915, and of May 15, 1916, mentioning possible punishment for workmen receiving support who refuse work suited to their capacities and recompensed by a proper salary. Those who know with what care the conditions have been established under which the unemployed have the right to receive assistance will find that these menaces are, to say the least, useless. But as you yourself declare, these decrees provide in their Article 2 that every motive for refusal to work will be considered valid if it is admitted by international law.

In the cases of refusal the German authorities reserved the right to cause these recalcitrants to appear before Belgian tribunals, and later before military tribunals. It is therefore certain that the

unemployed have the right to refuse to work for any reason approved by international law. Summoned before the tribunal, they have the right to employ defense and to use their reasons of refusal. It is well enough to say that it is not a question of obliging the workmen to participate in military enterprises; it is only too apparent that every Belgian deported to Germany will take the place there of a man who to-morrow will go to reinforce the ranks of the enemy. We should like to know, Excellency, whether these tribunals carry on their functions.

You fear that continued unemployment depreciates the physical and moral states of the workmen. We who know them have more confidence in them. We have seen them suffer with a stoicism that does not exist but in proud and lofty souls. Did not the splendid idea of organizing throughout the entire country a vast chain of educational schools for the unemployed in order to develop their technical knowledge and to increase their professional value, come from them? The Comité National was not, alas! allowed to attempt this magnificent enterprise. Is it the opinion, then, that through forced labour our unhappy brothers, like slaves, will keep up their physical and moral energy?

You fear also that the assistance that they receive will at last weigh down the Belgian national economic life. It is with difficulty that we can believe that Belgians, as you inform us, have had the sad courage to begrudge in that form the bitter piece of bread and the bit of soup which have for so many months formed the subsistence of so many working families; and, after all, what do the twelve millions amount to that each month are distributed among six hundred thousand unemployed, in comparison to the destruction of goods and lives without number, which has been and is still being brought to our country, as a result of the horrors of a war for which it has not the slightest responsibility? With the most energetic faith in our destinies, we, the most closely interested, know that in the near future Flanders and Wallonie will rise again, glorious, in history.

Excellency, our heart and our reason refuse to believe that it is for the good of our class, and in order to avoid an additional calamity to our country, that thousands of workers are harshly torn from their families and transported to Germany. Public sentiment

has not been deceived, and to the unhappy complaints of the victims are added protests from the entire population, as expressed by its representatives, its communal magistrates, and those persons who constitute the highest incarnation of law in our country.

Furthermore, the arbitrary and brutal manner employed in the execution of these unhappy measures has raised all kinds of doubts as to the object in view. The question above all is to obtain workmen in Germany for Germany's profit and for the success of her arms.

While at Antwerp they did not take any young men from the ages of seventeen to thirty-one who were under the régime of control; in the Borinage they call all the men of seventeen to fifty years of age; in Walloon Brabant, all men over seventeen years, making no distinction between employed and unemployed. Men of all professions and of all conditions have been taken—bakers, who have never ceased to work in our co-operatives in the Borinage, for example, mechanics who always had employment, agricultural workmen, merchants . . . at Lessines on the 6th instant 2100 persons were taken away, all workmen under sixty years of age. Several cases are recorded where old men with five or six sons have been taken thus by force to be exiled.

Distressing scenes occur everywhere. The unhappy ones grouped together in the public squares are quickly divided. They are directed to take with them a small amount of baggage; they are taken at once to the railway-station and loaded into the cattle-cars. They are not allowed to say good-bye to their families. No opportunity is given them to put their affairs in order; even the most pressing matters must be left. They do not know where they are going, nor for what work, nor for how long. They are taken away at the beginning of the winter, after two years of privations, having no further resources and no means to provide themselves with warm clothing, nor even with the indispensable. What privations are they going to endure? How long will they live there? In what state will they return? This ignorance and anxiety are the cause of the ceaseless tears of the mothers and small children. Distress and despair reign in all homes.

Heed these tears and these sobs, Excellency. Do not permit our free and intact past to go to ruin. Do not permit human right to

to which the Governor-General did not reply, that of the second of November, signed by the Senators and Deputies of the district of Mons [3] that of the ninth of Novem-

---

be violated in its holy of holies. Do not permit the dignity of our working classes, which has been acquired after so many centuries of effort, to be trampled under foot.

We solemnly appeal to law and to humanity, with the hope of being heard, for we have the profound conviction that our voice at this tragic hour is the great voice of the working class of the entire civilized world, which expresses its sorrow and its protest.

Accept, Excellency, the homage of our most distinguished consideration.

(Here follow the signatures of the members of the Comité National and of the Commission Syndicale.)

(We transmit this letter, together with previous correspondence, to the Ministers and representatives of foreign powers at Brussels, as well as to our comrades of the Commission Syndicale des Syndicats in Holland.)

[3] Protestation des Sénateurs et Représentants de l'Arrondissement de Mons.

Mons, le 2 novembre, 1916.

À Son Excellence le Général von Bissing,
Gouverneur général de Belgique,
Bruxelles.

Excellence:

Députés et sénateurs de l'arrondissement de Mons, nous avons pour devoir de protester énergiquement contre les levées d'hommes valides auxquelles l'autorité militaire procède en ce moment dans notre région, et de porter à votre connaissance la juste réprobation qu'elles soulèvent.

Les faits se passent de la manière suivante:

Des placards ordonnent aux citoyens âgés de dix-sept ans et plus de se rendre tel jour, à telle heure, en un lieu désigné, sous menace, en cas de désobéissance, des peines les plus sévères, ou bien, disent certaines affiches, sous peine, pour le contrevenant, d'être déclaré chômeur.

Les hommes rassemblés sont parqués en plusieurs groupes.

Un premier triage élimine plusieurs catégories: prêtres, médecins, professeurs, vieillards, infirmes, etc.

Après quoi la sélection s'opère.

Tous ceux que les recruteurs choisissent sont mis à part et dirigés, sous bonne escorte, vers la gare où un train les attend. Les autres sont renvoyés dans leurs foyers.

Nous ne savons suivant quelle règle le choix se fait: on enrôle les chômeurs, mais aussi beaucoup d'autres personnes qui n'ont jamais chômé et appartenant aux professions les plus diverses: bouchers, boulangers, patrons, tailleurs, ouvriers brasseurs, électriciens, cultivateurs; on prend aussi de tout jeunes gens élèves d'athénées, d'universités et autres écoles supérieures, et, d'autre part, des chefs de famille d'un certain âge, ayant charge de nombreux enfants.

Les procédés de recrutement sont divers: parfois l'officier recruteur se base sur les listes de population, parfois il exige la production de la carte d'identité. Il lui arrive aussi de s'efforcer d'obtenir le consentement des personnes convoquées. Quelques engagements ont été souscrits, sur lesquels il est stipulé que la durée est fixée à quatre mois, le salaire à 5 marks, le logement choisi par l'autorité allemande et que le voyage sera gratuit à l'aller, le lieu de destination reste indéterminé. Le plus souvent, les signatures sont données sous l'empire de la crainte ou sous l'effet de la promesse de quelques jours de répit avant le départ.

Les hommes enrôlés par contrainte partent sans que leur famille sache vers quel pays ni pour combien de temps. Au début, ils se présentaient sans vivres, sans linge ni vêtements de rechange, ne sachant pas le sort qui les attendait.

C'est un spectacle douloureux que celui de la séparation inopinée et brutale des membres d'une famille, sans communication, sans adieu!

Le chagrin, l'anxiété et l'indignation ont envahi bien des foyers. Cette déportation est la pire des peines. Elle révolte le sentiment le plus fier et le plus profond de notre race, l'amour de la liberté, de la liberté du travail surtout et l'attachement au sol natal.

L'autorité militaire a déclaré, à plusieurs reprises, que si elle procédait à pareil enrôlement, c'est parce que les bourgmestres ont

refusé de désigner eux-mêmes les chômeurs de leurs communes.

Faut-il défendre les bourgmestres de ce reproche?

Nous l'affirmons fermement: il n'est pas justifié. Tous les bourgmestres ont fait afficher l'ordre de l'autorité qui requiert les chômeurs de se faire inscrire sur les registres tenus par l'Administration communale. En se conformant à cette injunction, les bourgmestres ont fait tout ce qu'ils devaient; ils ne pouvaient rien faire de plus, les lois de notre pays ne leur permettant pas, en effet, de s'introduire chez les particuliers et de se livrer à des recherches sur leur état social: le Belge est maître chez lui et ne doit compte à personne de ses conditions d'existence.

Le bourgmestre qui se serait permis de dresser lui-même la liste des chômeurs et l'aurait livrée à l'autorité militaire, se serait attiré la malédiction publique. En agissant ainsi, il se serait associé au coup de force qui va contraindre un grand nombre de nos concitoyens à se rendre en Allemagne pour effectuer le travail le plus rebutant et le plus odieux, celui dont l'effet se tourne contre la patrie.

Sans doute, on a dit que les travailleurs ne seraient embauchés que pour les entreprises étrangères à la guerre; mais que vaut pareille explication?

En prenant la place d'un ouvrier allemand, l'ouvrier belge permet de remplir un vide dans l'armée allemande.

Travailler pour l'Allemagne, c'est se battre contre la patrie.

Aussi l'instinct public ne s'y est pas trompé: il a résisté aux appels les plus pressants et aux promesses les plus alléchantes affichées sur nos murs. Très rares sont ceux que l'appât de gros salaires a attirés en Allemagne.

La presse a taxé notre population ouvrière de fainéantise: c'est la calomnier.

Les Belges ne sont pas des paresseux, mais ils aiment leur pays et ils ont conscience des devoirs sacrés que la guerre leur impose. Nul homme d'honneur ne peut les blâmer de leur résistance.

Nous avons tenu, Excellence, à vous exposer ces faits afin que vous puissiez employer votre haute autorité à mettre un terme à une violation flagrante du droit des gens.

Quant à nous, nous eussions manque à nos devoirs de mandataires

publics si nous n'avions fait entendre la voix de notre conscience dans un moment aussi grave et aussi douloureux.

Agréez, Excellence, l'expression de notre considération la plus distinguée.

(Ont signé:)

Sénateurs:

Mosselman, Roland, Vicomte Vilain XIIII, Demerbe.

Représentants:

Alph. Harmignie, Masson, Bastien, Maroille, Brenez, Servais.

(Translation:)

To His Excellency General von Bissing,
Governor-General in Belgium,
Brussels.

Excellency:

We, the deputies and senators of the district of Mons, feel it our duty to protest vigorously against the impressment of able-bodied men which is being carried out in our region at this moment by the German military authorities, and to bring to your attention the just reproach which it deserves.

The events occur as follows:

Posters direct citizens over seventeen years of age to present themselves on a certain day at a certain hour and place, under penalty of severe punishment for disobedience, or as certain posters declare, under penalty of being considered unemployed.

The men assembled are grouped in several divisions.

A preliminary division eliminates a number of classes—priests, doctors, professors, old men, sick, etc.

Thereupon the selection takes place.

All those who are chosen are placed at one side and led under strong guard to the station, where a train awaits them. The others are liberated. We do not know what rules are followed in making the choice; unemployed men are taken, but also many others who have never been without work, in various professions: butchers, bakers, master tailors, brewers, electricians, farmers; very young people are taken as well, high school students, university students and those attending other higher schools; and, on the other hand,

heads of families already past middle age who have several children to care for.

The manner of recruiting varies. Sometimes the recruiting officer depends upon the size of the population, sometimes he requires the persons to show their identification-cards; he sometimes tries to gain the consent of the person summoned. Some contracts have been signed where it is stipulated that the duration of time is limited to four months, the wages at five marks, the lodgings chosen by the German authorities, and the transportation free, going and coming; the point of destination is not determined.

More often the signatures are obtained by intimidation or as the result of a promise of several days' delay before being sent away.

The men enrolled by force leave without the knowledge of their families as to where they are going and for how long. At first they present themselves without provisions, linen or extra clothing, ignorant of the fate awaiting them.

It is a sad spectacle, the unexpected and brutal separation of members of a family without a word, without saying good-by.

Sorrow, anxiety and indignation have filled many, many homes. This deportation is the worst of punishments. It revolts the proudest and most deeply felt sentiments of our race, the love of liberty, particularly of the freedom of work and the attachment to the land of birth.

The military authorities have declared on several occasions that such enrollments were made only because the mayors refused to point out themselves those who were unemployed in their communes.

Is it necessary to defend the mayors against such an accusation?

We state firmly that it is not justified. All the mayors have caused to be posted the orders of the authorities requiring the unemployed to register in the books in the possession of the communal administration. In obeying that order the mayors have done everything that they should have done; they could not have done more. As a matter of fact the laws of our country do not permit them to enter the homes of private individuals and to proceed to make investigations as to their social status; the Belgian is his own master in his home, and he owes it to no one to account for his mode of existence.

Any mayor who would have gone so far as to make a list of the

unemployed and to hand it to the military authorities would have called down upon himself the curses of his people. In so doing he would have taken part in a measure of force which is going to compel a large number of our fellow-citizens to go to Germany to carry out most repulsive and most odious work—work the results of which are to be used against the native land.

It is invariably said that the workers will not be employed except on projects that are not of a military nature. But what is such an explanation worth?

In taking the place of a German workman the Belgian workman permits a gap in the German army to be filled.

To work for Germany is to fight against one's country.

And the instinct of the public is not deceived. It has resisted the most pressing appeals, the most tempting promises posted on its walls. Very few in number are those whose lust for large wages tempted them into Germany.

The Press has called our working population indolent. This is an insult.

The Belgians are not lazy, but they love their country and they realize the sacred duty that the war imposes. No man of honour can blame them for their resistance.

We have felt obliged, Excellency, to recite these facts to you in order that you may use your high authority to put an end to this flagrant violation of international law.

As for us, we should have been lacking in our duty if we had not lifted the voice of our conscience at a moment so solemn and so sorrowful.

Accept, Excellency, the expression of our most distinguished consideration.

Réponse du Général von Bissing à la Protestation des Sénateurs et Représentants de Mons

Bruxelles, le 9 novembre. 1916.

Aux Députés de Mons:

En réponse à votre lettre du 2 novembre 1916, dans laquelle vous nous priez de renoncer à la déportation des chômeurs vers l'Allemagne, j'ai l'honneur de vous faire connaître que votre demande ne pourra être prise en considération.

Depuis le début de la guerre, une grande partie de la population

belge chôme. Les raisons qui créent cette situation sont, d'une part, l'inactivité de beaucoup d'établissements industriels provoquée par la pénurie de matières premières résultant du blocus ennemi, d'autre part, la mauvaise volonté mise à travailler.

La longue durée de cette situation commence à faire apparaître de fâcheux résultats, et, en qualité de gouverneur du pays occupé, S. E. le Gouverneur général de Belgique, se basant sur le droit des gens, a pour devoir de prendre les mesures nécessaires pour parer à cet état de choses.

Des Belges éclairés se sont déjà adressés au printemps 1915 à S. E. le Gouverneur général et ont démontré les dangers du chômage et de l'aversion du travail.

Ils ont montré que les secours, quelle que soit leur provenance, finissent par peser sur la population et entraînent en même temps les ouvriers dans l'oisiveté.

Mais cela aurait pour conséquence que les ouvriers s'affaibliraient physiquement et moralement et que, en particulier, les ouvriers instruits perdraient leurs aptitudes et leur dextérité et qu'ils deviendraient inutilisables pour l'industrie belge lorsque la paix future serait rétablie.

Pour ces raisons, les arrêtés pris contre le chômage ont été mis en vigueur en août 1915 avec l'aide du ministère belge compétent et complétés plus tard par l'arrêté du 15 mai 1916.

Ces arrêtés ne prévoient la contrainte au travail que si le chômeur refuse sans motifs suffisants, pour un salaire proportionnel qui lui est offert, un travail conforme à ses aptitudes et tombe par là à charge de la bienfaisance publique.

Toute infraction contraire au droit des gens est formellement reconnue comme motif de refus fondé. Donc aucun ouvrier ne pourra être contraint à prendre part à des *ravaux de guerre.* Ces arrêtés reposent sur des considérations saines, conformes à la loi, et qu'ordonnent, sans doute possible, l'intérêt de la masse et la liberté de chacun. Il ne s'agit plus ici que de l'application, après que les situations qui s'étaient présentées avaient conduit à une calamité publique.

A cet effet, les listes nominatives des chômeurs devront nous être adressées par les bourgmestres. Lors des réunions, il est offert du travail, contre un bon salaire, aux chômeurs mentionnés sur la

liste, et ce travail doit être effectué en Allemagne, vu que, dans le territoire du Gouvernement général seul, un nombre limité de chômeurs pourront être employés.

Les chômeurs qui, lors de ces réunions, refusent le travail offert seront dirigés de force en Allemagne.

Ils obtiennent aussi un salaire, mais plus petit que celui qu'ils auraient eu s'ils s'étaient engagés comme travailleurs libres. Le Gouverneur général espère qu'il ne devra faire usage de ces mesures que dans des cas exceptionnels.

Une grande partie du peuple a, avec sa compréhension saine des choses, jugé la situation d'une manière exacte, et c'est par dizaines de mille que les ouvriers belges ont pris librement le chemin de l'Allemagne où, mis sur le même pied que les ouvriers allemands, ils gagnent des salaires plus élevés que ceux qu'ils ont jamais connus en Belgique et où, au lieu de tomber dans la misère comme leurs compagnons restés au pays, ils élèvent leurs familles à un rang plus élevé.

D'après ceci, vous devez accorder que par les déportations des chômeurs belges en Allemagne, l'intérêt du peuple belge reste entièrement sauf. Si vous vous adressez dans ce sens aux chômeurs, vous leur rendrez un meilleur service qu'en les entraînant dans la voie du refus de travailler, et contraindre par là les autorités allemandes à des mesures sévères.

Si, lors de la déportation, il y a de la sévérité et qu'il y a des ouvriers actifs qui sont elevés, la faute incombe aux bourgmestres qui se sont refusés à donner les listes ou bien dont les listes étaient incomplètes.

Pour le Gouverneur général.
(Signature.)
Brussels, November 9, 1916.

(Translation:)

To the Deputies of Mons:

In reply to your letter of November 2, 1916, in which you ask us to give up the deportation of unemployed toward Germany, I have the honour to inform you that your request cannot be taken into consideration.

From the beginning of the war a great part of the Belgian population has been idle. The reasons that created that situation

are, on the one hand, the inactivity of many industrial establishments, brought about by the lack of raw materials resulting from the enemy blockade, and on the other, by the lack of a desire to work. The long duration of this situation begins to bring about evil results, and in his capacity of Governor of the occupied country His Excellency the Governor-General of Belgium, under the international law, finds it his duty to take the necessary measures to remedy such a state of things.

Enlightened Belgians as early as the spring of 1915 addressed themselves to H. E. the Governor-General and pointed out the dangers of unemployment and of an aversion to work.

They showed him that charity, wherever it came from, will finish by becoming a weight on the population, and at the same time lead the working people to idleness.

That would have as a consequence the physical and moral enfeeblement of the working men, and that skilled workers in particular would lose their aptitude and dexterity and would become useless for Belgian industry as soon as the future peace was reëstablished.

For these reasons the decrees issued against the unemployment were put in vigour in August 1915 with the aid of the proper Belgian ministry, and have later been completed by the decree of May 15, 1916.

These decrees did not envisage compulsory labour except in the case when the unemployed would refuse, without sufficient motives, for a proper salary offered to him, work suitable to his abilities, and he became a charge on public charity.

Every infraction contrary to international law is formally recognized as a founded motive to refuse this work. Therefore no working man can be compelled to take part in war-labour. These decrees are founded on wholesome considerations in conformity with the law, and which respect without any possible doubt the interest of the masses and the liberty of each person. It is merely a question of the application (of measures taken?) after the situations which had been presented had led to a public calamity.

To this effect the lists of the names of the unemployed must be addressed to us by the burgomasters. When in the assemblies work is offered for good wages to the unemployed mentioned on the list,

and this work must be carried out in Germany, whereas in the territory of the General Government only a limited number of unemployed may be employed.

The unemployed who in these assemblies refuse the work offered will be sent by force to Germany. They gain wages also, but smaller than that which they would have had as free labourers. The Governor-General hopes that it will be necessary to use these measures only on exceptional occasions.

The greater part of the people has, with its sound comprehension of things, judged the situation in a correct manner, and by tens of thousands Belgian working men have freely taken the road to Germany, where, put on the same footing with German working men, they earn wages higher than those which they ever knew in Belgium, and that instead of falling into misery like their comrades remaining in the country, they raise their families to a higher rank.

After this, you must admit that by the deportations of the Belgian unemployed in Germany the interest of the Belgian people rests entirely safe. If you speak to the unemployed in this sense you will render them a better service than you would do by leading them to refuse to work, and by that means force the German authorities to take severe measures.

If at the time of the deportation there is severity, and if there are employed working men who are taken away, the fault will rest on the burgomasters who refuse to give the lists or whose lists were not complete.

For the Governor-General.
(Signature.)

(*Note.*—The French employed by the Germans is often exceedingly difficult to translate!—B. W.)

RÉPLIQUE DES SÉNATEURS ET REPRÉSENTANTS DE MONS AU GOUVERNEUR GÉNÉRAL VON BISSING:

Mons, le 27 novembre 1916.

A SON EXCELLENCE LE GÉNÉRAL VON BISSING,
Gouverneur général en Belgique.

EXCELLENCE:

Nous avons pris connaissance de la réponse en date du 9 novembre, que Votre Excellence a bien voulu faire à notre lettre du 2

novembre, laquelle nous est parvenue par l'entremise du Comité Provincial de Secours et d'Alimentation de Mons, à qui elle a été adressée.

Témoins de l'enrôlement dans notre région, nous avons la conviction que l'exécution des arrêtés relatifs au chômage a eu lieu en violation flagrante des considérations que vous nous exposez. Nous ne pouvons que répéter que le mobile de cette opération n'a pas été de procurer du travail aux chômeurs ni de décharger la bienfaisance publique de l'entretien de gens sans emploi.

Permettez-nous de vous signaler quelques faits à titre d'exemple:

A Quaregnon, sur 1000 ouvriers appelés au contrôle, 304 ont été déportés. Parmi ceux-ci, il y a 227 non chômeurs parmi lesquels 4 cultivateurs, 5 patrons boulangers, 6 ouvriers boulangers, un patron boucher, 1 ingénieur brasseur, directeur d'une grande brasserie, un gros négociant, le fils d'un maître de forges, un patron imprimeur.

Il est à noter que le nombre des hommes appelés au contrôle est relativement peu élevé eu égard à la population totale, mais il ne faut pas perdre de vue que nous sommes au centre du bassin houiller et que tous les ouvriers mineurs ont été exemptés.

L'observation s'applique à toutes les autres communes.

A Dour, sur 137 déportés, l'on compte 117 travailleurs dont 9 cultivateurs, 4 étudiants et nombre de petits patrons travaillant chez eux.

A Wasmes, sur 186 déportés, 130 non chômeurs.

A Frameries, sur 200 déportés, 127 non chômeurs.

A Hornu, sur 140 déportés, 87 non chômeurs.

A Pâturages, sur 139 déportés, 134 non chômeurs.

A Ghlin, sur 155 déportés, 109 non chômeurs.

A Havré, le bourgmestre a déclaré aux officiers recruteurs que tous les hommes convoqués à l'enrôlement étaient occupés (il avait procédé à une enquête et demandait à faire la preuve). On ne tint pas compte de ses observations et, sur 450 hommes appelés au contrôle, 46 furent déportés, tous occupés.

Des proportions équivalentes se retrouvent dans toutes les communes.

Est-ce un effet du hasard? Non, la plupart du temps, le choix des ouvriers qui ont du travail en Belgique a été voulu délibérément.

Les recruteurs paraissent avoir une prédilection marquée pour les ouvriers les plus exercés de certaines industries: contremaîtres; ouvriers d'ateliers et de laminoirs, verriers, cordonniers, ajusteurs, électriciens, cultivateurs.

C'est ainsi qu'aux Forges et Laminoirs de Baume à Haine-Saint-Pierre, sur 400 ouvriers qui ont passé au contrôle, 52 ont été déportés.

Aux usines Gilson, à la Croyére, 50 ouvriers ont été déportés sur 225 appelés au contrôle.

A la Société La Brugeoise et Nicaise et Delcuve, 56 sur 389.

A la Société anonyme des Laminoirs de La Croyère, 51 sur 73.

Aux usines Boulonneries et Fonderie de La Louvière, 25 sur 131.

Aux ateliers de Bouvy, à La Croyère, 25 sur 145.

A la Compagnie centrale de Construction, à Haine-Saint-Pierre, 37 ouvriers et employés travaillant ont été déportés, soit 10% du personnel occupé.

Aux ateliers Spiltoir, Happez et Meck, à Haine-Saint-Paul, 14 ouvriers ont été déportés, ce qui représente 70% du personnel occupé, soumis au contrôle et 40% de tout le personnel.

Aux Hauts Fourneaux et Fonderies de La Louvière la déportation du personnel a atteint 70%, ce qui met l'usine dans l'impossibilité de continuer sa fabrication.

Aux usines Boël, à La Louvière, on a enlevé 249 hommes dont un chef de bureau, 10 employés, 21 contremaîtres et 217 ouvriers.

Tous les employés et ouvriers de ces usines qu'on a déportés étaient au travail au moment du contrôle.

A la verrerie de Jemappes, seul établissement de l'espèce dans notre arrondissement, l'application du système est d'un effet saisissant.

Cette usine fut remise en marche le 4 décembre 1915; elle a travaillé sans interruption et d'une allure ascendante jusqu'au septembre, 1916. Elle dut chômer jusqu'au 10 novembre pour réparer certains fours, avec le projet d'élargir son activité. On lui a enlevé plus de la moitié de son personnel d'élite. A titre de précision, nous citons des chiffres:

40% des souffleurs;

60% des premiers gamins de souffleurs;

30% des deuxièmes gamins de souffleurs;

40% du personnel des repasseurs;
35% des étendeurs;
100% des ouvriers électriciens;
100% des ouvriers ajusteurs, etc. . . .

Quelle perturbation pour cette industrie!

Ce que nous venons de dire de la marche ascendante des verreries de Jemappes s'applique à la plupart des industries dont nous venons de parler.

Nous mettons à part les charbonnages, dont l' activité est considérée avec faveur; nous voulons surtout parler des ateliers de construction, des laminoirs, des faïenceries, des fabriques de chaussures, des usines de produits ceramiques, etc. . . . Aucune de ces industries, grande ou petite, n'a été atteinte par le blocus ou du moins n'a éprouve d'empêchement majeur de ce chef. Le temps d'arrêt qu'elles ont eu parfois à subir avait pour cause l'interruption des transports, l'insuffisance de combustibles ou de minerais (faute de moyens de transport) et surtout les rigueurs d'arrêtés qui ont frappé de saisie une partie de l'outillage ou qui limitent la durée du travail à un nombre d'heures fort restreint (les fabriques de chaussures).

Les industriels n'ont pas manqué d'exposer aux officiers recruteurs combien il importait, pour la bonne marche de leur exploitation, de laisser leur personnel intact. Leurs observations n'ont pas été écoutées ou guère.

Chose caractéristique et qui révèle la volonté arrêtés de choisir dans des professions ou des catégories déterminées, il est arrivé à l'autorité militaire de faire grouper à part les ouvriers d'usines en pleine activité et d'effectuer leur choix sous les yeux du chef de l'établissement et nonobstant ses protestations; il en fut ainsi pour les ouvriers des laminoirs de Jemappes, pour ceux des ateliers de constructions de Nimy et des ateliers de Bouvy a La Louvière.

Quels griefs peut-on faire à ces braves gens qu'on arrache a leur famille, qu'on soustrait au travail national, pour les contraindre de travailler au profit de l'Allemagne?

Quelles infractions ont-ils commises?

La déportation est une peine cruelle et imméritée pour eux, et pour nous, Belges, un mal national.

A toutes les réquisitions de matières, d'outillages, de chevaux, qui ont déjà fait de si grands ravages, fallait-il que vint s'ajouter la plus abominable de toutes: celle de l'homme?

Par le développement de la civilisation, par l'adoption de lois de guerre codifiées dans les conventions internationales, il semblerait que jamais plus un peuple vaincu ne pût être soumis à pareille torture et que la liberté individuelle des habitants paisibles dût désormais être respectée. Tous, chômeurs comme travailleurs, devaient être laissés dans leurs foyers.

Et vit-on jamais population plus calme, plus stoïque dans la souffrance? Fut-elle jamais l'occasion d'une charge ou d'un souci pour le Gouvernement impérial?

Vous vous efforcez de rassurer notre patriotisme, Excellence, en nous déclarant que les Belges déportés ne prendront point part à des buts de guerre. . . . Mais ne travaillent-ils donc pas à des buts de guerre tous ceux qui coopèrent d'une manière quelconque aux entreprises des peuples belligérants? Le cultivateur qui fournit la graisse à l'armée, le tailleur qui façonne des vêtements, le corroyeur, le cordonnier, le bûcheron, le terrassier ne participent-ils pas aux objectifs de guerre? Quiconque met le pied sur le sol de l'Allemagne pour travailler devient un auxiliaire de l'armée allemande, quelque ouvrage qu'il fasse.

C'est si vrai que le Gouvernement impérial veut établir le service civil obligatoire; tous les civils seront par le fait militarisés.

Et avant même que les autorités allemandes aient mis en vigueur cette nouvelle législation de guerre, elles l'appliquent à la Belgique occupée. Elles l' imposent aux Belges contre leur propre pays, nonobstant les assurances solennelles qui avaient écarté de leurs soucis cette odieuse perspective.

Jamais, Excellence, jamais le droit des gens n'a reconnu aux vainqueurs pareil pouvoir, jamais il ne consacrera pareille iniquité.

Ne nous demandez pas de dire à nos populations que c'est dans leur intérêt qu'on les expédie en Allemagne: le faisant, nous trahirions notre patrie.

Agréez, Excellence, l'expression de notre considération distinguée.

Les Députés et Sénateurs de l'arrondissement de Mons.

(Signatures).

(Translation:)

Mons, November 27, 1916.

To His Excellency General von Bissing,
Governor-General in Belgium.

Excellency:

We have taken note of the response of November 9 which Your Excellency was good enough to make to our letter of November 2, which came to us through the Comité Provincial de Secours et d'Alimentation de Mons, to which it had been addressed.

Witnesses of the enrolment in our region, we have the conviction that the execution of the decrees relating to unemployment has taken place in flagrant violation of the considerations which you set forth. We can only repeat that the motive of this operation has not been to procure work for the unemployed Belgians to relieve the public charities of the support of men without work. Permit us to submit to you several facts as examples.

At Quaregnon, out of 1000 working men taken to control, 304 were deported. Among these there were 227 employed, including 4 cultivators, 5 master-bakers, 6 bakers, an employer-butcher, a brewer, director of a great brewery, an important merchant, the son of a blacksmith, and a printer.

It should be noted that the number of men called to the control is relatively small in proportion of the total population; but it must not be lost sight of that we are in the centre of the mining region, and that all the miners have been exempted.

This observation applies to all the other communes.

At Dour, out of 137 deported 117 were counted who were employed, among which 9 cultivators, 4 students, and a number of small employers working at home.

At Wasmes, out of 186 deported 130 were employed.

At Frameries, out of 200 deported 187 were employed.

At Hornu, out of 140 deported 87 were employed.

At Pâturages, out of 139 deported 134 were employed.

At Ghlin, out of 155 deported 109 were employed.

At Harvré, the burgomaster had declared to the recruiting officer that all the men summoned to be enrolled were occupied; he had made an inquiry and asked to be allowed to prove it. No attention

was paid to his observation, and out of 450 men called to the control 46 were deported, all employed.

The same proportions were found in all the communes.

Is this the effect of chance? No. The greater part of the time they deliberately chose working men who had employment in Belgium. The recruiting officers appeared to have a marked predilection for the most experienced working men of certain industries —foremen, men from the shops, iron-workers, glass-blowers, shoemakers, adjusters, electricians, cultivators.

Thus, at the forges and rolling mills of Baume at Haine-St.-Pierre, out of 400 workmen who were examined 52 were deported.

In the Gilson factories at La Croyère, 50 workmen were deported out of 225 called.

At the company La Brugeoise et Nicaise et Delcuve, 56 out of 389.

At the limited company of the Rolling Mills of La Croyère, 51 out of 73.

At the factories of the Boulonneries et Fonderie de la Louvière, 25 out of 131.

At the workshops of Bouvy at La Croyère, 25 out of 145.

At the Compagnie Centrale de Construction at Haine-St.-Pierre 37 workmen and employés who were working were deported, about 10 per cent of the personnel.

At the workshops, Spiltoir, Happez et Meck, at Haine-St.-Paul, 14 workmen were deported, which represents 70 per cent. of the personnel examined and 40 per cent. of the entire personnel.

At the Hauts-Fourneaux et Fonderies de la Louvière the deportations reached 70 per cent., which made it impossible for the factory to continue work.

In the Usines Boel, at La Louvière, they took away 249 workmen, among them a head clerk, 10 employés, 21 foremen, and 217 workmen. All the employés and workmen of these factories that were deported were working at the time they were examined.

At the glass-works of Jemappes, the only establishment of the kind in our arrondissement, the application of the system had a striking effect.

This factory had resumed work on December 4, 1915; it worked without interruption and more and more until September 1, 1916.

It had to shut down till November 10 to repair certain furnaces, intending to enlarge its activity. They took away from it more than half of its best workmen. In order to be precise, we cite the following figures:

Forty per cent of the blowers;

Sixty per cent. of the boys of the first class who aid the blowers;

Thirty per cent. of the boys of the second class who aid the blowers;

Forty per cent. of the personnel of grinders;

Thirty-five per cent. of the stretchers;

One hundred per cent. of the electricians;

One hundred per cent. of the adjusters, etc.

What a perturbation for this industry!

What we have just said of the speeding up of the glassworks of Jemappes applies to almost all of the industries we have spoken of.

We put aside the coal-mines, of which the activity is considered with favour; we wish above all to speak of the workshops, the rolling mills, the crockeries, the boot factories, the tile factories, etc. . . . None of these industries, big or little, was touched by the blockade, or at least did not suffer any great embarrassment on this account. The time during which they had to shut down was caused by interruption of transport, the insufficience of fuel or of minerals, because of the lack of means of transport, and above all, because of the rigours of the decrees by which part of the tools were seized and which limited the working day to a number of hours very greatly reduced (the boot factories).

The manufacturers did not fail to show the recruiting officers how necessary it was for the success of their work to leave their personnel intact. Their observations were hardly listened to.

One thing that is characteristic, which shows the fixed idea to choose among the professions or categories already determined, was that the military authority grouped on one side the working men in the factories that were going full blast, and made their choice under the eyes of the chiefs of the establishments and despite their protestations: it was the same for the workmen of the rolling mills of Jemappes for those of the constructing-shops of Nimy and the shops of Bouvy at La Louvière.

What complaints can they make to these good fellows that were

torn away from their families, who were taken away from national labour to be compelled to work in the interest of Germany?

What wrongs had they committed?

The deportation is a cruel and unmerited suffering for them, and for us Belgians a national calamity.

To all the requisitions of material, of tools, of horses, which had already made such ravages, was it necessary to add that most abominable of all, that of man?

By the development of civilization, by the adoption of codified laws of war in international conventions, it would seem that never more would a vanquished people have been submitted to such a torture and that the personal liberty of peaceful inhabitants would have been respected. All the unemployed as well as the working men must be left in their homes.

And has one ever seen a population more calm, more stoic under suffering? Was the population ever the occasion of difficulties or care for the Imperial Government?

You try to reassure our patriotism, Excellency, in declaring to us that the deported Belgians will not have to take part in anything that has to do with the war. But do not all those who co-operate in any way in the enterprises of belligerent peoples work for war? The farmer who furnishes fats to the army, the tailor who makes clothes, the beltmaker, the shoemaker, the lumberman, the road-builder, do they not participate in work which has a war end? Whoever puts a foot on the soil of Germany to work becomes an auxiliary of the German army, no matter what work he does.

It is so true that the German Government wishes to establish obligatory civil service; all of the civilians will be by that fact militarized.

And even before the authorities have put in vigour this new war legislation they apply it to occupied Belgium. They impose it on Belgians against their own country, notwithstanding the solemn assurances which had relieved their minds of this odious perspective.

Never, Excellency, never has international law recognized such a power in the conqueror. Never has it consecrated such an iniquity.

Do not ask us to say to our populations that it is in their in-

terest that they are being sent to Germany. In doing so we would betray our country.

Accept, Excellency, the expression of our distinguished consideration.

Bruxelles, le 9 Novembre 1916.

A Son Excellence le Baron von Bissing,
Gouverneur général en Belgique,
Bruxelles.

Excellence:

Il semblait qu'ancune douleur ne pût être ajoutée à celles dont nous sommes accablés depuis l'occupation de notre patrie. Nos libertés aboilés, notre industrie et notre commerce aneantis, nos matières premières et nos instruments de travail exportés, la fortune publique ruinée, le denument succedant a l'aisance des familles naguere les plus prospères, les privations, les anxiétés et les deuils, on avait tout endure, sans autre revolte que la protestation muette des ames et sans que nulle part l'ordre public eût été troublé. Un immense mouvement de solidarité avait rapproché toutes les classes sociales; on souffrait en commun et la communauté des souffrances allegeait le poids des misères individuelles.

Mais voici qu'une violence nouvelle vient fondre sur nos famillies et les dechire. Des centaines, des milliers de citoyens paisibles, de tout âge, de toute condition, toute une population civile est brusquement, brutalement arrachée a ses foyers et déportée en Allemagne. Ou, en quel point de l'Empire? Nul ne le sait. Quelle y sera son existence, à quel travail y sera-t-elle condamnée? Mystère. De ce fait, des centaines, des milliers de femmes, d'enfants, de vieillards sont abandonnés, dépourvus de leur soutien, livrés aux angoisses d'une separation dont nul ne prévoit le terme, et spectacle de leur détresse est tel que, pour ne pas avoir à l'affronter, les recruteurs refusent à ces épouses éplorées, à ces parents desesperés la consolation d'un dernier adieu.

Est-il besoin d'insister sur ces scènes dont la région de l'étape est le théâtre depuis plusieurs semaines et qui se déroulent depuis quelques jours dans le territoire du Gouvernement général, où le fléau menace de s'étendre de commune en commune jusqu'à ce que ses victimes se comptent par centaines de mille? Les avis scellés

aux murs et reproduits dans les journaux en disent assez long; c'est partout la même procédure, aussi sommaire que lugubre: des arrestations en masse, des hommes classés arbitrairement parmi les sans-travail, parqués, triés, expédiés vers l'inconnu. Pour ne parler que des affiches d'hier placardées à Nivelles, Virginal, Ittre, Haut-Ittre, Lillois, Baulers, Monstreux, Bornival, Thines, Braine-l'Alleud, Ophain, Wauthier-Braine, Waterloo, Plancenoit, elles convoquent indistinctement, en leur recommandant de se munir d'un petit bagage à main, "toutes les personnes du sexe mâle âgées de plus de 17 ans, à l'exception seulement des ecclésiastiques, médecins, avocats et instituteurs." On ne limite plus le levée aux chômeurs: c'est qu'en effet le prétexte d'occuper nos chômeurs à l'étranger ne trompe plus personne. Le plus sûr moyen de les occuper dans le pays n'aurait-il pas été de leur laisser leurs outils, leurs machines, leurs ateliers, leurs approvisionnements, leurs facilités de communication, leur liberté de travail? Des philanthropes avaient imaginé d'utiliser les bras disponibles à des travaux d'intérêt public: leur initiative fut enrayée et finalement brisée. D'autres s'étaient ingéniés à organiser à l'intention des chômeurs un vaste système d'enseignement technique destiné à relever leur valeur professionnelle, mais le plan ne fut pas agréé, pas plus que celui de créer partout des bureaux de renseignement et de placement.

On préfère leur procurer de l'ouvrage en Allemagne où les représentants de l' "Industrie-Bureau" leur promettent "un bon salaire" s'ils consentent à s'y faire embaucher "volontairement," et où les attendent, en cas de refus, des salaires de famine. Sur quelle dépression physique et morale ne compte-t-on pas pour leur forcer la main?

Sans doute il a été affirmé que les entreprises auxquelles on offre de les employer seraient étrangères à la guerre. Mais de toutes parts des voix ont répondu: En prenant la place d'un ouvrier allemand, l'ouvrier belge permet à l'Allemagne d'augmenter la force numérique de ses armées. Le travail le plus odieux est celui dont l'effet se tourne contre la patrie; servir l'Allemagne, c'est se battre contre notre pays. Y contraindre nos ouvriers n'est autre chose qu'un coup de force, contraire au droit des gens, visé par Votre Excellence dans son arrêté du 15 août 1915, et contraire aussi à l'esprit, sinon au texte de la quatrième Convention de La Haye de 1907.

"Une mesure telle que le déplacement de la population civile non combattante," écrit M. le professeur de droit international Ernest Nys, dans sa lettre de ce jour ci-annexée a M. le Bourgmestre de Bruxelles "est en contradiction complète avec la notion de l'occupation de guerre; celle-ci a remplacé l'ancienne théorie de la conquête qui faisait du vainqueur le souverain du pays conquis; le vainqueur a le devoir de respecter les droits des habitants paisibles."

C'est au nom de ces droits sacrés, ouvertement violés, que les sénateurs et députés soussignés, présents à Bruxelles, mandataires de la Nation belge, adressent à Votre Excellence la solennelle protestation des familles sans nombre atteintes par l'édit cruel qui secoue en ce moment le pays d'un frisson d'indignation qui ne saurait manquer de soulever la réprobation de tout le monde civilisé.

Ils adjurent Votre Excellence d'user vis-à-vis des autorités militaires des hautes prérogatives que lui confère sa charge pour ne pas laisser se consommer un attentat sans précédent dans l'histoire des guerres modernes,

et la prient d'agréer l'assurance de leur considération la plus distinguée.

Liste des Signatures

Ministres d'Etat:

Baron de Favereau, président du Sénat;
Comte Woeste, représentant d'Alost;
Jules Vandenpeereboom, sénateur provincial de la Flandre occidentale;
Joseph Devolder, sénateur pour Arion-Marche-Bastogne.

Sénateurs:

Braun, Alexandre, sénateur pour Bruxelles;
Brunard, Edouard, sénateur pour Nivelles;
De Becker-Remy, sénateur pour Louvain;
De Blieck, sénateur pour Alost;
de Ro, Georges, sénateur pour Bruxelles;
Dubost, Edouard, sénateur pour Bruxelles;
Dumont de Chassart, sénateur pour Nivelles;
Dupret, Georges, sénateur pour Bruxelles;
Hallet, Max, sénateur pour Bruxelles;
Hanrez, Prosper, sénateur pour Bruxelles;

Baron E. de Kerchove d'Exaerde, sénateur pour Alost;
Lekeu, Jules, sénateur provincial du Hainaut;
Mesens, Edmond, sénateur pour Bruxelles;
Baron de Mevius, sénateur pour Namur-Dinant-Philippeville;
Baron Alfred Orban de Xivry, sénateur pour Arlon-Marche-Bastogne;
Poelaert, Albert, sénateur pour Bruxelles;
Vicomte Simonis, sénateur pour Verviers, ancien président du Sénat;
Speyer, Herbert, sénateur pour Arlon-Marche-Bastogne;
Vinck, Emile, sénateur provincial du Brabant;

Membres de la Chambre des représentants:

Levie, Michel, ancien ministre, représentant de Charleroi;
Bertrand, Louis, représentant de Bruxelles;
Boël, Pol, représentant de Soignies;
Buisset, Emile, représentant de Charleroi;
Buyl, représentant d'Ostende-Furnes-Dixmude;
Cocq, Fernand, représentant de Bruxelles;
De Bue, Xavier, représentant de Bruxelles;
Delporte, Antoine, représentant de Bruxelles;
Baron Drion, représentant de Charleroi;
Elbers, François, représentant de Bruxelles;
Hanssens, Eugène, représentant de Bruxelles;
Baron Albert d'Huart, représentant de Dinant-Philippeville;
Janson, Paul-Emile, représentant de Tournai-Ath;
Jourez, Léon, représentant de Nivelles;
Lamborelle, représentant de Malines;
Lemonnier, Maurice, représentant de Bruxelles;
Comte de Limburg Stirum, représentant d'Arlon-Marche-Bastogne;
Polet, Hyacinthe, représentant de Liége;
Poncelet, Jules, représentant de Neufchâteau-Virton;
Rens, représentant d'Alost;
Tibbaut, Emile, représentant de Termonde;
Wauters, représentant de Huy-Waremme;
Wauwermans, Paul, représentant de Bruxelles.

Au nom de la Députation permanente du Brabant:

Janssen, Charles.

ber, signed by the Belgian Senators and Deputies present in Brussels at that time [4] that of the first of Novem-

(Translation:)

[4] Brussels, November 9, 1916.

To His Excellency Baron von Bissing,
Governor-General in Belgium.

Excellency:

It seemed that no suffering could be added to those which we have already been bearing since the occupation of our country. Our banished liberty, our destroyed industry and commerce, our raw materials, our instruments of work taken out of the country, the public fortune ruined, privations replacing the wealth of families formerly the most prosperous, grief, anxieties and mourning, had all been endured without any other sign of revolt than a mute protestation of the spirit, without any disturbance of public order in any part of the country. An enormous impulse of solidarity had brought together all the social classes in a common suffering, and the mutuality of burdens lessened the weight of the individual miseries.

But now comes a new violence to our families, tearing them apart.

Hundreds and thousands of peaceful citizens of all ages, of all conditions, an entire civilian population, is harshly, brutally turned out of its home and deported to Germany. Where, in what part of the Empire? No one knows. What will be their existence? To what work will they be assigned? For these reasons hundreds and thousands of wives, children and old men are abandoned and deprived of their support, betrayed to the anguishes of a separation of which no one can see the end; and the spectacle of their desolation is such that in order not to witness it the recruiters refuse the suffering wives, the suffering parents, the consolation of a last farewell.

Is there need to repeat the scenes for which the region of the *étape* has for several weeks been the theatre, and which have been repeating themselves during the past days in the territory of the Government-General where this terrible measure promises to extend from commune to commune until its victims are counted by hundreds of thousands? The notices posted on the walls and reproduced in the newspapers tell sufficiently what it is. It is the same procedure

everywhere, summary and sorrowful: arrests *en masse,* men classed arbitrarily among the unemployed, grouped together, divided, sent toward the unknown. To mention only the notices of yesterday, posted at Nivelles, Virginal, Ittre, Haut-Ittre, Lillois, Baulers, Monstreux, Bornival, Thimes, Braine l'Alleud, Ophain, Wauthier-Braine, Waterloo, Plancenoit; they summon without distinction all persons of the male sex over seventeen years of age, with the exception only of clergymen, doctors, lawyers and professors, and they are told to bring with them only a small amount of baggage. The levy is no longer limited to unemployed; indeed the pretext to give employment to our unemployed outside of the country no longer deceives us. The best means of giving them occupation in their own country would have been to leave them their tools, their machines, their shops, their supplies, their facilities for communication, their liberty of work. Philanthropists have suggested using workmen on public improvements. Their initiative has been stopped and finally broken. Others have taken steps to organize for the unemployed a vast system of technical education, intended to increase their professional value; but the plan was not approved, any more than that which had envisaged the creation in various places of information offices and employment bureaus.

They prefer to give them work in Germany, where the representatives of the Industrial Bureau promise them "good wages" if they consent to work there "voluntarily," and where they may expect, in case of refusal, famine wages; physical and moral depression are counted on in order to force their hand.

Invariably it has been asserted that the work offered to them is non-military in character; but denials from every side have come in. In taking the place of a German workman the Belgian workman permits Germany to increase the numerical force of its armies. The most odious work is that which is used in effect against the native land. To serve Germany is to fight against their own country. To compel our workmen to do this is nothing less than an act of force contrary to international law, as cited by Your Excellency in his proclamation of August 15th, 1915, and contrary also to the spirit, if not to the text of the fourth convention of The Hague of 1917.

"A measure such as the deportation of non-combatant civil pop-

ulation," writes Ernest Nys, Professor of International Law, in his letter of even date to the Mayor of Brussels, a copy of which is enclosed herewith, "is in complete contradiction to the idea of military occupation. This idea has replaced the former theory of conquest, which made the conqueror the sovereign of the conquered country. The conqueror must respect the rights of the peaceful inhabitants."

It is in the name of the sacred rights openly violated that the senators and deputies whose signatures follow, now at Brussels, speaking in the name of the Belgian nation, address to Your Excellency the solemn protest of the numberless families affected by the cruel edict which sends through the country at this moment a tremor of indignation, that can not but arouse the reprobation of the civilized world.

They adjure Your Excellency to employ with the military authorities the high prerogatives granted to him by his position, and not to allow the consummation of an act without precedent in the history of modern wars, and they beg him to accept the assurance of their most distinguished consideration.

Enclosure to preceding letter:

Bruxelles, 6 Novembre, 1916,
39, Rue Saint-Jean.

Monsieur l'Echevin Lemonnier,

ff. de Bourgmestre de Bruxelles.

C'est avec raison que votre collègue soutient que, si la quatrième Convention de La Haye de 1907 ne renferme pas de texte précis relativement au déplacement de la population civile non combattante, il résulte cependant de l'esprit de cette Convention que pareille mesure n'est pas légitime.

Semblable mesure est en contradiction complète avec la notion de l'occupation de guerre. Cette notion a remplacé l'ancienne théorie de la conquête, qui faisait du vainqueur le souverain du pays conquis.

Dans les guerres actuelles, la population paisible a des droits; le vainqueur est l'administrateur provisoire; il doit respecter les droits des habitants paisibles.

Tout cela a été indiqué fort bien, en 1874, à la Conférence de Bruxelles, notamment par le délégué de l'Empire Allemand, le

général de Voigts-Rhotz. Le projet de convention de 1874 n'a pas été ratifié; mais son texte a servi aux travaux des Conférences de La Haye de 1897 et de 1907, et ces deux conférences s'en sont inspirées et, sur le point qui nous occupe, elles n'ont point varié.

En 1899, à la première Conférence de La Haye, le Président de la Commission pour le Règlement des lois et coutumes de la guerre sur terre, Frédéric de Martens (3e partie, page 92, de l'édition de 1907), parlant des nécessités de la guerre, prononçait ces paroles:

"C'est notre désir unanime que les armées des nations civilisées soient non seulement pourvues des armes les plus perfectionnées mais qu'elles soient également pénétrées des notions du droit, de la justice et de l'humanité, obligatoires même sur le territoire envahi et même à l'égard de l'ennemi."

Ce langage n'est point utopique: il concède suffisamment à la réalité: mais il admet aussi les exigences du cœur et les aspirations de la civilisation moderne.

Tel sera l'avis impartial de tout juriste.

Veuillez agréer, Monsieur le Bourgmestre, l'expression de mes sentiments de haute considération.

(*Signé*) E. Nys,
Professeur à l'Université.

(Translation:)

Brussels, 39, Rue St.-Jean, November 6, 1916.

Mr. Alderman Lemonnier,

Acting Burgomaster of Brussels.

Your College of Aldermen rightfully maintains that if the fourth convention of The Hague of 1907 does not contain the precise text relative to the deportation of the civil non-combatant population, it is nevertheless to be concluded from the spirit of that convention that such a measure is not legitimate.

Such a measure is in complete contradiction to the idea of military occupation. This idea has replaced the former theory of conquest which made the conqueror the sovereign of the conquered country. In modern warfare the peaceful population has certain rights. The conqueror is the provisory administrator; he must respect the rights of the peaceful inhabitants.

All this was clearly indicated in 1874 at the Conference of Brussels, notably by the delegate of the German Empire, General von Voigts-Rhetz. The project of a convention of that Conference was not ratified but its text served for the preparatory work of the Conventions of 1897 and of 1907; and these two Conventions drew their inspiration from it, and, on the point that interests us, they made no change in it.

In 1899, at the first conference of The Hague, the President of the Committee on Rules and Customs of Land Warfare, Frederic de Martens (Part 3, page 92, edition of 1907), speaking of the exigencies of war, said these words:

"It is our unanimous desire that the armies of civilized nations be not only provided with arms of the greatest perfection but that they also be actively aware of the principles of law, of justice, and of humanity, obligatory even in occupied territory and as regards the enemy."

These words are not at all Utopian; they take sufficient cognizance of the facts; but they admit also the demands of humanity and the aspirations of modern civilization.

Such will be the impartial statement of any jurist.

I beg you to accept, Mr. Burgomaster, the expression of my highest consideration.

(Signed) E. Nys,
Professor of the University.

Bruxelles, le 11 novembre 1916.

Excellency,—Les soussignés, unis dans une même pensée de solidarité pour la défense du droit, croient de leur devoir de faire connaître à Votre Excellence l'impression douloureuse que fait dans le, onde judiciaire tout entier la récente mesure prise contre une partie de la population belge.

Des citoyens paisibles, appartenant à toutes les classes de la société et sur tous les points du pays, sont, au mépris du droit naturel, du droit positif et du droit des gens, arrachés à leurs foyers, à leurs familles et employés, en Allemagne ou ailleurs, à des travaux qui servent, indirectement tout au moins, aux opérations militaires contre la Patrie.

C'est la méconnaissance du grand principe de la liberté individuelle, reconnu par tous les peuples civilisés.

ber presented by the judicial leaders and members of the Belgian bar,[5] that of the fourteenth of November, signed

C'est la méconnaissance, aussi, des principes les plus certains du droit de la guerre qui assure aux populations civiles le libre exercice de leurs droits.

C'est la méconnaissance, enfin, des assurances que Votre Excellence donnait à la population belge, quand elle promettait aux citoyens restés dans le pays, sécurité et protection.

Cette mesure nous reporte au temps où le vainquer emmenait en servitude les populations vaincues et les réduisait en esclavage.

L'homme est maître de sa personne, de ses forces et de sa volonté. Les travaux forcés sont une peine réservée aux grands crimes.

Les soussignés se permettent de le rappeler à Votre Excellence et espèrent qu'elle se fera auprès du Gouvernement Impérial le defenseur de la Belgique confiée à sa viligance et a sa garde.

Ils presentent à Votre Excellence les assurances de leur haute consideration.

A Son Excellence Monsieur le Baron Von Bissing,
Gouverneur-général en Belgique.

N. B.—Suivant cinq cents signatures environ: Cour et Barreau de cassation; Cour d'appel et Barreau de Bruxelles; Tribunal de commerce de Bruxelles; Juges de paix et Prud'hommes de Bruxelles.

(Translation:)

[5] Brussels, November 11, 1916.

Excellency:

The undersigned, united in the same spirit of solidarity for the defense of right, believe it to be their duty to acquaint Your Excellency with the painful impression produced upon the entire judicial world by the recent measure enacted against a portion of the Belgian population.

Peaceful citizens belonging to all classes of society and to all parts of the country are, in disregard of natural law, positive law and international law, torn from their homes, from their families, and employed in Germany or elsewhere at labour which helps, indirectly at least, military operation against their country.

It is the disavowal of the great principle of individual liberty, recognized by all civilized peoples.

by the Senators and Deputies of the Province of Liége,[6]

It is also the disavowal of the most fundamental principles of military law, which assure to the civil populations the free exercise of their rights.

Lastly, it is the disavowal of the assurances that Your Excellency gave to the Belgian population when promising to the citizens remaining in the country security and protection.

This measure carries us back to the time when the conqueror carried back into servitude the vanquished populations, and reduced them to slavery.

Man is master of his person, of his strength and of his will. Forced labour is a punishment reserved for great crimes.

The undersigned venture to recall that fact to Your Excellency and to hope that Your Excellency will be, before the imperial Government, the defender of Belgium, confided to His vigilance and keeping.

They present to Your Excellency the assurance of their high consideration.

To His Excellency Baron von Bissing,
Governor-General in Belgium,
Brussels.

Followed by about five hundred signatures—including those of judges and lawyers of the Supreme Court, of the Court of Appeals and of the Bar Association of Brussels; Court of First Instance, Commercial Court of Brussels, Justices of the Peace Trade Councillors of Brussels.

[6] Liége, le 14 novembre 1916.

A Son Excellence le General von Bissing,
Gouverneur-général de Belgique à Bruxelles.

Excellence,—Nous apprenons que les mesures déjà exécutées dans certaines parties de la Belgique occupée vont s' étendre à la province de Liége: elles soulèvent dans nos populations une profonde et légitime emotion.

Membres de la Chambre des Représentants et Sénateurs de la Province de Liége, nous avons le devoir d'addresser l'expression de ces sentiments au Pouvoir exécutif.

Des milliers d'hommes, victimes d'évènements dont ils n'ont point

la responsabilité et dont ils subissent en silence et dans la misère l'inflexible rigueur, sont sans avoir commis de délit et sans jugement, arrachés à leurs foyers, à leurs patrie, condamnés à la déportation et au travail forcé.

Sont-ils coupables d'avoir abandonné les ateliers et les usines où ils travaillaient?

N'est-ce pas la guerre qui, en fermant ces ateliers et ces usines, les y a contraints?

L'industrie métallurgique chôme partiellement faute de moyens de transport.

La mainmise sur les machines et outils, la réquisition des matières premières ont amené la suspension de tout travail dans la plupart des établissements industriels.

Les fabriques d'armes, qui occupent tant de bras dans notre region, sont fernées par ordre de l'autorité allemande.

Ainsi, toute l'activité de ce pays a été arrêtée.

Du jour au lendemain, une masse de nos compatriotes se sont vus réduits à l'inaction, privés de leur gage-pain, sans autres ressources que leurs maigres économies, la bienveillance de leurs patrons et les secours de la solidarité, mervieusement épanouie en Belgique par ces temps de douleur.

Certaine presse taxe nos classes laborieuses de paresse. Fallait-il donc ajouter la calomnie à l'iniquité?

Nos voisins de l'Est connaissent cependant la capacité et la vaillance de nos populations ouvrières.

Ils ont pu les apprécier par les relations commerciales et industrielles que nous entretenions depuis des siècles avec les provinces rhénanes. Combien de grands industriels et commercants d'Allemagne ont eu à se louer de leurs aptitudes et de leur énergie. Sans doute protesteront-ils avec nous contre ceux qui insultent à la misère de nos travailleurs en les traitant de fainéants.

Mais ils auront également constaté leur ombrageuse fierté.

L'ouvrier de nos régions est jaloux de son independance et de sa liberté. Il entend disposer de lui, de son intelligence et de ses bras, à sa guise; il prétend être maître de sa vie et de ses actes.

Le pouvoir occupant lui a offert du travail, il le lui offert à un salaire élevé. La plupart de nos ouvriers ont repoussés ces offres.

Ils ont jugé que les accepter, c'était servir les intérêts de l'envahisseur au détriment de leur pays.

Et qui oserait le contester? Prendre la place d'un ouvrier allemand, n'est-ce pas lui permettre d'aller combattre nos fils et nos frères?

Par patriotisme, nos ouvriers se sont imposé de dures privations. Votre Excellence ne les en blâmera pas.

Leur esprit d'indépendence s'est néannoins soumis aux nécessités de la guerre.

Notre province fut occupée dès les premiers jours des opérations. Elle a subi son sort courageusement, non sans espérance mais sans révolte et sans bruit.

L'ordre n'a pas été troublé.

Qu'est-ce donc qui motive la déportation et le travail forcé dont nos concitoyens sont aujourd'hui menacés?

Le droit des gens condamne de pareilles mesures. Pas un auteur moderne ne les justifie. Les textes de la Convention de La Haye, en limitant les réquisitions au profit de l'armée occupant, les interdisent. Il ne s'agit, en effet, dans l'occurrence ni de prestations ni de services requis pour les besoins de l'armée d'occupation.

A la Conférence de Bruxelles de 1874, Monsieur le Général Voight-Rhetz, délégué de l'Empire d'Allemagne, les a implicitement réprouvés, notamment en prononçant ces paroles: "Ce qu'on ne peut réclamer des populations occupées ce sont des services que réprouverait l'article 45 comme contraires au patriotisme et à l'honneur."

D'autre part, les termes des articles 5 et 6 de la Convention fixant les conditions d'internment et de travail, s'appliquent restrictivement aux prisonniers de guerre et excluent conséquemment la possibilitié de tout traitement analogue aux populations civiles.

Les Constitutions de tous les Etats de l'Europe proclament comme des dogmes la liberté individuelle et le droit pour tour citoyen de disposer de ses facultés et de son travail comme il l'entend.

Au pays de Liége, ces principes sont depuis de longs siècles synthétisés, et fièrement gravés dans le coeur des hommes sous la forme hautaine d'un vieil adage de droit, toujours vivant, toujours sacré; "Pauvre homme en sa maison Roy est."

Partout ils sont honorés comme un des fondements de notre monde moderne.

L'occupant ne peut abolir ses droits qui sont le patrimoine de l'humanité.

L'autorité militaire, par avis du 18 decembre 1914, émanant du commandant de place de Liége, a garanti à la garde-civique "qu'il n'etait pas question de l'envoyer, ni maintenant ni dans l'avenir, en Allemagne."

Un avis de votre Excellence elle-même, du 22 octobre 1915 donne la même assurance.

Les différents commandants de place qui se sont succédé à Liége ont affirmé par diverses affiches que "le côntrole avait uniquement pour but de constater la présence des personnes qui y sont soumises."

Serait-ce possible que des engagements aussi formels ne fussent pas remplis?

Déporter des Belges en Allemagne, les y contraindre au travail, c'est, nous l'avons dit, permettre aux ouvriers allemands qu'ils remplacent d'aller au front combattre les fils et les frères de ceux dont on s'empare par la force; c'est leur imposer une évidente coopération à la guerre contre leur patrie; c'est méconnaître le Règlement de La Haye, la pensée généreuse dont il est animé et le texte même de son article 52; c'est anéantir les conquêtes progressives de l'humanité que consacre cette convention longuement élaborée, et nous reporter aux plus sombres coutumes d'un lointain passé.

Car cette déportation et ce travail forcé ressemblent à s'y méprendre à l'esclavage auquel dans l'antiquité, les peuples vainquers astreignaient les vaincus.

Nous avons cru de notre devoir d'exposer à Votre Excellence ces considérations et les plaintes de nos populations affligées, nous esperons encore que la voix du droit sera entendue.

Veuillez agréer, Excellence, l'expression de notre considération la plus distinguée.

Les mandataires de la Province de Liége:

Les Députés	Les Sénateurs
Eugene Mullendorff,	A. Magis,
De Liedekerke,	Ed. Peltzer de Clermont,
H. Polet,	Van Zuylen,

Les Députés
MARQUIS IMPERIALI,
J. DAUVISTER,
S. DONNAY,
SCHINLER,
PIRARD,
PAUL VAN HOEGAERDEN,
NICHOLAS GOBLET,
J. DALLEMAGNE,
F. GALOPIN,
DEJARDIN,
LEON TROCLET,
XAVIER NEUJEAN.

Les Sénateurs
H. COLLEAUX,
J. KEPPENNE,
CH. MAGNETTE,
L. NAVEAU,
A. FLECHET.

(Translation:)

LIÉGE, November 14, 1916.

TO HIS EXCELLENCY GENERAL VON BISSING,
Governor-General in Belgium,
Brussels.

EXCELLENCY:

We learn that the measures already carried out in certain parts of occupied Belgium are about to be applied to the province of Liége. They cause in our population a profound and legitimate emotion.

As members of the Chambers of Députés and of the Senate of the Province of Liége, we are bound to address to the executive powers the expressions of these feelings.

Thousands of men, victims of events for which they are not in any way responsible and the unyielding rigour, of which they undergo in silence and in misery, are condemned, without judgment and without having committed any crime, to deportation and to forced labour.

Are they to blame for having left the factories and the workshops where they were employed?

Is it not the war which, by closing these workshops and factories, has forced them to such a step?

The metallurgical industry has ceased partially through the lack of means of transportation.

The seizures of the machines and of the tools, the requisitioning

of raw materials, have brought to a stop all work in the greater part of the industrial establishments.

The arms factories which gave work to so many men in our district are closed by the orders of the German authorities.

Thus the entire activity of the country has been stopped.

In a day a mass of our compatriots have seen themselves reduced to inaction, deprived of their means of subsistence, bereft of other resources than their meagre savings, the kindness of their employers and the co-operative aid that has so wonderfully spread throughout Belgium in these unhappy times.

Certain journals accuse our working class of laziness. Was it necessary, then, to add calumny to iniquity?

Our neighbors to the east know, however, the ability and the bravery of our working population.

They have been able to estimate them by the commercial and industrial relations that we have maintained for centuries with the Rhine provinces. How many great German men of industry and commerce have been obliged to praise their skill and their energy. Perhaps they will protest with us against those who insult the misery of our workmen and call them ne'er-do-wells.

But they have also witnessed their fierce pride.

The workman of our region is jealous of his independence and of his liberty. He means to do with himself, his intelligence and his labour as he pleases. He claims to be master of his life and of his deeds.

The occupying Power offered him work, and at a high wage. Most of our workers rejected these offers. They judged that to accept them would be to serve the interests of the invader to the detriment of their country.

And who would venture to deny it? To take the place of a German workman permits him to go and fight our sons and brothers, does it not?

Our workmen have accepted severe privations from patriotic motives. Your Excellency will not blame them for it. Their spirit of independence has nevertheless bowed to the necessities of war.

Our province was occupied during the first days of operation. It underwent its fate with courage, not without hope, but without revolt or commotion. Public order has not been troubled.

What, then, is the cause of the deportation and the forced labour with which our fellow-citizens are to-day threatened?

International law condemns such measures. Not a single modern author justifies them. The text of the convention of The Hague, in limiting the requisitions for the benefit of the occupying army, prohibits such measures. As a matter of fact, in the present case it is no question of requisitioning or of services required for the needs of the occupying forces.

At the Conference of Brussels of 1874, General von Voigts-Rhetz, delegate of the German Empire, explicitly disapproved of such measures, notably in the following words: "What can not be demanded of occupied peoples are services which Article 48 would condemn as contrary to patriotism and to honour."

On the other hand, the terms of Articles 5 and 6 of the convention treating of the conditions of internment and of work apply only to prisoners of war, and consequently exclude the possibility of any such treatment of civil populations.

The constitutions of all the States of Europe exalt as dogmas individual liberty and the right of each person to dispose of his faculties and his labours as seems best to him.

In the country of Liége these principles have been firmly implanted for many centuries and have been proudly inscribed in the hearts of men in the lofty form of an old legal adage, which still lives and is sacred: "A poor man is king in his own home."

They are honoured everywhere as one of the foundation-stones of our modern world.

The occupant can not abolish these rights, which form the inheritance of humanity.

The military authorities, by an announcement of the Commander of Liége, December 18, 1914, guaranteed to the Garde Civique that "there was no question of sending them to Germany either at the present time or in the future."

An announcement of Your Excellency Yourself, October 22, 1915, gives the same assurance.

The several commanders who have held the power at Liége have by various notices confirmed that "the control service was solely to prove the presence of the persons to whom it applied."

Would it be possible that such formal undertakings should not have been observed?

To deport Belgians to Germany and to compel them there to perform forced labour is, as we have said, to permit German workmen whom they replace to go to the front to fight the sons and brothers of those whom you take away by force. Such a measure forces them to take an obvious part in the war against their country; it violates The Hague Convention, the generous thought with which it is animated and the very text of its Article 52, it destroys the progressive victories of humanity that are consecrated to that much discussed convention, and it takes us back to the darkest practices of a far away past.

For this deportation and this forced labour resembles slavery to that degree where they can not be distinguished—the slavery by which in olden times the conqueror completely disposed of the conquered.

We feel that it is our duty to bring these considerations and complaints of our afflicted people to the attention of Your Excellency. We still hope that the voice of law will be heard.

We beg Your Excellency to accept the expression of our most distinguished consideration.

For the population of the Province of Liége:

Deputies:	Senators:
Sixteen signatures	Eight signatures.

LES DÉPORTATIONS BELGES

Protestation du Collège échevinal de Bruxelles.

VILLE DE BRUXELLES.

No. 16, 7838.

Bruxelles, le 17 Novembre, 1916.

EXCELLENCY:

Un avis de M. le Gouverneur allemand, lieutenant général Hurt, aux Bourgmestres du Grand Bruxelles et du Brabant, publié aujourd-hui, annonce que l'autorité allemande a décidé la déportation en Allemagne des ouvriers chômeurs.

Cet avis cause une profonde émotion parmi nos concitoyens.

Le sentiment public considère cette déportation comme l'établissement en Belgique d'un régime d'esclavage.

Vous comprendrez sans peine à quel point semblable mesure, qui plonge dans la douleur tant de familles, porte atteinte à cet amour de la liberté individuelle, à ce profond sentiment de dignité qui font, depuis des siècles, l'orgueil et la grandeur morale du peuple Belge tout entier.

Notre population s'est toujours distinguée par le culte de la justice et du droit.

En matière politique, comme en matière internationale, elle a toujours compté que le droit demeurerait sa sauvegarde.

L'article 43 de la Convention de la Haye porte que l'occupant respectera, sauf empêchement absolu, les lois en vigueur dans le pays occupé.

Parmi les lois en vigueur en Belgique, il n'en est point de plus précieuse et de plus sacrée que celle qui garantit à tout citoyen belge sa liberté personnelle, se manifestant, notamment, dans le domaine du travail.

Rien ne nous paraît justifier, en ce moment, une atteinte à cette loi.

Le pouvoir occupant fait observer que l'inaction à laquelle sont réduits un grand nombre de travailleurs est regrettable.

Qui le sait mieux que nous?

Qui le sait mieux que notre vaillante population ouvrière, laquelle de tout temps, s'est honorée par l'ardeur et l'opiniâtreté de son labeur?

Nos ouvriers ne demandent qu'à se livrer à leurs occupations accoutumées.

Sont-ils responsables du chômage qui leur est imposé?

Est-ce leur faute si les matières premières, si les machines ont été réquisitionnées, s'il n'y a presque plus de chevaux, si les transports sont entravés, si 800,000 mètres de rails des chemins de fer vicinaux ont été enlevés?

Invoquera-t-on des charges de la bienfaisance publique?

Elles sont lourdes, évidemment, mais elles ne grèvent en rien le Pouvoir occupant, qui n'a pas dû intervenir pour soulager la misère générale.

C'est le Comité National de Secours et d'Alimentation et l'initiative privée qui aident nos chômeurs involontaires et qui sont décidés à poursuivre leur œuvre de solidarité.

Puisque la population belge ne s'attend pas à être secourue par l'occupant, n'est-il pas légitime de la laisser libre d'apprécier dans quelles conditions il lui est permis et possible de se livrer au travail?

On ne peut qu'éprouver le plus profond respect pour un refus de travail qu'inspirent uniquement un noble patriotisme et spécialement la volonté de ne pas fournir directement ou indirectement une aide à l'ennemi.

Il est certain que le travail que l'on veut imposer à nos compatriotes a pour but exclusivement de fortifier l'Allemagne économiquement et même militairement. Cette circonstance fait apparaître plus nettement encore le caractère d'esclavage et de servitude que présente la mesure dont sont menacés nos concitoyens.

Notre population n'a pas cessé de supporter avec calme, avec résignation, avec dignité, les cruelles épreuves de la guerre actuelle.

Cette disposition d'esprit ne pouvait qu'être affermie par les déclarations de l'Autorité allemande au début même des hostilités.

M. le Gouverneur général, Baron von der Goltz, disait dans sa proclamation du 2 septembre, 1914:

"Les citoyens Belges désirant vaquer paisiblement à leurs occupations n'ont rien à craindre de la part des troupes ou des autorités allemandes. Autant que faire se pourra, le commerce devra être repris, les usines devront recommencer à travailler, les moissons être rentrées.

"Citoyens Belges,

"Je ne demande à personne de renier ses sentiments patriotiques, mais j'attends de vous tous une soumission raisonnable et une obéissance absolue vis-à-vis du Gouvernement Général.

"Je vous invite à lui montrer de la confiance et à lui prêter votre concours. J'adresse cette invitation spécialement aux fonctionnaires de l'Etat, des Communes, qui sont restés à leur poste. Plus vous donnerez suite à cet appel, plus vous servirez votre Patrie."

Dans toutes les églises du Pays, sur l'invitation du Cardinal Mercier, il a été annoncé au mois d'octobre, 1914, que M. le Gouverneur d'Anvers, Général Huene, avait autorisé le Cardinal Mercier à faire, en son nom et à communiquer à la population, la déclaration

suivante, avec l'approbation du Gouverneur général, Baron von der Goltz:

"Les jeunes gens n'ont point à craindre d'être emmenés en Allemagne, soit pour y être employés dans l'armée soit pour y être employés à des travaux forcés."

Est-il besoin de rappeler encore le texte des avis suivants, placardés sur les murs de Bruxelles?

"Quiconque ayant fait partie de la garde-civique, rentré de l'étranger à Bruxelles et agglomération, ne sera pas traité comme prisonnier de guerre, *mais pourra y résider en toute liberté* s'il souscrit à l'obligation de ne plus prendre les armes contre l'Allemagne pendant cette guerre ni d'entreprendre aucun acte hostile à la cause allemande.

"Le Gouverneur,
"*(Signé)* VON KRAEWEL,
"Général major.

"Bruxelles, le 19 février 1915."

"En vertu de l'ordre du Gouvernement Général en Belgique, du 13 et 19 février, 1915, il est ordonné par la présenté que tous *les sujets mâles de nationalité belge,* nés de 1892 à 1897 inclus et domiciliés à: Bruxelles, Anderlecht, Auderghem, Etterbeck, Forest, Ixelles, Jette-Saint-Pierre, Kockelberg, Laeken, Molenbeek-Saint-Jean, Schaerbeek, Saint-Joss-ten-Noode, Saint-Gilles, Uccle, Watermael, Boitsfort et Woluwe-Saint-Lambert, soient mis sous le contrôle par le bureau de déclaration Deutsches Meldeamt Gross-Brüssel, rue du Méridien, 10, et auquel les communes nommées ci-haut ont communiqué tous les noms des sujets mâles nés de 1892 à 1897. . . .

"Il est expressément entendu que le Gouvernement allemand ne projette ni d'incorporer des sujets belges dans l'armée allemande, ni de les emmener en Allemagne comme prisonniers pendant la durée de la guerre.

"Le Gouverneur,
"*(Signé)* VON KRAEWEL,
"Général major."

"Bruxelles, le 17 mars, 1915."

"A partir du 1er novembre prochain, le contrôle exercé jusqu'à présent sur les Belges nés de 1892 à 1897 sera applicable également à tous les hommes belges nés de 1885 à 1898 (y compris ces deux années).

"Les soldats (pas les officiers) de l'ancienne garde civique non active seront libérés du contrôle s'ils sont âgés de trente ans accomplis.

"Je répète que le contrôle n'a d'autre but de permettre de constater la présence des personnes inscrites et de les empêcher de quitter le pays.

"On n'a donc nullement l'intention de les incorporer dans l'armée allemande, ni de les interner comme prisonniers de guerre.

"Le Gouverneur Général de Belgique,

"(Signé) Freiherr von Bissing,

"Generaloberst.

"Bruxelles, le 22 octobre, 1915."

Enfin le règlement concernant les citoyens Belges soumis au contrôle nés de 1885 à 1898 (Vorschriften für Meldepflichtige Männliche Belgier, Geburtsjahr 1885-1898) dont un exemplaire a été remis par l'autorité allemande à tous les citoyens Belges au moment de leur inscription au contrôle allemand (Meldeamt) et qui forme pour eux contrat, porte:

"Il est bien entendu que le gouvernement allemand n'a nullement l'intention d'incorporer des Belges dans l'armée allemande, ni de les interner en Allemagne pendant la durée de la guerre (paragraphe 6, page 13). . . .

"Le présent règlement est applicable aux Belges soumis au contrôle et habitant les communes suivantes: Bruxelles, Anderlecht, Auderghem, etc. (comme ci-dessus, paragraphe 10)."

Peut-on concevoir engagement plus précis, plus net:

"Ils ne seront ni incorporés dans l'armée allemande, *ni internés en Allemagne pendant la durée de la guerre?* . . ."

Ces engagements formels ont déterminé un grand nombre de nos concitoyens, qui s'étaient réfugiés à l'étranger, à rentrer dans leur Patrie.

Nous ne pouvions supposer que des promesses aussi solennelles pourraient être méconnues.

that of the seventeenth of November, signed by the Burgomaster and échevins of Brussels,[7] and that of the

---

Nous devions croire que le pouvoir occupant maintiendrait les principes du droit international et respecterait les sentiments d'honneur et de patriotisme du Peuple Belge.

Quelles que soient les nécessités de la guerre, il nous semble impossible que l'Autorité occupante puisse persévérer dans la voie où elle est entrée et accomplir ainsi un acte qui doit soulever l'émotion du monde civilisé tout entier.

Nous vous prions d'agréer, Excellence, l'assurance de notre parfaite consideration.

Pour le *Collège*,
Le Secrétaire,
(Signé) MAURICE VAUTHIER.

Le *Collège*,
(Signé) MAURICE LEMONNIER,
LOUIS STEENS,
EMILE JACQMAIN,
MAX HALLET,
JEAN PLADET.

A Son Excellence le Baron von Bissing,
Gouverneur général en Belgique,
Bruxelles.

[7] VILLE DE BRUXELLES
No. U 7838 Brussels, November 17, 1916.

EXCELLENCY:

A notice of the German Governor, Lieutenant General Hurt, to the mayors of Greater Brussels and of Brabant, published to-day, announces that the German authorities have decided to deport to Germany the workmen without employment.

This notice produces a profound emotion among our fellow workmen.

Public sentiment considers this deportation to be the establishment in Belgium of a state of slavery.

You will understand without difficulty to what point such a measure, which plunges so many families into sorrow, infringes the

right of personal liberty, the profound feeling of personal dignity that have been for centuries the pride and the moral greatness of the entire Belgian people.

Our population has always been distinguished for its observance of justice and of law.

In political as well as in international affairs it has ever considered that law would always remain its safeguard.

Article 43 of the Convention of The Hague states that the occupying Power shall respect, except in case of absolute necessity, the laws in force in the occupied territory. Among the laws in force in Belgium there is no one more precious or more sacred than that which guarantees to each Belgian citizen his personal liberty, which is manifested notably in the domain of labour.

There does not appear to us at this moment any fact to justify the infraction of that law.

The occupying Power calls attention to the regrettable unemployment to which a large number of our workmen are reduced.

Who knows it better than we do?

Who knows it better than our courageous working population, which had at all times been honoured by its devotion to and its love for labour?

Our workmen ask nothing better than to continue their habitual occupations.

Are they to blame for the unemployment that has been imposed upon them?

Is it their fault if the raw materials and the machines have been requisitioned, if there are practically no horses remaining, if communication is limited, if 800,000 metres of rails of inter-urban railways have been removed?

Is reference made to the charge of public charity?

It is heavy, no doubt, but it falls in no way to the charge of the occupying Power, which has never been called upon to intervene to relieve the general suffering.

It is the Comité National de Secours et d'Alimentation and private initiative that help our involuntarily unemployed and that are ready to continue their work of co-operation.

Since the Belgian population does not expect to be assisted by the occupying Power is it not legitimate to leave to the population to

decide under what conditions it is permissible and possible for it to take up work?

One can but feel the most profound respect for those who refuse to work on the sole ground of a noble patriotism, and particularly for those who will not furnish, directly or indirectly, assistance to the enemy.

It is certain that the work which it is desired to force upon our countrymen has for its sole object the strengthening of Germany economically, and even militarily. This brings still more clearly to the foreground the character of the slavery and of the servitude that is presented by the measure which threatens so many of our fellow-citizens.

Our population has not ceased to endure calmly and with resignation and dignity the cruel tests of the war.

This attitude of mind could only be strengthened by the declarations of the German authorities at the very beginning of the war.

The Governor-General, Baron von der Goltz, said in his proclamation of September 2, 1914:

"Belgian citizens desiring to return peacefully to their occupations have nothing to fear from the German troops or authority. What can be done will be done. Commerce must be resumed, the factories must begin to work again, the harvest must be gathered.

"Belgian citizens, I do not ask any one to renounce his patriotic feelings, but I expect from you absolute obedience and sensible submission as regards the Government General. I invite you to show your confidence in it and to offer it your support. I address this invitation particularly to the officers of the Government, of the communes, who have stayed at their posts. The more you heed this appeal the more will you serve your country."

In all the churches of the country, at the invitation of Cardinal Mercier, it was announced during the month of October, 1914, that the Military Governor of Antwerp, General von Huene, had authorized the Cardinal to make in his name, to be communicated to the population, the following declaration, with the approval of Governor-General the Baron von der Goltz:

"Young men need not fear being taken into Germany either to be incorporated there into the army or to be employed at forced labour."

Is there need to recall again the text of the following notices posted on the walls of Brussels:

"Whoever was in the Garde Civique and has returned from abroad to Greater Brussels will not be treated as a prisoner of war, but can remain there in complete liberty if he signs the undertaking not to take up arms against Germany during this war and not to undertake any act hostile to the German cause.

"VON KRAEWEL, Governor, Major-General.

"Brussels, February 19, 1915."

"By virtue of the order of the General Government in Belgium of February 13 and 19, 1915, it is decreed hereby that *all male subjects of Belgian nationality* born between 1892 and 1897, inclusive, and domiciled at Brussels, Anderlecht, Auderghem, Etterbeek, Forest, Schaerbeek, Saint-Josse-ten-Noode, Ixelles, Jette-Saint-Pierre, Kockelberg, Laeken, Molenbeek-Saint-Jean, Saint-Gilles, Uccle, Watermael-Boitsfort and Woluwe-Saint-Lambert, are placed under control service by the registry office, Deutsches Meldeamt Gross Brüssel, rue du Méridien, 10, to which all communes mentioned above have communicated all the names of male subjects born from 1892 to 1897. . . .

"It is expressly understood that the German Government does not have in mind the incorporation of Belgian subjects in the German army, or their deportation to Germany as prisoners during the war."

"VON KRAEWEL, Governor, Major General.

"Brussels, March 17, 1915."

"From November 1st next the service of control in operation until the present time regarding Belgians born between 1892 and 1897 will be applied likewise to all Belgian men born between 1885 and 1898, inclusive.

"Soldiers, not officers, of the former Garde Civique not in active service will be freed from the control if they are more than 30 full years of age.

"I repeat that the control does not have any other object than to permit the confirmation of the presence of persons registered and to prevent them from leaving the country.

Mayor and échevins of Charleroi on the thirteenth of November.[8] There was another protest, addressed to

"There is therefore no intention whatsoever of incorporating them in the German army or of interning them as prisoners of war.

"The Governor-General in Belgium,

"FREIHERR VON BISSING, Major-General.

"Brussels, October 22, 1915."

Lastly, the regulation concerning the Belgian subjects submitted to the control, born between 1885 and 1898 (*Verschriften für Meldepflichitige Männliche Belgier, Geburtsjahr 1885-1898*), a copy of which was transmitted to each Belgian subject at the time of this registry at the German control office (Meldeamt) and which serves as a form of contract for them, reads:

"It is thoroughly understood that the German Government has in no wise the intention of incorporating Belgians in the German army, *nor to intern them in Germany during the course of the war* (Paragraph 6, p. 13)."

Can one conceive a more precise undertaking, one more exact?

They "will not be incorporated in the German army nor be interned in Germany during the course of the war." The normal undertakings determined a large number of our fellow-citizens who had taken refuge abroad to return to their country.

We could not believe that such solemn promises could be broken.

We were obliged to believe that the occupying Power would maintain the principles of international law and would respect the feelings and the honour and the patriotism of the Belgian people.

Whatever may be the necessities of the war, it seems to us impossible that the occupying Power can continue in the manner in which it has begun and carry out an act that is bound to excite the emotion of the entire civilized world.

We beg you, Excellency, to accept the assurances, etc.

The Council of Aldermen.

Secretary of the Council.

[8] Charleroi, le 18 novembre 1916.

EXCELLENCE:

C'est la clameur désespérés de toute une population que nous nous permettons de faire entendre.

BELGIUM

La Belgique a subi avec courage toutes les épreuves que le fléau de la guerre lui a imposées depuis le début dès hostilités. Atteinte au coeur dans la personne d'un grand nombre de ses habitants, frappée de terreur à la vue de leurs demeures réduites en cendres, notre nation vinculée a supporté courageusement son sort. Après ces jours d'épouvante, le peuple, confiant dans la parole du Haut mandataire placé par le Gouvernement Impérial à la tête du pays, s'est efforcé de soutenir sa détresse par un esprit de solidarité qui ne s'est pas un seul instant démenti.

Dès la première heure, des Comités de Secours furent crées, et, tant du côté des pouvoirs publics que des particuliers, tous rivalisèrent de dévouement et d'abnégation pour alléger les souffrances des classes nécessiteuses.

Alors que renaissaient peu à peu le fonctionnement de la Justice et de l'Administration Publique, ainsi que les entreprises industrielles et commerciales susceptibles de revivre après de tels déchirements, le peuple belge, groupé sous l'égide de ses institutions communales, s'est ressaisi dans le travail.

Malheuresement, les ruines accumulées, la rareté des matières premières, le défaut des moyens de transport, et l'absence de buts commerciaux, rendirent de plus en plus difficile la restauraton de l'activité du pays.

Plus tard, la disparition progressive des instruments de travail, la déchéance physique, produite par une alimentation rare et dispendieuse, achevèrent d'epuiser les dernières énergies.

Et c'est ce moment, que les autorités militaires allemandes choisissent, sous prétexte de chômage, pour arracher les plus pauvres et les plus dignes de compassion d'entre nos compatriotes, à l'affection de leurs mères, de leurs épouses et de leurs enfants.

Votre Excellence ne peut rester insensible à notre cri de désespoir, qui doit être pour la Civilisation un cri d'alarme et un appel à sa générosité.

De grandes voix nationales ont déjà protesté avec emotion et autorité contre ce traitement inhumain imposé sans pitié à notre peuple.

Le motif invoqué constitue à l'adresse de notre classe ouvrière une accusation injuste et blessante de paresse et de fainéantise,

the American Minister at Brussels, the most touching in many respects of all, because it was signed by author-

contre laquelle nous protestons. Ces malheureux seraient done placés hors du droit des gens et voués à l'ignominie du travail forcé. Ce châtiment immérité, infligé à nos compatriotes, révolte la conscience humaine, et nous y puisons la force et l'autorité pour prier Votre Excellence d'intervenir auprès du Gouvernement Impérial afin d'obtenir le retrait de ces dispositions implacables et injustifiées.

Daignez, agreer, Excellence, avec l'assurance de notre considération la plus distinguée, l'expression du plus vif espoir dans le mandat de haute protection que vous avez assumé vis-à-vis de la Belgique.

LE CONSEIL COMMUNAL DE CHARLEROI,
(Quinze *signatures.*)

À Son Excellence Monsieur le Colonel-Général BARON VON BISSING, Gouverneur général Allemand en Belgique, Bruxelles.

(Translation:) Charleroi, November 18, 1916.

YOUR EXCELLENCY:

We venture to bring to your ears the cries of desperation of an entire population.

Belgium has undergone courageously all the sufferings that the curse of war has brought to her since the beginning of hostilities.

A large number of the inhabitants have personally suffered the loss of those near and dear, they have been struck with terror at the sight of their homes reduced to ashes; nevertheless our nation in chains has bravely fought its fate. After the days of fright, the people, confident in the word of the high official placed by the imperial Government at the head of the country, have been able to endure their misery through a spirit of solidarity that has not failed them for a single instant.

Committees of assistance were formed immediately and both the public authorities and private individuals strove to outdo each other in devotion and abnegation to assuage the sufferings of the indigent classes.

As the administration of justice and public work, as well as the commercial and industrial enterprises capable of continuing their activity after such a crisis gradually began to function again, the

ised representatives of all the women's societies in Belgium. It spoke out of the hearts of the mothers of the

---

Belgian people, grouped under the ægis of their communal institutions, again began to labour.

Unhappily, the accumulated ruins, the scarcity of raw materials, the lack of means of transportation, the absence of commercial objective points, rendered more and more difficult the restoration of the country's activity.

Later, the progressive disappearance of the instruments of labour, the physical weakening produced by insufficient and expensive nourishment, sufficed to exhaust the last bit of energy.

And it is this moment that the German military authorities choose, on the pretext of unemployment, to tear the poorest and most-to-be-pitied of our fellow-citizens from the love of their mothers, their wives and their children.

Your Excellency can not remain insensible to our cry of desperation, which must be for civilization a cry of alarm, and an appeal to your generosity.

Important national voices have already protested with emotion and authority against this inhuman treatment that has been applied to our people without pity.

The motive that has been invoked constitutes an unjust and injurious accusation addressed to our working class, and we protest against it. These unhappy men would therefore be placed beyond the pale of international law and condemned to the ignominy of forced labour. This unmerited punishment inflicted on our fellow-citizens revolts the human conscience and on this ground we found our strength and authority to ask Your Excellency to intervene with the Imperial Government to obtain the withdrawal of these pitiless and unjustifiable measures.

Pray accept, Your Excellency, together with the assurances of our most distinguished consideration, the expression of the most fervent hope in the duty of high protection that you have assumed in regard to Belgium.

Communal Council of Charleroi:
(Signatures) Fifteen.

Anvers, le 7 novembre 1918.

À Son Excellence Monsieur le Baron von Bissing,
Gouverneur général en Belgique, Bruxelles.

Excellence:

En vertu d'une ordonnance du Gouverneur militaire d'Anvers, rendue d'après les instruction du Gouvernement général en Belgique et datée du 2 novembre 1916, nos citoyens sans travail se trouvant sur les listes du Meldeamt, sont appelés en ce moment à se présenter à la gare du Sud. De là, ils seront transportés, de force s'il le faut, en Allemagne, pour y être contraints à se livrer aux travaux qui leur seront assignés.

Les mêmes mesures sont prises dans le reste du pays.

Sans jugement, sans avoir commis de délit, des milliers de citoyens libres sont ainsi déportés contre leur volonté en terre enemie, loin de leur foyer, loin de leur femme et de leurs enfants, pour y subir l traitement le plus dur pour un homme libre: la contrainte au travail.

Députés, Sénateurs, notables d'Anvers et son agglomération, nous croirons manquer à tous nos devoirs si de pareils faits pouvaie se passer sous nos yeux, sans que nous usions du droit que nous avons de nous adresser en toutes circonstances au pouvoir exécutif pour faire valoir nos griefs, nos réserves ou nos protestations.

De quel droit le travail forcé, avec déportation, est-il introduit dans notre malheureux pays?

Telle est la question à laquelle nous cherchons en vain une réponse.

Le droit des gens condamne une pareille mesure.

Il n'est pas un auteur moderne qui la justifie. Les textes de la Convention de La Haye, limitant les réquisitions au profit de l'armée d'occupation, y sont directement contraires.

Le droit constitutionnelde tous les pays européens, y compris celui de l'Allemagne, ne leur est pas moins opposé. Le plus illustre de vos souverains, Frédéric II a honore comme un dogme la liberté individuelle et le droit de tout citoyen de disposer de ses facultés et de son travail comme il l'entend. L'occupant doit respecter ces principes essentiels, qui depuis des siècles sont devenus le patrimoine commun de l'humanité.

On ne saurait contester que les forces ouvrières belges, déportées en vertu des mesures dont il s'agit, dégagent à due proportions des ouvriers allemands, en les rendant libres d'aller combattre les frères et les fils des ouvriers dont on s'empare par la force. C'est là une coopération évidente à la guerre contre notre pays, ce que l'article 52 de la Convention de La Haye défend en propres termes.

Ce n'est pas tout.

Au lendemain de l'occupation d'Anvers, des centaines, des milliers de nos concitoyens avaient quitté leur pays et s'étaient réfugiés en Hollande, dans la région située le long de la frontière.

Les déclarations les plus rassurantes leur ont été faites par les autorités allemandes.

Le 9 octobre, le Général Von Besseler, commandant en chef l'armée assiégeante, soumettait aux négociateurs envoyés à Contich une déclaration portant: "Les gardes civiques désarmés ne seront pas considérés comme prisonniers de guerre."

Sous la même date, le lieutenant-général von Schultz, appelé au commandement de al position fortifée d'Anvers, faisait proclamer ce qui suit:

"Le soussigné, commandant de la position fortifiée d'Anvers déclare que rien ne s'oppose au retour des habitants dans leurs foyers.

"Aucun d'eux ne sera moleste.

"Les membres de la garde civique, s'ils sont désarmés, peuvent rentrer en toute sécurité."

Le 16 octobre 1914, le Cardinal Mercier faisait communiquer à la population une déclaration signée par le Général Von Huene gouverneur militaire d'Anvers, dans laquelle celui-ci desait in terminis, en vue de la publication:

"Les jeunes gens n'ont point à craindre d'être emmenés en Allemagne, soit pour être enrôles dans l'armée, *soit pour y être employes à des travaux forcés."*

Peu de temps après, l'éminent prélat de Belgique demanda au Baron von der Goltz, Gouverneur général en Belgique, de ratifier pour la généralité du pays, sans limite de temps, les garanties que le Général von Huene lui avait données pour la province d'Anvers.

Il obtint satisfaction.

Enfin, le 18 octobre 1914, l'autorité militaire d'Anvers a remis, sous sa signature, aux délégués du Général van Terwisga, commandant de l'armée hollandaise de campagne, une déclaration confirmant non seulement que les jeunes gens et les gardes civiques désarmés pouvaient rentrer en Belgique et "ne seraient pas inquiétes," mais ajoutant en outre. "Le bruit selon lequel les jeunes gens belges seraient conduits en Allemagne . . . *est dénué de tout fondement.*"

C'est sur la foi de ces déclarations solennelles et publiques que de nombreux citoyens, non seulement d'Anvers, mais de toutes les parties du pays, ont franchi à nouveau la frontière et sont revenus dans leurs foyers.

Or, ces hommes qui sont rentrés en Belgique après des engagements aussi formels, seront demain envoyés en Allemagne pour y être astreints à ce travail force qu'on a promis de ne pas leur appliquer.

Dans ces conditions, nous croyons être en droit de demander que la mesure prise soit rapportée.

Nous ajoutons que le traité de Contich stipule formellement que les gardes civiques ne seront pas traités comme prisonniers de guerre; il ne peut donc s'agir que de les transporter en Allemagne pour un traitement encore plus rigoureux.

Le préambule de l'ordonnance dont nous nous occupons semble faire grief à nos ouvriers de leur inaction, invoque le souci de l'ordre public es s'inquiète des charges croissantes de la charité publique.

Nous nous permettons de faire remarquer à Votre Excellence que lors des invasion des armées allemandes, il y avait dans ce pays de considérables approvisionnements en matières premières dont la transformation eût occupé pendant longtemps d'innombrables ouvriers.

Ces stocks ont été enlevés et transporté en Allemagne.

Il y avait des usines complètement outillés qui auraient pu travailler pour l'exportation vers les pays neutres. Les machines-outils et bien d'autres ont été enlevées, en grand nombre, et ont été envoyées en Allemagne.

Certes, il est arrivé que nos ouvriers aient refusé du travail offert

par l'occupant, parce que ce travail tendait à l'assister dans ses occupations militaires: à ces gros salaires gagnes à ce prix, ils ont préféré les privations. Mais quel est le patriote et quel est l'homme de coeur qui n'admirerait pas ces pauvres gens pour cette dignité et pour ce courage?

Aucun reproche d'inaction ne peut donc être fait à nos classes ouvrières qui, pour l'amour du travail, ne le cèdent à personne.

L'ordonnance invoque en outre le souci du bon ordre et se préoccupe de ne pas laisser de nombreux chômeurs à charge de la bienfaisance publique.

L'ordre n'a pas été troublé.

Quant à l'assistance sociale, il est vrai que des millions ont été dépensés en secours aux chômeurs depuis le début de la guerre en Belgique. Mais pour cet immense effort de solidarité rien n'a été demandé au Gouvernement allemand, ni même au Trésor belge administré sous votre surveillance et alimenté par nos contribuables.

Le souci d'un argent qui ne vient pas d'elle, ne doit inquiéter l'Allemagne, et Votre Excellence n'ignore pas que non la bienfaisance publique, mais le Comité National assure le budget de cette oeuvre si nécessaire et le fera dans l'avenir comme il l'a fait dans le passé.

Aucun des motifs invoqués à l'appui de la politique nouvelle ne nous apparaît comme fondé.

Dans l'histoire de la guerre, on chercherait en vain, depuis deux siècles, un précédent.

Et dans les guerres de la Révolution ou de l'Empire, ni dans celles qui ont ensuite désolé l'Europe, personne n'a porté atteinte au principe sacré de la liberté individuelle des populations paisibles et inoffensives.

Où s'arrêterait-on dans cette voie si la raison d'Etat pouvait justifier un pareil traitement? Même dans les colonies, le travail forcé a disparu à notre époque.

En conséquence, nous prions Votre Excellence de prendre en considération l'exposé que nous venons de lui soumettre et de renvoyer dans leurs foyers ceux de nos concitoyens qui ont été déportés en Allemagne à la suite de l'ordonnance du 2 novembre 1916.

(Translation:)

Antwerp, November 7, 1918.

To His Excellency Baron von Bissing,

Governor-General in Belgium, Brussels.

Excellency:

By virtue of an order of the Military Governor of Antwerp, given according to the instructions of the Governor-General in Belgium and dated November 2, 1916, our fellow-citizens without work, whose names are on the lists of the Meldeamt, are now called to present themselves at the Southern Railway Station. From there they will be transported by force if necessary to Germany, there to be compelled to perform labour that will be assigned to them.

The same measures have been taken in the rest of the country.

Without judgment, without having committed any wrong, thousands of free citizens are thus deported against their will to an enemy land, far from their homes, far from their wives and children, there to submit to a treatment the hardest of all for a free man—forced labour.

Deputies, Senators, Notables of Antwerp and of its agglomeration, we would consider ourselves as having failed in every one of our duties if such things could happen under our eyes without our using the right that we have to address ourselves in all circumstances to the executive power to make known our complaints or reservations or our protestations.

By what right is forced labour with deportation introduced in our unhappy country?

Such is the question to which we seek in vain a response.

International law condemns such a measure.

There is not a modern author that justifies it. The text of The Hague Conventions, limiting requisitions to the profit of the army of occupation, are directly opposed to it.

The constitutional right of all European countries, Germany among them, is not less opposed to it. The most illustrious of your sovereigns, Frederick II, has honoured the individual liberty as a dogma, and the right of every citizen to dispose of his faculties and his work as he wishes to. The occupant must respect these essential principles, which for centuries have become the common patrimony of humanity.

It cannot be disputed that Belgian workmen deported by virtue of the measures in question liberate proportionally German working men, in giving them freedom to go and fight the brothers and the sons of the workmen who have been carried away by force. There is an evident co-operation in the war against our country which article 52 of the Convention of The Hague prohibits in those very terms.

That is not all.

The morning after the occupation of Antwerp hundreds and thousands of our fellow-citizens left their country and took refuge in Holland, in the region situated along the frontier.

The most reassuring declarations were made to them by the German authorities.

On October 9 General von Besseler, Commander-in-Chief of the besieging army, submitted to the negotiators sent to Contich a declaration stating "the disarmed *gardes civiques* will not be considered as prisoners of war."

Under the same date Lieutenant-General von Schultz, called to the commandment of the fortified place of Antwerp, had proclaimed the following:

"The undersigned, commanding the fortified place of Antwerp, declares that nothing is opposed to the return of the inhabitants to their homes.

"Not one will be molested.

"Disarmed gardes civiques can safely return."

On October 16, 1914, Cardinal Mercier communicated to the population a declaration signed by General von Huene, Military Governor of Antwerp, in which the latter said *in terminis,* for the purpose of publication:

"The young men need not fear to be sent to Germany, either to be enrolled in the army *or to be employed in forced labour."*

A short time afterwards the eminent prelate of Belgium asked Baron von der Goltz, Governor-General in Belgium, to ratify for the whole of the country, without limit of time, the guarantees which General von Huene had given him for the province of Antwerp.

He succeeded in doing so.

Finally, on October 18, 1914, the military authority of Antwerp gave, under his signature, to the delegates of General van Terwisga,

commanding the Dutch army in the field, a declaration confirming not only that young men and disarmed *gardes civiques* could return to Belgium and need not be troubled, but added besides: "The rumour according to which the young Belgians will be sent into Germany . . . *is entirely without foundation.*"

It is on the faith of these solemn and public declarations that numberless citizens, not only of Antwerp but of all parts of the country, came back again across the frontier and returned to their homes.

Now, these men who returned to Belgium after such formal declarations will be sent to Germany, there to be obliged to perform this forced labour which they were promised they would never be compelled to do.

Under these circumstances we believe we have the right to ask that the measure taken be reported.

We add that the treaty of Contich stipulates formally that the *gardes civiques* will not be treated as prisoners of war. There can, then, be no question of transporting them to Germany to receive a treatment still more rigorous.

The preamble of the ordinance which we are considering seems to complain of the inaction of the working men, and invokes the care for public order, and is troubled about the increasing charges on public charity.

We may be permitted to remark to your Excellency that at the time of the invasion of the German army there were in the country considerable stocks of raw materials, of which the transformation would have given work for a long time to numerous working men. These stocks were taken away and transported to Germany. There were factories completely fitted out with machinery which could have worked for exportation into neutral countries. The machines and tools and much else were taken away in great numbers and sent to Germany.

To be sure, it has happened that our working men have refused employment offered by the occupant because this aimed to aid the occupant in his military enterprise; instead of high wages gained at such a price, they preferred privations. But where is the patriot, where is the man of heart, who would not have admired these workmen for their dignity and their courage?

No one can reproach with inaction, then, our working classes, who cede to no one in their love of labour.

The ordinance invokes besides a desire to establish good order, and is preoccupied by the fear that numberless unemployed will be a charge on public charity.

The order has not been troubled.

As to charity, it is true that millions have been dispensed in aiding the unemployed since the beginning of the war in Belgium. But for that great effort of solidarity, nothing has been asked from the German Government, neither from the Belgian Treasury administered under your surveyance and furnished by our taxes. Germany need not worry about money that does not belong to her, and Your Excellency is not unaware that it is not the public charity, but the Comité National which assures the budget of this work so necessary, and that it will perform it in the future as it has done in the past.

None of the motives invoked to sustain the new policy appears to us as being well founded.

In the history of war one will seek in vain during two centuries a precedent, and in the wars of the Revolution and of the Empire, or in those that afterwards desolated Europe, no one has ever touched the sacred principle of individual liberty of peaceful and inoffensive populations.

Where would one stop in this road if reasons of state should justify such a treatment? Even in colonies forced labour has disappeared at the present time.

In consequence, we beg Your Excellency to take into consideration the views which we have just submitted to him, and to return to their homes those of our fellow-citizens who were deported to Germany as a result of the order of November 2, 1916.

Bruxelles, le 18 novembre 1916.

À Son Excellence Monsieur Brand Whitlock,
Envoyé Extraordinaire et Ministre Plénipotentiaire,
des Etats-Unis d'Amérique.

Monsieur le Ministre:

Du fond de notre abîme de détressé, notre supplication s'élève vers vous.

En nous adressant à vous, c'est à votre gouvernement, c'est, aussi, aux femmes—nos soeurs—de la nation que vous représentez parmi

nous que nous denoncons l'inique abus de force dont est victime notre malheureux peuple, sans défense.

Depuis le début de cette atroce guerre, nous avons assisté impuissantes, le coeur percé des glaives de toutes les douleurs, à des évènements terribles qui ont fait reculer notre civilisation aux agês de la horde barbare.

Le crime qui se perpètre actuellement sous vos yeux, Monsieur le Ministre: nous visons la déportation de milliers d'hommes contraints de travailler en terre ennemie contre les intérêts de leur pays, ce crime ne saurait trouver aucun semblant d'excuse dans la nécessité de guerre car il constitué une violation par la force d'un droit sacré de la conscience humaine.

Pour quelque motif que ce soit, il ne peut-être admis que l'on contraigne un citoyen à travailler directement ou indirectement *pour* l'ennemi *contre* ses frères qui combattent.

La Convention de La Haye a consacré ce principe.

C'est cependant à cette éxtremité monstrueuse, contraire à la morale et aux lois internationales, que l'occupant accule les milliers d'hommes qui déjà, ont été déportés en Allemagne et tous ceux qui, demain, dubiront le même sort si, du dehors, de l'Europe et des Etats-Unis neutres, ne vient le secours.

Ah! les femmes de Belgique ont su, elles aussi, accomplir leur devoir à l'heure du danger: elles n'ont pas affaibli par leurs larmes le courage des soldats de l'honneur. Vaillamment, elles ont donné a leur patrie ceux qu'elles aimaient. . . . C'est le sang des mères qui coule sur les champs de bataille.

Aujourd'hui, ceux qu'on leur ravit ne partent pas pour des tâches glorieuses. Ce sont des esclaves enchaînes qui, dans un exil déprimant, sous la menace de la faim, de la prison, de la mort à auront a accomplir le plus vil travail: servir l'ennemi contre la patrie.

Elles ne peuvent se résigner à laisser s'accomplir cette abomination sans faire entendre leur protestation.

Elles ne songent pas à leur propre souffrance, à leurs tortures morales, à l'abandon et la misère dans lesquels elles vont se trouver avec leurs enfants.

Elles vous parlent au nom des droits imprescriptibles de l'honneur et de la conscience.

On a dit des femmes qu'elles sont "la toute puissance suppliante."

Nous nous sommes autorisées de cette parole, "Monsieur le Ministre, pour tendre nos mains vers vous et adresser à votre pays un suprême appel.

Nous espérons qu'en lisant ces lignes, vous sentirez à chaque mot battre le coeur douloureux des femmes de Belgique et trouverez dans une large et humaine sympathie d'imperieux motifs d'intervention.

La volontàé unanime des peuples neutres, énergiquement exprimée, peut seule contrebalancer celle de l'autorité militaire allemande.

Cette aide que les nations neutres peuvent, et par conséquent doivent leur prêter, sera-t-elle refusée aux Belges opprimés? . . .

Veuillez agreer, Monsieur le Ministre, l'hommage de notre considération la plus distinguée.

Baronne C. De Broqueville,
Comtesse Jean de Mérode,
Madame Veuve Charles Graux.

Pour l'Union Patriotique des Femmes belges, Jane Brigode.
Pour le Féminisme chrétien de Belgique, Louis Van Den Plas.
Pour la Fédération des Femmes catholiques, H. de Trooz.
Pour l'Assistance Discrète, Comtesse de Grunne.
Pour le Secretariat général des Syndicats féminins chrétiens de Belgique, Victoire Cappes.
Pour la Ligue Constance Teichmann, M. Baert.
Pour les Arts de la Femme, M. Philippson.
Pour le Comptoir de l'Ouvre du Travail, C. Meeus Male.
Pour la Fédération nationale des institutrices chrétiennes de Belgique, Gabrielle Fontaine.
Pour le Comité National des Fédérations des Cercles de Fermières de Belgique, Baronne Rotsart de Hertaing.
Pour l'Union des Anciennes Elèves de l'Ecole Normale de la Ville de Bruxelles, B. Leysens.
Pour la Ligue belge du Droit des Femmes, Marie Parent.
Pour le Comité des Dames patronnesses de la Ligue nationale belge contre la Tuberculose, Comtesse John D'Oultremont.
Pour les Femmes socialistes belges, Maria Tillemonde.
Pour l'Alliance des Femmes contre l'Abus de l'Alcool, Boch.
Pour l'Union des Femmes belges contre l'Alcoolisme, Laure Levoz Hauzeur.
Pour la Ligue des Femmes chrétiennes, Marquise du Chasteler.

land [9] and represented a refined culture beyond the imagination of the power whose cruelties it condemned.

Pour l'Ouvre des patronages de Jeunes Filles, Baronne Hermann de Woelment.

Pour le "Boerinenbond" Belge, M. Lemaire.

Pour l'Entr'Aide, Comité d'Assistance d'Ouvres sociales, Mme. Léo Errera.

Pour le patronage "Réunions Amicales," Comtesse Hélène Goblet D'Alviella.

Pour l'Union Post-Scolaire de l'Ecole Mayenne C (filles), L. E. Carter.

Pour les Cercles d'études féminines de Belgique, Madeleine de Roo.

Pour le Lyceum, Marthe Boel de Kerchove de Desterghem.

[9] Brussels, November 18, 1916.

(Translation:)

To His Excellency Mr. Brand Whitlock,
Envoy Extraordinary and Minister Plenipotentiary
of the United States of America.

Mr. Minister:

From the depths of our well of misery our supplications rise to you.

In addressing ourselves to you we denounce to your Government, as well as to the women of the nation which you represent in our midst, our sisters, the criminal abuse of force of which our unhappy and defenseless people is a victim.

Since the beginning of this atrocious war we have looked, impotently and with our hearts torn with every sorrow, at terrible events that put our civilization back into the age of the barbarian hordes.

Mr. Minister, the crime that is now being committed under your eyes, the deportation of thousands of men compelled to work on enemy soil against the interests of their country, can not find any shadow of excuse on the ground of military necessity, for it constitutes a violation by force of a sacred right of human conscience.

These protests themselves tell the whole story of the shameless and wicked business, and I have given perhaps, in dwelling so long on personal events of far less

---

Whatever be the motive it can not be admitted that citizens be compelled to work directly or indirectly *for* the enemy *against* their brothers who are fighting.

The Convention of The Hague has consecrated this principle.

Nevertheless the occupying Power is forcing thousands of men to this monstrous extremity which is contrary to morals and to international law; these men who have already been taken to Germany and those who to-morrow will undergo the same fate if, from the outside, from Europe and from the United States, as neutrals, no help is offered.

Oh! The Belgian women have also known how to carry on their duty in the hour of danger; they have not weakened the courage of the soldiers of honour by their tears; they have bravely given to their country those whom they loved. The blood of mothers is flowing on the battlefield.

Those who are taken away to-day do not go to carry on our duty of glory. They are slaves in chains, who, in a dark exile, threatened by hunger, prison, death, will be called upon to perform the most odious work, service to the enemy against the native land.

The mothers can not stand by while such an abomination is taking place without making heard their voices in protest.

They are not thinking of their own sufferings, the abandonment and the misery in which they are to be placed with their children.

They address you in the name of the inalterable rights of honour and conscience.

It is said that women are "all-powerful suppliants."

We venture to make use of this word, Mr. Minister, to extend our hands to you and to address to your country a last appeal.

We trust that in reading these lines you will feel at each word the unhappy heart-beats of the Belgian women and will find in your broad and human sympathy imperative reasons for intervention.

The united will of the neutral peoples, energetically expressed, alone can counterbalance that of the German authorities.

importance than the great tragedy to which they were ancillary, some glimpses of what was going on in those

---

This assistance which the neutral nations can, and therefore must, lend us—will it be refused to the oppressed Belgians?

Pray accept, Mr. Minister, the homage of our most distinguished consideration.

COUNTESS JEANNE DE MÉRODE,
BARONESS C. DE BROQUEVILLE,
MADAME CHARLES GRAUX.

In the name of the

Patriotic Union of Belgian Women, J. BRIGODE.
Christian Feminism of Belgium, L. VAN DEN PLAS.
Federation of Catholic Women, H. DE TROOZ.
Discreet Charity, COUNTESS DE GRUNNE.
Christian Women's Union of Belgium, office of General Secretary, VICTOIRE CAPPES.
League of Constance Teichmann, M. BAERT.
Women's Arts, M. PHILIPSON.
Office of Labour Charity, C. MEERS-MALE.
Federation of Christian Governesses of Belgium, GABRIELLE FONTAINE.
National Committee, Federation of Clubs of Farmers' Wives of Belgium, BARONESS ROTSART DE HERTAING.
Union of former Normal School students of Brussels, B. LEYSENS.
Belgian League of Women's Rights, MARIE PARENT.
Committee of Patrons of the National League of Belgium for the Prevention of Tuberculosis, COUNTESS JOHN D'OULTREMONT.
Women Socialists of Belgium, M. TILLEMONDE.
Women's Alliance against the Abuse of Alcohol, A. BOCH.
Union of Belgian Women against Alcoholism, LAURA LEVOZ HAUZEUR.
League of Christian Women, MARQUISE DU CHASTELER.
Committee of Aid of Social Charities, MADAME LEO ERRERA.
"Friendly Meetings," COUNTESS HÉLÈNE GOBLET D'ALVIELLA.
Graduate Union of the Middle Schools, L. E. CARTER.
Clubs of Women Students in Belgium, MADELEINE DE ROO, MARTHE BOEL DE KERCHOVE DE DENTERGHEM.

obscure villages where the slave-gangs were plying their hideous and heinous trade. We ourselves had had, indeed, only glimpses, for news, when it dealt with German deeds, travelled slowly and circumspectly in Belgium in those days, and the details were long in reaching us. They came in slowly, bit by bit, and even then did not tell half of the dreadful story that some day will be told in Belgium.

There lies before me as I write, a letter written in Flemish by the sister of the cook in a certain home in Brussels. The woman who penned this letter sent it, as its contents reveal, by stealth from her village in Flanders, and the master of the house where its recipient cooked gave it me. I can not read it in the original, but it was translated for me, literally, word for word, out of its poor faulty Flemish into French, and from the French I have tried to put it into English, as literally as may be, so that it might retain some flavour of its original. To me it has all the pathos that is part of the fate of the poor in all lands. It gives an impression, however vague, of the sorrow and despair that were in all those little cots with the red tiles scattered over Belgium. This is the letter:

Dear Sister:

I write you these few lines to let you know that we are all in good health and hope you are the same. I have lots of news for you, but it is not very good. Without doubt you have already heard that the young men who were on the Committee [10] have had to go away to work but without knowing where. They say they must go to work in Germany. Saturday Albert received his letter and Frans of your brother Alois,[11] also. You can imagine that it was

[10] Literally, as in English, *i. e.*, living on the Committee.

[11] Nephew of the recipient.

not very agreeable to us to see them all go away like that. Just think, 465 boys from Hamme alone, and Monday they all had to go to Termonde, and there they locked them up with 2,800 others in the barracks until now, Thursday. This morning they went away on the train, we think for Germany, but we don't know yet. Sunday we sewed all day to prepare their clothes, which they must take with them, two comforters to cover them, two working suits, two shirts, two pairs of socks, two vests, a towel, a bowl to eat out of, a fork, a spoon, a knife, two pairs of socks and lots of little things, and enough to eat for two days. They had to have all that.

So you may see what sad days we passed this week. Last Sunday we ran from one shop to another, to buy clothes, and everything is so terribly dear. If we had known all that in advance we could have asked the Committee. They have not taken all the workers, whether they have to go or not we don't know. The saddest of all is that at Termonde they received so little to eat. Alice and her father went to Termonde for two days with a little bread, but they could not even get it to the boys. Everybody was there with food. They sat all day long before the barracks, but they could not get their packages in because of the Germans, and Wednesday morning very early they went back to Termonde and then they gave their packages from Hamme to the game keeper and he was able to get them in, but Alice and her father were not able to get very near, but all the same he got his package. Just think what it was down there at Termonde with all those people who could not see their boys. There are some who gave up their last mouthful of bread and all the money they had to give it to their children. So, dear Sister, it is the same thing with our Albert and I had to buy it all without anybody giving me a penny, but I could not let him go without a penny in his pocket. It is already so little that one can give to them. The Overstraetens, they gave him a comforter, without that I would have had to buy it myself.

So you can see what it was. All these boys had to run with that sort of pack on their back. They say that they will be able to write. I don't know whether it is true. As soon as I know where they are I shall let you know. Now I am going to close and I shall wait for a reply by D— G— who will give this letter to you, and

I hope that Madame received my other letter that I sent her a fortnight ago.

Now my compliments to Monsieur and Madame and to the children of Alice and of us all.

Your sister,

LEONTINE.

This letter was written in the first days, when the seizures were all in Flanders—remote, inaccessible, *incommunicado,* governed by the whim of *Obersts* and *Feldwebels* and *Kreischefs.* It began there, as I have said; Hellfrisch had just made his declaration on forced labour in the occupied territories in the Reichstag, where it was received with docile acquiescence. I remember how at the time I imagined what would happen if Mr. Lloyd George should arise in the House of Commons, or Mr. Kitchin in the House of Congress, and casually announce that the Government had decided to seize men in their homes, deport them to another land, and set them to work in mines and quarries and factories! . . .

The declaration in the Reichstag was hardly made before the *affiches* were posted all over Flanders ordering the men to report. The very next day the men were sent away—"God knows where," said the man who brought in the news. He came with the story of Alost. There the men "capable of bearing arms"—nothing was said there about *chômeurs*—were summoned by *affiche* on Thursday, the twelfth of October, to present themselves the following day. About seventeen hundred men, between the ages of eighteen and thirty-five, were assembled. They were examined by the Germans precisely as slaves would be examined in the slave mart, their muscles pinched and tested, and about four hun-

dred who appeared physically unfit were thus eliminated. The remaining thirteen hundred were locked up at Alost, and a second examination eliminated about three hundred more. The thousand who remained were imprisoned and the military authorities by force compelled the Burgomaster to announce to them that they need not fear, that they would be utilized only for work on the railways. The men were then released and told to appear on the sixteenth, bringing certain clothes and effects.

However, on the following Monday, the sixteenth, instead of the thousand less than six hundred appeared. Of these the married men were released, and the remaining, about four hundred, were given a paper to sign. The paper was in German, and the military refused to translate it or to explain its contents. The men, all of them, refused to sign, and were again locked up. What happened after that the man did not know, but two trains filled with young men went away, and the young men were singing "la Brabançonne" and "de Leeuw van Vlaanderen."

Later we learned of their fate. The men seized at Alost were not deported to Germany, but were taken to France in the region of the Somme, a few hours from the firing-line. There they were set to work making a grade for a railroad line; at night they were locked up in an unused factory building and as they were given little to eat the French used to come and throw bits of food over the walls for the Belgians. Some of the French were punished for this charity by fines of from twenty to fifty marks, and afterward they would place food on the side of the road along which the prisoners were led when they went to their work. Despite the

prohibition of the military authorities the French continued to help the Belgians in many ways, and it was due to their efforts that two young men from Alost, brothers, twenty and twenty-two years of age, were able to escape, and, making their way on foot, at last to reach Brussels. They had made their escape one day when aviators came to throw bombs on the railway line they were building; the German guards ran to cover, and the two Belgian boys seized the moment to flee. They wore, like all the other enslaved Belgians, yellow brassards to distinguish them from the French, who wore red brassards, but some French men gave them red brassards, and with these to avert suspicion they escaped, lay in hiding all day and at night set forth on foot. They reached Brussels, as I have said, and finally got back to Alost. They said that when they were first seized they were asked to sign contracts to work, which they refused to do. They were deprived of their food but would not yield; then they were beaten until they were black and blue all over, but they never signed the contracts. The Germans tried to force one Belgian of their party, who had refused to work, to take up a pick; they tied his hands to the implement, but he said though they cut his hands off he would never yield. This man had been so brutally treated that the two boys thought he would never live to see Belgium again. The Germans in speaking of the Belgians called them *Banditen* or *slecht Volk*.

The paper the men had been asked to sign was, no doubt, an agreement to labour that would invest the transaction with the innocent and legal aspect of a voluntary contract of employment. The Germans laid great stress on this contract in the earlier days of the

press; they sought by threats, by cuffs, and blows of gun stocks, to force the men to sign it, and frequently tried hunger—indeed, did starve some of the men into signing it—and exhibited the contracts afterward as proof of the Belgian willingness to work. But later this effort to make the transaction appear normal and legal was abandoned, and the "contracts" were heard of no more.

There seemed to be in those early days of the slavery some regard for the appearances, and a resort to tricks and subterfuges that resembled the stupid cunning of maniacs. For instance, at Roulers, which was in the *étappen,* when the Belgians, presenting themselves in the customary way for control at the Meldeamt, showed their cards of identity, the Germans seized and stamped the cards, or the cards of such of the men as appeared able to perform manual labour, with the words *Freiwillige Arbeiter,* and having thus, after a German fashion, transformed them into willing workers, they sent them off to dig a fourth-line trench from Staden to Ostend. A man from Flanders told me that near the scene where they laboured there was a large sign labelled *"Freiwillige Arbeiter."*

The workmen living along the Roulers-Dixmude railway line, which extends as far as Zarren, were allowed to return to their homes every evening. They went to and came from their place of work penned in flat cars. They were exposed to all weathers, shivered from the cold, were wet to the skin, and they made the journey thus twice each day. "A cattle breeder, in taking care of his livestock," said the man, "would not permit them to travel under such conditions." At first these workmen had been transported in closed cars, but

on the twentieth of December an *affiche* announced that if they continued to deface the cars the military authorities would be forced to have them transported in uncovered cars. If they continued to deface the cars! But there had been no complaint of their defacing cars; how could common cattle cars be defaced? There it was again, the subtle lie, the detestable trick, threatening as punishment for something that had not been done something the Germans themselves wished to do, and the next day the announced punishment was inflicted.

The factory where these men worked for the Germans was situated at a very short distance from the Front. The men toiled there under the fire of the Allied armies, and several of them were wounded. Under these conditions it was evident that the work they performed must have served for military purposes, and, in fact, it was said that they were digging trenches. Those who did not live along the tramway lines between Sichem and Lichtervelde were allowed to return to their homes only once a week, and sometimes only once every fortnight. In the meantime they were lodged in barracks where sanitary conveniences of even the most elementary nature were entirely lacking.

Thursday, October twelfth, and Friday, the thirteenth, were sinister dates in the territory of East Flanders, for the seizures were begun everywhere in those days. Two thousand, some said twenty-five hundred, men were locked up in the storehouse of the *"La Linière Gantoise,"* a large flax-spinning factory at Ghent. The men having refused to work for the Germans or to sign the proffered contract, were held there by German troops, and the selection was made after a most cursory examination. They were not all of them unemployed

workmen; some of them were clerks or small tradesmen. They were kept imprisoned, huddled together in an insufficient space, with no sanitary arrangements, no place to sleep except the bare and crowded floor, with little or nothing to eat; once a day they were taken out of doors for exercise under a heavy military guard. All the while, by means of threats and every manner of intimidation, the Germans tried to extort from them, if not their signatures to the contract, their oral consent to work. Finally they were shipped off to Germany, and they, too, went singing "la Brabançonne" and "de Leeuw van Vlaanderen."

The shops of Van den Kerkhove were "requisitioned," the directors having declined to permit their plant to work for the Germans. Then the Germans installed German foremen, but the men refused to work under them, or to work for the Germans at all. Then, as a German improvement on the old system of the lock-out, they were locked up and given no food, in order to force them to work for their conquerors. They were closely guarded, but out of the factory windows they used to drop notes which their friends picked up and so learned of their sufferings.

At the old city of Bruges, which, like Ghent, was in the *étape,* the effort to induce the labourers to work for the Germans was made in a somewhat different fashion. Toward the end of September the German authorities ordered the city of Bruges to provide four hundred workmen, in groups of one hundred, "for employment on the West Front." The Burgomaster, Count Vizart, and his colleagues in the municipal administration, replied in the proud spirit of the old free city, saying that it was for the workmen themselves to

decide whether they would work for the Germans or not; as for the city fathers, they would neither provide the labourers nor give their names to the German authorities. The German Kommandant then asked, or perhaps ordered the Burgomaster and the aldermen to appear at his home. They went, and the Kommandant laid down the law; the Germans were masters in Bruges, he said, and as masters they had the right to dictate orders, and the orders were not to be discussed, but to be obeyed.

But it was not in the traditions of Bruges for the municipal authorities to take orders from any one; the whole history of the proud old city had been one long defiance by Burgomaster and aldermen of some truculent overlord. The Burgomaster and the aldermen persisted in their refusal, and the Kommandant informed them that they were dismissed from office; they were to return to their houses and remain there, considering themselves under arrest, and the city of Bruges was to be fined one hundred thousand marks for each day's delay in providing the workmen. The Kommandant, in the German municipal way, had a professional mayor ready, Lieutenant Rogge, a German officer who in time of peace discharged the functions of Burgomaster of Schwerin, and he was detailed as Burgomaster of Bruges.

The Germans then demanded the lists of the *chômeurs;* but M. Henri van Vaillie, who was director of the municipal service for the aid of the unemployed, refused to give the lists without the authorization of the Comité National at Brussels. And so he, too, was arrested at his home and put in prison, whence the Germans took him to the employment bureau, seized the books and

took him back to prison where, without trial, he was condemned to remain for twenty-eight days and to pay a fine of three thousand marks, or, in default, to spend twenty-eight days longer in prison.

The *polizei* were then sent to summon the *chômeurs* whose names were on the lists. Workmen, or men who appeared capable of working, were seized indiscriminately in the streets and at the Meldeamt, where all men between the ages of sixteen and forty-five were compelled to report at intervals. As rapidly as groups of one hundred men were assembled they were put under guard, conducted to the barracks, and on the following day shipped off in the tramway toward Meerbeek, near the Dutch frontier. All along the way weeping women gathered in crowds until German soldiers dispersed them. The Germans were constructing trenches just then along the Dutch border, in fear, it was supposed, of a British invasion from that direction. The men refusing to work in these trenches were imprisoned in a large building and told that those who would not work could not eat. Some of the men, after two days without food, surrendered; others held out longer. The same thing occurred in all the communes near Bruges.

Burgomaster Rogge, however, notwithstanding the fact that he was a professional mayor, did not achieve a very successful administration of the municipal affairs of Bruges; it was not the same thing to govern a Belgian population as to govern a German population, which does as it is told to do. Like some other cities I might mention, Belgian cities are not so easily governed, and after a week the imported professional burgomaster gave up, the Bruges municipal authori-

ties were recalled to their posts—and the city condemned to pay a fine of four hundred thousand marks.

M. van Caillie was kept in prison until the end of his term; he was treated with all severity, not even permitted to receive visits from his wife and children, and when he had completed the sentence he was fined three hundred marks.

M. Charles Serweytens, formerly president of the commercial court at Bruges, and honorary consul for Norway, had expressed publicly the opinion that it was contrary to international law to force the people to give up their brass and copper utensils—as they were compelled to do all over Belgium—and though he was sixty-five years of age and ill, he was sent off to prison in Germany.

About October first the authorities of the city of Tournai, in the province of Hainaut, and the authorities in each of the ninety-one communes in the district known as the Tournaisis, received an identical order to turn over the lists of *chômeurs*. They all refused. General Hopffer, the *étappen* commander, then demanded of each commune its electoral list, and used this list, together with the records of the Meldeamt, to "requisition" all labourers, whether employed or not. On October eleventh General Hopffer in an *affiche* announced that these men had been deported.[12] These were about eight hundred of them. On the twenty-second

[12] This is the *affiche:*

AVIS

Malgré mes ordres et les advertissements réitérés concernant les suites en case de désobéissance, les ouvriers demandés par l'autorité allemande n'ont pas été mis à ma disposition. Pour cette raison un nombre d'ouvriers de Tournai et de Templeuve ayant

of October, because of the attitude of the municipal authorities of Tournai, General Hopffer issued another order commanding the inhabitants of the city to remain indoors from six o'clock in the evening to seven o'clock in the morning.[13] The following day General Hopffer

---

refusé à travailler, ainsi que l'échevin Wibaut de Tournai furent transportés aujourd'hui en Allemagne.

En cas de récidive, d'autres transports et d'autres mesures seront ordonnés.

HOPFFER,
General-major und Etappenkommandant.

Tournai, le 11 octobre 1916.

(Translation:)

NOTICE

In spite of my orders and the repeated notices concerning the consequences in case of disobedience, the workmen demanded by the German authorities have not been placed at their disposal.

For this reason a number of workmen of Tournai and Templeuve who had refused to work, together with the alderman Wibaut, of Tournai, were sent to Germany to-day.

In case of obstinacy others will be sent to Germany and other measures adopted.

Tournai, 11 October, 1916.

HOPFFER,
General-major und Etappenkommandant.

[13] This is the *affiche:*

AVIS

A cause de l'attitude désobéissante de la ville de Tournai, prouvée par son administration communale, il est défendu aux habitants de Tournai—à part d'autres mesures qui seront prises—de quitter les maisons à partir de 6 heures du soir juqu'à 7 heures du matin et ceci d'abord jusqu'au dimanche 29 courant y compris. Les magasins, estaminets et cinémas sont à fermer à 6 heures du soir.

Ces mesures ne s'appliquent pas aux employés des ponts aux, agents de police et gardes-champêtres, au personnel des chemins de fer vicinaux, des usines à électricité et à gaz.

was out in another *affiche* levying a fine of two hundred thousand marks on the city of Tournai for the failure of its authorities to hand over the lists of unemployed, and a further fine of twenty thousand marks daily was exacted until the lists were surrendered.[14]

Des civils venus d'en dehors de Tournai doivent quitter la ville avant 6 heures du soir.

HOPFFER,
General-major und Etappenkommandant.

Tournai, le 22 octobre 1916.

(Translation:)

NOTICE

On account of the disobedient attitude of the town of Tournai, as evidenced by its communal administration, the inhabitants of Tournai (except in the case of other measures being taken) are forbidden to leave their houses from 6 o'clock in the evening to 7 o'clock in the morning, until and including Sunday the 29th instant. Shops, cafés, and cinemas must be closed at 6 P. M.

These measures are not applicable to men employed on bridges, to policemen and forest guards, to the employees of the *chemins de fer vicinaux,* of the electric and gas plants.

Civilians from outside of Tournai must leave the town before 6 P.M.

HOPFFER,
General-major und Etappenkommandant.

Tournai, 22 October, 1916.

[14] This is the *affiche:*

AVIS

Pour le fefus de L'Administration de la Ville de soumettre les listes de chômeurs, Monsieur le Général Commandant l'armée a infligé à la Ville de Tournai une contribution de 200,000 marks, payable en six jours à partir d'aujourd'hui, en ordonnant également que la ville payera en outre journellement la somme de 20,000 marks jusqu'à l'époque, où les listes ordonnées se trouveront entre mes mains—ceci d'abord jusqu'au le 31 decembre 1916.

HOPFFER,
General-major und Etappenkommandant.

Tournai, le 23 octobre 1916.

Nor was this all; all the communes under the Kommandantur of the *étape* of Tournai were notified that they were to be held responsible for the preservation in good condition of the railways within their territory; if any damage were done, and the guilty not denounced to the German military authorities within twenty-four hours, the Mayor of the commune and three prominent citizens would be arrested, joined to a band of workmen or taken to Germany; and at all events, whether the guilty were discovered or not, a fine would be collected from the commune and the inhabitants be held responsible for its payment in kind from their properties.[15]

(Translation:)

NOTICE

On account of the refusal of the communal authorities of the town of Tournai to submit the list of unemployed, the commanding general has inflicted a fine of 200,000 marks payable in six days, and also orders the town to pay 20,000 marks daily until the list shall have been submitted to me—to begin with, until the 31st October, 1916.

HOPFFER,
General-major und Etappenkommandant.

Tournai, 23 October, 1916.

[15] This was the notification:

AVIS

OBJET: CHEMINS DE FER

Etappenkommandantur, Tournai,
le 17 octobre 1916.

A TOUTES LES COMMUNES:

Les communes sont responsables de la conservation en bon état du chemin de fer se trouvant sur leur territoire. Le chef de la commune a le devoir d'appeler spécialement l'attention de tous les habitants sur ce que la voie ferrée est, dans leur propre intérêt,

The municipal authorities and the aldermen of the city of Ath announced to the public by placards that,

---

l'objet le plus a protéger et que tout dommage entraînera les suites les plus graves.

Dans les ces où un tel fait se produirait et que le malfaiteur ne serait pas désigné à l'autorité militaire compétente dans les 24 heures, le Bourgmestre et trois notables de la commune sur le territoire de laquelles l'incident aurait eu lieu seront arrêtés. Ils seront mis dans une compagnie d'ouvriers ou transportés en Allemagne. Si la négligence ou la complicité du Bourgmestre était constatée, une punition des plus rigoureuses sera prononcée immediatement. L'auteur sera jugé d'après les lois de la guerre.

Dans tous les cas, soit-il que l'auteur soit trouvé ou non, une amende sera infligée à la commune. Les habitants d'une commune répondront sur leurs biens des amendes infligées à la commune.

HOPFFER,
General-major und Etappenkommandant.

(Translation:)

NOTICE

Subject: Railroads.

Etappenkommandant, Tournai,
October 17, 1916.

TO ALL COMMUNES:

The communes are made responsible for the safeguarding of the railroads in their territories. The head of the commune must call the particular attention of the inhabitants to the fact that it is to their own best interest to protect the railroad and that any damage done will bring about most serious consequences.

In the case of any such damage being committed, and of the person who commits it not being handed over to the proper military authorities within twenty-four hours, the Mayor and three well-known people of the commune in whose territory the act shall have been committed will be arrested. They will be placed with a group of workmen or sent to Germany. If the Mayor should be convicted of negligence or complicity the most severe punishment will be inflicted immediately. The author will be judged according to military law.

In any case, whether the author be discovered or not, a fine will

by order of the German authorities, the local authorities were directed to draw up and hand to the Germans a list of all unemployed in Ath; that those would be considered as unemployed who received any kind of aid from the public charity, and that by the words public charity was meant the aid offered by the Comité de Secours (Commission for Relief). This notice reproduced textually the terms of an order that had been sent by the Germans to the municipal authorities of the city of Ath.[16]

---

be inflicted on the commune and the inhabitants will be responsible for the payment of the fine from their properties.

HOPFFER,
General-major und Etappenkommandant.

[16] VILLE D'ATH

AVIS IMPORTANT

Le Collège des Bourgmestre et Échevins de la Ville d'Ath, prote à la connaissance de ses concitoyens, que par ordre de l'authorité militaire allemande, il doit dresser et lui remettre une liste de tous les chômeurs d'Ath (hommes), comprenant nom de famille, prénom, date de naissance, nationalité, profession ou métier.

A cette fin les inscriptions seront reçues à l'hôtel de ville de lundi 23 octobre, dans l'ordre suivant:

De 9 à 10 heures.		Les personnes dont les noms commencent par les lettres A, B, et C.
De 10 à 11	"	Les personnes dont les noms commencent par les lettre D.
De 11 à 12	"	Les personnes dont les noms commencent par les lettres E, F, G, H, I, J, K.
De 12 à 1	"	Les personnes dont les noms commencent par les lettres L, M, et N.
De 3 à 4	"	Les personnes dont les noms commencent par les lettres O, P, Q, R, S.
De 4 à 5	"	Les personnes dont les noms commencent par les lettres T, U, V, W, X, Y, et Z.

Mr. Pate, the representative of the C.R.B. at Tournai, gave me a copy of a newspaper, *l'Avenir,* published at Tournai, which contained a notice which the authori-

---

Sont considérées comme chômeurs, toutes les personnes qui reçoivent un soutien quelconque des soutiens publics. Par soutien public on entend aussi le coutien de la Commission for Relief in Belgium (Comité National de Secours).

Chaque changement dans la situation des chômeurs devra à l'avenir être déclaré à l'Hôtel de Ville, le vendredi de chaque semaine, avant midi.

Les Bourgmestre et Échevins,
(Signé) O. Ouverleaux.

Le Secrétaire
(Signé) J. Degauquier.

Ath, le 21 octobre 1916.

(Translation:)

TOWN OF ATH

IMPORTANT NOTICE

The municipal authorities inform their fellow-citizens that by order of the military authorities they must prepare and submit a list of all the unemployed men of Ath, including surname, Christian name, date of birth, nationality, profession or trade.

To this end registrations will be received at the Town Hall Monday, October 23, in the following order:

9-10 o'clock. Persons whose names begin with the letter A, B, and C.
10-11 " Persons whose names begin with the letter D.
11-12 " Persons whose names begin with the letters E, F, G, H, I, J, and K.
12- 1 " Persons whose names begin with the letters L, M, and N.
3- 4 " Persons whose names begin with the letters O, P, Q, R, and S.
4- 5 " Persons whose names begin with the letters T, U, V, W, X, Y, and Z.

Every person who receives any assistance from the public charities will be considered as unemployed. Assistance given by the Commission for Relief is also considered as public charity.

ties of Tournai were compelled by the German military to publish at the time the workmen were seized.[17] The

---

Any change in the situation of the unemployed must in the future be declared at the Town Hall on Friday of each week before noon.

Ath, 21 October, 1916.

For the Mayor and Aldermen,
(Signed) O. Ouverleaux.

The Secretary,
(Signed) J. Degauquier.

[17] AVIS

Par ordre de Monsieur le Major-Commandant D'Étape à Antoing (*nº* 1694 *en date du* 20 *octobre* 1916).

Le bureau de travail est ouvert au Secrétariat communal tous les jours entre 10 heures et midi à l'exception des dimanches et jours de fête.

Il est demandé aux ouvriers et ouvrières âgés de 17 à 46 ans de se faire inscrire sur les listes qui seront déposées dans ce bureau.

Les salaires accordés sont fixés comme suit:

(*a*) Pour les ouvriers de métier qui ont plus de 18 ans, par jour, 4 fr. 50, par heure supplémentaire 0 fr. 45.

(*b*) Pour les autres ouvriers, par jour 3 fr. 50, par heure supplémentaire 0 fr. 35.

Aux ouvriers qui n'ont pas encore 18 ans, il sera accordé le même salaire pourvu qu'ils fournissent un travail correspondant.

La durée du travail est de 10 heures y compris les heures de repas.

Les ouvriers doivent se nourrir à leur frais.

L'autorité allemande signale qu'on pourra forcer le civil au travail s'il n'y a pas assez d'ouvriers volontaires, par exemple pour les travaux dans les usines, dans les scieries, dans les ateliers, dans les fermes pour les travaux des champs, pour la construction des chemins de fer et des routes.

On ne forcera jamais la population à faire des travaux exposés au feu continu.

notice shows that the men were to be employed on work of a military character, which of course is quite con-

---

MESURES COERCITIVES

En cas de refus de travail il sera prononcé contre chaque personne qui refusera le travail des peines d'amende et de prison, de placement dans un bataillon d'ouvriers civils d'arrêt avec nourriture réduite.

La commune pourra aussi être punie soit par la limitation du commerce, l'imposition des taxes d'amende, etc.

Il est fait remarquer aux bourgmestres qu'il est de leur intérêt et de celui de la commune que les listes des ouvriers soient finies le plus vite possible.

Le Bourgmestre,
(Signé) Bouzin,
Président du Bureau du travail.

(Translation:)

NOTICE

By order of the Commanding Mayor of the étape of Antoing (No. 1694, dated October 20th, 1916.)

The office of the communal secretary of Labour is open between ten and twelve o'clock with the exception of Sundays and holidays.

Labourers, male and female, between the ages of seventeen and forty-six years are asked to enter their names in the lists which are placed in this office for that purpose.

The wages which will be paid are as follows:

(*a*) For labourers who are over eighteen years of age and who have a trade, Fr. 4.50 per day, Fr. 0.45 per hour for each hour overtime.

(*b*) For other labourers Fr. 3.50 per day, Fr. 0.35 for each supplementary hour.

Workmen under eighteen years of age will be paid the same wages if they can do a corresponding amount of work.

The working day consists of ten hours including meal-time.

The workmen must feed themselves.

The German authorities announce that the civil population may be forced to work if there are not enough volunteers to work in

trary to the engagements taken by the Powers in the Conventions of The Hague.

The whole region of the Tournaisis was in rage, terror and despair. The men were being constantly seized and all the while trains were passing filled with those who, during the stops at the station, told the Tournaisiens standing by that they had come from the two Flanders and that they were being taken, not to Germany, but to France. Under the constant and excessive exactions of General Hopffer the city authorities of Tournai were in a most difficult position; they would not yield to the menaces, and they knew not which way to turn to obtain the funds for the fines that were the penalty of their resistance. They could only refuse again to surrender the lists and formally notify their insatiable tyrant that they had no more money with which to pay the tribute he so mercilessly exacted. But even their firm position could not protect their citizens;

---

the factories, in saw mills, in work shops, to work on farms, and to construct highways and railroads.

The population will never be forced to do any work where they will be exposed to uninterrupted fire.

COMPULSORY MEASURES

Whoever refuses to work will be punished by fines, by imprisonment, by being placed in a corps of workmen with reduced food allowance.

The commune may also be punished either by limiting its commerce, imposition of fines, etc.

The mayors are informed that it is in their interest and in the interest of the commune that these lists of workmen be furnished as soon as possible.

The Mayor,
President of Bureau of Labour,
(Signed) BOUZIN.

the lists seemed to be more a matter of pride than of necessity to the Germans, for the seizures went on uninterruptedly, the press-gangs were busily at work. Mr. Pate told me that by the fourth of November twenty-five thousand men had been taken. They were ordered first to work at Ramegnies-Chin, near Tournai, where an aviation field was being constructed, and when they refused they were sent toward the Front in France and there they were left without food. Hunger, indeed, was a weapon constantly employed. The Germans took a hundred and fifty French workmen to work on that aviation field at Ramegnies-Chin—a terrible place, by all accounts—and starved them into accepting the conditions they imposed. And even then the Germans gave them only a half ration, and the Belgians in the village took pity on the French and shared their own scanty provisions with them. There were five hundred French prisoners in the village of Blandin who also refused to work, and they were subjected to similar tortures.

XL

PRESS GANGS

THERE was always a mystery about that dark region of which we spoke as the *étape;* the word had come to have an evil connotation far removed from its ordinary significance. We heard of what was going on behind that tragic veil only from the gossip and the rumours the delegates of the C.R.B. brought to town on their weekly visits to headquarters in the Rue des Colonies. My own impression of the slave drive going on there was vague; all I knew was that workmen, intelligent, alive, full of wit and humour, and hope and ambition, precisely like the men in those crowds at home to whom I had so often made political speeches, were being seized, herded together like animals, imprisoned in vile corrals, pawed and picked over and man-handled like beasts in the market-place, and that then they disappeared in swiftly passing trains, in the darkness and cold of the night, singing "la Brabançonne" and the "Lion of Flanders," dropping letters now and then for some chance compatriot to pick up by the wayside. Now and then men who had somehow crossed the line between *étape* and *occupationsgebiet* would bring in the rumours that were whispered in all that region where the hideous terror spread. At Lauase, and in the country round, it was said that Belgians had been seen working in the trenches; at Monsville and at Roisin even the station-masters

were taken. In the communes of the canton of Frasne the men to be deported had been selected at random. At Jemappes the entire male population was summoned to appear by means of *affiches* and the Germans took indiscriminately clerks, workmen, students and merchants. The men from Flanders and the district of Tournai were sent toward France, the men from Renaix were sent to Mortagne, in France; those from Wiers to Lequesnoy. Boatmen taking macadam to the north of France said that they had seen Belgians there employed in discharging the macadam. In order to obtain the signatures of these men to contracts the Germans had told them that they would be sent away immediately if they refused to sign, but that if they accepted the conditions they would be given several days' respite.

Then, we felt the hideous thing draw nearer; the slavers had crossed the line, they were plying their trade in the *occupationsgebiet*. Early in November they were operating in the Hainaut. On the sixth of that month they were seizing men at Lessines. There was no longer any pretense of confining the seizures to *chômeurs;* the Germans took not only boys, if they were big and strong, but men over sixty years of age. The greater number of the men were workers from the quarries, but even the clerks in banks and counting-rooms were seized. The chief clerk at the station, and his brother, both railway workmen, were deported. The town was first surrounded by troops, and the business of choosing the men for deportation took place in the school. From the school they were taken directly to the trains which were to bear them away. The number of men taken from Lessines, not including those taken

from the near-by communes, was over two thousand. The *affiche,* of which the following is the text, was posted on the walls of the town and every man, including priests and civil authorities, had to present himself:

ORDRE

Par ordre de Monsieur le Gouverneur Général tous les habitants males de la Commune de Lessines ayant passe la 17e année devront se presenter le 6 novembre 1916 à 8 heures du matin à l'école du camp Milon.

Se munir des certificats d'identité et des cartes de control. Les personnes qui ne donneront pas suite a cet ordre devront s'attendre a une punition sevère.

Mons, le 24 octobre 1916.
(Suivent les signateurs.)

(Translation:)

ORDER

By order of the Governor-General all the male inhabitants of the commune of Lessines who have passed the age of seventeen must present themselves on November 6, at eight o'clock in the morning, at the school of Camp Milon.

Each must be supplied with a card of identity and a card of control. Those who do not obey this decree are liable to severe punishment.

Mons, October 24, 1916.
(Signatures.)

Mr. Gregory, the director of the C.R.B., had at once organized a service by which the men sent away were given what comforts were possible under the circumstances; the Americans distributed blankets, clothing, caps and mittens, and enough food to last for several days. The delegates were instructed to be present and to render any service they could, and Mr. Tuck and Mr. Gade, delegates of the C.R.B. in the province of

Hainaut, went over to the commune of St.-Ghislain on the morning of October twenty-ninth to witness the selections, to prevent the seizure of the employees of the C.N. and the C.R.B., and to distribute food to those who were deported. They came back sick with horror and full of rage at the medieval barbarities they had witnessed, so much so that after what he saw Mr. Tuck resigned from the Commission, left Belgium, and entered the British Army to fight against such cruelty and oppression.

About two thousand men summoned from all the neighboring communes had been assembled at St.-Ghislain. The women had followed them in tears, and at the point where the selections were made lines of soldiers kept the women back by their bayonets. No effort was made to distinguish *chômeurs;* indeed, the Germans did quite the reverse, showing a decided preference for men then employed as carpenters and blacksmiths. The men chosen were not allowed even to speak to their wives or waiting families, only a despairing glance of farewell, a wave of the hand to the women sobbing and wringing their hands there in the cold, while the indifferent soldiers in grey kept them back with their bayonets. Then through lines of soldiers the men were marched off to the long line of freight cars waiting on the siding.

The following day, the seventh of November, it was the turn of the men of Jurbise; the selections were made by employing that formula which was so much like the cruel chance of a blind fate: *"recht, links,"* the officer cried, and the men passed either to the right or to the left, to freedom or to bondage. No account was taken of their condition or of the condition of their families or

dependents; no effort was made to ascertain whether or not the men were *chômeurs;* they were asked no questions. Farmers were seized even when they had no one to take their places in the fields, and some of the men left young children or wives alone at home.

At Quiévrain, on the twenty-sixth of October, the men were convoked with those of the communes of Thulin, Elonges, Baisieux, Hensies and Montroeul-sur-Haine. All male persons above the age of seventeen had been ordered to present themselves. Those who obeyed were huddled in the inner courtyard of the boys' middle school and kept waiting there for hours in a cold rain and wind, and most of them had brought no extra clothing. Priests, school teachers and instructors, employees of the communes, policemen, postmen, customs officials and the employees of the C.N. and the C.R.B. were called first and liberated without difficulty, as were a number of the sick and aged, though old men were hustled about with the usual brutality. The witness who described it was unable to determine by what factor the choice was made; it had no relation to *chômage,* for many were then and always had been employed; farmers, students, the manager of a factory, and others whom he knew, were seized. All day long a train had been waiting at the station, and during the afternoon, in their separate groups, the men thus impressed were marched off to the cattle cars.

The press-gang operated at Ninove on the eighth of November, and I had the story from a man who lived there. Those who had not presented themselves in response to the summons were dragged out of their beds at night; even the sick were not spared. A man, the father of three children, who was ill, had to get up, go

down into the street and go off with the soldiers. They were all taken to Alost, crowded in a shed used to dry hops; there were four hundred and sixty-seven of them. Each of them had a couch of straw 2 inches thick and a space 2 meters long by 55 centimeters wide—that would be about 7 feet by 7 feet. In this space they had to eat and to sleep and to receive anybody who came by chance to see them. Each of these beds, said the man, "gave the spectacle of a drama impossible to describe." There was a young man who had been lying there ill for two days in a violent crisis of asthma; he had been cared for by a charitable woman of the town, but now he had no medical care. For two days he had been imploring air—asthma, with four hundred and sixty-seven men crowded in a hop-drier! The man saw him lying there gasping horribly, and went out to see the German Kommandant. The Kommandant merely remarked that the military doctor was doing his duty. At five o'clock that evening the man went back to see the sick man and found that he had not yet received the visit of any doctor. A few days later the man with the asthma died.

While he was talking with the Kommandant during the morning visit, the Kommandant asked my informant to taste the soup. The first kettle that was shown him contained a soup made of rice, which he tasted and found very good, *"fort bonne."* The second kettle contained a soup made of turnip-cabbages, *choux-raves.* The Kommandant said that the first soup was for the Belgians, and that the second was for the German soldiers, who called it *delikatesse.* When he went back in the evening the Belgians told him, however, that the *delikatesse* was given to them, and the rice soup to the

Germans. The Belgians asked him to make no further efforts to have them set free; they said that it was useless and they preferred instead that he ask that authorization be given immediately for them to go to their destination, for if they were compelled to stay three days longer crouching in that hop-drier they would all die of sickness and of privation.

The mayors of the provinces of Namur and of Limbourg received from the German authorities a circular letter of the following text:

MR. MAYOR,

You are requested to submit before October 24, three accurate lists of unemployed and men out of work to the German Kommandant having jurisdiction over your commune.

In these lists should be given all men receiving any kind of relief, payment from the commune, the province, the Belgian Government, etc., or from the Comité National—Committee of Relief.

The most rigorous measures will be taken against you personally in the event that the lists are not transmitted to the German Kommandant on time, or are submitted incompletely prepared, either through carelessness or ill intention.

The Mayor of Maeseyck, in the province of Limbourg, was ordered by the German authorities to give a list of the unemployed registered at the Meldeamt. He replied that he had no such list, and referred the Germans to the president of the local relief committee, one of the branches of the Comité National answered that the committee could not furnish such lists until after consultation with the Patron Ministers of the Comité National. The representatives of the German authorities replied that if the lists were not immediately handed over he would proceed to make arrests, and in the presence of this threat the lists of unemployed inscribed at the Meldeamt were delivered.

In the communes of Quevaucamps, Grandglise, Blaton, Beloeil and Ath, in the Hainaut, the Germans demanded of the mayors the lists of unemployed of their localities, ordering that they be grouped in four categories, according to their trades. The mayors applied to the local committees of the Comité National to secure these lists, but these committees uniformly refused to give them.

The same thing was going on in the district of Courtrai. There the German authorities had asked the burgomasters to furnish the lists of unemployed; the burgomasters in general refused to give any information whatsoever. In some cases the German authorities took the lists by force, in others the committees were not molested. A thousand men, some already employed and others unemployed, were seized and deported. The men were ordered to take with them clothing and effects amounting to the value of two hundred francs, and were promised a wage of thirty pfennings a day.

XLI

CALVARY

I HAVE told these stories, selected almost at random from the mass that were related at the Legation, as nearly as possible as they were told to me, even with the occasional repetitions they may imply. They were told badly, with no effort at effect, and I have no doubt that the reader will have experienced, as I have experienced in reading them over again, a certain disappointment, or if not that, a vague regret that there were not more details. But to tell a story with details, to reproduce a tragic scene in all its poignancy, requires a rare talent that was wholly beyond the powers of those who related these incidents; they told them in quite a matter of fact, prosaic way, without the embellishment of conscious art. And I myself, in those dark and terrible days, had heard too many tales of suffering to have any more the courage to intensify their reality by drawing out their narrators with questions. To confess the fact, I used to try to harden my own heart, to keep down my emotions, to say *chômeurs* instead of men, "deportation" instead of slavery, and oftentimes, I fear, to seek to have done with it as quickly as possible, else I should not have been able to get through the days that were made so much harder by the appeals that implied the faith that I could stop it all if I would.

"Excellence, nous comptons sur vous!"

One day there was a great stalwart miner from Charleroi, president of his labour union, who, in the French he spoke with the Walloon accent, and under the influence of that vague notion of diplomatic powers and responsibilities that prevails rather generally on this planet, said:

"Je vous signale ces faits, Excellence, afin que vous, en votre qualité de Ministre protecteur de la Belgique, puissiez le mieux remplir votre devoir."

But as the dread thing drew nearer the tales were more circumstantial, we had them in more abundant detail, and sometimes from several sources, so that it was possible to have a more vivid picture of the events that were still, in the early days of December, almost beyond belief. For instance, the levy made at Marche on the thirteenth of December. Marche is a Walloon village down in the province of Luxembourg east of Dinant; on the eighth of December little red placards posted about the town informed the population that on the thirteenth all men between the ages of seventeen and fifty-five were to assemble in the market-place, having with them food for two days and a bag of warm clothing; the same little red placards were posted in all the villages around Marche. During the days intervening before the thirteenth the kreischef allowed it to become known that he would exempt certain classes, such as lawyers, doctors, and clergymen, from appearing personally. Many men belonging to the well-to-do classes and some of those who had helped the officers or the non-commissioned officers of the occupying force to comforts in the way of food, also contrived to have their cards stamped with the envied seal of exemption without appearing on the day appointed. And, too, there were

rumours in the town to the effect that certain feminine influences were active, and in several cases successful.

On the morning of the thirteenth, then, about four thousand men appeared in the market-place. Many had to tramp all through the night to get there, and they all had heavy bags, like rucksacks, on their backs. At nine o'clock the officers who were to conduct the work arrived on the scene. These officers had not been quartered at Marche; they were indeed strangers to the place and it was understood that they were to perform the same duty for the whole of the province of Luxembourg. The kreischef and the local Kommandant, however, were present as onlookers.

The men were ordered to group themselves by communes, and each of these groups was called up in turn, and in single file, each man holding his cap in one hand and his *carte d'identité* in the other, made to march past an officer by the side of whom stood the burgomaster of the commune under inspection. Then began that fateful *links, recht;* those who went to the left were free, those who went to the right were slaves. If a man appeared to be over forty, or unfit for physical work, he was ordered to the left. *"Nach Hause!"* the officer would say, without looking at the *carte d'identité.* But in the case of younger men the officer took the card and glanced at the occupation; a railway man, for instance, was promptly ordered to the right, the officer simply saying *"Eisenbahner!"* and he was turned toward the waiting train. A farmer or agricultural labourer was generally asked how many hectares he cultivated; if they proved to be many the man was generally released, otherwise he was taken. *"Recht, eisenbahner!"* When there were doubts the officer asked, "Are you married?"

and if the answer was in the affirmative, "How many children?" If there were children the man was set free. But in no case was a man asked whether he was employed or unemployed. Youths between the ages of seventeen and twenty-two were always taken; men of means were generally released.

The burgomaster was rarely allowed to intervene. A gentleman I know well, Mr. H———, prominent in the region, was there to help his neighbors if he could. The burgomaster of his commune was too old to be present, and Mr. H——— he is still inside—took his place. He managed to get a hearing from the officer on behalf of six men from his own village, three of whom were released; but his attempt to intervene a seventh time was stopped and he was ordered to keep quiet; he did not obey, and the officer said he would have him forcibly removed, and later threatened to arrest him.

Four thousand men were marched past the two officers in four hours; each officer, therefore, had to examine two thousand men in that length of time—seven seconds and a fraction to decide whether a man should be free or slave, in December, 1916!

The fact is that the number of men to be taken was fixed arbitrarily and in advance for each commune, although the officers could have had no idea of the proportion of able-bodied men they would find among the population. The town of Aye, for instance, with eleven hundred people, had about the same number of men taken as Marche, with four thousand inhabitants.

When the march past was finished the officers announced that they would hear complaints from the burgomasters about specially "deserving" cases, and to hear these they adjourned to the back room of a small

café. The little *estaminet* was at once invaded by an excited group of protesting notables from the different villages, burgomasters, notaries, curés in their black cassocks, local politicians, or men of affairs, all shouting, clamouring, gesticulating—and the officer sitting at a table in the middle of the room. This went on for three-quarters of an hour, but after the most pushing burgomasters had managed to shoulder their way up to the table and to be heard more or less patiently, the officers declared that they had had enough, that the proceedings were at an end, that all the men who had been taken would be sent to Germany, and that any further complaints would have to be made in writing.

H—— managed to get a hearing before the session was concluded. With the curé of his village he pleaded for four men who had been taken and had left large families at home. After listening for a minute or two the officer declared that he would free two of these four men; H—— and the curé were to choose them themselves. They chose, of course, those having the most children. H—— then pleaded earnestly for an old man alone in the world, save an only son who had been taken, and, thanks to the intervention of the local kreischef, who seemed to know something of the case, this boy was also freed.

He then brought up the case of a poor widow of Aye whose three sons had all been taken. The officer shook his head, declared that it was impossible; three men of the same name were never taken in the same commune. H—— explained that these boys, on account of their employment, lived in different communes, and that therefore they had appeared separately. The officer replied that if they lived in three different com-

munes they did not live with their mother; therefore, whether they worked away from their mother in Germany or in Belgium, it did not greatly matter; they would be sent away; and they were.

Thus chance ruled, when favouritism or spite were not in play. The clerk in a local bank had passed the officer and had been declared free; he had gone home in joy and was eating his dinner when a soldier came, arrested him and took him back to the market-place. According to village gossip a German officer had been an unsuccessful suitor for the favours of a village beauty who was the bank clerk's sweetheart, and through the influence of this officer the clerk, who had been released, was retaken and sent off to Germany.

The cards of exemption which, under our express and formal arrangement with the German authorities, had been delivered to the employees of the C.N. and C.R.B., signed by the American delegate, Mr. Osborn, were in most cases of no avail. The officer would take one of these cards, show it to another officer standing by, and this officer, evidently in authority, would shake his head, and his companion would put the card in his pocket and order the man to be deported.

When the operation had ceased the men were at once marched off to the railway station, embarked on a train in waiting, and sent, it was said, to Alten Grabow.

Then it was the turn of Nivelles, the charming old town of about twelve thousand inhabitants a few miles south of Waterloo. On the fourth of November a notice was posted on the walls of Nivelles ordering all men over seventeen years old to report on the eighth of November at nine o'clock in the morning, eight o'clock Belgian time, in the Place St.-Paul. They must have their *cartes*

d'identité and the card issued by the Meldeamt, and, sinister portent, they might bring small hand-baggage. Similar notices had been posted in all the communes near-by. The entire region was stricken with terror. Two days later German troops appeared in Nivelles, filling all the streets; sentinels were posted on all the highways, roads and footpaths; none could leave the town without written permission from the kommandantur; there was a veritable state of siege, to which fear added its anguish. On the morning of the eighth a cold dismal rain was falling, and from dawn on to eight o'clock miserable processions from all the neighbouring villages came wending into town, old hobbling men, some ill, drenched to the skin, carrying their poor pathetic little bundles, until thousands were crowded in the Place St.-Paul, with its beautiful entrance to the old cloistered nunnery there under the shadow of the church of Ste.-Gertrude, its two round grey towers and the statue of Jacques Nivelles looking down from the eleventh century on a scene of such barbarity as he had never beheld. There were old men of seventy and eighty standing there in the cold, driving rain, and they stood thus for hours. Finally, as their cards were examined, first those between seventy and eighty, then those between sixty and seventy, were allowed to go, and they plodded off homeward. This took a long time. The others who remained were then marched in columns of sixes between lines of soldiers behind whose hedge of bayonets the women were pressed closely, shawls over their heads, sobbing, their eyes wide, their faces drawn with terror and despair, to the Delacroix factories a mile away. They were marching thus until noon in the pitiless rain. Then the examination was begun and con-

tinued until five o'clock in the evening. The Delacroix factories were connected by a spur with the railway station at Baulers, and on this spur freight cars stood, the little goods-wagons of continental railways. Each man as he was chosen was hustled into one of these cars, and when it was full the car was at once hauled out and another empty car brought to take its place. The men were selected, as seemed now to be the rule everywhere, according to their physical appearance, the strong taken, the weak left. Once taken a man was not allowed to communicate with his family; he was hauled away in that crowded little goods-wagon, in the rain and darkness and cold of the night, while wife and children waited in the little cottage. Night came down on Nivelles; the rain was still falling, and the waiting ones in all those homes only knew that those they loved had been taken away when the German soldiers, their work done, came marching back from Baulers and into Nivelles, singing through the dark streets of the little town where there were only tears.

It was on the morning of the fourteenth of November that the decree which convoked the male population of twenty-two villages was posted at Wavre, the *chef-lieu* of the canton. The *affiche* said:

AVIS

Tous les hommes de plus de 17 ans jusqu'à 55 ans inclusivement de la Commune d—— sont tenus de se présenter le—— novembre 1916, à —— (heure allemande) sur la place du Marché a ——.

Le Bourgmestre devra être présent. Les intéressés devront être porteurs de leur certificat d'identité et, le cas échéant, de leur carte de controle (Meldecarte). Il est permis d'apporter de petits, bagages à main. Ceux qui mangueront au controle seront immediatément transportes, sans délai et par voie de contrainte, aux

lieu ou ils devront travailler. En outre, on pourra leur appliquer de fortes peines d'imprisonnement et des amendes élevées.

Les ecclésiastiques, les médecins, les avocats, les instituteurs et les professeurs ne doivent pas venir au dit controle.

De Kaiserliche Kreischef von Nivelles.
(S.) Graf von Schwerin.

Ottignies, le 3 novembre 1916.

(Translation:)

NOTICE

All men of from seventeen to fifty-five years, inclusive, of the commune of ———— will report on November —, 1916, at ———, (German time) at Place du Marché.

The Burgomaster must be present and interested parties must have their certificates of identity and, if necessary, their card of control (*Meldekarte*). They will be permitted to carry small hand baggage. Those who fail to report will be immediately transported, without delay, and by force, to the place where they must work. Besides, there may be applied to them heavy penalties of imprisonment and heavy fines.

Priests, doctors, lawyers, teachers and professors do not have to report.

3 November, 1916.
Der Kaiserliche Kreischef von Nivelles,
Graf von Schwerin.

Ottignies,

The *affiche* had been posted at seven o'clock in the morning. It had been expected, feared, and yet there had been the vague, unreasoning hope that somehow it would not happen, but now there it was, on the walls. Twenty-four hours' notice given to leave home, family, friends, and to go off in the night and the cold to that dark and sinister Germany! The women had to warn those who were working and did not yet know. They had to warn them so that they might have time to prepare, so that they might pass with them that day, the last perhaps, and take such poor, pitiful measures

of foresight as were possible. The women went to search and bring them home. And then there were poignant scenes, not alone the sorrow there is in all parting, but the anguish of such a parting as this. Those were poor homes. Two years of war, of high prices and rationing, had stripped them almost bare. In their cupboards there was little food, only that which was strictly necessary for each one, and on the morrow, if the father or the son were taken, there would be no other resource left. They made up their bundles, putting in them all they had, the last bit of clothing, the last piece of covering, the piece of the loaf of bread that remained, everything. "No matter," said one, "to-morrow we shall not care to eat."

They had to be at Wavre at eight o'clock, and in order to reach the town in time they must start early and be an hour or two on the road. There were no vehicles; they had to walk, carrying their luggage. At six o'clock the interminable and lamentable processions set forth out of all those communes on all those roads, on the bleak morning of November in the bitter cold, in the biting wind, for Nature, almost as cruel as man, was full of menace. Most of the men would not allow their wives or children to go with them; the way was long and their presence would only make the parting harder. And so they trudged along, alone or in groups, walking in heavy silence over those well-known roads of happy memories. But there were some women who were not to be deterred, and they dragged themselves along behind, weeping.

The town of Wavre—a pretty place, or a place that was pretty before the Germans burned so many of its houses—was all grey and shivering that morning. It

was surrounded by troops, and the processions entering by all the *chaussées* took the narrow streets that led to the Place du Marché, the square of old houses whose façades, blackened by fire and pierced by bullets in the earlier days of the invasion, stood gaunt and irresolute in the wind. The Germans had barred all the streets; access to the Square was forbidden to all but the men, and the crowd pressed against the barriers. The men were parked like animals according to their communes, and stood waiting with hanging heads, powerless, humiliated. From time to time one cried out a name, some word of encouragement—and farewell.

Then began the work of separation, of selecting those who were to go. A thousand at a time the men were marched into a school where the slavers sat. To get there the groups followed a street along the Dyle; it is a picturesque quarter of Wavre, one which in happier times the artists used to paint. That morning at the windows of all the houses there were faces of anguish —women, children, old men, in tears. There were even people on the roofs looking down on the sad cortège that passed along, their eyes seeking out a father or a husband, a son, a brother or a lover. They waited four hours there in the Square before being marched to the school.

"I observed them," a man from one of the villages told me. "I knew many of them. I saw many whose faces had suddenly grown pale. They walked with firm steps, but they were ashen white. I felt that anxiety had stopped the blood in their veins. They were the married men, those who had just left their wives and their children and were wondering whether they would see them soon again, whether it would be a long time,

or never. The young unmarried men walked holding their heads high, something of defiance in their glance."

As they drew near to the school they looked up, suddenly attentive. There was a sound that swelled, gradually grew louder, and the faces lighted up. Yes, it was "la Brabançonne." There at the end of the courtyard was a group of men already marked for deportation, singing as loudly as they could the Belgian hymn. When they saw the others coming they cried out: "Don't sign! don't sign!" They held themselves erect, full of courage, pride and manly will. There was not a complaint. When one of the men saw a friend go by he asked him to inform his family, to tell them that he had been taken, and then he resumed his defiant song.

The men from each commune were taken first into a room where a doctor examined those who had provided themselves with physician's certificates stating that they were unfit for work. This German physician was indulgent, almost generous; now and then he pronounced liberations; but there was a second room, and here the fate of each man was decided brusquely, mechanically, in a few seconds and without appeal. It all depended on which one of the two words was pronounced by the German officer, those two banal words that had suddenly acquired a new and appalling significance; one of them set him at liberty, the other doomed him to slavery. There were several men in uniform, the kreischef, the civil commissioner, and some officers with the rigid, inflexible, arbitrary attitude of military authority which tolerates no discussion. The burgomaster, an échevin and the secretary of the commune were there too, authorized to assist at the examination of their constituents, but there was nothing they could do. The

officers would not listen to any of their appeals. The decisions were made by two officers, one on each side of the room; they examined the men rapidly, beginning with the lads between seventeen and twenty-five years. They glanced at the card of identity which told who the bearer was, gave his trade if he had one, or his civil position; the officers looked him over rapidly, as dealers might examine a horse. They asked but one question: "Were you a *chômeur?*" and then the inexorable decision, that one of the two words which here was fatal—*links.* The man was lost, his fate had thus been decided by the will of a single man in less than ten seconds.

To leave the hall they had to pass through a door which had been divided by a barrier of wood into two narrow ways. Two soldiers guarded this barrier. The corridor to the left led to a hall where those who were to be sent to Germany, those on whom had been pronounced the laconic sentence of that word *links,* had to pass. Those who passed to the right went out past noncommissioned officer who stamped a seal on the card of identity, stating that their holders were set free; this right-hand corridor led to an open window before which there was a table; on the ground outside there was another table, and the man set free sprang on to the table inside, through the open window to the table outside, and so on to the ground. It looked as though he were running away. In his breast there was the vast, almost selfish relief, and then his heart would close again at the thought of the others who had not been so lucky. In the large hall the examination went on all day—*links, recht; links, recht.*

At the end of a little street not far from the school a crowd had gathered, a crowd that grew larger as the

day advanced; the anxiety had been too great, they could not wait. The women, mothers, wives, sweethearts, had come from all the villages; they buttonholed everybody who came out, asking news of their own, "Is he taken?" "Has his case been passed on yet?" Oftentimes those who had been released did not know, they could not tell, and struggled to escape a second time from the importunities of these imploring women. They all sobbed, my friend told me, and those who could strain a released husband or son to their breasts sobbed more than the others.

Those who had been passed out *links* were gathered in a large hall and there each man was asked if he would sign a contract agreeing to work for the Germans for large wages. If he consented he gave his name and his address and was authorized to go home for the few days' grace which his complaisance gained for him. If he refused he was immediately subjected to all sorts of menaces, told of pains and penalties that would befall him, and led away to join that agitated group of those who like him would not submit, to be received with cheers as though he had won a victory, as indeed he had. Very few of them signed, very few consented, almost all refused. They had to wait a while, wait until the group was sufficiently large, and when it had grown to a size worth while it was surrounded by soldiers with fixed bayonets, and by mounted Uhlans and marched to the railway station. Two officers walked beside with whips in their hands—*die schlag,* the old emblem of the slave-driver, the new of modern Germany. Sometimes as they passed through the streets a woman in tears dodged under the barrier,

threw herself on one of the men in the crowd for a last farewell, only to be lashed back by the soldiers.

In the street that led to the station there were others waiting at the windows, waving handkerchiefs to those who were going away. The men in the street marched with heads up, now and then they threw their caps in the air, and they sang as they had sung in the courtyard of the school—to defy the Germans, and perhaps to keep up their own courage in such an hour. At each street corner there would be a little fracas, one of the prisoners would try to run away, but always he would be lashed back into the line by the *schlag* or pursued by a Uhlan and prodded back into the ranks with a lance. Some of the men had to pass by their own homes, and they broke from the ranks to seize a child or a wife in a last embrace, to snatch a last kiss; then again the *schlag* and the lance and they were back in line, quiet for a little while—then singing again. Finally the column disappeared in the station. No one saw them any more, but there could be heard still coming from the station those shouts of defiance, those songs, "la Brabançonne" and "la Marseillaise." It lasted into the night, then the singing could be heard no more, for suddenly there was the blare of a brass band, the band of one of the regiments, taken there to drown those cries and those patriotic songs under the grotesque gaiety of German military music. Before morning the train had borne them away to Germany.

XLII

THE DYING YEAR

THE year was dying; the beets had been gathered from the wide lawn at the Orangerie, and it lay a yellow upturned field; the leafless trees widened the horizon of the sky that hung low and grey over the Low Countries, where the winter days are short and dark and where the cold rain falls almost incessantly. The Allards had returned to their own town house, and the château was closed, left in the care of the concierge and the great savage Groenendael, who barked so fiercely in his kennel under the tower. But still we lingered on there; the Legation had become intolerably depressing. And there is sanity in the country, there is charm in its every mood, even when that mood is melancholy. We looked on the sad countenance of that scene with the consciousness that it was for the last time; we felt that we should not see the spring come to shut us once more within the green of those lofty trees of the noble park and the grass of those lovely slopes. The guns thumped on unremittingly; often in the watches of the night I would listen to their regular throb—like the slow beating of the sad heart of a world that had grown very old, and cynical, and mean, in an age without illusions or ideals.

There were no more smiles in the once all-radiant city, unless, grotesque touch by which the sardonic spirits must mar even tragedy, they were those of the Ger-

man soldiers in the Bois playing at hide-and-seek behind the noble beeches.

The press-gang had not come to Brussels yet. The capital, some said, was being reserved until the last, while others thought that it was to be spared entirely, though one versed by experience in the implacable persistence of German intention knew that the visit was only postponed. In fact, as an official whispered to me one day, it was fixed for a date in January. The terror was perhaps no less and the rage had not abated, but they had grown less acute; there was in them that pathetic quality of fatalistic acquiescence, and events that once had inspired indignation passed now almost unnoticed, as when the new *contribution de guerre* was forced on the people by a decree of the Governor-General;[1] the provincial councils of the provinces of Ant-

[1] Les Conseils Provinciaux

Arrêté Gouverneur général en Belgique en date du 3 décembre, 1916, concernant l'exécution de l'ordre du 20 novembre, 1916, imposant une contribution de guerre.

Dans leur session extraordinaire du 2 décembre, 1916, les Conseils provinciaux des provinces d'Anvers, de Brabant, de Limbourg, de Liége et de Namur ayant refusé de coopérer au règlement de la contribution de guerre imposée à la population belge par ordre du 20 novembre, 1916, et le Conseil provincial de la province de Luxembourg n'y ayant consenti que conditionnellement, les résolutions en question des dits Conseils sont annulées, conformément à l'article 89 de la loi provinciale du 30 avril, 1836, parce qu'elles sont contraires à l'intérêt général.

En même temps, les gouverneurs militaires des provinces de Brabant, Limbourg, Liége, Luxembourg et Namur, ainsi que pour la province d'Anvers le gouverneur militaire de la province et le gouverneur de la place forte sont autorisés, de concert avec les présidents compétents des administrations civiles (Präsidenten der Zivilverwaltungen), à prendre pour chacune de leurs provinces les

werp, Brabant, Luxembourg, Liége and Namur having refused to comply with the German order to make the levy.

But there was no diminution in the tales of horror. At Namur, the men who had been seized were herded into cattle cars and left there, without food or water, in the bitter cold, for a day and a night. Mr. Phil Potter, coming up from the north of France, told me that he with his own eyes had seen sixty *chômeurs* who had

---

mesures désignées ci-après, qui seront obligatoires dans chacune des dites provinces:

(1) Conclure solidairement avec les autres provinces les contrats nécessaires en vue d'assurer pendant six mois le paiement de la contribution de guerre, imposée à la population belge et payable à partir du 10 décembre, 1916, et, le cas échéant, contracter dans ce but un emprunt;

(2) Conclure les arrangements nécessaires en vue d'assurer le paiement des intérêts et le remboursement de cet emprunt, ainsi que la couverture des obligations provinciales échéant le 15 janvier, 1917, et le paiement des intérêts de l'emprunt de contribution de guerre contracté en décembre, 1915;

(3) Faire une démarche auprès de l'administration allemande afin que les sommes nécessaires au paiement des intérêts et à l'amortissement de ces emprunts puissent être prélevées sur le budget belge à titre de subsides communs;

(4) Conclure solidairement avec les autres provinces un emprunt pour couvrir les frais d'intérêts et d'amortissement, s'il n'etait pas donné une suite favorable à la démarche mentionnée au chiffre 3;

(5) Signer les documents nécessaires.

. . . . .

Des arrêtés d'une teneur identique ont été pris l'un à l'égard de la province de la Flandre orientale, l'autre à l'égard de la province du Hainaut, dont les Conseils provinciaux ont, dans leur session du 2 décembre, 1916, décidé ce qui suit: Refuser la coopération de la province. Ces deux arrêtés sont signés simultanément par

refused to work tied to stakes, like the victims of Red Indians, their hands fastened behind them with wires; and they were left there for hours.

---

le Gouverneur général en Belgique et le baron von Falkenhausen, commandant supérieur de la VI^e armée.

(Translation:)

THE PROVINCIAL COUNCILS

Decree of the Governor-General in Belgium under date December 3, 1916, concerning the execution of the order of November 20, 1916, imposing a contribution of war.

In their extraordinary session of December 2, 1916, the Provincial Councils of the Provinces of Antwerp, of Brabant, of Limbourg, of Liege, and of Namur having refused to co-operate in the settlement of the contribution of war imposed on the Belgian population by the order of November 20, 1916, and the Provincial Council of the Province of Luxembourg having consented to do so only conditionally, the resolution in that regard of the said Councils are annulled in conformity with article 89 of the Provincial Law of April 30, 1836, because they are contrary to general interest.

At the same time the military governors of the Provinces of Brabant, Limbourg, Liége, Luxembourg, and Namur, as well as the military governor of the Province of Antwerp and the Governor of the fortified place of Antwerp, are authorized, in accord with the competent Presidents of the Civil Administrations (Präsidenten der Zivilverwaltungen) to take, for each one of their provinces, the measures hereinafter designated, which shall be obligatory in each of the said provinces:

(1) To conclude jointly with the other provinces the necessary contracts in order to assure for six months the payment of the contribution of war imposed on the Belgian population and payable after December 10, 1916, and if necessary, to contract loans for the same.

(2) To conclude the necessary arrangements in order to assure the payment of the interest and the reimbursement of this loan, as well as the securities for the provincial obligations, falling due on January 15, 1917, and the payment of the interest on the loan for the contribution of war contracted in December, 1915.

At our regular meetings to consider the questions of the *ravitaillement* we discussed little else than the deportations, and we discussed them hopelessly; every day, despite the assurances, despite the cards of exemption that had been issued, we had reports that men connected with the C.N. and the C.R.B. had been seized, two hundred and fifty of them in the province of Luxembourg alone. Protests were becoming almost ludicrous. And when we were not discussing the seizures of men we were discussing the seizures of cattle and protesting against that, for the illicit traders were running them across the frontier at Welkenraedt with more and more impunity. Our protests finally brought a letter from the Germans promising to put an end to the cattle running; they even made some arrests, but the practise was never wholly stopped, and our concern merged itself ere long in a larger concern to keep the *ravitaillement* in operation at all. . . .

Bucharest had fallen, the latest disappointment, and,

---

(3) To take steps with the German administration so that the sums necessary to pay the interest and the amortization of these loans may be included in the Belgian budget as communal subsidies.

(4) To conclude jointly with the other provinces a loan to cover the expenses of the interest and of the amortization if a favourable action is not taken on the demand mentioned in paragraph 3.

(5) To sign the necessary documents.

Decrees of a similar tenor have been issued with regard to the province of East Flanders, another with regard to the Province of Hainaut, the Provincial Councils of which have in their session of December 2, 1916, decided as follows: To refuse the co-operation of the province. The two decrees are signed by the Governor-General in Belgium and the Baron von Falkenhausen, Commander-in-chief of the 6th Army.

as an evidence of German organization, no sooner was the news announced than men in Brussels who had interests in the Roumanian oil-fields received orders to report at once their holdings to the German officials.

There was sadness everywhere. I have now in my eyes the vision, evoked by a note in my journal, of a woman, the wife of that barber in the Rue Belliard who had been imprisoned in St.-Gilles for having had in his possession a copy of *L'Illustration*. The man had been a month in prison, he had served his time and she was expecting him home the next day. But she herself had been fined fifty marks, for complicity, I suppose, in the possession of that pictorial journal which brought them perhaps some hint of home, for they were French; that was a grief easily assuaged, and she had gone away, drying her tears; she and the staring, half-developed boy of hers; her husband was coming home on the morrow. She was back the next day; her husband had not been released; instead, she had a note saying that he was to be taken to Germany. Why, or for what, she did not know; there was no charge against him, he had had no hearing; all she knew was that he had been sent away, and had left a note for her, which concluded: *"Courage, et pas de larmes!"*

But there were tears a-plenty, soiling the thin face that was twitching in anguish as she sat there in the hall of the Legation, her dumb, half-witted boy with her, the child who stared and stared at a life he could not understand, and perhaps was less miserable so.

"Ayez la grâce, Excellence," the woman said over and over, *"de faire quelque chose pour mon mari!"*

She sat there not knowing what to do, only one of the long train of poor innocent victims of German ruthless-

ness that had passed through those corridors during those years. She sat quietly weeping, yet giving after all so much more than she could take away, in the story she told me of the kindness and helpfulness that one finds everywhere among the poor. The day before, during her absence from the rooms she rented, the German *polizei* had been there to collect the fine of fifty marks, and as she was gone they began to tear up the rooms and to remove the few miserable sticks of furniture. The landlord had pleaded and protested, but, of course, in vain. There was a girl who had a room in the house, a singer in the cheap concert halls, and she, by scraping together all she had, produced the fifty marks. It took her last sou, but the insatiable *polizei* were paid, and the furniture was left. I tried to have the barber released and brought back to Brussels, but the only reply I had from the authorities was that "a trip to Germany would do him good." (*Un voyage en Allemagne lui fera du bien.*) Later I heard the reason for his deportation; German officers now and then frequented the shop where he was employed. He was French and he made remarks. *"C'est un blagueur,"* it was explained to me. And I understood—those German officers and *la blague française.*

The one bit of good news was in the word I had had from Mr. Hoover in London to the reassuring effect that the British Government would not put an end to the *ravitaillement* because of the deportations. "We have weathered that storm," he wrote, and the time seemed to be auspicious to attempt to produce some amelioration, and to have sent back to Belgium those who were not *chômeurs.* The President had sent to Berlin a protest against the impressing of workingmen

in Belgium, expressing the deep interest the American Government took in the Belgian civil population, and, by some unusual liberality, this protest was allowed to appear in the newspapers at Brussels,[2] with the response of the General Government.

---

[2] A translation of the article on the President's note is as follows:

THE TRANSFER OF THE CHÔMEURS
THE NOTE OF THE UNITED STATES
AND GERMANY'S ANSWER

Berlin, 11th December.

The *Gazette de l'Allemagne du Nord* publishes the text of the communication sent by the Government of the United States to Berlin regarding the transportation of Belgian workmen to Germany:

"The Government of the United States has learned with distress and with great regret the decision taken by the German Government to force a part of the Belgian civil population to work in Germany. It feels that it must protest in a spirit of friendship, but in the most solemn manner, against such a procedure, which is in contradiction to all tradition and to the principles of humanity which are the foundation of international usage and which are followed at all times by civilized nations in the treatment of non-combatants in occupied territories. The Government of the United States is convinced that the effects of such a policy, if continued, will in all probability be prejudicial to the work, conceived in a spirit of humanity, which has for its object the assistance of the Belgians—a result that would be universally regretted and that might place the German Government in an embarrassing situation."

A response to this note, which was sent to the United States, is given herewith:

"The Government of the United States has protested against the transfer to Germany of Belgian workmen, and the obligation imposed upon them of working there, and is of the opinion that such measures are not reconcilable with the principles of humanity and of international usage in the treatment of the population in an occupied territory. The German Government feels that the Govern-

With this as a basis, and considering the conversation I had had with the Baron von der Lancken in

---

ment of the United States is not sufficiently informed as to the motives for, and the manner of execution of this measure, and for this reason it finds it necessary to set forth the actual state of affairs.

"For a long time scarcity of work has prevailed in Belgium to an alarming extent, to the detriment of the industrial workers. The increase in the number of unemployed men there is due to the English blockade, which prevents Belgian industries from importing materials necessary for manufacturing and from exporting manufactured articles, and it is likewise due to this blockade that the cultivation of the land has ceased to a large extent.

"All means of gaining a livelihood having been taken away from nearly half of the Belgian factory workers, of which the total number is about 1,200,000, it has been necessary for over half a million Belgians who formerly earned their living in industrial enterprises to seek public assistance. If one includes the families of the workmen the number is increased threefold—one and one-half million persons, in round numbers. Both from the point of view of Belgian political economy, upon which the unemployed workmen impose an intolerable burden, and from that of order and public morals, the menace of a general cessation of labour, with its consequences, became very grave and it was necessary to take radical steps to put an end to such a condition. This necessity had been for a long time recognized and talked about by clear thinking Belgians.

"It was under these conditions that the Governor-General at Brussels issued a decree on the 15th of May, 1916, threatening with imprisonment or forced labour all persons who while receiving public assistance without sufficient reason, refused to accept employment or continue to work according to their abilities. On account of the cessation of industry in Belgium it has not been found possible to employ all those who were out of work or to find suitable occupations for them. There remained only the alternative of finding work for them in Germany, where already a large number of Belgian workmen had voluntarily sought employment, and where they

which he had said that the authorities would redress any "injustices," as the deportation of those who were

---

were perfectly contented because of the high pay they received and the liberty of movement that was accorded them.

"To the *chômeurs* who refused to follow their example the obligation to work has been presented. This measure conforms in every way to international law, for according to Article 43 of the Convention of The Hague relative to war on land, it devolves upon the occupying Power to maintain order in the occupied territories, and the right is conferred upon it to take the measures necessary to this end in case the laws of the country are not adequate. Now without any doubt the maintenance of public order demands that every measure possible be taken to prevent those persons capable of working from becoming public charges, that idleness should not make of them a veritable plague for the country, and that they should be made to work.

"In everything concerning the execution of this measure the procedure has been without severity, and all possible respect has been shown for those concerned. If mistakes have been made in isolated cases in sending persons to Germany, notably in including persons to whom the conditions mentioned in the decree of the 15th of May, 1916, are not applicable, this must be attributed to the fact that a number of the Belgian authorities have refused to lend their assistance in preparing the lists of *chômeurs* or have furnished inexact information. Measures have been taken to remedy errors of this sort as promptly as possible. A careful watch is being kept to see that only those persons are being sent to Germany who are receiving public assistance, and who, not finding work in Belgium, refuse that which is offered to them in Germany. The unemployed transferred to Germany are sent to points of concentration established at Altengrabow, Guben, Cassel, Meschede, Munster, Soldau and Wittenberg, near the regions where there is work for them, whether it be in agricultural or in industrial enterprises. The classes of labour in which an enemy population can not be forced to work, by virtue of the rights of people, are evidently here excluded.

not *chômeurs* seemed to be considered even in the German mind, we thought to organize a bureau where requests for repatriation might be filed by the families of those deported; where there seemed to be some reason that might appeal to the authorities, these might be forwarded to the Governor-General in the hope that some of them at least might be rescued from the slave compounds in Germany and brought back home. Thousands of requests for such action had come to the Legation and we had been at a loss what to do with them; thousands, doubtless the same thousands, had been sent to the Spanish and to the Dutch Legations and to the Nonciature, and working thus separately I felt that we should be at cross purposes, and

"If the American Government considers it worth while, a delegate from its Embassy at Berlin will be authorized to examine, by a personal visit, the condition of the persons concerned. The German Government infinitely regrets that owing to the misrepresentations in the enemy press the situation has been so completely distorted in the United States. At the same time it regrets, especially in the interest of the Belgian population, that these misrepresentations should prejudice in any manner the beneficial work of the Relief Commission.

"And finally, the German Government can not restrain itself from drawing attention to the fact that the transfer of the German population in places outside of Germany and in its colonies occupied by enemy troops, notably the evacuation of women, children and aged persons from Prussian colonies in Siberia, has not inspired the neutral States, as far as it knows, with the idea of taking toward the Government concerned steps similar to those actually taken toward the German Government. There can not be the slightest doubt that these measures constitute a gross violation of the laws of humanity and of the rights of people, while the measures explained above which have been taken by Germany conform absolutely to these principles."

that by the consequent duplication of demands the very end of the work might be frustrated. I undertook then to have the three Legations act in concert, and to establish one bureau where all the requests might be sorted out by clerks and acted upon, but I failed, and there was a Spanish bureau and a Dutch bureau and other bureaus under other neutral flags. We organized a bureau of our own, and the requests were so numerous that I had to rent a house across the street from the Legation and install there a corps of clerks. There were no means of publicity in Belgium, as I trust I have shown, but the news spread and the requests came pouring in, and we did what we could, though the effort proved very ineffective.

Baron von der Lancken had returned from Berlin with the news that at last it had been decided, in principle, that the English women might leave Belgium, but that the matter yet waited the approval of Hindenburg, a bit of information that was not reassuring, for with the eclipse of von Bissing—whose reported opposition to the slave-drive won him no credit in Brussels, since men everywhere said that if he was opposed to it he should have resigned when his objection was overruled—it showed that the German *reiters* were indeed in the saddle.

Von Bissing himself was very ill, and his wife had been sent for. M. Francqui had gone to Paris by way of Switzerland, spending ten days in quarantine at Frankfort. At the same time Villalobar went to Berlin for a day or two, and then on to Paris and Madrid, and the rumour of peace spread abroad again. Peace was often talked of in Brussels, and more than once it was intimated that the Germans were disposed to re-

store Belgium, which they were merely holding, it would be explained, as a "pawn"; and the fact that the pawn had been stolen, did not, in the view of the pawn-holder, seem in the least to affect his title to it. All that the Germans desired, they would generously hint, was a "guarantee"—though what that guarantee was, was not very clear; they wished, they said, to be assured against any further attacks from Belgium, and to be certain that Belgium would resume trade relations with them after the war.

Such rumours spread whenever Villalobar left the occupied territory, and were not to be taken much more seriously than other rumours that circulated so prodigiously in the darkness of little Belgium, but late in that month of darkness an event occurred that created something more than a rumour. Christmas was coming on, the season when men's thoughts turned instinctively and of old habit to peace, though the only reason we in Brussels had for being reminded of Christmas was the fact that parties of German soldiers were cutting out fir-trees in the Forêt with which to celebrate the festival that for some odd, satirical reason seemed to mean so much to them about their camp fires.

If peace was not in men's hearts it was in their mouths at least, for in the middle of the month the German Chancellor made his peace speech in the Reichstag; it was called a peace speech by the Germans, though it was not a peaceful speech, and was couched in such terms and expressed so much in the usual bellicose German tone that it produced everywhere else in the world a very warlike effect. It was the last, almost desperate effort of the Chancellor to save his Government, then tottering to its fall, from the hands of the

military party, but like every other German pronouncement, it was rated in Belgium as but one more piece of insincerity and hypocrisy. In the German camp, however, it was received, like all such pronouncements from on high, as though it were from Mount Sinai itself; the soldiers supposed that as the War Lord could declare war, so, when wearied of it, he could decree peace. And down on the front in northern France there was an instant celebration of the joyous news. Mr. Prentiss Gray, of the C.R.B., just then back from a visit to Valenciennes, told me of the enthusiastic scenes that had been produced when the Emperor's announcement was read at the head of 200,000 troops; the soldiers cheered frantically, and that night the officers had a great banquet that lasted until four o'clock in the morning, and around the board, in the rich Bourgogne of all the neighboring châteaux, the officers toasted peace, and, the night following, they had another drinking bout to fête a report that President Poincaré had been assassinated.

In Brussels, at la Monnaie, *Parsifal* was being sung by the Stuttgart Company, and, as though to bring in an era of good feeling, the Germans were publishing in *le Bruxellois* what purported to be letters from *chômeurs* in Germany, telling what a happy time they were having there. No one believed for a moment in the authenticity of these letters, or in their sincerity; they, the people said, were merely scraps of paper of another kind, either fabricated by the Germans or wrung by some sort of blackmail from those confined in the slave compounds in Germany. But there are other cards and letters written from Germany that I know are genuine, and all the more remarkable, for they were submitted to

and passed by the German censor. Even their guarded terms show what the men were suffering; the frequent reference to the presence of "Monsieur G. Fein" seems not to have been seized by the dull minds of the German guards in all its importance as a cryptic allusion to the hunger from which they were all suffering, "G. Fein" being merely the French *"j'ai faim."* [3]

Guben, le 6-7-1917.

[3] CHÈRE ÉPOUSE ET CHER FILS:

Je vous écris ces quelques mots pour vous faire savoir que je suis toujours en bonne santé et que la présente vous trouvera de même. J'ai été un peu malade mais maintenant ça va un peu mieux encore bien que j'ais eu deux bons camarades Emile Hans et Louis Morel qui m'ont donné un peu de manger car on a l'estomac beaucoup restreint et on est bien faible. J'ai demandé pour avoir 3 petits colis par express je crois que vous avez fait le nécessaire; je les attends avec impatience et s'il n'y a pas de changement tâchez d'en faire autant toutes les semaines. Ne faites pas de dépenses inutiles je serai déjà content d'avoir un peu de riz et de sucre même du grispe, car ici c'est la soupe du soir le grispe; mais je crois que çà ne durera plus longtemps il faudra du changement à cela.

Notre camarade Léon Balérieux a écrit à Monsieur Istace pour un groupe de camarades avec moi je vous dirai cela plus tard. Maintenant ça me semble bien drôle de ne pas recevoir de vos nouvelles; je n'ai encore reçu une lettre de vous et une carte de votre frère Aimé; de ma soeur encore rien et j'avais écrit en même temps que pour votre première lettre. Je crois qu'on ne sait pas que je suis venu à Guben. J'espère bien maintenant que notre petit se porte toujours bien et qu'il est bien sage; surtout qu'il n'oublie pas d'aller à l'école car on n'en sait jamais trop. Je crois aussi que vous avez toujours pour vivre et que Monsieur Istace continue l'affaires entreprise. Je voudrais si bien le savoir car je serai encore mieux résigné à mon sort si elle réussit. Vous pourriez encore demander à Monsieur Brachet pour avoir un costume pour moi car le mien est dans un état lamentable; il faut coucher tout habillé ici; j'ai même deux caleçons sur moi et deux pantalons et deux chemises et j'ai encore

The people's thoughts were not, therefore, very long distracted by the talk of peace from the absorbing ac-

---

froid. Le froid et la faim c'est quelque chose. Mais je prends tout de même courage. Faites aussi la même chose; seulement tâchez de prendre tout votre ravitaillement et aussi des navets et choux navets si vous le pouvez car il faudra bien tout pour me rassasier et me remettre un peu sur forme. Je n'ai plus rien à dire pour le moment que des compliments à toute la famille et au camarade. Je finis en vous embrassant tous les deux de loin.

FERNAND ARNOULD.

Guben, le 4-1-17.

CHER SOEUR:

Je réponds à votre carte pour vous dire que nous sommes toujours en bonne santé tous d'Hameau. Le temps nous semble bien très long aussi j'ai déjà pleuré beaucoup aussi au départ du train je n'ai plus vu que le vieux Adolphe. Vous dites que je ne me laisse rien manquer; tout me manque—avec de l'argent on n'a rien. Je tiendrai toujours à ma promesse car j'ai une tête et une bonne. Je vois Florestan un peu au matin; j'en ai pour deux minutes à lui parler. René fait ses adresses comme les miennes. Envoyez-moi un colis le plus tôt possible car j'en ai grand besoin. A mon retour vous pouvez bien apprêter du manger à volonté car ici j'ai faim je ne mange que du pain sec et de la soupe comme de l'eau. Je suis toujours malade de faim et de froid. J'espère bien quand je retournerai que je dormirai bien car ici je n'ai pas encore dormi une heure comme il faut et le lit est bien dur et les petites bêtes sont bien méchantes. Quelle triste vie que nous passons pourtant nous n'avons rien fait à personne pour subir une punition pareille. Nous espérons que çà ira mieux plus tard. Faites des compliments à tante Valentine les deux Renelles et Valentine ainsi qu'à Numa Tourbe Jules Laurent au Binchoux à Parrain et Marraine et tous mes parents et tous mes camarades.

Chère soeur en attendant je vous souhaite une bonne et heureuse année à vous tous de très loin en attendant de près. Donc ne manquez pas de m'envoyer un colis et dites qu'on en envoie un à René aussi Louis Raoul Alexandre vous remettrez ses compliments

tuality of those deeds by which Belgians were everywhere being carried off into slavery. But on the evening

---

aussi. Chère soeur ne trouvant plus rien à vous dire je finis ma carte en vous embrassant.

Votre frère qui vous aime,

GERMAIN CARLIER,

A bientôt.

Guben, le 19-12-1916.

CHÈRE FEMME:

J'ai reçu votre lettre le lundi 18 au soir. J'ai été content de recevoir le colis de tabac mais encore plus content avec la lettre. Jusque maintenant c'est encore la même chose; je suis toujours à Guben avec mes deux mains dans mes poches et je fume la cigarette. Je n'ai pas encore vu Aimé maman ni Alfred Briand. Je voudrais bien avoir un colis avec du riz du sucre du chocolat et du sel parce que les produits farineux ne sont pas acceptés. Le petit Nestor est à la barraque 6 et moi à la barraque 8 avec Sibille Edouard et Vanderest Arthur et encore beaucoup d'autres. Dites à Jules Bohême que je ne peux pas lui envoyer une carte; on ne peut envoyer qu'à ses parents; comme vous vous allez souvent coudre j'ai calculé de les envoyer à votre maison.

On vend les "sorêts" un mark, les harengs un mark, les allumettes une petite boîte 35 pfennigs; 10 cigarettes 40 pfennigs; c'est beaucoup trop.

J'espère vous revoir bientôt.

Ne laissez rien manquer à Marraine.

En attendant des compliments à toute la famille.

Votre mari,

WINS FLORIAN.

Le 7-1-1917.

CHER FRÈRE:

Je vous écris ces quelques mots pour vous faire savoir que je suis toujours en bonne santé et j'èspère que vous êtes de même. Seulement cher frère je vous dirai que je suis un peu gêné pour le manger donc si vous auriez le bon coeur de faire votre possible pour m'envoyer un petit colis vous me feriez grand plaisir. Vous

tâcherez de parler à votre chef d'équipe pour le faire envoyer; çà pourrait marcher plus vite. Surtout n'oubliez pas de ne mettre que 350 grammes et de le mettre par express. Je pourrais vous le rembourser après la guerre. Donc, cher frère, en attendant de vos nouvelles je vous embrasse de loin. Vous remettrez des compliments à votre femme, cher frère, si vous auriez la bonne volonté de remettre des compliments à ma femme et à mes enfants et de dire à ma femme que s'il y avait moyen de mettre mes colis par votre chef çà pourrait me faire plaisir. Vous direz à Hubert que s'il pourrait faire la même chose que vous autres qu'il me ferait plaisir. Vous direz à ma soeur Marie que ses enfants ont reçu leur colis et de lui demander comment elle a fait pour leur envoyer et de faire le même. Vous ferez des compliments à mon frère Fernand et à ma soeur Alice que s'il pourrait m'envoyer un petit colis qu'il me ferait plaisir que je le rembourserai à mon retour. Cher frère, je vous dirai que mon compagnon de lit Nicaise a déjà reçu des colis de ses parents; vous n'avez que de leur demander comment ils ont fait; en attendant de vous revoir je vous embrasse de loin.

NICAISE ET BARBIER.

Guben, le 19-12-1916.

MES CHERS PARENTS:

Je vous écris encore ces quatre mots pour vous faire savoir que nous sommes encore en bonne santé; j'espère vous trouver de même dans quelques jours. Mes chers parents je vous fais savoir que j'ai reçu le petit paquet le 18 au soir après 8 heures. J'avais faim; j'en ai fait un peu pour me soutenir. Octave m'a dit hier soir aussi qu'il n'avait encore rien reçu et qu'il avait encore envoyé quatre cartes jeudi le 14 et il m'a dit si les colis n'étaient pas encore mis en route qu'il ne fallait pas les mettre parce que nous retournerons bientôt. Faites toujours des compliments à toute la famille ainsi à tous mes camarades. Prenons courage; nous vous souhaiterons une bonne année à Charleroy. Chers parents le frère de Pierre est aussi auprès de moi. Je l'ai vu seulement le dimanche; nous nous sommes parlé un peu et il fait des complements et dites

then published in Brussels, announced that the President had sent a joint Note to the Powers extending his

---

à Fernand que j'irai bientôt avec lui ainsi qu'il remette de mes nouvelles à ma bonne amie et courage à bientôt j'ai le souvenir au revoir à bientôt. Attendez un peu nous sûivrons notre nouvelle.

Vos deux fils pour la vie

O. ET F.

Cubenne, le 14 décembre, 1916.

CHÈRE FEMME ET CHER PETIT:

Je vous écris cette carte pour vous demander un petit colis. Dans le colis mettez un peu de sucre un peu de biscuit militaire. Allez à Chatelet faire des compliments, demandez à Ida de mettre un peu de sucre en morceaux et un peu de biscuit militaire. Dites à Ida que çà me ferait plaisir; allez trouver Madame Colot demandez-lui pour avoir un peu de sucre. Faites des compliments à Maria pour Clément Huest. Faites des compliments à Louisa et à Auguste. Dites-leur que je ne voudrais pas qu'il vienne. Fernand si vous n'écoutez pas votre maman je vous corrigerai quand je serai de retour. Et Gustave aussi. Faites des compliments à Madame Colot pour moi. Chère femme et chers petits enfants envoyez l'adresse Jeanne aussi embrasse les trois petits pour moi aussi que vous aussi. J'espère aller manger les galettes.

Envoyez-moi du tabac à chiquer car il est cher ici. Je vous embrasse bien fort tous les quatre. Au revoir.

FRANÇOIS LIGOT.

Guben, le 8 janvier, 1917.

MA CHÈRE FEMME:

J'ai reçu le deuxième colis de tabac samedi dernier, il me semble que vous m'oubliez un peu je ne reçois plus aucune nouvelle. Ecrivez-moi par express cela arrive plus sûrement. Envoyez aussi par express si possible et comme échantillon sans valeur une boîte avec quelques tartines rôties dont je vous parle déjà dans mes cartes précédentes. J'espère que mon père est toujours en bonne santé et qu'il prend patience. Dites-lui que je l'embrasse de tout coeur et que je compte rentrer bientôt car il me semble que mon temps diminue ici l'on s'ennuie à en mourir ici surtout sans nouvelles du

good offices. It had been for me one of those hard days on which the twilight closed its gloomy curtain; there

---

pays. Si vous pouvez m'expédier un colis tâchez d'y joindre un pot de confiture aussi.

Enfin ma chère femme que te dirais-je de plus? Il faudrait être ensemble pour se conter les petites misères de la vie. . . . Prenez bien soin de consoler mon cher père de votre mieux afin qu'à mon retour je le retrouve en bonne santé comme je l'ai laissé à mon départ.

Je termine en vous embrassant bien affectueusement ainsi que mon cher père.

Des compliments à toute la famille et à tous les amis.

Ton mari pour la vie,

Ferdinand Dokir.

Remettez mes amitiés et mes souhaits à Marie à Polydore et qu'ils pensent à moi et tâchent de m'envoyer aussi quelques tartines roties aussi car vous pensez si j'ai. . . .

Embrassez la petite Marie pour moi. J'ai eu une malchance ma chère femme l'on m'à volé mes bottines la semaine dernière de sorte que je n'ai plus que mes sabots à motié usés, il ne faut pas m'en envoyer pour cela c'est inutile de plus l'on m'a pris tout mon argent au bureau de la sorte que je suis propre. Vous pouvez faire un beau gateau pour quand je retournerai encore qu'il serait moi je le mangerais bien tout.

Faites des compliments et des amitiés chez Falize au Canal. Nous sommes ensemble depuis quelque temps et dites qu'il ne reçoit rien non plus; il fait dire de bien soigner les lapins de bien les grossir car à son retour. . . .

Bien des compliments à ma soeur Juliette et ainsi qu'au boucher.

Chers Parents:

Je suis toujours en excellente santé. Nous espérons toujours retourner d'un jour à l'autre. Un bruit circule dans notre baraque que pour la 1e quinzaine de janvier nous serions rentrés.

Chers parents, je suis triste je ne reçois plus rien du tout. Tante Alice ne m'a pas encore écrit et mon camarade François Bernard qui reçoit des colis sur colis. Si notre espoir de retour

had been a long session to discuss the *ravitaillement,* with its interminable complications; terrible stories of the sufferings of the *chômeurs;* one woman to ask me to intercede for her husband, just transported to Germany

---

échouait encore envoyez moi des colis sur colis dans des boîtes de fer avec ces numéros 56-3058 baraque 4 par express.

J'espère, chers parents, que vous aurez reçu ma carte de souhaits et n'oubliez pas non plus mes professeurs qui j'espère ne me feront pas perdre une année car aussitôt rentré de travaillerai comme un acharné.

Chers parents, ne vous faites pas trop de peine car ce serait encore plus triste pour moi quand je rentrerai de vous trouver malades.

Des compliments à toute la famille et à mes camarades.

P. S.—Pour mes colis demandez l'adresse à Maria Bernard ou faites les parvenir par un officier qui va chez Ernest Depasse: du riz, du café et chicorée, mélange, des bonbons, du tabac, du pain rôti, du sucre blanc et du fin rouge, de gros haricots.

LÉON BAUDOUX.

Guben, le 12-16.

Mettez sur les colis le nom de l'expéditeur avec ces numéros 56-3058, 31 division. Envoyez, ne vous retenez pas pour personne.

Guben, le 25 décembre, 1916—*Noël.*

CHERS PARENTS:

Je vous écris ces quelques mots pour vous laisser savoir que voilà un mois que nous sommes partis de Monceau avec regret de ne pas avoir vu mon cher père. Donc au jour que j'envoie ma lettre la nouvelle année sera bientôt venue. Donc, cher père et chère mère, c'est pour vous souhaiter une bonne et heureuse et meilleur, et une bonne santé pendant toute l'année mil neuf centdix-sept ainsi qu'à Pierre et Jean et aussi à Julia et Emile, Jemir et Edouard, Armand et Emilia Calix et sa femme, à la famille Cherton à Gille et Debroux Wayelle à Emile Célina et Arthur Marie et Liévin et Louis Abel, et à tous les connaissances et camarades des alentours. Maintenant à part cela je pense que vous êtes tous en bonne santé depuis mon départ ainsi que toutes les bêtes de la maison parce que moi je suis toujours en bonne santé ainsi que mes camarades.

as "undesirable"; another just returned from prison in Hasselt to tell me of her experiences there—the cruel-

---

Aussitôt que aurez reçu ma lettre envoyez les nouvelles de ce côté-là et racontez un peu comment l'affaire du pain va. A mon oncle j'ai envoyé une carte en cas de non reçu remettez lui mes souhaits ainsi qu'à ma tante et cousin. Nous sommes toujours au camp et nous espérons retourner bientôt. Est-ce que le vieux papa Pierre a toujours tant de mal avec sa ménagerie moutonne.

La Noël se passe tristement ici. Monsieur Florestan est souvent absent ainsi que Baudrenghien.

Si vous pouvez envoyer un colis envoyez le plus tôt possible. Biscuit chocolat.

Maintenant j'espère que mon cher père déjà remis à la maison depuis son retour du Stranval. Et j'espère que je le verrai bientôt car je pleure souvent dans mon lit en pensant que suis parti sans le revoir et embrasser une fois. Ici la soupe au poisson est bonne. Donc encore une fois je vous souhaite une bonne et heureuse et meilleure année et une bonne santé pendant l'année 1917, ainsi qu'à Pierre et Jean et camarades.

Votre fils qui vous aime qui vous embrasse De loin,
Léon Wullaert.

Guben, le 7-1-17.

Chère Mère et Frère et Soeurs:

Je réponds à votre carte que j'ai reçue avec plaisir et je suis content d'avoir reçu de vos nouvelles, espérant que vous êtes toujours en bonne santé ainsi que moi de même. Je vous ferai bien savoir que celui qui a fait la carte que j'ai reçue est bien instruit car il oublie la date et de mettre l'adresse et de serrer un peu les lignes pour mettre un peu plus sur la carte et de faire au crayon pour que ça soit plus propre. Je vous ferai savoir que vous autres renonce sur le manger et que moi ici je n'ai pour tout repas qu'on nous donne, un bon pour tout, et s'il aurait moyen de m'envoyer deux petits colis par express, un de ma mère et un de mon frère, çà me ferait bien plaisir, et faites savoir à ma tante Laurence d'envoyer à mon oncle Emile des colis par express aussi.

Je finis ma carte en vous embrassant bien fort et faites des com-

ty of one German nurse who seemed to take a malign pleasure in announcing to women that their husbands

---

pliments à Adolphe et Robert de la part de Grégoire et aussi à la famille de Fernand et Laurence; ainsi à Victorien, et dites à Victorien de bien travailler ma terre qu'il m'avait promis, car je vais planter les pommes de terre, et dites-moi si Carnière et Anderlue sont rentrés et faites-le moi savoir le plus tôt possible.

Votre fils pour la vie,

Oscar Romain.

Guben, le 13-12-16.

Chers Parents:

Je suis très étonné de ne point recevoir de vous nouvelles qui me feraient tant plaisir.

Je suis à Guben toujours en bonne santé, beaucoup meilleure encore si je pouvais recevoir des caissettes. (Chocolat. . . . J'ai fait ces jours-ci la connaissance d'un fort copain) G. Feint qui m'a donné de vos nouvelles.

J'ai écrit de ces jours-ci à M. Escole et à Georges Dupuis.

Je suis toujours en compagnie de plusieurs amis, Besson René, Blamart, Gaston Yernaux, Georges et Léon Mal et Raymond Brasseur, le frère à Cousine Sidonie. Léon Turf et Jules Lejeune est aussi parmi nous.

Notre temps se passe à jouer aux cartes et à s'enrager car le temps semble long. Alfred a-t-il toujours à l'école? Nelly est-elle toujours en bonne santé et pense-t-elle souvent à moi? Papa a-t-il toujours de la besogne. Fait-il cher vivre? Je voudrais avoir des nouvelles de Parrain et Marraine, de mon oncle J. Bte. et d'Evrard ainsi que de toute la famille car la place diminue. Georges et notre petit Maurice sont-ils encore aussi espiègles et aussi vivants? Ne sachant en mettre davantage j'attends de vos nouvelles avec impatience car de mes amis en ont déjà reçu. Bien des amitiés à tous mes amis et amies. En attendant de vous revoir tous, recevez de votre fils ses meilleurs baisers. Pensez à moi.

René Rasquinet.

were to be shot, the kindness of another German nurse who helped her in many ways, the sound of the firing

---

Le 3-1-1917.

CHERS PARENTS:

Je vous écris afin de vous faire savoir que je suis toujours à Güben avec mes amis de Hameau en très bonne santé. Le jour de l'an ne fut pas fort gai cette année pour moi ni pour vous autres, mais j'espère vous revoir bientôt, il fait très mauvais au moment où je vous écrit et je vous l'assure que par ce temps il ne fait pas bon pour attendre son plat de soupe car nous sommes toujours à environ dix mille hommes dans le camp. J'espère que mon lit m'attend avec impatience car celui que nous avons pour le moment est très dur mais très commode car on se couche tout habillé pour ne pas avoir froid et pour les petites bêtes, malgré cela on y reste au moins douze heures afin d'oublier où l'on est. Je suis toujours très bien portant mais on est très faible car la nourriture se compose de soupe à l'orge du cripse, ou de celle à carottes ou à choux-navets très souvent claire comme de l'eau. Depuis quelque temps nous recevons de très bonnes nouvelles; on nous dit que beaucoup de nos amis sont déjà rentrés tels que Mons et Anderlues, on nous a même dit que des affiches étaient collées à Jumet que notre retour se ferait pour le cinq ou le huit, donc j'espère que vous le ferez savoir. Je crois que chez vous tout va très bien et qu'à notre retour à la maison il y aura de bonne nourriture afin de nous soigner, et de la farine pour faire une bonne soupe au lait ou des bonnes couques de Suisse, car j'espère me reposer au moins un mois; mes beaux habits sont toujours dans le sac, mais que voulez-vous il fait si sale que l'on enfonce dans la boue du matin au soir. J'ai oublié de vous dire que le matin nous recevons un morceau de pain de deux cents grammes pour la journée. A notre retour nous supposons recevoir à la commune des vivres et même de l'argent pour ce qu'on a détruit afin de nous remettre. Donc comme vous le voyez on espère un retour très proche dans la famille.

Remerciez ma Tante des bonnes galettes qu'elle m'a données à mon départ et que bientôt je recevrai encore, donc des compliments à toute la famille et à tous mes amis; dites à Fernand que nous irons bientôt ensemble et à Victor, des compliments à Maurice et

squad in the early morning—*"un coup, net,"* she said, with a quick horizontal gesture of her black-gloved hand,

---

à Louis et à Auguste André, encore chez Grabouilat dont j'espère en bonne santé. Faites savoir aussi chez Védastine et Valentine et ailleurs que la nouvelle année s'est bien passée; dites à mon père qu'il dise à Monsieur Bodart et à son fils que je leur souhaite une bonne année et d'être bientôt ensemble. J'espère que les Delaize sont toujours bien portants et mon ami Emile Delaize dont il y a si longtemps que je l'ai vu. Donc, chers parents, s'il vaut encore la peine d'envoyer un colis vous expédierez par express un kilo de pain d'épices, informez-vous.

En attendant de vous revoir et dont j'espère bientôt je reste votre fils,

DUPUIS RAOUL.

Guben, le 4-1-1917.

MA CHÈRE EMMA:

Je suis toujours en bonne santé et j'espère bien que ma petite lettre vous trouvera tout à fait rétablie de votre rhume que vous avez eu.

Ma chère Emma voilà la 7e fois que je vous écris et au moins 5e fois à Clara et je n'ai encore reçu que votre lettre et une de Clara et une carte de Paul; cependant j'écris toutes les fois que je peux parce que les timbres font défaut. Je vous dirai que le temps me semble bien long et triste de ne rien recevoir sur autant de fois que j'ai écrit; si vous ne recevez pas de mes nouvelles informez-vous et vous pourriez peut-être m'écrire plus souvent. Je relis votre lettre plus de vingt fois par jour en attendant d'en recevoir une 2e fois. Vous devez comprendre comme le temps me semble long vu que l'on n'a rien à faire sauf de faire un peu de lessive et raccommoder ses bas entretemps boire et manger et dormir et se promener dans la cour; depuis que je suis entré au camp je n'ai encore vu aucune personne de Guben; donc je ne saurais vous dire s'ils sont beaux ou laids; vous voyez quel plaisir que j'ai.

Ma chère Emma, depuis le 6 décembre j'ai demandé un colis à Clara et quand j'ai reçu votre le 23 vous me dites que vous n'avez encore rien reçu de moi; c'est bien malheureux parce que je voudrais

and another life gone; and the awful music of two thousand men singing the "Lion of Flanders"—*chômeurs en*

---

recevoir du cacao et du sucre et de la confiture ou du saindoux vu que le pain ne me semble pas bon; depuis que j'ai quitté Monceau je n'ai pas encore bu de café, mais prenons patience, comme je crois bientôt retourner on peut l'apprêter et le beurre aussi. Ma chère Emma, quand on a un peu de ravitaillement d'avance on doit se promener avec dans sa poche; si on l'oublie dans son sac souvent on ne le retrouve plus quand on arrive.

Emma, je finis car je ne saurais rien vous dire d'autre.

En attendant de vous revoir bientôt faites des grands compliments chez vous et à Madame ainsi qu'à mes amis.

Recevez de votre cher Désiré tout son amour ainsi que ses baisers.

Votre cher Désiré qui vous aime de loin comme de pres. 1000 baisers.

A bientôt j'espère.

Guben, 2-1-17.

Chers Parents:

Je vous écris ces quelques mots pour vous faire savoir que je ne suis pas fort content ainsi que Joseph et Norbert; voilà que depuis le 21 nous n'avons pas encore reçu de vos nouvelles ainsi qu'Elise; le temps ne nous semble pas encore long assez comme çà il faut encore nous passer des nouvelles de la maison; moi ici, voilà que j'ai déjà écrit cinq fois et les timbres font encore défaut mais vous ce n'est pas la même chose vous avez tout sous la main. Chers parents, je croyais être de retour pour la nouvelle année mais je viens que c'est tous canards. Maintenant écoutez-moi bien si entendez des incides sérieux, vous entendez bien, sérieux, du retour des internés civils dites-le moi et si vous n'avez encore rien entendu n'est-ce pas, eh bien, je vous la répète encore vous pouvez bien nous envoyer toutes les semaines du riz et de la farine de maïs et du sucre à nous trois ou bien encore du pain et des biscuits militaires car ici, chers parents, on crève la faim et envoyez tout colis lettres par express çà coûte quelques centimes de plus mais sur trois quatre jours nous les aurons. Maintenant dites-moi si Joseph travaille et

route to Germany. Then the *Kurrier* with its announcement, as I said; a thrill of new life ran through the town; had the day come at last when the world could awake from its long nightmare? Dared one hope?

The President's Note, though not the full text of it, was published in the Brussels newspapers the next day. One had to be wary of translations—*traduttore traditore*—but the following day we had the full text of the noble document, that was already beginning to suffer from that misunderstanding which was to be its fate, the fate for a while of the pronouncements of all great statesmen of vision who look beyond the present hour.

And yet its influences and its hope lingered in the heart that Christmas Eve. The cold had suddenly abated! it had been a mild, sunny day, and before tea my wife and I took the dogs and went for a cross-country walk over the fields behind Uccle, by the mill and down the avenue of tall poplars to lovely Droogenbosche. . . . In a distant field there was a shepherd and a flock of sheep, their fleece touched to silver by the slanting rays of the sun that was going down behind the old church. The dogs raced off, of course, to chase the sheep, and I had to run to put them on the leash again. The shepherd's dog, surprised at such foolish commotion, looked up, and the shepherd, without moving, spoke, so softly, so calmly, one word—*"Ici!"* and the dog went straight to him and sat down by his side.

---

s'il a déjà fini le coin de terre, car moi quand je serai de retour j'en aurai au moins pour quinze jours pour me rétablir.

Je finis ma carte en vous embrassant bien fort tous ainsi qu'Elise et les enfants. Dites un peu à Charles Dereuck que son fils réclame du tabac et du riz et du sucre.

HENRY CLODION.

There was something very significant in it all; the quiet confidence of the shepherd, wrapped in his cloak, leaning on his crook, his slow, gentle movements, the almost imperceptible advance he made across the field, the flock scattering out behind him, feeding; then, at a single soft word, gathering about him again. Christmas Eve, and shepherds kept their watch by night, as of old! We stopped and listened; even the dogs were silent in that holy peace.

Peace! . . . But there was the dull, distant throb of the guns. And poor humanity, as sheep scattered abroad, having no shepherd!

XLIII

HERMANCITO

My wife had invited the men of the C.R.B. to the Orangerie for Christmas afternoon at tea-time, and she asked Hermancito, whose kindness was so constantly at the disposal of every one, to let her know for how many she would have to prepare. She had had a note from him on Christmas Eve telling her of the approximate number, though he could not be quite sure, for they had not all as yet come in from the provinces. "I can be certain of but one thing," he had written, "and that is that I shall be there, the first to arrive."

They came, a host of them, and by some tacit recognition of the season they would not speak of all the heart-rending scenes they had been witnessing, but talked of other things, of America principally, and of Christmas at home. There were laughing groups in the *salon* and in the dining-room, and after a while some one said:

"Where is Bulle?"

No one had seen him that day. . . . The talk and the laughter went on.

"Where is Hermancito?" I asked each new-comer—but no one knew. Then some one came, late; there was a whisper, then a hush, and silence. Bulle was very ill, taken suddenly on Christmas Eve. . . .

My wife and I went to see him the next morning at

his home in the Rue Joseph II. The Mexican flag which he had kept bravely flying was on the staff. It was still within. The concierge whispered with me in the hall; he must be kept very quiet. Christmas Eve he had dined at Baron Lambert's; he had walked homeward along the Boulevard with Count van der Straaten Ponthos, of the Belgian Foreign Office, and at the corner of the Rue Joseph II the Count had suddenly noticed an incoherence in his speech. He got him home; they put him to bed, and now his life was hanging by a slender thread. . . . Two days later he was dead.

"La belle humeur," says an old French proverb, *"est une des plus jolies formes du courage."* Hermancito had good-humour, and he had courage, too, such Spartan courage as it is the fortune of few to possess. He had seen his career broken just when it was coming to fruition, and at first, without resources, with his country in agony, its government in collapse, he was starting off to America to become an American citizen and to begin life anew, when I thought of him for the *ravitaillement.* He filled a delicate position in that important work with such entire acceptability that every one was delighted, and he was a favourite with all the men. He was the sort of favourite with whom every one takes affectionate liberties. When the American expedition was sent to Mexico he was as delighted as anybody; he had always said that he looked to America to restore order there, and when, in the etiquette of belligerency, which the young men of the C.R.B. had so many opportunities of studying, they pretended for a day that they must not recognize him or take his hand, he told me of it with that infectious laughter he had for every amusing circumstance in a life that latterly had not been

amusing for him. He had served at Madrid, at Vienna, at London, at Washington, and he was full of good reminiscence. Nothing amused him more, however, than the office-boy at the C.R.B. He was the son of an American woman who had married a German baron, long since dead; but the boy was Baron, too, and the young Americans of the C.R.B. had a constant and inexhaustible delight in saying:

"Baron, get me a match," or "Baron, my hat."

But we, all of us, called on Bulle oftener than on any baron for many services, and there seemed to be nothing he could not do. Many a delicate mission he accomplished for me, many a little tangle he unravelled, many a little miracle he wrought for which I guiltily accepted the gratitude of some one in trouble.

And all that time he had been mortally ill. He referred to it in talking with me just once, and then almost casually, and never mentioned it again. There are not many men with that indomitable courage, and I should like to pay my tribute to it, and to him, who was a true and loyal and unselfish friend in a world where, as one learns more and more as one lives on in it, friends are rare, and hard to get, and harder still to keep.

We buried him on a cold, dark winter morning, the last but one in the old year. In his little house in the Rue Joseph II he lay under flowers and the Mexican flag, in a room all black, amid the bewildering crackling of candles, with the concierge's two little children behind a curtain in the hall, broken-heartedly sobbing over the friend they had lost. Bulle's father and mother were in London, but a sister had come, and Señor Bestegue, who had been Mexican Minister at Berlin,

was there to represent his prostrate nation. But in the streets outside there was, I thought, every one I knew in Brussels; members of the Belgian Government who were left in the town, the remnants of the diplomatic corps, representatives of the C.N. and the C.R.B., and a half dozen German officers. For one morning the war and its divisions were laid aside; for one morning even Belgians and Germans could meet in the community of affection and respect that one simple, modest, obscure life could inspire, and in the commonalty of sorrow that that kindly nature had left this earth. We followed the hearse on foot, a great crowd in black, to the church of St.-Josse at the bottom of the Rue des deux Eglises. There, amid the tolling bells, with the chant of a single voice in the choir, while an old priest was celebrating the Mass—strange expression of this strange life of ours!—a wedding was going on at the same moment before another altar in the vast and gloomy pile.

Every one that knew him loved Herman Bulle, though not every one knew how brave and strong a man he was. For not every one knows, very few indeed, in this torn and distracted world, that gentleness is the one great force.

XLIV

HOLIDAYS

THERE is an amiable custom in Belgium of observing two holidays where one is noted on the calendar; a frank recognition, I suppose, prompted by universal experience, of the fact that one good holiday deserves another in order that one may recover from its effects. The day after Christmas, when all the town was closed and wore the air, if not of a holiday, at least of a *dimanche,* as the Belgians call all their holidays, an event happened that created something like a panic in our midst. We had word from Liége to the effect that the Germans had posted an *affiche* announcing that because of the evil deeds of England the *ravitaillement* was discontinued, the Comité National dissolved, the functions of the Commission for Relief suspended, and that the feeding of the population would thenceforward be carried on under German authority. The *affiche,* with German thoroughness, contained a long series of paragraphs directing in the minutest detail just how the work should be done. I made inquiry at once and after they had telephoned from the Politische Abteilung to Liége, where the Geheimrath Kauffmann was then Civil Governor, the authorities reported to me that it was all a mistake, that the orders had been prepared to be used only in a certain eventuality, and that by a blunder they had been published, and then only in one

commune, that of St. Nicolas. The incident's only importance, then, after we had recovered from the shock it caused us and were breathing freely again, lay in the testimony it gave to German foresight; there was no exigency which the German mind could imagine for which it was not prepared.

The old year died to the infernal chorus of the cannon, and the new was introduced by the Allies' response to the peace proposals, which gave little hope of peace, and we turned again to the endless round of our familiar difficulties. There was a phenomenon noted throughout the war; with the coming on of winter what, in those scientific terms which the least scientific of us like to employ, was called the "curve of peace" was rising; it went steadily up, and then in January it dropped to zero once more, ready to begin its slow and painful gradation upward with the hopes of a weary and disheartened world.

In a long conversation with Baron von der Lancken on New Year's Day I told him again of the universal reprobation excited by the deportation of the workingmen, and he said that the policy was to be abandoned, though gradually, so that the adversaries of Germany could not say that it had been given up under pressure. I had had a despatch from Washington saying that the interest in the revolting procedure was "inconceivable" in America, as well it might be, and I was glad to be able to say in the report I was then preparing that there were indications that it was to be discontinued. It was not discontinued just then, however, and it has not been wholly discontinued since, despite announcements by the German Government giving an official tenor to what Lancken had told me as gossip behind the

scenes. The Germans were just then preparing the levy that was to be made at Malines on the fourth of January, and Lancken told me that if I desired I might send a representative of the Legation to witness the scene. I told him that I should not officially send a representative or be in any way identified with the proceeding, but that if he could go as a mere spectator I should permit Christian Herter, an attaché, detailed for a while from the Embassy at Berlin to assist us in the Legation, to look on. Lancken agreed, and going himself to witness the seizures took Herter as his guest. Herter was a young man just out of Harvard and animated with all the enthusiasm of an intelligent liberalism, and he returned from Malines, after a day spent in the cold, full of the horror of the scenes he had witnessed. They were no different from the scenes that were being enacted in that sombre tragedy all over Belgium, and I have already described them to such an extent that it would be merely piling horror on horror to repeat them, but they were made all the more odious in Herter's eyes by the fact that the officers in charge, evidently because a neutral representative was present, tried to invest their cruelties with a solicitude that only deepened the young man's disgust. They asked him to taste the soup provided for the poor fellows they were enslaving, and as he was in the act, his tall, slender form bent over the steaming kettle, they snapped cameras at him, until he had disturbing visions of himself appearing in illustrated weeklies as an approving witness of the gentleness and propriety of German methods.

The Germans complained to me afterwards that he had not been "correct"—because he had protested against this photographing, and because he had asked

some embarrassing questions during the arbitrary division of the men into *links* and *rechts;* but then the Germans were always protesting, as though on principle, against the action of some one connected with the American Legation, and two years and a half of this mild form of frightfulness had hardened me and left me indifferent.

I had my usual daily stream of callers, each with his individual trouble, or danger, or despair. I had not been out of the city for a year any farther than Malines or Mariemont, and the want of change of air and of scene had had the worst effect on my health. But a change was coming; we had many premonitions of it, though we did not know just how soon it would be upon us. . . .

In the meantime, however, those days had to be lived, and they brought in a kind of monotony the same troubles with each morning. I remember an Englishman, a resident of Brussels, sixty-eight years of age, who forty-two years before had resigned a commission in the English Territorial forces. Hearing of this, the Germans classified him as an officer in the English Army and ordered him deported to Germany. He came to ask my aid, concerned for the wife he would have to leave.

"If I go," he said pathetically, "I shall never see her again."

He did not say it with any sense of pathos, or to be pathetic; he was very calm, very British. I put in a plea for him, and two days later he was there again; he had been ordered to report that night at ten o'clock. It meant, he thought—and rightly—Germany and Ruhleben the next morning.

"Is there any hope for me?" he asked.

There was something touching to me in this elderly Englishman standing there, with such a cruel fate hanging over him, sixty-eight, and ill, long a resident of Brussels in that exile which so many Englishmen had known in the old city. I got up at once and went to Lancken, and after I had talked for a while he promised me, as a personal favour, he said, that the man would not be deported.

The next morning the Englishman came to the Legation again; he did not look sixty-eight that morning; he was much younger in the joy he tried to hide, as he had tried to hide his pain. He had gone, as ordered, to the Kommandantur the night before at ten o'clock, trembling, fearing, and a German in broken French had said:

"Pas aller en Allemagne! Vous avez des amis! Vous êtes libre! A la maison!"

There was another caller on those days, a funny little Frenchman with a wizened, dwarfish face, who said that he was pastor of a mission in Brussels; he belonged to some evangelical sect that had its headquarters in Cincinnati, which was so near my home that I took an unusual interest in him, though he had never been to Cincinnati and accepted it all on faith. He had been haled before the German tribunals on a charge of having read to his congregation anti-German literature, as all propagandists call their printed matter. He was fifty years old, but, as though the fact might testify to the wider experience of a still more advanced age, he explained that he had a wife who was seventy-one. I told him that as he was French he should go to Villalobar, who had charge of French interests, but no, he said,

he was pastor of an American church and would place himself under the American ægis. I told him that, as was the case with Paul and the Germans of his day, the Germans had power only over his physical, and not his spiritual body, and that therefore he must go to the Spanish Legation. He laughed and did so, but I did what I could to aid him, and he did not suffer.

There were not many of my visitors who could laugh at any phase of their predicaments. There was an old man who had read that morning in the Dutch newspapers that his son had fallen on the Belgian front; those outside sometimes communicated with those inside by inserting advertisements in the Rotterdam dailies, and there was nothing that I or anybody could do to aid this man in his trouble.

Then one evening just at tea-time who should appear, to our joy, but Vernon Kellogg, back in Belgium on a mission for the north of France. He had got as far as London on his homeward way, and there Mr. Hoover had prevailed on him to remain and to undertake another of those errands with which he was always so successful. He had been to Paris and to Havre, and reported that M. Francqui and Mr. Hoover had solved their problems, and that Mr. Hoover had gone to America to arrange a loan to carry on the *ravitaillement,* which had long since outgrown the charity on which it had once lived. Then M. Francqui returned, and the next day Villalobar, with the news of the world outside, and the Grand Cordon de St.-Grégoire le Grand, which the Pope had given him. Baron von der Lancken returned, too, from Berlin, and when I saw him at luncheon at the Marquis's house he said in the course of our gossip, first, that he had been unable to arrange for the

train for the English women because of the hatred of everything English at Berlin, and then that the effect of the response of the Allied Governments to the President's Note on peace had been to strengthen the military party, who were just then *pour la guerre à outrance.* He hoped, he said, that the submarine warfare would not be renewed, but that Berlin thought America would not go to war if it was. I changed the subject, but from that moment whatever doubts I may have had were dispelled and I knew what was before us.

The German Chancellor might cynically refer to Belgium as a "pawn" in the "imperial" hands, but to us, who saw it all and lived it, she was a suffering, sentient being, quivering and bleeding under hoof and pistol butt. Von Bissing, sick at Wiesbaden, was practically eliminated, and the military were having their own way unmolested. They had ordered all the copper seized, and Belgian housewives, proud of their shining *batteries de cuisine,* were in tears at the thought of losing their precious heirlooms; all walnut-trees and poplar-trees were ordered cut down—the lovely tall poplars that are, or were, so characteristic a mark of the landscape of Brabant; we ourselves had the visit at the Orangerie of a bandy-legged German, long a resident of Brussels, and then serving his country as a member of the Secret Police; he came stalking into the house and began shouting uncouth orders to me to fell the two poplar-trees that formed so charming a part of the skyline at the bottom of our lawn, and when, as who should say "Woodman, spare that tree," I began to protest, he interrupted me and said in his miserable guttural French that I had nothing to do but to obey. I could have brained him where he stood—so promptly do evil communications

corrupt good manners—and when I mentioned the Politische Abteilung and the exemptions it had ordered, he said he cared nothing for the Politische Abteilung. I got him out of the house at last, and was angry for an hour afterward. I saved the trees, or von Moltke kindly saved them for me, but I had a slight, a very slight experience of what every household in Belgium endured during those evil times.

XLV

DEPORTATIONS

THE slave drive at Brussels began on the twentieth of January. For several days the polizei had been distributing the yellow cards ordering the recipients to appear on the morning of that day at the Gare du Midi, with boots, blankets and extra heavy clothing. The card bore an offer of employment and threatened a fine for disobedience of its command. The men thus summoned were in nearly every case *chômeurs;* the Germans had made up the lists from the files at the Meldeamt. No public order had been proclaimed; notice was served on each individual. The effect was not that instantaneous sensation which the posting of an *affiche* produced in a village, but the news percolated gradually and created its horror. On the eighteenth of January an *affiche* was posted seeking to justify the policy as benevolent in its intentions and of benefit to the Belgian nation.[1]

---

[1] LE TRANSFERT DES CHÔMEURS
Avis du gouverneur général-lieutenant Hurt,
en date du 12 janvier, 1917

La campagne de calomnies et de mensonges menée par nos ennemis s'est nourrie, ces derniers temps, de l'expédition des sans-travail se trouvant en Belgique. Des protestations pleines de phraséologie se sont élevées contre cette mesure, tant dans le territoire occupé de la Belgique que dans les pays neutres ou ennemis. Les grands mots servant de fond à ces protestations sont principalement: "Atteinte au droit des gens," "Attentat à la dignité et à la liberté

The eve of the deportations the fear that brooded over the city was almost palpable to the senses. Even

---

des ouvriers belges," "Crime contre l'humanité et les droits de la famille," "Esclavage et travail forcé comme pour les criminels." La plupart des protestations livrées à la publicité comptent sur l'ignorance et la crédulité des masses pour semer en Belgique l'inquiétude et plonger ainsi le pays dans de nouveaux malheurs. Jusqu'à présent, ces desseins ont échoué devant le bon sens de la population. Toutefois, sous l'effet des excitations sans mesure, un certain nombre d'ouvriers expédités continuent à estimer que l'"honneur" et le "patriotisme" exigent qu'ils refusant de se mettre au travail.

Tous ceux vivent en Belgique savent qu'il y a ici, depuis des années, plusieurs centaines de mille sans-travail sollicitant en vain une occupation; que beaucoup de sans-travail, du fait que les secours publics ne suffisent pas dans bien des cas à l'entretien de leurs familles, se sont égarés du droit chemin; que, dans ces conditions, l'insécurité des biens, l'amour du jeu et la paresse se sont accrus sans cesse. En bon nombre d'endroits, des bandes armées comptant jusque quarante hommes, ont ravagé les champs et les jardins. Aux environs des Trois-Fontaines et ailleurs encore, de véritables combats se sont livrés entre les patrouilles allemandes du service forestier et des voleurs de bois et des braconniers. Le commerce clandestin des produits alimentaires a pris des proportions telles, que la distribution équitable de ces produits et l'approvisionnement uniforme de toutes les classes de la population sont devenus quasi impossibles.

En présence de cette situation, et en vue d'éclairer les esprits, je porte ce qui suit à la connaissance de la population:

"Atteinte au droit des gens." Suivant l'article 52 de l'Annexe à la Convention de La Haye du 18 octobre 1907, les services exigés des habitants doivent être "de telle nature qu'ils n'impliquent pas pour les populations l'obligation de prendre part à des opérations de la guerre contre leur patrie." L'article 43 oblige le pouvoir occupant "de rétablir et d'assurer l'ordre et la vie publics."

Les autorités allemandes ont déclaré à plusieurs reprises qu'aucun Belge ne serait astreint à des travaux en opposition avec l'article 52.

women had received the fatal yellow cards. The twentieth came and almost before daylight, early in that cold, glacial dawn—there had been what we in America call

---

Conformément à l'article 43, Son Excellence le Gouverneur général s'est vu en droit et obligé de publier ses arrêtés des 14 et 15 août 1915, édictant des mesures contre ceux qui refusent de faire un travail d'intérêt public ou qui, par paresse, se soustraient au travail. De même l'expédition des sans-travail à d'autres lieux de travail n'est interdite par aucune disposition du droit des gens. L'Angleterre, la France et la Russie n'ont jamais hésité, tant qu'ils en ont eu l'occasion, d'éloigner des milliers d'habitants des territoires occupés par ces puissances et de contraindre ces gens au travail, bien souvent en les maltraitant indignement.

Je le demande: Pourquoi les protestataires, avant d'élevér la voix, n'ont-ils pas consulté les dispositions du droit des gens applicables en la matière?

"Attentat à la dignité et à la liberté des ouvriers." L'honneur et la dignité des ouvriers belges leur commandent-ils de se laisser nourrir eux et leurs familles, par l'assistance publique, alors qu'en d'autres localités ils peuvent se procurer un travail rémunérateur? La "liberté" exige-t-elle que des centaines et des centaines de mille ouvriers sains et robustes, poussés par un faux patriotisme ou par paresse, se croisent les bras, alors que l'existence de nombreux millions d'êtres réclame impérieusement la production des denrées alimentaires et le maintien du trafic?

"Crime contre l'humanité et les droits de la famille." La voix de l'humanité et le bien des familles commandent-ils que des hommes aptes au travail se traînent dans les cabarets, sur les places de jeux et aux coins des rues, pendant que les femmes et les enfants endurent au foyer les affres de la misère et de la faim? Est-ce à l'avantage des familles ouvrières que beaucoup de pères, de fils et de frères s'habituent à l'oisiveté, ou bien deviennent des voleurs et des criminels et finissent par échouer dans les prisons? N'est-il pas plus humain de contraindre les sans-travail à gagner pour leur famille le pain nécessaire?

"Esclavage et travail forcé comme pour les criminels." Est-ce l'esclavage, est-ce le travail forcé lorsque les ouvriers belges qui,

a blizzard—the men began to appear at the Gare du Midi. They came in groups of ten, of twenty, of fifty, some in warm clothes, with their bundles pathetically ready, others without even overcoats, shivering in the searching wind. With them were their women and children, come for the last good-by. The arrangements were diabolically perfect; all the streets were barred, and there was a squadron of Uhlans, grim and brutal as only Uhlans know how to be, to keep the people back, so that only those furnished with the yellow cards had the sinister distinction of admission to the lines. The men were taken inside the station, while those who had already bidden them precautionary and grievous farewells lingered in the anguish of a persistent hope behind those ropes, beyond the lances of the Uhlans. The hours passed; the selection went on within the walls of the station.

Now and then a man would bolt from the gaunt structure, dancing for very joy, some physical defect, some latent disease, long perhaps the subject of sad and morbid preoccupation, dreaded in itself as a portent of doom, a sentence of death, now proved to be a re-

déjà pendant la paix, cherchaient souvent du travail à l'étranger, se voient offrir à présent une occupation moyennant un salaire très élevé, sous les mêmes conditions et dans les mêmes circonstances qu'aux ouvriers allemands?

Pour terminer, je ferai remarquer qu'à l'occasion des premiers envois de sans travail, quelques erreurs et méprises se sont commises par le fait que les administrations communales belges avaient refusé d'aider à la désignation des intéressés. Son Excellence le Gouverneur général a immédiatement ordonné d'examiner les divers cas et de provoquer la rentrée des personnes expédiées abusivement. Plus les autorités belges faciliteront la tâche, plus les rigueurs et les erreurs seront évitées à l'avenir.

prieve instead, a means of liberation, so that its victim could fling himself into the arms of some waiting

---

(Translation:)

THE TRANSFER OF THE CHÔMEURS.

Notice of the Governor Lieutenant-general HURT, dated January 12, 1917.

The campaign of calumny and of lies carried out by enemies has been nourished lately by the sending away of the unemployed in Belgium. Protestations full of phraseology are raised against this measure, as much in the occupied territory of Belgium as in the countries of neutrals or enemies. Big words serving as a ground for these protestations are principally: "Violation of international law," "Assault on the dignity and on the liberty of Belgian working men," "Crime on humanity and on the family life," "Slavery and forced labour as for criminals." The greater part of the protestations made public count on the ignorance and credulity of the masses in order to spread dissatisfaction in Belgium, and hence to plunge the country in new woe. Up to the present time this design has failed because of the good sense of the population. However, under the effect of excitations without measure a certain number of working men sent away continue to esteem that the "honour" and "patriotism" demand that they refuse to go to work.

All those who live in Belgium know that there has been here for several years several hundreds of thousands of unemployed seeking occupation in vain; that many of the unemployed, from the fact that public charity is not sufficient, in many cases, to care for their families, have left the straight path; that under these conditions the insecurity of property, the love of gambling and of idleness, have increased in large measures. In many places armed bands of as many as forty have ravaged fields and gardens. In the neighborhood of Trois-Fontaines and other places veritable combats have taken place between German patrols of the forest service and those stealing wood and poachers. Clandestine commerce in alimentary products have taken on such proportions that an equitable distribution of these products and an equal provisioning of all classes of the population have become almost impossible.

In the presence of this situation, and in order to enlighten the

woman and mingle his tears of joy with hers, and so away, as though treading on air, some miracle having

---

mind, I bring the following to the knowledge of the population:

"Violation of international law." Following art. 52 of the Annex to The Hague Convention of October 18, 1907, the work demanded of inhabitants shall be of such a nature that it will not imply for the population the obligation to take part in operations of war against their country. Article 43 obliges the occupying Power to re-establish and to protect life and maintain public order.

The German authorities have declared several times that no Belgian will be compelled to work contrarily to art. 52. In conformity with art. 53, His Excellency the Governor-General has felt himself to have the right, and was obliged to publish his decrees of August 14 and 15, 1915, edicting measures against those who refused to work in the public interest or who, by laziness, avoid work. Besides, the sending of unemployed to other places of labour is not prohibited by any provision of international law. England, France, and Russia have never hesitated, whenever they had occasion to waive away thousands of inhabitants from territories occupied by these Powers, and they compelled these inhabitants to work, very often treating them with indignity.

I ask: "Why have not protestators, before waving their voice, consulted the provisions of international law applicable to this subject?"

"Assault on the dignity and on the liberty of working men." Does the honour and the dignity of Belgian working men command them to permit themselves and their families to be fed by public assistance when in other localities they can find remunerative labour? Does liberty demand that hundreds and hundreds of thousands of working men, wealthy and robust, impelled by a false patriotism or by laziness, fold their arms when the existence of millions of beings imperiously demands the production of foodstuffs and the maintenance of traffic?

"Crime against humanity and the right of families." Do the voice of humanity and the well-being of families demand that men fit for labour should loaf in public-houses, on playing-fields and on

restored life and hope. . . . But there were other women who waited all that day, until their tears dried in the dumb anguish of that cruel and monstrous separation.

Mr. Gregory had secured permission for the delegates of the C.R.B. to be present, and they distributed food and clothing to the men who were herded into the waiting cattle-cars and hurried away into that awful, and, as it proved for so many of them, that hopeless exile.

That same evening I received a delegation from the burgomasters of ten communes in La Louvière, near Charleroi, asking that permission be obtained to send to the deported men in Germany *caissettes,* boxes of food such as were sent to the prisoners of war. The German authorities had refused to permit this save in

---

street corners, while their wives and children at home endure the pangs of poverty and of hunger? Is it to the advantage of working men's families that many fathers, sons, and the brothers acquire the habit of laziness or become thieves and criminals and finish as wrecks in prisons? Is it not more human to compel the unemployed to work to gain the necessary bread for their families?

"Slavery and forced labour as for criminals." Is it slavery, is it forced labour, when Belgian workmen, who already in time of peace sought work in other countries, are now offered an occupation that will pay them large wages under the same conditions and in the same circumstances as German working men?

Finally, I shall point out that at the time when the first unemployed were sent away some errors and mistakes were committed because the Belgian communal administrations had refused to aid in designating the interested persons. His Excellency the Governor-General immediately ordered an examination of divers cases and brought about the return of those persons who were wrongly sent away. The greater facilities given by the Belgian authorities to this task, the more will rigorous measures and mistakes be avoided in the future.

certain isolated instances, and some Belgians, returning from their captivity, reported that even when such packages were received they only gave the authorities of the slave compounds an additional and effective means of coercing the deported Belgians to sign the labour contracts.

The seizures continued for days; the arctic weather grew more and more severe, and at last even the Germans were moved; they announced on Thursday that the deportations would be suspended. It was said, though I never had any means of verifying the figures, that at Brussels only about fifteen hundred were summoned, that of these seven hundred and fifty appeared, and that three hundred were deported, so that the capital did not suffer in comparison with other places.

Dr. Kellogg, back from the north of France, reported that the generals down there were in a blind rage over the failure of the peace plans, and were furiously determined to pull down the pillars of the world, that the unlimited submarine warfare was inevitable, and Baron von der Lancken, just then returning from Berlin, told a diplomat that the military party was in the saddle and that the *militaires* had decided on the expulsion of the neutral diplomats from Bucharest, saying, "We don't wish another such state of affairs as we've had in Belgium." It was said, too, that the Germans felt that the war was nearing its end, and that they could not win, and that, maddened by the response the Allies had made to the peace overtures, they would make war more frightful than ever.

The newspapers at Brussels had published mutilated transcripts from the President's Message of January twenty-second, but they published enough to make one

realize it as a great and historic document, one of those charters of human liberty that speak for voiceless peoples everywhere, and it was the only light in the darkness of the times. It produced its instant effect in Belgium, where the people, who had come to national consciousness through suffering, seemed somehow instinctively to understand and to appreciate the President long before others had recognized in him the leader of liberalism in a world where the forces of reaction were everywhere so strong. I had numerous instances of this understanding. *"Magnifique! mais magnifique!"* many a man exclaimed to me, and even a little girl, whose mother was in a German prison, wrote me a letter to express her joy, saying that it was a "hope for the people."

The German Kaiser's birthday fell on the twenty-seventh, and the Germans were celebrating an event that really seems to have been fraught with considerable interest for mankind. They fired salutes from cannon in the broad space of the Place Polaerts before the Palais de Justice—and to the delight of the Belgians the horses reared and injured eight soldiers. And in the Grand' Place they acted a comedy! German officers mounted to the portico of the Hôtel de Ville and the Maison du Roi, waving handkerchiefs to the crowds below—crowds composed of the horde of German civilians at Brussels summoned to impersonate the Brussels populace before the cinematographic machines that were industriously grinding in the corners of the beautiful square, taking pictures to be reproduced later as proof of the love the Belgians bore the invaders of their land and their homes, their liberties and their honour.

The sentiments in the hearts of those sad people dragging through those bleak streets on that Imperial

birthday were far other than those expressed by those waving handkerchiefs, and the servile *"Hoch! Hoch!"* of those docile folk in the Grand' Place, doing always as they were told.

These days, the last in that dark month of January, remain in my memory with the distinctness of etchings. They were so cold, so still and so highly charged with foreboding. Their incidents seemed invariably saddening; van Holder, for instance, taken suddenly ill just as his art, touched with some new, profounder quality by the sorrows of the war, must go at once to Switzerland, and I begged a *passierschein* for him. He went, and while it is of no relevance, I can recall each detail of the walk I took late one afternoon to tell his family that I had heard of his safe arrival at Davost-Platz. It had been snowing hard all day, and toward evening I went over to his house, past the old *estaminet,* le Vieux Cornet, in the garden of which on pleasant Sunday afternoons in summer I used to see the members of the archery clubs, in shirtsleeves, at their ancient, graceful sport, letting fly their arrows at the tufted tops of the tall poles; I trudged over to his house through the deep snow across the fields there behind La Ferme Rose, which all the artists of Brussels during so many years have loved to paint. The snow was piled high all around the garden that had been so laughing, so gay, all summer long. I rang at the high gate, and the bell clanged dismally against the ivy that mantled the façade of the house. There was no response any more; the family had gone to the home of relatives.

And I recall that other walk I took with Josse Allard in the twilight over the snow in the park, its shining surface glowing pink in the sun that had gone down

in flame behind the dark trees to the west; we talked of intimate things, vague hopes and dreams, and of *après la guerre.* The dogs tumbled and gamboled in the snow, and the old Greonendael at the closed château began to bay. . . .

Why do such immaterial scenes live vivid in the memory? Is it because they are already invested with that saddest of all sentiments—the feeling of *jamais plus?* The sense of it haunted me persistently, paralyzing all initiative, all energy. . . .

XLVI

THE END'S BEGINNING

THEN late one evening Ruddock sent me word that von der Lancken wished to see me at ten o'clock on the morrow; it was very urgent, though he had not said what it was about. There was no need to say; I knew that at last the end had come.

I drove to the Politische Abteilung the next morning before ten o'clock, and when I went into the little room where Conrad sat I read in his grave face the reflected seriousness of the situation. I asked him what was up, but he, dutifully keeping his secret, pretended not to know. I was shown into that yellow *salon,* the scene of so many anxious, so many difficult, so many painful hours during those years. I stood in the embrasure of the window looking out across the Rue Ducale into the park, watching the white sea-gulls that were there all that winter, as they were before the Palace of the King. They had been driven in from the North Sea by the rigours of the terrible winter to seek their food, and the people used to feed them, standing in the cold and flinging them the crumbs they could hardly spare. The gulls, wheeling with consummate skill on wings of silver and of pearl, there over the snow in the cold winter's sunlight, were concerned about their *ravitaillement,* too, poor lovely things!

And there was Villalobar, just come, standing beside me.

"C'est la guerre sous-marine—à outrance," he said, in a low, serious tone.

Von Moltke had told him. And somehow for a second I was glad that the moment at last had come, glad that a situation so long impossible was at last made clear, glad above all that neutrality was at an end. Van Vollenhoven arrived; he, too, had been summoned to hear the announcement. We waited. . . .

After a while von der Lancken entered in his grey uniform and the well-worn puttees, evidently from a morning canter in the Bois. He was pale, with those black circles under his eyes that always showed there when he was troubled or concerned. He made a little apology for having kept us waiting, and then waved us to our familiar seats at that marble-topped centre table. Dr. Brohn appeared in a great double-breasted blue coat with silver buttons, and enormous boots, as big as Bismarck's; and then Dr. Reith in a long morning coat, extremely high collar, and brilliant cravat. They were seated and then Lancken began formally:

"Messieurs, j'ai une communication importante à vous faire en ce qui concerne la guerre sous-marine. Je m'adresse à vous en votre qualité de protecteurs de l'œuvre de ravitaillement."

And then he asked Dr. Reith to read, and opening a great *dossier* Reith read to us the Note addressed by Herr Zimmermann to Mr. Gerard, declaring Germany's intention to blockade the coasts of Great Britain, France and Italy, and after he had read this he read a statement to the effect that the German Government did not wish the C.R.B. to cease functioning, and desired us to

consider what could be done to insure the continuance of the *ravitaillement*.[1] Then for three-quarters of an hour we discussed the new situation, which was so far beyond any decision of ours, or any hope of change, since it represented the will of the military party, whose

[1] The statement is as follows:

Il va sans dire que le Gouvernement Impérial n'a aucunement l'intention d'empêcher l'oeuvre humanitaire du ravitaillement de la Belgique. Mais le Gouvernement Impérial doit exiger que la Commission for Relief fera voyager ses navires en dehors de la zone interdite. Il a été prévu que les navires qui se trouvent le 1er février dans la zone interdite peuvent quitter, en prenant le chemin le plus direct, la dite zone sans craindre d'attaques imprévues, et que les navires se trouvant dans les portes anglais peuvent les quitter jusqu'au 4 février au soir, et peuvent traverser la zone interdite par la voie la plus directe. Toutefois la Commission for Relief est engagée de la manière le plus pressante à détourner par un avertissement immédiat tous les navires en cours de route vers les parages situées en dehors de la zone interdite. Les navires qui ne donneraient pas suite à un tel avertissement le feront à leurs propres risques et perils.

(Translation:)

It goes without saying that the Imperial Government has not the slightest intention of hindering the work of the *ravitaillement* of Belgium. But the Imperial Government must demand that the Commission for Relief cause its ships to travel outside the forbidden zone. It has been provided that the ships in the forbidden zone on the 1st February can leave the said zone, by the most direct route, without fear of unexpected attacks, and that the ships finding themselves in English ports can, up to the evening of the 4th February, leave them and can cross the forbidden zone by the most direct route. Nevertheless the Commission for Relief is urged in the most earnest manner to divert by an immediate notice all ships *en route* toward those waters situated outside the forbidden zone. The ships that do not give heed to such a notice will do so at their own risk and peril.

steady rise to autocratic power in Germany had been revealed by the successive measures of the deportations, the military power that must be consulted even before the decision in so small a matter as the granting of permission to a few English nurses and governesses to leave Belgium could be reached. Bissing, dying at Wiesbaden, was no longer the depository of sovereign power in Belgium but a mere figurehead in whose name the General Staff governed Belgium, as it governed the *étape* and the north of France. It was the moment that decided the fall of von Bethmann, approved every extravagance of von Tirpitz, and witnessed the apotheosis of von Hindenburg, though men there in Belgium, the inevitable sceptical, always seeking the power behind the throne, were contending that the burly hero owed his laurels to the genius of Ludendorff, the real intelligence in the General Staff.

Lancken, in giving us copies of the documents, gave us also little maps showing the lines drawn around Great Britain, Spain and Italy, those dead lines across which—incredible insolence!—American ships were not to pass. Looking at them I knew what America would say, and yet just then, studying for the moment those charts, we did not discuss that question. We followed the narrow and tortuous lane that had been traced for the C.R.B. ships around the Orkneys and John O'Groat, and around Italy and Spain, and then Villalobar, with his finger on the map of his own country, said:

"You haven't left us room enough even to go in bathing!"

We sent for M. Francqui and Mr. Gregory. What was to be done? Could the *ravitaillement* be preserved? I was glad of Gregory's presence, for his legal mind,

his clear conceptions, his logical thought, always pertinent and to the point, helped us to a decision that meant much for Belgium. He had intended to go to Rotterdam on the next day; he determined instead to go at once, and it was decided that M. Francqui should go with him, to communicate with the Belgian Government in an effort to induce Great Britain to permit the work of the C.R.B. to continue. I suggested that we telegraph to the heads of our respective States to ask them to arrange with the British Government a means whereby the C.R.B. ships could land at Rotterdam without having to stop at English ports to be searched for contraband, the control to be exercised at Rotterdam or at New York. While we were discussing this and agreeing to it, Brohn whispered to me:

"What will the President say? That is the important thing."

It was not for me to answer that question, though I thought that I might answer it, and answer it correctly, but I had the impression that the Germans, with their persistent misunderstanding of American psychology and character, were convinced even then that they could tack around this point by trimming the sails of long and tortuous diplomatic discussion. I had another impression, and that was that the Germans were certain that the submarines thus unleashed and set free to work their cruel and reckless will would win the war and win it quickly for Germany.

"It is hard," said Brohn, "but in the end it is kind, for we must end it. It is like a surgical operation." Brohn spoke generally in English; he had been much in America. And Lancken added:

"Oui, il faut que ca finisse."

And so we separated to send off our telegrams to Washington and Madrid. Van Vollenhoven was going to The Hague for the week-end—it was on a Thursday. Lancken promised passports for Gregory and Francqui; they would go to Holland that afternoon.

It was very cold and clear the next day, what enthusiasts call fine weather. We waited and watched. And yet I was perfectly certain of the answer; it would be war, inevitable from that moment in August, 1914, when the two old systems clashed once more in a world that, by the many inventions which man, originally made upright, had wickedly sought out, had grown too small for both to live in it any longer together. It had been inevitable from the moment when the war brought face to face at last two civilizations, two ideals, two faiths—on the one hand the ideal of liberty and human justice, on the other that of brute force and material success. It was the logical conclusion of the whole question raised by the sinking of the *Lusitania,* and nobody who was not the dupe of the stupendous illusions of that other world in which we used to live ever would have supposed that Germans could restrain themselves from using, once they had it, such a weapon as the submarine, which, combining ruthlessness and stealth, exercised on their maniacal minds a fatal fascination, and, by one of those ironies with which history is replete, was destined to lure them ultimately to their own defeat.

War! The word assumed a new meaning as I thought of my own country involved in it. For as the Germans had conceived it and forced it on the world, war was more hideous than ever.

"Der Kreig hat garnichts elegantes mehr," as the old Emperor Franz-Josef said.

And yet, strangely, I felt no regret in it. I was suddenly, not exultant, but proud and glad that my country had arisen in the fierceness and pride of its athletic democracy and taken up the insolent defiance of the power that I had come to know too well; and then suddenly I realized that I had another cause for resentment against the Germans—they had made me insensible to the feeling that once, long since, I should have expected to find, in such a moment, in my breast.

I was almost sorry that I had not sent that presumptuous telegram to Washington in those first nights of the war—how long ago it seemed! I might have had the petty human satisfaction of being on record, of posing as a vindicated prophet, of saying, "I told you so." Strange, that so many in my own country had not seen it! But then they had not seen Germans, modern, imperialistic super-Germans. They knew only the old kind of the Sunday afternoon beer-garden and the meerschaum pipe, listening to the band play sentimental waltzes. No sentimental waltz now, but another tune to dance to!

XLVII

THE RAVITAILLEMENT ASSURED

I SPENT the whole of the following day, Saturday, at the Legation, waiting for word from Washington. Sunday came, and we waited all day at the Orangerie, where it was still so peaceful, the great park steeped in the white solitude of the crisp snow. At tea-time Villalobar arrived, and even before he had spoken a word I could read in his face the news he brought. The President had broken off diplomatic relations; he had it from Lancken, who had shown him the Reuter and Wolfe despatches. The Marquis had hardly uttered the words before Ruddock arrived with Gregory, just back from Holland.

"Yes," said Gregory in his business-like way, "the President had recalled Gerard and given Bernstorff his passports."

We sat there in what for the moment was futile discussion of the event, wondering what we should do with the *ravitaillement*.

The next morning I drove to the Legation through bleak, deserted streets; few were abroad, save that at the King's stables on the boulevard in the fog a knot of people was gathered to watch the seizure of horses; a great round-up was in progress under the guard of Uhlans sitting their horses, with long lances and soiled guidons. At the Legation I heard that von der Lancken

had gone to Berlin, but I went to see von Moltke. He was very grave; Lancken would not be back until Thursday, but he had left word that he hoped to see me then. They were all depressed at the Politische Abteilung—evidently they had had no notion that the President would act so promptly and so decisively. They were under no illusions as to what a rupture in diplomatic relations must lead to; von Moltke said it would soon be war. He could not imagine why America so misunderstood Germany, he said, as he translated the President's address for me from the German text into French; we talked a while, but to no purpose, since neither of us knew anything as yet officially.

All morning long and all that afternoon the Legation was crowded with callers asking for news, Blancas, my Argentine colleague, and Burgomaster Lemonnier among them. Villalobar was in and out, and toward evening Mr. Gregory came with M. Francqui. M. Francqui wished the men of the C.R.B. to remain and to continue their work, and even as we talked a telegram came from London, asking that I announce to the Belgian people that the *ravitaillement* would go on. And for the first time that day we smiled and shook our heads in the old hopelessness of ever making those "outside" understand the conditions under which we lived in Belgium, where there was no free public life such as the Occident knew, and where no one, except the German authorities, made public announcements.

We reëstablished ourselves at the Legation, which, with the confusion of callers and cards, with trunks and packing-boxes everywhere, doors fanning icy blasts on one, all the bustle of preparation to leave, was not a cheerful place. There is sadness in all parting, and there

was something peculiarly saddening in this; men came to bid me good-by, tears in their eyes as they did so; and that evening when we escaped for dinner to the Allards, our good de Sinçay, lifting his glass to propose my wife's health, made a touching little speech which he could not finish. Our situation had ever this unique quality, of which I fear I have not made enough in these pages; we were among friends who had grown very dear in the sufferings we had shared. And now that we were going that very fact made it all the harder.

But though we said good-by, we did not go. We lingered on the scene perforce, with an embarrassing sense of anti-climax. Nor could we plan to go; I was waiting for instructions from Washington and for Lancken's return from Berlin. From this anxiety and uncertainty, there was no relief in work, for the news had stricken all action with a paralysis; we could only sit about and wait, while Ruddock and I wondered what to do with the cipher codes when we went, whether to burn them or risk taking them with us.

My communication with my Government and with the outside world had been suspended; my cablegrams were refused and while we were speculating as to when and how we should go I had a telephone message from Count Harrach, saying that there was a press despatch from Washington which indicated that I might stay in Brussels if the Germans made no objections. Then on the heels of this unexpected news came a polite note from Count von Moltke, transmitting a package of telegrams in cipher. We seized them eagerly, and Ruddock and Herter set themselves to the task of deciphering them. We stood anxiously by, Mrs. Ruddock, my wife, Merritt, Swift, an attaché lately detailed to the

Legation and just arrived from Washington, and I hanging eagerly on the cipher groups as slowly they disclosed their secrets—surely the instructions would be among them! The first despatch was from Mr. Hoover, who was in Washington, ordering the men of the C.R.B. to remain at their posts; there were other despatches relating to other details; and then at last the one, the principal despatch. It was very still in that room, the atmosphere of which had palpitated with so many sensations during those long months and years since, in those hot nights of August, 1914, the despatches deciphered there had come to have an interest almost historic; the words came out slowly, one after another, Ruddock swiftly turning the leaves of the code, Herter writing down the translation. Yes, it was the despatch for which we had been watching and waiting; only it seemed strangely brief. There was some difficulty with the ciphers, but finally they decoded a sentence to the effect that the Legation and the archives and the protection of American interests were to be transferred to ——, and Herter suddenly tossed his pencil to the desk, Ruddock slammed the code book shut with a dull report, and they sat back in their chairs and laughed. The despatch ended there. We knew no more than we knew before. It was, as it proved after the work of rectification and verification had been accomplished, a correction of some previous despatch, one that had not reached us. So there was nothing to do but to wait.

Count Harrach called that afternoon on behalf of the Governor-General, who had just returned from Wiesbaden, and, still ill, had taken to his bed at the château de Trois-Fontaines. Count Harrach presented the

Governor-General's compliments and expressed his hope that I arrange to stay in Belgium.

"His Excellency says it would be a calamity if the *ravitaillement* were to come to an end," said the Count. "He wishes very greatly that you stay to insure its continuance. In Germany"—he paused, looked at me a moment, and went on—"in Germany we have hardly enough to eat ourselves; we have none to give the Belgians."

Through my mind there flashed the recollection of the logical arguments of all those theorists who had spoken with such owlish wisdom of The Hague Conventions and the duty of the occupant to nourish the population.

"On est très serré," the Count was saying, and he gave a little laugh as if to cover whatever embarrassment there was in the situation.

I asked the Count to make my compliments and to give my thanks to the Governor-General and to say that I should do all in my power to aid in sustaining the work of the *ravitaillement,* but that I could say nothing definitely until I had received instructions. It was a curious sensation, finding myself at last in a position I had long anticipated and prepared for; I had thought it out in the watches of the night, and decided that in that emergency we should replace the American delegates by Dutch and Spanish delegates, and Hoover had been of that mind; thus the *ravitaillement* might go on. But now that the long-anticipated emergency had arisen my solution was not so simple. That is the way with emergencies; try how we will to prepare for them, the imagination can not envisage all the possibilities; the expected never happens; the one thing

certain of any situation is that it will never be what one thought it would be. I had never had any illusions as to that euphemism "rupture of diplomatic relations"; it meant war, soon or late, and I had felt from the beginning that it would be impossible for the Americans long to remain in Belgium; they could not safely continue their work in an enemy country. Diplomatically my position was simple enough; I had only to leave Belgium and proceed to Havre, the seat of the Belgian Government. But there was another complication; I could not go and leave the men of the C.R.B. behind. I had thought of that, too, in the watches of the night. Thus, even while Harrach sat there, and after he had gone, I was turning the old problem over in my mind; the feeding of the Belgians must go on, the brave little nation must be kept alive—and the men of the C.R.B. must be got out of Belgium.

The weather seemed to grow colder with each day, a veritable *froid de loup,* as the French say. The corridors of the Legation resounded with the sound of hammer and of saw, as Gustave packed up the archives, and there were callers in such throngs as we had not known since those August days of 1914, men asking for news, men to bid us farewell, members of the C.R.B. come to have their passports put in order. Among the callers one morning was M. Louis Franck, the eloquent deputy and acting Burgomaster of Antwerp, the leader of the Flemish movement in Belgium; a striking man in appearance, Franck, with his full reddish beard; he could be eloquent and convincing in four languages. He came on behalf of the provincial committee of Antwerp to ask me to remain.

"Your presence will be a comfort to the people," he

generously said. "They will be less hungry with you here than with you away. In remote villages in Flanders humble folk are praying to-night that you remain."

His musical voice, like some deep-toned instrument of many melodious strings, the rich, rolling accent in which he spoke French, made his plea very moving.

"Même si le ravitaillement continue, restez parmi nous, car le reconfort moral que vous nous donnerez nous fera du bien."

Count von Moltke continued to send me my cablegrams and finally the important one arrived instructing me to turn American interests over to Villalobar, to leave Belgium at once, and to proceed to Havre to take up my residence near the Belgian Government; there were many details as to closing the four consulates in Belgium. Mr. Diederich, Consul-General at Antwerp, Mr. Johnson, Consul at Ghent, Mr. Heingartner, Consul at Liége, were to accompany me. Mr. Watts, Consul-General at Brussels, had gone to America in January and was already happily out of it all; Nasmith, Vice Consul, was to go to Amsterdam.

But this despatch was altered by another, a correction of the correction we had received a few days before, and thus amended, it authorized me to remain in Brussels if my presence would insure the continuance of the *ravitaillement,* and it could be satisfactorily arranged.

When Lancken returned from Berlin I went at once to see him, there in his little warm upper room overlooking the frozen snowy park, where the poor seagulls were volplaning on their strong white wings over the spot where the people threw crumbs through the iron fence to them. He received me cordially, and seat-

ing himself at his littered desk, said that the rupture in diplomatic relations had greatly surprised him, and as he felt again the shock of that surprise he sank back in his chair and flung up his hands, and exclaimed:

"Et mon Dieu! à quoi bon? à quoi bon?"

His blue eyes fixed me with their question, and he went on:

"J'attendais à une protestation très forte, mais oui! Mais pas à ceci!"

I thought that there were yet other surprises in store for those minds at Berlin that had so persistently misunderstood America and America's character, and that of her patient President, but the time was past for any explanation of mine to avail. What of the *ravitaillement*, I asked.

The Baron wished me to remain, and he said that the Governor-General would be grateful if I were to remain.

But in what capacity?

Oh, evidently not as Minister; he made that clear, but as, shall we say, Honorary Chairman of the C.R.B.? They would consent to half a dozen members of the Commission remaining to supervise the work, for instance, Gregory and Gray, perhaps Ruddock and Consul-General Diederich. He would feel in my presence an assurance and would personally assume the responsibility for my treatment. However, the freedom of the men in the C.R.B. would meanwhile be restricted; they could no longer have the use of their motor-cars. And besides, he would permit himself merely to mention the fact that since my nation had broken off diplomatic relations with Germany I was guilty of a diplomatic incorrection in keeping my flag flying on the Legation.

I suspected that in this last observation he had etiquette and usage on his side, but as I listened to all the rest I grew sick at heart, for under the conditions he proposed we could not with dignity remain, and I knew the processes of German official thought so well that I had little hope, after that, of our reaching an agreement that would insure the continuance of the *ravitaillement*. The conversation, so far as any practical ends were concerned, had been futile. I asked the Baron to put his proposal in writing, and came away.

I sent for Gregory and told him of the official attitude toward the C.R.B., and he decided to apprise Hoover of the fact by cable at once; Gray was going out to Rotterdam that afternoon, and he could send the despatch from there. The threat to curtail the liberties of the C.R.B. was unexpected, however little there was in the rest to surprise us, for at the Vermittlungsstelle Gregory had been told that all the members of the C.R.B. could remain with their privileges unimpaired, and on the strength of this assurance Gregory had already sent the seven men for the north of France back to their posts.

It was not a comfortable position in which to be placed, and we were very much undecided as to what we should do, and I recall that Ruddock, as though in search of some ultimate criterion, took down and dusted an old volume and read the Treaty of 1797 between America and Prussia, with no more satisfaction, alas! than that of the academic and perhaps patriotic pleasure we could take in the English in which Benjamin Franklin had written it.

But even the wisdom of Poor Richard was unavailing in those days; we must seek some solution for a

situation which even his sagacity could not foresee.

Young Herter's problem was settled, at any rate, for that evening the Germans sent him passports to leave via Switzerland. Mr. Gerard was leaving Berlin that evening, and as Herter was attached to the Berlin Embassy he must go with his chief, and the word that accompanied the passports told Herter to go as soon as possible. He did not stand upon the order of his going but was off by an early morning train, and though he was arrested *en route* and confined for hours in some sort of German prison or Kommandantur, he did finally, after two or three days, reach Switzerland in safety.

The written statement of Baron von der Lancken's proposal took the form of a letter addressed by him to the Marquis de Villalobar, who transmitted it to me. It was a letter in which the desire was expressed that the work of *ravitaillement* continue, that the members of the C.R.B., or some of them, remain in Belgium, and that I remain as well, though there was a sedulous avoidance of any reference to my official capacity and a marked omission of all the official forms of respect usual in diplomacy, forms to which the Germans themselves always attached the greatest importance, and the disregard of which in their own case they would instantly have resented. There was no reason why they should continue to have diplomatic intercourse with me after my Government had expressed its unwillingness to have any further diplomatic relations with Germany. Had my position alone been involved it would all have been very simple; I should have had only to ask for my passports and go. But nothing was ever simple in Belgium; each situation there was complex, involved, complicated,

novel and without precedent. The work of *ravitaillement* which America had undertaken remained, and the need of it remained more urgent than ever, and there were three score Americans engaged in that work still in Belgium, for whose safety I was responsible. It was evident from Baron von der Lancken's letter to the Marquis of Villalobar that the first concern of the German authorities was that if the *ravitaillement* ceased and the Belgians were left to starve, the onus should not rest on the Germans, and I was equally anxious that it should not rest on the Americans, so I replied in a letter to the Marquis in which I set forth the American position as I conceived and interpreted it.[1]

---

[1] Politische Abteilung
bei dem
Generalgouverneur in Belgien

V. 2676 Bruxelles, le 10 février, 1917.

Monsieur le Ministre:

La rupture des relations diplomatiques entre le Gouvernement Impérial et le Gouvernement des Etats-Unis d'Amérique pourrait faire naître l'impression qu'une situation nouvelle a été créée pour l'ouvre du ravitaillement de le population civile des territoires occupés de la Belgique et du Nord de la France.

Pour éviter que des malentendus ne se produisent à cette occasion, je m'empresse de faire savoir à Votre Excellence qu'une pareille opinion me paraîtrait erronée, cette oeuvre jouissant du haut patronage du Gouvernement que Votre Excellence représente et de celui des Pays-Bas en même temps et au même titre que le Gouvernement des Etats-Unis. Si, donc, le Gouvernement de Sa Majesté le Roi d'Espagne estime devoir continuer à accorder sa haute protection à l'oeuvre du ravitaillement, j'ai l'honneur d'informer Votre Excellence que le Gouvernement Impérial et que Monsieur le Gouverneur Général en Belgique accorderont à l'avenir comme l'ont fait jusqu'ici, et en conformité avec les accords conclus, leur aide et leur protection à cette oeuvre si bienfaisante pour les

Then, suddenly, we were all asked to meet at the Politische Abteilung to discuss the situation. The Baron von der Lancken, Dr. Reith and Dr. Brohn were there, and the Marquis of Villalobar, M. van Vollenhoven and I. There was a new and vital complication; the question of

---

populations éprouvées des territoires occupées de la Belgique et du Nord de la France.

La possibilité devant être envisagée que certains membres américains de la Commission for Relief in Belgium estimeront devoir retourner dans leur pays, je pense que Votre Excellence croira utile de remplacer ceux-ci par d'autres personnes qui paraîtraient, à Votre Excellence, pouvoir convenir pour cette mission, la Commission ayant été depuis sa création, composée de membres neutres de nationalités diverses.

Monsieur le Gouverneur Général désire toutefois soumettre à l'appréciation de Votre Excellence si Elle juge désirable que certains membres américains de la Commission for Relief continuent à exercer leurs fonctions à la direction de cette Commission à Bruxelles. Si Votre Excellence était de cet avis, Monsieur le Gouverneur Général serait content de voir Monsieur Brand Whitlock consacrer aux travaux de la Commission for Relief une activité dont, je suis certain, cette institution ne se verrait privée qu'à regret; je prierais dans ce cas Votre Excellence de bien vouloir s'entendre avec Monsieur Brand Whitlock sur la forme sur laquelle son concours pourrait rester acquis à la dite Commission.

Je prie Votre Excellence de bien vouloir me faire connaître les mesures qu'Elle compte prendre pour assurer, comme pas le passé, le bon fonctionnement de l'oeuvre dont Elle a bien voulu accepter le patronage et qui poursuit avec tant de succés depuis bientôt deux ans et demi, le but humanitaire et élevé d'allegor pour les populations des territoires occupés le fardeau de la guerre.

Je profite de l'occasion pour renouveler à Votre Excellence les assurances de ma haute considération.

(*Signé*) LANCKEN.

A SON EXCELLENCE LE MARQUIS DE VILLALOBAR,
Ministre d'Espagne,
Bruxelles.

the route to be taken by the ships of the C.R.B. had been raised. The Germans had insisted that the ships fol-

---

(Translation:)

Politische Abteilung
bei dem
Generalgouverneur in Belgien

V. 2676 Brussels, 10 February, 1917.

Mr. Minister:

The rupture of diplomatic relations between the Imperial Government and the Government of the United States of America might create the impression that the work of provisioning the civil population of the occupied territories of Belgium and the north of France is facing a new situation.

In order to prevent misunderstanding from arising on this occasion, I hasten to inform Your Excellency that such an opinion appears to me to be erroneous, since this work operates under the high patronage of the Government which Your Excellency represents and that of the Netherlands, together with and on the same basis as the Government of the United States. If, then, His Majesty the King of Spain feels inclined to continue to accord his protection to the work of the *ravitaillement,* I have the honour to inform Your Excellency that the Imperial Government and the Governor General in Belgium will grant in the future, as they have done up to the present time, and in conformity with the engagements entered into, their aid and their protection to this work, so beneficial to the suffering populations of the occupied territories of Belgium and the north of France.

Having to envisage the possibility that certain American members of the Commission for Relief in Belgium will feel that they must return to their country, I feel that Your Excellency will believe it worth while to replace these members by other persons who appear to Your Excellency to be suitable for this mission, the Commission having been since its creation composed of neutral members of various nationalities.

The Governor-General, however, desires to submit to the approbation of Your Excellency the question as to whether he considers it desirable that certain American members of the Commission for

low the narrow passage-way which they had marked out around the northern part of the British Isles to Rotter-

Relief in Belgium continue to exercise their functions in the direction of the Commission in Brussels. If Your Excellency were of that opinion, the Governor-General would be happy to see Mr. Brand Whitlock devote to the work of the Commission for Relief an activity of which I am certain this institution would see itself deprived only with regret; in this event I should beg Your Excellency to be good enough to agree with Mr. Brand Whitlock on the form in which his assistance could remain assured to the said Commission.

I beg Your Excellency to have the goodness to inform me as to the measures you plan to take for the purpose of assuring, as in the past, the proper functioning of the work of which you have been good enough to accept the patronage, and which has pursued with such success for almost two and a half years the humanitarian and high end of lightening for the populations of the occupied territories the burden of the war.

I profit by this occasion to renew to Your Excellency the assurance of my high consideration.

(*Signed*) LANCKEN.

To His Excellency the Marquis of Villalobar,
Minister of Spain,
Brussels.

LEGATION OF THE
UNITED STATES OF AMERICA

No. 602. Bruxelles, le 12 février, 1917.

MON CHER COLLÈGUE ET AMI:

J'ai reçu avec plaisir votre aimable communication du 11 courant, par laquelle vous m'envoyez une lettre, datée du 10 février, de S. E. Monsieur le Baron von der Lancken-Wakenitz. Dans cette lettre, S. E. Monsieur le Baron von der Lancken-Wakenitz dit que "la rupture des relations diplomatiques entre le Gouvernement Impérial et le Gouvernement des Etats-Unis d'Amérique pourrait faire naître l'impression qu'une situation nouvelle a été créée pour l'oeuvre du ravitaillement des territoires occupés de la Belgique et du nord de la France"—et—"pour éviter que des malentendus ne se produisent à cette occasion," il s'empresse de faire savoir à Votre

dam, and the British Government had insisted that the ships continue to touch at a British port to be overhauled

---

Excellence que "si le Gouvernement de Sa Majesté le Roi d'Espagne estime devoir continuer à accorder sa haute protection à l'oeuvre du ravitaillement, le Gouvernement Impérial et S. E. Monsieur le Gouverneur Général en Belgique accorderont à l'avenir, comme ils l'ont fait jusqu'ici et en conformité avec les accords conclus, leur aide et leur protection."

S. E. Monsieur le Baron von der Lancken-Wakenitz a l'obligeance de dire également que S. E. Monsieur le Gouverneur Général désire soumettre à l'appréciation de Votre Excellence si Elle juge désirable que certains membres américains de la Commission for Relief in Belgium continuent à exercer leurs fonctions à la direction de cette Commission à Bruxelles.

Précisément, au moment où la nouvelle de la rupture des relations diplomatiques entre le Gouvernement des Etats-Unis d'Amérique et le Gouvernement Impérial a été annoncée, Monsieur Hoover, Directeur de la Commission for Relief in Belgium, a fait savoir que la Commission continuerait à fonctionner et à assurer le ravitaillement de la population civile de la Belgique et de la partie occupée du nord de la France, si l'on pouvait trouver le moyen de concilier les différences qui existent entre les groupes de belligérants en ce qui concerne la route que les bateaux de la Commission for Relief in Belgium doivent suivre pour porter leur cargaison jusqu'à Rotterdam. Comme Votre Excellence le sait, en même temps que Monsieur Hoover nous envoyait cette nouvelle par télégramme, il notifiait à tous les membres de la Commission for Relief in Belgium son désir de les voir rester à leur poste jusqu'à ce que l'on trouve le moyen de sortir de la situation nouvelle.

En ce qui concerne, donc, les membres de la Commission for Relief in Belgium, puisque, d'une part, depuis le commencement de la guerre, plus de 140 Messieurs américains sont venus en Belgique pour travailler pour la Commission for Relief in Belgium sans aucune rémunération, et sans aucune récompense sauf la satisfaction d'avoir fait leur devoir dans une oeuvre purement humanitaire, et que d'autre part, leur directeur a ordonné à ceux d'entre eux, au nombre de 40 environ, qui sont actuellement en Belgique, de rester à

for contraband. The British Government was willing to forego this search if the ships were given safe con-

---

leur poste, je suis heureux de dire que les Américains sont prêts à continuer toute leur aide et tout leur concours à cette oeuvre; et si, dans les accords que nous esperons tous voir intervenir entre les intéressés, il semble désirable que les Américains restent à la direction de cette Commission, ils le feront avec le dévouement qu'ils y ont apporté jusqu'à présent.

Evidemment, il y a d'autres questions que celles qui sont envisagées dans la lettre de S. E. Monsieur le Baron von der Lancken-Wakenitz, c'est à dire celles qui concernent le fonctionnement de la Commission en dehors du pays dont la population bénéficie de l'activité de l'oeuvre. Comme vous le savez, la Commission for Relief in Belgium, par ses bureaux de New-York, de Londres et de Rotterdam, et avec le concours de nombruex sous-organismes, assure l'accomplissement de sa tâche, en conduisant les bateaux à travers les mers jusqu'au port de Rotterdam. Les évènements récents ont augmenté, dans la plus large mesure, les difficultés, déjà si grandes, de cette tâche: difficulté d'obtenir les bateaux et les marins, prix élevé des assurances, difficulté de tracer sa route parmi les différents champs de mines, les différentes zones dangereuses et les différentes réservations faites dans la mer par les différents belligérants, ainsi que les exigences, souvent en opposition, des différents gouvernements. Le problem est devenu aujourd'hui d'une gravité énorme.

Cependant, comme vous le savez, Monsieur Hoover, qui est à New-York, et d'autres personnes intéressées dans l'oeuvre, cherchent incessement le moyen de sortir de toutes les difficultés. Votre Excellence a même eu la bonté d'assurer Monsieur Hoover de son désir généreux de lui porter toute l'aide et tout le concours possibles, et je suis sûr que si tout le monde y met toute la bonne volonté que Votre Excellence a mise dans cette oeuvre dès le commencement, nous trouverons le moyen de surmonter les difficultés actuelles et d'assurer, pendant le temps où cette guerre doit encore infliger ses maux et ses horreurs sur la terre, la continuation de cette oeuvre à laquelle vous et moi avons travaillé depuis le début.

duct through the danger zone. And this the Germans refused.

"We are not going to have the English putting the C.R.B. flag on their ships," said von der Lancken, "and thus passing through the danger zone."

It was a point that could be settled only at Berlin, and

Il me paraît donc que si l'on parvient à solutionner le problème qui se pose à l'extérieur—ce que je crois et espère de tout mon coeur—puisque la Commission for Relief in Belgium est toute disposée à poursuivre son oeuvre, nous trouverons le moyen d'arranger les questions qui nous concernent directement, ici dans le pays, et qui sont peut-être moins difficiles à solutionner que les autres, comme nous avons si souvent, depuis l'origine de l'organisme, trouvé le moyen de résoudre les grandes difficultés qui en étaient inséparables.

Dans sa lettre S. E. Monsieur le Baron von der Lancken-Wakenitz a l'obligeance de dire que si certains membres de la Commission for Relief in Belgium continuent à exercer leurs fonctions à la direction de cette Commission, S. E. Monsieur le Governor Général "serait content de voir Monsieur Brand Whitlock consacrer aux travaux de la Commission une activité dont, je suis certain, cette institution ne se verrait privée qu'à regret," et il prie Votre Excellence "de bien vouloir s'entendre avec Monsieur Brand Whitlock sur la forme dans laquelle sons concours pourrait rester acquis à la dite Commission."

Je suis vraiment très sensible à cette marque d'égard, et serais très heureux de continuer à apporter à l'oeuvre l'intérêt et les soins que je lui ai voués depuis sa création, de toute façon compatible avec la position que j'ai l'honneur d'occuper au Gouvernement des Etats-Unis d'Amérique.

Veuillez recevoir, mon cher Collègue et ami, les assurances de ma haute considération et de mes sentiments les plus sincèrement dévoués.

(*Signé*) BRAND WHITLOCK.

A SON EXCELLENCE MONSIEUR LE MARQUIS DE VILLALOBAR,
etc., etc.
Bruxelles.

we decided to invoke the services of the Spanish Ambassador at that capital.

(Translation:)

LEGATION OF THE
UNITED STATES OF AMERICA

No. 602. Brussels, 12 February, 1917.

MY DEAR COLLEAGUE AND FRIEND:

I received with pleasure your kind communication of the 11th instant, by which you send me a letter, dated the 10th of February, from H. E. the Baron von der Lancken-Wakenitz. In this letter H. E. the Baron von der Lancken-Wakenitz says that "the rupture of diplomatic relations between the Imperial Government and the Government of the United States of America might create the impression that the work of provisioning the civil population of the occupied territories of Belgium and the north of France is facing a new situation,"—and—"in order to prevent misunderstandings from arising on this occasion," he hastens to inform Your Excellency that "if His Majesty the King of Spain feels inclined to continue to accord his high protection to the work of the *ravitaillement*, the Imperial Government and H. E. the Governor-General in Belgium will grant in the future, as they have done up to the present time, and in conformity with the engagements entered into, their aid and their protection."

H. E. the Baron von der Lancken-Wakenitz is kind enough to say also that H. E. the Governor-General desires to submit to the approbation of Your Excellency "the question as to whether he considers it desirable that certain American members of the Commission for Relief in Belgium continue to exercise their functions in the direction of this Commission at Brussels."

Precisely at the moment when the news of the rupture of diplomatic relations between the Government of the United States of America and the Imperial Government was announced, Mr. Hoover, the Director of the Commission for Relief in Belgium, made it known that the Commission would continue to function and to assure the *ravitaillement* of the civil population of Belgium and of the occupied portion of the north of France, if means could be found to reconcile the differences existing between the groups of belliger-

The Baron von der Lancken disclosed a plan whereby his Government proposed to replace the American delegates by delegates of other nationality.

---

ents concerning the route which the ships of the Commission for Relief in Belgium must follow to carry their cargoes to Rotterdam. As Your Excellency knows, at the same time that Mr. Hoover sent this news to us by telegram he notified all the members of the Commission for Relief in Belgium of his desire to have them remain at their posts until a way out of this new situation was discovered.

So far, then, as the members of the Commission for Relief in Belgium are concerned, since, on the one hand, more than 140 Americans have come into Belgium since the beginning of the war to work for the Commission for Relief in Belgium, with no remuneration and with no recompense whatever, save the satisfaction of having done their duty in a purely humanitarian work, and since, on the other hand, their Director has ordered those of them, about 40 in number who are actually in Belgium, to remain at their posts, I am happy to say that the Americans are prepared to continue to give all their aid and all their assistance in this work; and if, in the engagements which we all hope to see entered into between the interested parties, it seems desirable that the Americans remain in control of this Commission, they will do so with the devotion which they have thus far shown.

Obviously there are other questions than those which are envisaged in the letter of H. E. the Baron von der Lancken-Wakenitz—that is to say, those which concern the operation of the Commission outside of the country whose population benefits from the activity of the charity. As you know, the Commission for Relief in Belgium, through its offices in New York, in London, and in Rotterdam, and with the assistance of numerous sub-organizations assures the accomplishment of its task of conducting the ships across the seas to the port of Rotterdam. Recent events have increased in the largest degree the difficulties, already so great, of this task: the difficulty of obtaining ships and seamen, the increased rate of insurance, the difficulty of tracing a route among the different mine fields, the different danger zones, and the different reservations made on the sea by the different belligerents, as well as the demands, often

"The Swiss Government had offered Swiss delegates, and the German Government had accepted," he said.

---

in opposition, of the different Governments. The problem to-day has become one of enormous gravity.

However, as you know, Mr. Hoover, who is in New York, and other persons interested in the work, are now seeking the means of overcoming these difficulties. Your Excellency has even had the kindness to assure Mr. Hoover of his generous desire to lend him all aid and assistance possible, and I am sure that if every one puts in all the good will that Your Excellency has shown in this work since the beginning, we shall find the means of overcoming the present difficulties and of assuring during the time that this war must yet inflict its evils and its horrors on the earth, the continuation of this work in which you and I have laboured since the beginning.

It seems to me, then, that if—as I believe and hope with all my heart—a solution of the problems which present themselves on the outside is reached, since the Commission for Relief is altogether disposed to continue its work, we shall find the means of settling the questions that concern us directly, here in the country, and which are perhaps less difficult to solve than the others, as we have so often, since the beginning of the organization, found the means of resolving the great difficulties that were inseparable from it.

In his letter H. E. the Baron von der Lancken-Wakenitz is kind enough to say that if certain members of the Commission for Relief in Belgium continue to exercise their functions in the direction of this Commission, H. E. the Governor-General "would be happy to see Mr. Brand Whitlock devote to the work of the Commission for Relief an activity of which I am certain this institution would see itself deperived only with regret," and he begs Your Excellency "to be good enough to agree with Mr. Brand Whitlock on the form in which his assistance could remain assured to the said Commission."

I am truly very sensible to this mark of regard and I should be happy to continue to contribute to the work the interest and the care that I have devoted to it since its creation, in any way compatible with the position that I have the honour to occupy under the Government of the United States of America.

But Villalobar promptly resented this as an interference.

I beg you to accept, my dear Colleague and friend, the assurance of my high consideration and of my most sincere devotion.

(*Signed*) BRAND WHITLOCK.

To His Excellency the Marquis of Villalobar,
etc., etc.
Brussels.

Legation de España
en
Belgica

Bruxelles, le 26 février, 1917.

Mon cher Collègue et Ami:

Je viens de recevoir votre lettre du 12 courant se référant à ma communication du 11 du même mois vous transmettant celle du 10 de Son Excellence Monsieur le Baron von der Lancken-Wakenitz.

En remerciant Votre Excellence de ses bienveillantes et amicales paroles je n'ai pas besoin de lui renouveler ni mon attachement ni le dévouement que j'ai pour sa personne et pour la noble cause qui a uni dans les annales de cette horrible guerre et nos deux noms et ceux de nos pays dans une seule et humanitaire idée qui a été celle de sauver de la famine sept millions d'habitants du pays auprès duquel nous nous honorons étant accredités à celle d'aider cette pauvre Belgique dans les horreurs de la guerre. Pendant trois années, mon cher Collègue, nous avons travaillé la main dans la main et les coeurs hauts à cette fin, et les heureux résultats obtenus ont mérité pour nos Patries et pour nos drapeaux, honneurs et bénédictions. Le Nouveau Monde dont Votre Excellence représente une des plus grandes et glorieuses puissances en union étroite avec la Vieille Nation d l'Europe qui le découvrit, dont je m'honore d'être, quoiqu'indigne le Représentant, ont pu par notre fraternelle entente accomplir une oeuvre qui reste au milieu de la débâcle qui nous entoure la seule internationale, la seule neutre et une des plus glorieuses de cette épopée tragique.

Elle aurait pu aussi, accomplir une amitié étroite entre nos deux âmes et nos deux esprits, si la bonté de Votre Excellence n'avait pas suffi pour le faire d'elle-même en dehors de tout autre ordre d'idées et de considérations.

"The German Government has nothing to do with the delegates," he said. "That is for the Protecting Ministers to decide."

Cela bien établi, je n'ai plus besoin d'ajouter l'intérêt avec lequel j'ai lu la lettre de Votre Excellence. J'en supprime tous commentaires, car une fois de plus nos deux âmes se comprennent, et n'ont point besoin de les écrire.

Néanmoins je transmettrai tout son contenu au Gouvernement du Roi, mon Auguste Maître, tandis que comme toujours, je reste tout à Votre Excellence.

(*Signé*) LE MARQUIS DE VILLALOBAR.

A SON EXCELLENCE L'HONORABLE BRAND WHITLOCK,
Ministre Plénipotentiaire des Etats-Unis d'Amérique.

(Translation:)
LEGACION DE ESPAÑA
EN
BELGICA

Brussels, 26 February, 1917.

MY DEAR COLLEAGUE AND FRIEND:

I have just received your letter of the 12th instant referring to my communication of the 2nd instant transmitting to you that of the same days from His Excellency the Baron von der Lancken-Wakenitz.

In thanking Your Excellency for his kind and friendly words I need to renew to him neither my attachment nor the devotion I have for his person and for the noble cause which has united in the annals of this horrible war our names and those of our countries in one single humanitarian idea, which has been that of saving from famine seven million inhabitants of the country to which we are honoured by being accredited, and that of aiding this poor Belgium in the horrors of war. During three years, my dear Colleague, we have worked hand-in-hand and with high hearts, and the happy results obtained have merited honours and blessings for our countries and for our flags. The New World, of which Your Excellency represents one of the greatest and most glorious powers,

There was a lively discussion between the Marquis and the Baron which I could enjoy, my new position after all not lacking its compensations. I cared little whether the new delegates were Spanish or Dutch or Swiss, if only they would come quickly and let my Americans go. The question was not settled and when the meeting dissolved Lancken asked me to step aside with him, and we went into the little dining-room and sat down at the long table of the officers' mess, where the cloth was always spread.

"Et maintenant," he said, *"votre position?"*

He must know at once, must telegraph Berlin immediately—that was the impatient German way; he

---

in close union with the Old Nation of Europe which discovered it, of which I am honoured to be, however unworthy, the representative, have been able, by our fraternal understanding, to accomplish a work which remains in the midst of the ruin that surrounds us the one international, the one neutral, and one of the most glorious of this *épopée*.

It would have been able to accomplish also a close friendship between our two souls and our two spirits if the goodness of Your Excellency had not of itself sufficed to bring that about, irrespective of every other thought and consideration.

This being well established, I have no further need to add the interest with which I read Your Excellency's letter. I refrain from all comment, for once again our two souls understand each other and have no need for written words.

Nevertheless I shall transmit all of its contents to the Government of the King, my August Master, while as always I remain entirely devoted to Your Excellency.

(*Signed*) Le Marquis de Villalobar.

To His Excellency
The Honorable Brand Whitlock,
Minister Plenipotentiary of the
United States of America.

must have a decision on the spot, the which I told him he could not have; I would see him on the morrow.

I called on Baron von der Lancken at half past four o'clock that next afternoon and told him that in case of war I should go at once, taking with me the members of the C.R.B., but that otherwise I was willing to remain until the American delegates could be replaced by those of some other nationality, or until the *ravitaillement* was in some other way assured, but that I reserved the right to depart on any day, with my staff, household and servants, with all the honours and considerations due my rank, and to this he agreed.

"Je vous le dit maintenant officiellement, comme je l'ai dit à Villalobar hier ou l'autre jour," he said.

Then we discussed special trains—I had told him that when I went I should go via Switzerland—and the difficulties of providing them because of the military requirements, and finally Lancken, repeating and reiterating it all, as it were officially, tapping his pencil on the table as he emphasized each point:

"Vous partirez quand vous voulez, soit demain, la semaine prochaine, ou d'ici six mois, comme si vous êtes parti la même jour que Monsieur Gerard a quitté Berlin." . . .

"Et maintenant," he said, taking up a long sheet of official note-paper, *"qu'allons nous dire aux journaux?"*

I had forgotten that there were such things as *journaux* in the world—and I dictated this simple statement, which he wrote out:

"Le Ministre d'Amérique restera provisoirement à Bruxelles pour rendre service pendant qu'on effectuera les changements dans le personel de la C.R.B."

I went away thinking of Mr. Gerard, out of it all and in Switzerland.

The next day was Valentine's Day and Hoover did not forget the Germans. Gregory was at the Legation early in the morning with a copy of a long telegram brought in by the courier from Rotterdam, saying that in view of Lancken's statement that the privileges of the C.R.B. would be abridged the Americans would be withdrawn at once from Belgium, and there were business-like details about closing the books. We smiled in the pleasure the despatch gave us; it did not lack positiveness, at least!

When we assembled again in the Louis XVI *salon,* Lancken, Villalobar, Brohn, Reith, Gregory and I, it was to learn that the Germans already had the telegram themselves; it had come *en clair* through the Vermittlungsstellen, having been duplicated thus, and intentionally, by Mr. Hoover. Lancken innocently said that he did not understand it, he did not like its reference to him, did not, it was plain, wish to be held responsible for the retirement of the Americans. I can see him now; he had the reputation of being one of the cleverest diplomats in the German service, and deserved his reputation, but as he turned toward Gregory he was blushing; he said, with evident embarrassment, that it was a very delicate matter to talk about but that when he had spoken to me he had been under the impression that war was inevitable. He thought it, however, less likely at that moment, and with this there was a complete change of position. The delegates could do as they had done before, precisely and in all respects, and under these circumstances Mr. Gregory said that he would recommend to Mr. Hoover that they remain. M. Franc-

qui had been invited to the meeting, but the problem was so quickly solved that when he arrived the *dénouement* had been reached. We went outside—Villalobar, Francqui, Gregory and I—and, on the sidewalk, M. Francqui leaned against the wall and laughed, and Villalobar said:

"Hoover is the best diplomat of us all."

The days wore on, with their constant frictions, the difficulties, embarrassments, humiliations and dangers of a position rendered impossible by the ineluctable demands of the diplomatic situation on the one hand and the needs of the *ravitaillement* on the other. Mr. Hoover was three thousand miles away, with communications slow and difficult, out of touch and lacking knowledge of that most important element of every situation—its atmosphere. Telegrams, often in apparent conflict, orders which when they arrived were no longer applicable, came daily to perplex Mr. Gregory, and while I have never been able to bring up the long arrears of my ignorance of what was transpiring in the world outside during those trying days, I had a feeling that the most sensational stories were in circulation. The rumour got abroad that I had been ordered by the Germans to haul down my flag, and after the manner of rumours, improved itself until it depicted the Germans as tearing down my flag. A despatch came then, instructing me that inasmuch as my privileges had been denied I was to leave, unless they and the privileges of the C.R.B. were at once restored. I went over to the Politische Abteilung to discuss the matter with Lancken. I spent two hours with the Baron in that hot little room upstairs. He was at his best that morning, courteous, smiling, pleasant.

"Nous parlerons, d'abord," he said, *"en amis, et puis officiellement."*

To begin with, he wished to correct certain misapprehensions. First, the privileges of the Americans in the C.R.B. had never been curtailed, he said, hence it was superfluous to discuss their restoration. In the second place, the English, he declared, were trying to inflame American sentiment by reports of mistreatment of the C.R.B. and of me, and to illustrate the point he made a little mock speech in imitation of some imagined British statesman excoriating the Germans as barbarians, though the imitation lacked verisimilitude for one thing, because it was made in French. Lancken said then that they greatly desired the *ravitaillement* to continue and the Americans to remain; that it was purely an American work, and that they, the Germans, had little faith in the ability of others to carry it on. If it should be necessary in case of war—a word he did not like to utter—and he was happy to say that he thought war just then less likely than it had been—he hoped that the organization of the C.R.B. at New York, London and Rotterdam would continue to function as it had functioned, and that if others had to come in as delegates they could replace the Americans gradually.

"But above all," he said, "we wish you to stay."

Coming at last then, as I supposed, to the point, he said:

"While we shall show you every courtesy and allow you every privilege of a diplomat we can not officially recognize your diplomatic status because America had broken off diplomatic relations—which we were willing to continue. As to the flag, we should prefer that it be removed because we are on the eve of a great battle,

the city is full of troops, we do not know what some irresponsible soldier may do, and a regrettable incident might very easily be created."

As for the courier, *Messieurs les militaires* would not consent to my having the regular courier, but I might send my courier by Villalobar's.

"Merci," I said, *"pour une prérogative dont je jouis déjà."*

At this he coloured and laughed, and then said that he was going to write me a personal letter.

"Je dois vous adresser comme Monsieur Brand Whitlock, n'est-ce pas?" and he significantly emphasized the word *"Monsieur."*

"Comme vous voulez," I replied.

The letter he was going to write, he said, was to be published later in order to protect himself from any possible accusation that he had not done his best to keep the *ravitaillement* going, and I told him then that I should wait before replying to his proposals until I had his letter. And I came away after two hours' conversation which had altered very little the delicacy or embarrassment of my position.

Baron von der Lancken's letter came to me two days later, and contained nothing that had not already been expressed in the letter he had written to Villalobar.[2]

---

[2] Politische Abteilung
bei dem
Generalgouverneur in Belgien.

Bruxelles, le 25 février, 1917.

Mon cher Monsieur Brand Whitlock:

Après la rupture des relations diplomatiques entre le Gouvernement Impérial et le Gouvernement des Etats-Unis d'Amérique j'ai,

après m'être concerté avec Monsieur le Ministre d'Espagne, Protecteur de l'Oeuvre du Ravitaillement, adressé à celui-ci le 10 février une lettre dont il m'a dit vous avoir remis copie. Dans cette lettre je suggérais au Marquis de Villalobar l'idée que dans l'intérêt de l'Oeuvre du Ravitaillement la continuation de votre présence à Bruxelles serait désirable et je lui assurais que dans ce cas Monsieur le Gouverneur Général serait heureux de vous voir consacrer aux travaux de la Commission for Relief votre activité depuis longtemps si utile à cette institution.

Dans des entretiens que j'ai ensuite eu le plaisir d'avoir avec vous à ce sujet, vous m'avez fait savoir que vous comptiez prolonger votre séjour à Bruxelles pour veiller à la continuation du bon fonctionnement de la C.R.B. De mon côté je vous avais assuré que vous pouviez toujours, à votre convenance, quitter la Belgique dans les mêmes conditions comme si vous étiez parti il y a quinze jours.

Dans ces circonstances je crois pouvoir espérer dans l'intérêt de l'Oeuvre du Ravitaillement de la Belgique que votre concours restera acquis à cette oeuvre humanitaire qui grâce aux efforts des nations neutres et belligérantes exerce depuis le début de la guerre ses effets bienfaisants au profit des populations éprouvées de la Belgique et du Nord de la France.

Veuillex croire, mon cher Monsieur Whitlock, à l'expression de mes sentiments les plus dévoués et sincères.

(*Signé*) LANCKEN.

A MONSIEUR BRAND WHITLOCK,
Bruxelles.

(Translation:)
POLITISCHE ABTEILUNG
bei dem
GOUVERNEUR GENERAL IN BELGIEN

Brussels, 25 February, 1917.

MY DEAR MR. BRAND WHITLOCK:

After the rupture of diplomatic relations between the Imperial Government and the Government of the United States of America, I addressed, after having placed myself in accord with the Spanish

Minister, Protector of the Work of the *ravitaillement*, a letter to him on the 10th February, of which he has told me he sent you a copy. In this letter I suggested to the Marquis of Villalobar that in the interest of the work of the *ravitaillement* the continuation of your presence in Brussels would be desirable, and I assured him that in this event the Governor-General would be happy to see you devote to the work of the Commission for Relief your activity, for a long time so useful to that institution.

In the interview which I then had the pleasure of having with you, you informed me that you proposed to prolong your stay in Brussels in order to see to the continuance of the proper functioning of the C.R.B. On my part, I had assured you that you could always, at your convenience, leave Belgium under the same conditions as if you had gone a fortnight ago.

Under these circumstances I believe that I may hope, in the interest of the work of the *ravitaillement* of Belgium, that you will continue your association with that humanitarian work which, thanks to the efforts of neutral and belligerent nations, has exercised since the beginning of the war its beneficial effects to the profit of the suffering populations of Belgium and of the north of France.

I beg you to believe, my dear Mr. Whitlock, in the expression of my most devoted and sincere sentiments.

(*Signed*) LANCKEN.

To MR. BRAND WHITLOCK,
Brussels.

XLVIII

PROBLEMS OF POSITION

THE cold weather moderated, and under the more characteristic downpour of rain Brussels might have worn its normal external air were it not for the fact that the complexion of the world about us is but the reflection of our own. I had not known, even in Belgium, such days of black care and anxiety. The whole question of my own unpleasant position aside, I was almost desperately concerned over the fate of the *ravitaillement* and weighed by my responsibility for the safety of those forty or fifty men of the C.R.B. I had asked for written assurances that they could leave the country at any time without molestation, and while these were promised they were not forthcoming; oral assurances, it is true, had been given at the Politische Abteilung and at the Vermittlungsstellen but—with the Germans one never knew; from every interview with them, even when the most express and formal understanding and agreement had been reached, one came away with an uncomfortable feeling of uncertainty, wondering if, after all——

Brussels just then of course could not have been normal in any event or in any weather. Gradually during those months and years the physiognomy of the city had changed, like the slow and for a long while imperceptible ravages made by some disease on the visage

of a friend. The town, once so gay and blithe and charming, had grown gradually sadder; now it seemed morose. We walked or drove about as of old, avid of last glimpses of the scenes we loved; in the Grand'Place on Ash Wednesday, where the women of the flower market through all vicissitudes had clung somehow to their trade, the colours did not seem so bright. The woman whom we patronized was seated in the fog and rain beside great masses of white and mauve lilacs, and her smile was only a polite adumbration of what it once had been. She used to be so buxom, so lively, so gay, so full of instant repartee! One day early in the war as de Leval and I, loitering in the Grand'Place, had noted a great Flemish brooch at her throat, and, recalling the visit of the German Emperor and Empress to Brussels, on which occasion the Empress had economically given a breast pin to one of the delegation of flower women who came to present her flowers, de Leval had asked:

"Est-ce la medaille que l'Imperatrice d'Allemagne vous a decernée?"

And the flower woman had retorted, in the sing-song tone that marks the true Brussels accent:

"Humph! Si Elle m'avait donné quoi que ce soit il y a longtemps que je le Lui aurait renvoyé, et moi avec deux frères à l'armée belge!"

Now she was gay no more, but sad, depressed, and her hollow cough echoed all over the Square.

The shops were closed, the people were in rags, the lines at the soup kitchens trailed their squalid miseries farther and farther down the street; the doors of the *ouvroirs,* those posts of charity where sewing was given out, were besieged by throngs of pale and patient

women. The Germans had left their mark on everything in the city; its physical grace and beauty had been marred by the signs in German which they had put up at all the *aubettes;* only German newspapers and German books were sold there then, and illustrated journals with their crude and brutal cartoons with never a touch of humour, in which they were then caricaturing the President and Mr. Taft and Colonel Roosevelt. The city was crowded with soldiers *en route* for an impending butchery, being sent to the shambles like the cattle that went lowing down the Rue Belliard. And there were officers, pink and fat, racing by in motors, or insolently swaggering along the boulevard with an arrogance that had all the vulgarity of the parvenu, consciously acting parts in the inveterate *sabotinage* of the military. It was even rumoured that Brussels was to be placed in the *étape.*

There was still no coal to be had, and because of the lack of it the schools were closed. . . . One of the common sights in Brussels during the severe cold weather was the long line of great rumbling carts filled with coal, jolting heavily along the Rue Belliard. The carts were guarded by German soldiers, for the coal was being put to German uses. But running behind there was always a bevy of little children with baskets picking up the lumps that fell from the carts. Usually the German soldiers paid no attention to them, but one afternoon from my window I saw a soldier seize some lumps of coal from his cart; I thought he was going to give them to the children, but instead he threw them viciously at a little girl, who ran away in terror and cowered in a doorway; the soldier leaped down from his cart and

caught the little girl, and the little boy with her, and soundly cuffed them both.

We hesitated often to go to see our friends; with such a spy system as prevailed in Brussels, we could only draw suspicion on them, perhaps involve them in difficulties after we had gone. And yet our friends came to see us; they came indeed in great numbers, especially after that blunder of a servant who promptly began distributing the "p.p.c." cards I had ordered prepared, to have them ready for the emergency that might come at any moment. They came in a kind of panic, and were relieved when they learned that the Americans were not gone.

In certain of my wanderings, in my favourite bookstalls, and some of the antiquarians and shops along the Montagne de la Cour, I would be implored by the people to say that it was not true that we were going; for the report had got abroad that we were to remain, and the city was partially reassured that the *ravitaillement* was not going to collapse. And I knew that it was only a postponement; I had not the heart to tell them. Our trunks were indeed all packed, and in our normal attitude of sitting on our boxes; there was no official work to do after we had finished all the accounting and turned over the representation of British interests to the Dutch Legation, and that of Japanese, Servian, Danish and Lichtenstein interests to the Marquis of Villalobar. I had formally transferred to him as well the representation and protection of American interests, and the flag was no longer on the staff.

Cavalcanti, too, was wandering aimlessly about in the rain those days, and his belongings were packed as well, for he expected Brazil to follow soon in the way of hon-

our America had set. And Shu Tze, the Secretary of the Chinese Legation, came to see me; he had a despatch from Pekin, all very confidential, saying that China likewise would follow America's example and break off diplomatic relations with Germans; the Chinese wished to go with me when I went, and to do in all things as I did—another expression of the confidence that China has in America as a result of John Hay's honest diplomacy.

And new problems had arisen, with myriad new complications; first of all there was the problem, vital in the circumstances, as to how the ships were to get through the submarine zone to Rotterdam. Nothing could be done until that route had been agreed upon, and to bring the German Government and the British Government into harmony on this essential point was more than difficult. Lancken had been to Berlin several times, and he came back on Washington's Birthday reporting that the German Government had refused to yield the point. There was another and ancillary problem; there were eighty-five thousand tons of food stuffs belonging to the C.R.B. in English ports, waiting on this decision; the Germans refused to give these ships safe conduct across the North Sea, and the British were threatening to unload the ships and seize the food. When we told the Germans that they were foolish not to allow this food to cross the infested seas there were only shrugs of shoulders and:

"Ce sont les militaires!"

The only suggestion they could offer was that the eighty-five thousand tons be shipped to Holland in the regular Dutch packets that plied the North Sea, a task that would have taken years.

Alternatives were proposed; that the whole work of the C.R.B. be turned over to the Dutch Government; that it be turned over to the Swiss Government; that a new inter-Allied commission be formed; and to each of these there was some insuperable obstacle or objection, inherent in the delicacies of the situation. And so, argument and discussion, and telegrams and cablegrams for days and days, interminable, and no conclusion—the solution would not precipitate, and my own position was intolerable and beyond definition.

"Vous restez donc comme—chose?" said the Nonce one day, sitting there in his black and violet, with the vaguest of notions of how the whole matter stood.

"Oui," I replied, *"comme chose."*

XLIX

SLAVERY

LOOKING back upon those days I do not know how I could have got through them without the support and sympathy and practical sense of Warren Gregory. I shall be betraying no secret now, I trust, if I say that there were times when he shared my own dark forebodings and was convinced that the men of the C.R.B. might never be allowed to leave Belgium at all so long as the war lasted. And yet he was calm and philosophic, and in his sturdy wholesome way, even classical in his consolations; he used to say, as Æneas said in comforting the companions of his hardships: *Forsam et haec olim meminisse juvabit.*

I have not as yet come to the place where I can vindicate his prophecy; I can not think of those days without pain, and as in writing of them I perforce live them over, I feel again their unintermittent depression, so that I wish to hurry on and think of them no more and be done with them forever, retaining only the friendships they brought me and the love they taught me for the charming city and its excellent people.

And yet, all things end and all problems one day are settled, and finally we did agree upon a route for the ships. Then there came a telegram saying that the Queen of the Netherlands and the King of Spain had exchanged messages the result of which was an accord

by which they would continue the *ravitaillement;* the Dutch Government had already selected the delegates who were to represent Holland in Belgium; it only remained for Spain to do the same. Thus all the other schemes received their quietus. There was food enough in Belgium on the first of March to last until May, and if we could secure the consent of the Germans to the shipment of the eighty-five thousand tons in England belonging to the C.R.B. the situation could be saved. The C.R.B. had 100,000 tons on the seas and had just purchased 100,000 more in New York, and when all this arrived there would be food enough for Belgium and northern France until September—and by that time, of course, the war would be over! Villalobar said that the Germans would grant the ships in English ports safe conducts—though confidence in their assurances was somewhat weakened just then by the fact that only a few days before they had torpedoed six Dutch ships which they had promised the Netherlands Government to allow to leave Falmouth harbour. I urged that the Spanish and Dutch understudies for the delegates of the C.R.B. be brought immediately into Belgium, and asked Villalobar to secure the promised assurances in writing from the Germans as to the immunity of our men, and Villalobar said he would procure them. The skies were beginning to clear.

In the midst of our own perplexities and with all diplomatic relations between the Germans and us broken off, we were able to do no more for the deported *chômeurs.* The annex to the Legation, as we called the unoccupied residence of the Countess Liederkerck across the street in the Rue Belliard which we had leased and wherein were installed the corps of clerks who pre-

pared the documents in the cases of the deported, was closed. The subject, however, was ever present, with the suffering, the misery, the despair it connoted, and now the reality of it was brought more directly to all of us by the few returning Belgians who had been repatriated. They were pitiable objects of German brutality; they were, for the most part, pale, emaciated men whose physical condition made them useless as workers, broken, maimed, helpless, hopeless; a few weeks in the slave compounds in Germany had so reduced by sickness, exposure and starvation that they were hauled back to Belgium and flung down in their villages to die. Some of the returned *chômeurs* who were brought to Brussels and taken to hospitals, had their feet frozen from exposure, or were in such a state of gangrene from maltreatment that it was necessary to amputate their legs. Those at Antwerp were returned at night to avoid notice, for their physical condition was so pitiable that the Germans seemed to be afraid or ashamed to exhibit them as examples of their work. Von Heune, the General who lost his men at Mulhausen in October, 1914, and who gave the promise that if the Belgians who had fled before the fall of Antwerp returned they would not be molested, had been removed from the command at Antwerp on twenty-four hours' notice, and had been succeeded by von Zwehl.

The deported men when they got to Germany would not work; they resorted to sabotage, "ca' canny" and "direct action"; they deliberately ruined machinery, sang their patriotic songs as they had sung them when they went away, and demoralized workshop and factory by shouting the "Lion of Flanders" at the top of their voices. And we began to hear the story of this triumph

which, when it did not cost them their lives, left them broken, ruined men.

About seventy were returned from the camp of concentration at Soltau, released because they were ill. They were transported in a cattle-car which was attached to a freight train, and in this condition they spent three days and three nights before they arrived at their destination, although express trains cover the distance in from six to eight hours.

At Soltau they had received as food, at six o'clock in the morning, a concoction made of acorns, with nothing else; at midday, half a litre of soup, principally of water, but with a few turnips, carrots, beets; there were no potatoes or more substantial foods; at three o'clock, two hundred and fifty grams of black bread, often mouldy; and between seven and eight o'clock, again half a litre of soup like that given at midday, but occasionally with a little bran or grits. With this abominable diet the strongest became ill, and it was not long before those with feeble constitutions died. During the first week five workmen died and two went insane. One, tired of so much misery, tried to escape and was shot down. The sufferings of these unfortunates were such that at night they would steal from the kitchens and devour the potato skins and the waste from the turnips intended for the German personnel.

Besides the agony of such hunger every possible means was employed to compel them to sign contracts to work. One day forty workmen were taken away; eight days later they reappeared at the camp. They related to their comrades that they had been taken to the Grand Duchy of Baden, and that there for two days they had been given abundant and excellent food; they

were told that if they would agree to work they would receive even better treatment. They all refused. They were then shut up in a cattle-car where they were confined for thirty-five hours without release and without food.

Another day the deported received a visit from an individual in the uniform of a sergeant of the eighth Belgian regiment of the line, who began to harangue them in Flemish and in French, telling them that they were foolish to endure so much suffering while the bourgeois in Belgium continued to live well; that the Belgian Government did not care what became of them and would not intervene to help them; that the neutral nations would do even less, and that this was only natural because the neutral governments knew very well, as did the Allies, that in accepting peaceful employment in Germany the Belgian workmen were not committing an act that could be considered as contrary to their patriotic sentiments. None of the workmen, however, were seduced by this talk, and two days later they learned that the orator was a German disguised as a Belgian soldier.

The camp of the deported Belgian civilians was near that of the imprisoned Belgian soldiers, whose diet was a little better. The soldiers had pity on their compatriots. When a Belgian civilian was buried the Belgian soldiers were allowed to follow the coffin; although they themselves did not receive sufficient nourishment, they profited by the occasion to carry under their clothing boxes of conserve and bread which they gave to the deported. At the camp at Soltau alone there were eleven thousand deported who refused to work for the Germans.

The story of the quarrymen of Lessines, whom the Germans by the most barbarous methods tried to compel to work for them in Belgium itself, had already become well known. Later these quarrymen had been sent to Germany, where they were put on a diet similar to that of the Soltau camp. Besides hunger, other means of duress were employed. One day they were aligned before the mitrailleuse and told that if they did not immediately consent to work they would be shot. They replied that they would rather die from bullets than of hunger. The mitrailleuse did not fire. Before such splendid resistance even German persistence grew weary; some of the workmen were released and returned to their homes in such a lamentable condition that some of them died.

It seems indeed to have been the custom in the slave compounds to menace the workmen with mitrailleuse. One returning group, composed of two or three hundred men of all ages, came from the camp near Munster. To force them to work their German taskmasters had almost entirely deprived them of food, had left them exposed for ten hours to cold and rain, and then, thinking that they were sufficiently reduced, they ranged about thirty of them before mitrailleuse; the order to work was again given; if they refused they were to be shot down. And they all refused. The order was given to fire. They did not flinch and the Germans fired in the air. Before such resolution it was said that some of the authorities present were not able to conceal their emotion, and that they announced to the men that they were free and could return to Belgium.

Another group returned to the Hainaut from the same camp; one of them was found dead in the train

on its arrival at Mons; about fifty were so enfeebled that they could scarcely walk and were led away from the railway station to their homes on the arms of their relatives. And yet all of the men had been examined by German doctors before they were deported, and all of those who were not physically fit were rejected. In six weeks' time these strong, healthy, vigorous workmen had been turned to skeletons. One of the men was the son of a manufacturer at Ghlin, who had been the foreman of his father's factory where thirty workmen were employed. After a heroic resistance of thirty-five days he was no longer able to endure the food, became ill, surrendered, and agreed to work. He was set to digging, in spite of the fact that he was not physically fitted for such work, and, far from being a *chômeur,* his factory at Ghlin in the meantime had never ceased to operate.

After the protests made by the President and the King of Spain at Berlin, certain influences were set in motion in an effort to have the slave-drive in Belgium abandoned, and returning from a visit to Berlin undertaken as a result of these efforts, Lancken brought back word that if Cardinal Mercier would appeal to the Emperor, the Emperor would suspend the deportations and order the return of the men. The Cardinal, therefore, prepared and sent an appeal, signed by all the personalities in Belgium. Lancken took the Cardinal's letter to Berlin and came back with the reply. The Emperor had been graciously pleased to grant the request, the deported men were to be returned to Belgium, but—the inevitable, sinister "but" in all German negotiations—they must work for the Germans in Belgium.

But in a Lenten pastoral letter which he had written on Sexagesima Sunday and had had read in all the churches, the Cardinal had spoken out once more; he had publicly exposed the horrors of the deportations.

Those who are fighting for the liberty of the Belgian flag (said the Cardinal's pastoral) are brave men. Those interned in Holland and Germany, who raised their fettered hands to Heaven on behalf of their country, are brave men. Our exiled compatriots, who bear in silence the weight of their isolation, also serve their Belgian fatherland to the best of their ability, as do also all those souls who, either behind the cloister walls or in the retirement of their own homes, pray, toil and weep, awaiting the return of their absent ones, and our common deliverance.

We have listened to the mighty voices of wives and mothers; through their tears they have prayed God to sustain the courage and fidelity to honour of their husbands and sons, carried off by force to the enemy's factories. These gallant men have been heard at the hour of departure, rallying their energy to instill courage into their comrades, or, by a supreme effort, to chant the national hymn; we have seen some of them on their return, pale, haggard, human wrecks; as our tearful eyes sought their dim eyes we bowed reverently before them, for all unconsciously they were revealing to us a new and unexpected aspect of national heroism.

After this can it be necessary to preach courage to you?

True, there are some shadows in the picture I have sketched for you; there have been weaknesses here and there among our people, for which we must blush; I am not referring, be it clearly understood, to the handful of workmen, exhausted by privation, stiff with cold, or crushed by blows, who at last gave utterance to a word of submission; there are limits to human energy. I refer, with deep regret, to the few malefactors who lend themselves to the lucrative parts of informer, courtier, or spy, and to those misguided individuals who are not ashamed to trade upon the poverty of their compatriots. Happily, when future generations look back from the most distant standpoint of history, these stains will be blotted out, and all that will remain for their edification will be the splendid spectacle of a nation of seven millions, which, on the eve-

ning of August 2, with one accord, not only refused to allow its honour to be held in question for a moment, but which, throughout over thirty months of ever-increasing moral and physical suffering, on battlefields, in military and civil prisons, in exile, under an iron domination, had remained imperturbable in its self-control, and had never once so far yielded as to cry: "This is too much! This is enough!"

In our young days our professors of history rightly held up to our admiration Leonidas and the three hundred Spartans, who, instead of seeking safety in easy flight, allowed themselves to be crushed by the Persian army at the Pass of Thermopylæ. They filled us with enthusiasm for the six hundred heroes of Franchimont, who, after risking life and liberty by passing through the camp of the armies of Louis XI and Charles the Bold at night, all fell in an assault of almost frenzied valour and desperate resistance. The teachers of the Belgian generation of to-morrow will have yet other instances of military heroism and patriotism to evoke.[1]

[1] Ceux qui se battent pour la liberté du drapeau belge sont des braves. Les internés de Hollande et d'Allemagne, qui lèvent vers Dieu, pour la patrie, leurs bras chargés de chaînes, sont des braves. Nos compatriotes exilés, qui portent, en silence, le poids de leur isolement, servent, eux aussi, du mieux qu'ils peuvent, la patrie belge, comme la servent toutes ces âmes qui, soit derrière les murs des cloîtres, soit dans le recueillement des foyers domestiques, prient, pleurent, peinent, dans l'attente du retour des absents et de notre commune délivrance.

Nous avons écouté la vois puissante des épouses et de mères; à travers leurs sanglots, elles suppliaient Dieu de soutenir le courage et la fidelité à l'honneur de leurs maris et de leurs fils, emmenés de force dans les usines de l'ennemi. On les a entendus, ces vaillants, ramasser, à l'heure du départ, leur énergie, pour donner du coeur à leurs camarades, ou pour entonner, dans un effort suprême, le chant national; nous les avons vus, à leur retour, pâles, décharnés, ruines humaines; tandis que nos yeux mouillés de larmes cherchaient leurs regards éteints, nous nous inclinions profondément devant eux, car ils nous révélaient, sans s'en douter, un aspect nouveau, inattendu, de l'heroïsme national.

As a result of this the Germans were once more in a rage and threatened to rescind the promise that the deportations would be discontinued. They contented themselves at last, however, with arresting the secretary of the Cardinal and some of the priests who had read

---

Est-il, après cela, nécessaire de vous prêcher la vaillance?

Certes, au tableau que je viens d'esquisser, il y a des ombres; il s'est produit, çà et là, parmi les nôtres, des faiblesses dont nous avons à rougir; je ne vise pas, en ce moment,—que l'on m'entende bien—la poignée d'ouvriers épuisés par les privations, raidis par le froid, ou broyés de coups, qui ont finalement laissé échapper de leurs lèvres une parole de soumission; il y a des limites à l'énergie humaine; je vise, à regret, ces quelques félons qui se prêtent au rôle lucratif de délateurs, de courtisans, d'espions, ou ces quelques égarés qui n'ont pas honte de speculer sur le misère de leurs compatriotes. Heureusement, dans le recul de l'histoire, ces taches s'estomperont, et il ne restera pour l'éducation des générations futures, que le spectacle grandiose d'un peuple de sept millions d'hommes qui, non seulement, dans un élan unanime, au soir du 2 août, n'a pas voulu qu'on discutât, un instant, son honneur, mais, durant plus de trente mois de souffrances morales et physiques, toujours grandissantes, sur les champs de bataille, dans les prisons militaires et civiles, en exil, sous une domination de fer, demeure imperturbablement maître de soi, et ne s'est pas encore une seule fois laissé aller à dire: C'en est trop! C'en est assez!

Dans nos jeunes années, nos professeurs d'histoire nous faisaient admirer, et c'était justice, Léonidas et les trois cents Spartiates, qui, plutôt que de chercher leur salut dans une fuite aisée, se firent écraser par l'armée des Perses, au défilé des Thermopyles. Ils nous enthousiasmaient pour les six cents braves du pays Franchimont qui, après avoir la nuit, en y engageant leur liberté et leur vie, traversé les camps des armées de Louis XI et de Charles-le-Temeraire, succombèrent tous dans un assaut d'une audace presque folle et d'une résistance désespèrée. Les maîtres de la génération belge de demain auront à citer des traits autrement évocateurs de l'heroïsme militaire et du patriotisme.

the pastoral, and on the fourteenth of March the following announcement was made in the journals in Belgium:

Berlin, 14 mars:

Des Belges notables appartenant aux divers partis se sont récemment adressés à S.M. l'Empereur pour le prier de mettre fin à l'envoi forcé d'ouvriers belges en Allemagne et de faire rentrer chez eux les Belges qui y ont été envoyés.

Les signataires de cette demande directement adressée à Sa Majesté viennent d'être avisés que l'Empereur a décidé de faire soumettre les désirs qu'ils ont formulés à l'examen approfondi du gouverneur général et des administrations compétentes, lui-même se réservant de prendre une décision définitive après cet examen.

En attendant, Sa Majesté a donné l'ordre de faire rentrer immédiatement en Belgique, pour autant que cela n'ait pas été fait déjà, les Belges envoyés en Allemagne par erreur et de suspendre jusqu'à nouvel avis les envois forcés en Allemagne de Belges sans travail.[2]

---

[2](Translation:)

Berlin, 14 March:

Certain Belgian notables belonging to various parties have recently addressed H.M. the Emperor urging him to put an end to the forced deportation of Belgian workmen to Germany, and to have returned to their homes those Belgians who have been sent away.

The subscribers to this demand addressed directly to His Majesty have just been informed that the Emperor had decided to submit the petition which they formulated to the careful examination of the Governor-General and of the competent administrations, reserving to himself the privilege of taking a definite decision after this examination.

In the meantime His Majesty has given orders to have returned immediately to Belgium, in so far as this has not already been done, those Belgians sent to Germany by mistake, and to suspend until further order the forced deportation to Germany of unemployed Belgians.

The condition that they work on their return, which at first was so deeply resented, proved in the end to have only an academic interest, for few ever came back to Belgium except those sent home to die.

L

DESTROYING A NATION

We supposed, however, that with the Imperial promise the deportations had come to an end and that we could indulge the natural feeling of relief that would come with the passing of the worst of the horrors the Germans had brought to Belgium. And yet, almost unnoticed, in those days of anxiety and care, there were being enacted the opening scenes in a tragedy that transcended any yet played in Belgium, the preparation for a deed worse than the atrocities, worse even than the Cavell case, worse than the deportations. These were of that sensational nature and of that stark objectivity which instantly shock the imagination. But this went deeper, was far more subtle and insidious. The atrocities, the deportations and the rest destroyed the body; this was an attempt to destroy the soul; they murdered men; this would assassinate a nation.

On the third of March, or about that time, the German newspapers announced that the administration in Belgium would be divided; then ten days later the German newspapers were filled with accounts of a "visit" to Berlin of a group of Belgians, *soi-disant* leaders among the Flemish, gone to present a petition to that end. Preoccupied by my own problems and perplexities, I paid little attention to this at the time; it was mentioned now and then, but we were thinking and talking of other

things. Then on the twenty-first of March there appeared on the walls of Brussels a small *affiche:*

ORDER

There are formed in Belgium two administrative regions, one of which comprises the provinces of Antwerp, Limbourg, East and West Flanders, as well as the districts of Brussels and of Louvain, the other of which comprises the provinces of Hainaut, Liége, Luxembourg, and Namur, as well as the district of Nivelles.

The administration of the first of these two regions will be directed from Brussels; that of the second, from Namur.

All arrangements looking to the assurance of the execution of the present order, notably from the point of view of the administrative organization of the two regions and the transfer of the control, are reserved. For all that concerns the Ministry of Arts and Sciences, the orders of the 25 October, 1916, 13 December and 14 February, 1917 (*Official Bulletin of laws and orders*, pp. 2930, 3054, and 3319), remain in force until the publication of the above-mentioned arrangements.

Brussels, 21 March, 1917.

The Governor-General in Belgium,
FREIHERR VON BISSING,
Generaloberst.[1]

---

[1] ARRÊTÉ

Il est formé en Belgique deux régions administratives dont l'une comprend les provinces d'Anvers, de Limbourg, de Flandre orientale et de Flandre occidentale, ainsi que les arrondissements de Bruxelles et de Louvain, l'autre les provinces de Haïnaut, de Liége, de Luxembourg, et de Namur, ainsi que l'arrondissement de Nivelles.

L'administration de la première de ces deux régions sera dirigée de Bruxelles; celle de la deuxième, de Namur.

Sont réservées toutes les dispositions qui seront destinées à assurer l'exécution du présent arrêté notamment au point de vue de l'organisation administrative des deux régions et de la remise

This order was the culmination of a carefully nurtured scheme of von Bissing's, a scheme not only for the conquest, but for the political agglutination of Belgium, the finale of that policy of Flaminganization already revealed in the transformation of the University of Ghent. It had been cunningly devised and deeply meditated for long months; its details had been studied with Machiavellian subtlety in the department of the Politische Abteilung and the Zivilverwaltung, and while he was taking the cure at Wiesbaden von Bissing had matured it; now on his return, he promulgated it. The moment, as it proved, was hardly auspicious, and revealed the reason why von Bissing had been so opposed to the deportations—not as a principle, but as a policy—and why he quarreled, or at least differed, with Hindenburg. Von Bissing and his advisers just then affected *la manière douce,* which Hindenburg and his leaders could neither tolerate nor understand.

It was always referred to as *la séparation administrative,* a phrase that hardly illustrates its own sinister and tragic significance. It meant more, of course, than a mere division of the prosaic functions of the civil administration of the kingdom; it involved the establishment of two administrations where one had served be-

---

des affaires. Pour tout ce qui concerne le ministère des sciences et des arts, les arrêtés des 25 octobre, 1916, 13 décembre, 1916, et 14 février, 1917 (*Bulletin officiel des lois et arrêtés,* pp. 2930, 3054 et 3319), restent en vigueur jusqu'à la publication des dispositions susmentionées.

Bruxelles, le 21 mars, 1917.

Der Generalgouverneur in Belgien,
Freiherr von Bissing,
Generaloberst.

fore, one that had been in operation for more than eighty years and was an integral part of a most practical system of government. The Hague Convention made it incumbent on the German occupant to respect the laws in force in the country, the only exception recognized by that Convention being that of "absolute necessity." There had been no absolute necessity for innovation; the Belgian internal administration had carried on, as the English say, under German occupancy for more than two years. The functionaries had continued at their posts at the express invitation of General von Bissing himself, and with a promise that they would not be molested.

On the fourth of January the chief of the civil administration, Dr. von Sandt, had formally communicated to them a statement of the Governor-General informing them that he would leave it to Belgian functionaries "to decide freely whether they were able to reconcile the future exercise of their functions with their duty toward the Belgian state," assuring them that those who should resign their functions would have no reason to fear any result other than the loss of their salaries, "providing they had done nothing in the pursuance of their duties and obligations that was against the interests of the German administration." This striking generosity was superrogatory even if elementary rules of justice did not give a man the right to quit his employment, for that right had already been expressly secured by Article 43 of the regulations annexed to The Hague Convention of 1907.

In that dark winter of 1914, the first of the war, we used to hear that the Germans were only waiting to take Ypres and *nettoyer le pays là-bas,* before de-

claring the annexation of Belgium; the Kaiser was said to have prepared an imposing theatrical ceremony to be unrolled in the old Cloth Hall as soon as the city should fall. But that performance was deferred and another annexation was conceived as a substitute for the geographical conquest, to accomplish which it was necessary to destroy the national organization and in its place to erect two organizations, one Flemish and the other Walloon. Whether Belgium were formally annexed or not, this procedure would divide the people, break the national spirit, and dismember the nation; it was a part of the unaltered purpose of the military oligarchy and the Pan-Germanists to create the Mittel-Europe, a purpose from which for an instant they had never swerved; they would first separate the Flemish provinces from Belgium and then attach them to the Empire, thus gaining the great port of Antwerp and the Belgian littoral.[2]

[2]After Governor-General von Bissing's death in 1917, there was published a document that purports to be a memoire left by him in which he sets forth his views of the future of Belgium, of Germany, and of the world in general. The authenticity of this document, so far as I know, has never been authoritatively denied. In it Baron von Bissing says:

"I propose to develop here an opinion already expressed by me in a previous memoire. I wish to speak of the cruel necessity, or rather the sacred duty imposed on us of keeping Belgium under our influence and our domination, because the security of Germany demands that we do not render Belgium her liberty."

The Governor-General in his memoire was without illusions. He said that there was no hope of reconciling the Belgians, and that in spite of all treaties that might be obtained, Belgium would remain inimical to Germany. He develops his theory of the use Germany could make of Belgium, not only industrially, but as an outpost against England in that future war of which he speaks, as though

The Germans knew, of course, in every detail, the historic feeling between the Flemish and the Walloons,

---

it were already an actuality. He says that after the conclusion of peace they, the Germans, can not permit Belgium to be resuscitated as a State and as a neutral country, and adds:

"An independent Belgium, a neutral Belgium, or a Belgium whose status is fixed by treaties, will be, as prior to the war, subject to the baneful influence of England and of France, and will be the prey of America, which seeks to ultilise Belgian's resources. In order to prevent that there is but one means and one policy: FORCE; and it is to force that we must again resort in order to compel the present population, still hostile, to accommodate itself to German domination and to submit to it.

"Germany is interested also in the Flemish movement in Belgium, which has already gained considerable ground and which would be mortally affected if we did not extend to Belgium our policy of force."

The late Governor-General goes on:

"And this has great weight also in determining the future external policy of Holland, for as soon as we withdraw our protecting hand from Belgium the Flemish movement will be branded as Germanophile by the Walloons and the Francophiles, and completely crushed by them. The Flemish problem is not solved yet by any means, and I do not cherish the optimistic hope that the Flemings will aid us in our domination of Belgium. From now on we must do everything in our power to divert into the proper channels the unrealizable hopes that are beginning to overflow. A certain Flemish group dreams of an autonomic Flemish State, governed by a king and entirely separate from any other State. Of course we must protect the Flemings, but we can not in any event or under any consideration allow them to become altogether independent."

The memoire concludes:

"Belgium must be conquered by us and we must retain it as it is at present and as it must remain in the future. We must retain in Belgium for many years to come the state of despotic control which is actually in force.

"That despotic control, based on military force, is the sole admin-

and they were no sooner installed in Belgium than they set about the congenial task of profiting by the fact.

---

istrative system that can be chosen; but we shall work out in the future, slowly and methodically, and install a new form of government more appropriate to the interests of Germany."

As I say, the authenticity of this document has not been entirely proved, though it is not difficult to imagine the old Prussian General writing such a memoire.

This memoire was printed in Herr Bacmeister's review, *Das Grossere Deutschland,* and in the *Bergische Markische Zeitung.* Herr Bacmeister, the publisher of the first-mentioned magazine, has issued a statement in response to some rival publication which, while not contesting the authenticity of von Bissing's memoire, claimed that the late Governor-General in Belgium had changed the opinions expressed in it before his death. Herr Bacmeister's statement contends, with some truth it would seem, that it would be impossible to diminish the significance of the von Bissing document, and he adds that he is authorized to declare that von Bissing "to the day of his death invariably held the opinions that he expressed in his memoire." But whether the memoire is authentic or not, there is another document the authenticity of which can not be disputed, and which goes even further than the memoire.

In January, 1917, Baron von Bissing, being ill and at Wiesbaden taking the cure, wrote to Dr. S. Stressemann, a member of the Reichstag and lately appointed by the Chancellor as a member of the Consulting Commission of Seven, the latest triumph of the democratic movement in Germany. The letter that Baron von Bissing wrote is dated January 14, 1917, and was published in the *Deutsche Tagezeitung* for May 30, 1917. Von Bissing writes to congratulate Herr Dr. Stressemann on a lecture he had just delivered at Hanover on German victory and German peace, and is delighted to approve what the speaker had said as to the future of Belgium. In the letter von Bissing refers to a memoire in which he says he studies at greater length and more precisely and profoundly the future of Belgium, and the assumption is that this is the memoire mentioned above.

But in the letter itself he says:

The idea of separating the administrations, like that of transforming the University of Ghent, was not original

"If we do not subject Belgium to our power, if we do not orient its politics toward a German goal, if we do not use Belgium for the best interests of Germany, then the war for us will have been lost.

"For two years my policy has been guided by these considerations of the future. I have sought always noiselessly to weave binding ties and often those ties have been severed. But of all the attempts at *rapprochement,* however futile, something subsists, though it be in the deepest mystery. You will see what fruits this policy will bear as soon as, in order to reimburse itself for the heavy sacrifices it has made so as to assure the guaranties without which it can not insure its future, Germany, not knowing how to surrender, will decree the annexation of Belgium on the basis of the right of conquest."

And he goes on:

"These thoughts have inspired my Flemish policy; it is guided by these thoughts that I have directed with a wide reserve and moderation my religious policy. Doubtless it would have been easier for me to have recourse to the means of *Kulturkampf,* but we shall have need of the church if we wish one day to impose on Belgium the German spirit and German initiative.

"These words, which your brilliant lecture alone could have inspired, are those of a man who knows not whether the state of his health will permit him to return to his post where await him such heavy responsibilities. If, however, God, our Lord, will give him back his strength, you may be assured that those, who like you, have understood with penetration what the future of Germany demands with reference to the problem of Belgium, and have set it forth as clearly as you have in your conference, will always find in me a staunch supporter.

"I am still feeble and ill and I can not write or even think as I hope to be able to do before long, when, after this long vacation which His Majesty the Emperor in his confidence has been kind enough to grant me, I shall be sufficiently restored to be able to govern Belgian affairs in his name and after his will."

with them; few ideas are; they are better at adapting than originating. *La séparation administrative* was an

---

He was restored, at least partially, to health, and returned to Brussels to "install a form of government more appropriate to the interests of Germany."

Memorandum of Governor von Bissing

It is a curious fact that in enemy countries, in France and England particularly, the men at the helm express themselves quite freely regarding their war aims, in spite of the reverses suffered on the various fronts. As at the outbreak of this world-war, which is constantly extending its scope, so to-day the parcelling-out or annihilation of Germany is demanded; and this although German armies have made victory a matter of habit, as it were, and are in firm possession of huge expanses of enemy country.

Without paying the slightest heed to the military situation, or hesitating at the sacrifice of treasure and men to which the Powers allied against us vainly committed themselves, the anti-German Press is without exception blinded by a strange kind of self-hypnotism. The extravagance of the war aims of our opponents, who set as little value on our own successes as on those already won by our allies, obviously makes it impossible to dream of a peace in the near future which shall be both honourable and acceptable to Germany.

To defend our independence and to assure our future, Germany must continue the struggle until the time when with sword in hand she can exact a peace, a peace which shall be effective and, if possible, durable. And it is then only that it will be suitable to speak of the character of our conditions of peace; such is, contrary to that of our enemies, the opinion of many Germans, the Chancellor of the Empire among others. As for convincing those circles in which peace is now desired, either because they maintain the illusion of a possible reconciliation, or because they are nervously impatient of a peace which, being premature, can not but be ephemeral, I do not believe that it can ever be done.

In those circles where only social-democrats meet they misunder-

old notion in Belgium, and since it lent itself so readily to demagogy it was precisely the sort of thing that ap-

---

stand the sentiments inspiring our people to finish the task that has been begun, while at the same time exaggerating the force of resistance of England. Thus they seem to believe that England will never decide to talk of peace so long as we shall not have evacuated and re-established in the position it occupied prior to the war, Belgium, which after fierce struggles and innumerable sacrifices we have succeeded in almost entirely conquering.

I do not wish to be led here to discuss the invincibility of England. Her world-empire is already threatened; it becomes daily more and more evident that in the West and in the East she is at present wounded in her vital organs. Does England nevertheless possess a power so great that, concentrating it upon us, she can snatch Belgium from us, force us again to surrender Belgium to Franco-British influence, and, finally, provide that in the future our country regain its primitive boundaries and frontiers, which, instead of extending to the Channel, shall be withdrawn to the frontier of Belgium? I do not wish to discuss that here.

I propose to develop here an opinion already expressed by me in a previous memoire: I wish to speak of the cruel necessity, or rather the sacred duty imposed on us of keeping Belgium under our influence and our domination, because the security of Germany demands that we do not render Belgium her liberty.

I suppose, of course, that the firm hope I have of seeing the force of arms bring about a decision in our favour will become a reality. But at present we must convince ourselves of this: a Belgium restored to independence—whether she is declared neutral or not—will be included among our enemies; not only will she be impelled to do so by an inevitable sense of necessity, but they will draw her to them. I take for granted that we may hope for a reconciliation—mythical, to my mind—and that we may, by means of as good treaties as possible, obtain guaranties; it can not be denied, however, that from every point of view Belgium will be organized and utilized by our enemies as a TERRITORY OF offensive and of advanced posts.

The following considerations will show what is, in view of a

peals to your small politician who is always confusing sectionalism and particularism with democracy. But it

---

future war, the strategic importance of Belgium. In order to conduct the present war in an offensive manner the high command of the army was obliged to march through Belgium, but the right wing of the German army was not able to advance along the border of the Dutch province of Limbourg except with great difficulty. Strategically speaking, the objective pursued during the present war on the Western front was to find a space where we might march our army against France and England in a war the circumstances of which would all be new.

If the result of the present war should be to leave an independent Belgian State it would be necessary in a subsequent war to conduct the operations in an entirely different manner and with much greater difficulty than in the beginning of the present war, for the whole effort of England and France would tend to outdistance the German army with the aid of a Belgium either allied to them or entirely under their influence. It is permissible to ask one's self whether it would then be possible to safeguard the liberty of action of the German right wing, and even if in another war we could again take the offensive.

The present war has also proved, furthermore, that the possession of a defensive territory beyond the Rhine is essential. The present frontier of the Empire does not suffice. A Belgium supported by English and French forces would immediately threaten our industrial regions, which, by reason of their factories, are indispensable for supplying the needs of the army. Besides, England, if she dominated Belgium in peace times would not hesitate to force Holland—as Greece has recently been forced to do—to abandon her neutrality, or to bow to the exigencies of England's military operations. It is up to us, therefore, to protect our industrial regions—without whose aid we can not conduct the war to a successful finish—by distant lines of defense, and to safeguard the freedom of action of our right wing by widening, as much as is necessary, the territories over which our offensive can deploy.

Before leaving the military and strategic view-point it is necessary that I draw attention to the great value of the industrial

had never excited a serious general interest, and when the war came on was moribund. The Germans, however, sent their *agents provocateurs,* manipulators, and agitators through the land to try to revive the issue,

territory of Belgium, not only in peace time but also in time of war. A Belgium neutral, or under Franco-English influence, by means of its munitions factories, its metallurgic industry, its coal-mines, increases the fighting power and the forces of resistance of a country, just as our own industrial regions do. That is why it is absolutely necessary to prevent Belgian industry from aiding the armament policy of our adversaries. The extra advantages that we have derived from Belgium during this war by the seizure of machinery, etc., should be considered as much as the injury caused the enemy deprived of this increase of fighting power.

If we consider the importance of Belgium to us as a *terrain* where our armies can deploy for an attack, and favourable during future operations for offensive or defensive warfare, there can be no doubt that a frontier limited to the line of the Meuse, where some misguided ones would establish it, and protected by the fortresses of Liége and Namur, can not suffice for Germany. It is necessary, on the contrary, to push the frontier to the sea, as our maritime interests, moreover, demand.

The Belgian industrial region is important for the conduct of the war, but that is not its sole importance. Without the coal, what would have become of our policy of exchange with Holland and the northern countries? The 23 million tons extracted annually from the Belgian coalfields have given us on the Continent a monopoly which has contributed to assure our existence.

In addition to these factors which must be considered in view of a future war, one must also consider that even in peace time it is of priceless importance for us to safeguard our economic interests in Belgium. A Belgium having again become independent will never again be neutral, but will submit, on the contrary, to the protection of France and of England.

If we do not seize Belgium, if in the future we do not govern it to the best of our interests and do not protect it by force of arms, our industry and our commerce will lose the place they have

and with the exaggerated solicitude and gross flattery of the seductor tried to win the confidence of the Flemish. In the minds of the intelligent and responsible Flemish leaders such clumsy methods, of course, pro-

---

won in Belgium and undoubtedly they will never be able to recover it.

German interests in Antwerp will be compromised from the time that Germany relinquishes Belgium, for without any doubt that country will enter into closer relations with England and France as soon as it feels free once more.

The Belgian Government and its politicians who have taken refuge in London are always openly working in that direction. We should not desire, of course, to kill Belgian industry, but by special laws we must impose on it the same conditions as those controlling German industry. We can thus make use of Belgian industry as a lever to play upon the world market and there fix prices. With Antwerp we should not only lose the port, the possibility of controlling railroad rates, etc., but also the great influence that this city possesses as a world-market and financial centre, in South America especially. These forces will also be turned against us, very naturally, as soon as they can be freely utilized.

It has now become a matter of history that neither before nor at the outbreak of this war could Belgium be expected long to remain neutral, and, if one is to attach much importance to these historical truths, it is not admissible that on the conclusion of peace Belgium should be resuscitated as an independent State and neutral country. An independent Belgium, a neutral Belgium, or a Belgium whose status is fixed by treaties, will be, as prior to the war, subject to the baneful influence of England and of France, and will be the prey of America, which seeks to utilize Belgium's resources. In order to prevent that there is but one means and one policy: FORCE; and it is to force that we must again resort in order to compel the present population, still hostile, to accommodate itself to German domination and to submit to it.

Germany is also interested in The Flemish Movement in Belgium, which has already gained considerable ground and which would be mortally affected if we did not extend to Belgium our

duced no feeling but disgust, but a few men were influenced to play the traitorous rôles for which the Germans cast them.

The movement, then, for the separation of adminis-

---

policy of force. Many Flemings are openly our friends and many more also, who still conceal their sentiments; all are ready to associate their interests with these of Germany throughout the world. And this has great weight also in determining the future external policy of Holland, for as soon as we withdraw our protecting hand from Belgium the Flemish Movement will be branded as Germanophile by the Walloons and the Francophiles, and completely crushed by them. The Flemish question has not been solved yet by any means, and I do not cherish the optimistic hope that the Flemings will aid us in our domination of Belgium. From now on we must do everything in our power to divert into the proper channels the unrealizable hopes that are beginning to overflow. A certain Flemish group dreams of an autonomous Flemish State, governed by a king and entirely separate from any other State. Of course we must protect the Flemings, but we can not in any event or under any consideration allow them to become altogether independent. Being of German extraction, as opposed to the Walloons, they will be a precious asset for the German race.

Belgium must be conquered by us and we must retain it as it is at present and as it must remain in the future.

In order fully to assure our future position we must devise for the Belgian problem as simple a solution as possible. If we abandon a portion of Belgium, or if we erect an autonomous State on Belgian territory, we do not only create for ourselves considerable difficulties, but we also deprive ourselves of the very important advantages and of the assistance that Belgian territory can give us only if in its entirety it is subjected to German administration.

If for no other reason than to give our fleet a base of supply and to prevent the isolation of Antwerp from the commercial centres, we must exact all the territory contiguous to that city.

After a century, we are going to be given an opportunity, on the conclusion of peace, to correct the errors made by the Congress of Vienna. In 1871 we corrected one of them by annexing Alsace-

tration opened with a comedy staged at Berlin. The four or five Flemish men, as a commission representing the Flemish people, "went," as I have said, to Berlin with their petitions. Inasmuch as no one could go

---

Lorraine, which Prussia had formerly claimed. At present there must be no more errors committed; we must act without timidity and without any ulterior thought of a reconciliation.

If in order to oblige England to show us sufficient respect, we show a total lack of consideration and firmness, if we weaken, if we withdraw to the line of the Meuse or conclude some sort of an agreement concerning Antwerp, the whole world will consider us weak, the great results we have obtained in the Balkans will be minimized, and, in spite of the importance of our military successes, our fame will suffer in Turkey and throughout the whole of Islam.

There is but one means of forcing the English to recognize us as equals; that is to stay in Belgium. England can not remain mistress of the Belgian coast. We must prevent her from dominating a territory whence a new Franco-English offensive might be launched one of these days, and it would be an overwhelming one this time. I have the firm conviction that once out of Belgium, not only would Franco-English influences prevail, but also the English and French troops would effect their junction there; that is to say, in a future war more than a million men will be ready immediately—on the defensive or to attack our present frontier or on the line of the Meuse.

I shall confine myself to outlining rapidly and in its broad lines to what extent our interior policy is interested in the Belgian problem. The great majority of the people would not understand our giving up Belgium after its having been a long time in our hands, and that we should relinquish the fruits of a victory so dearly won. The war will have cost us at least a million men in the prime of life; our industries will find themselves deprived of many of their strongest arms. The peoples are entitled to see the realization of their hopes. Furthermore, we should see a greater and more active opposition created should those expectations not be fulfilled. Already our diplomatic reserves of the last twenty

from one town to another in Belgium, much less to Germany, without appealing to the Kommandantur for days and sometimes for weeks in order to obtain the necessary passports, which besides were seldom granted,

---

years have made a very unfavourable impression upon the people; the fear is more and more openly expressed that once again diplomacy will lose for us what we have won by the sword. This time, after such enormous sacrifices, we can not run the risk of hearing such reproaches. We must attain that war objective which at home even the lowliest being considers absolutely certain of attainment.

It is not only a question of formulating a minimum of conditions with regard to Belgium that military interests impose on us, but positively to insure in the future the life of the people and of the German Empire.

Whosoever, like me, with entire conviction and with all his energy, conducts a campaign in favour of the annexation of Belgium, is in duty bound also, in order completely to justify his passionate desire, to outline to himself the difficulties to be surmounted and the objections to be combated. For my part, I do not consider the reasons of those who, losing themselves in dreams, judge that the Government is bound by the declarations it made at the outbreak of the war. Of course we did not undertake the war in a spirit of conquest, but solely to defend the Fatherland. The conquest of Belgium was directly forced upon us, and it was considerations affecting the possibilities that lie in the future that led us logically to demand, in the name of our security, that the frontiers of Germany be extended to the west.

Certain people maintain that Germany must be kept free from every foreign element, and that it would affect the powerful unity of Germany to incorporate so many millions of inhabitants of another country differing in language. These are but empty phrases. Germany has nothing to fear; Germany will remain German even though we draw Belgium into our midst; besides, it is thickly peopled with Germans, for the Walloons themselves became French only through the action of time. It will suffice if we see to it that the German spirit and courage become implanted there

and inasmuch as the Belgian people were not allowed to assemble or to hold public discussions, and as they had no Press, it is easy to imagine just whom and what these men represented. They were received by the Chancel-

---

where French influences pursued the work of Frenchification. Obviously, it is a great and difficult problem to enlarge Germany, to subject Belgium to her rule, and to absorb the latter country; but Germany is strong enough, and after the war she will find, I hope, capable men to solve in a German sense the problems that will arise in Belgium, and to solve them more happily than they were solved in Alsace-Lorraine. At least the faults previously committed will have taught us something, and we shall never return in Belgium to that policy of weakness and of reconciliation that was so injurious to us both in Alsace-Lorraine and in Poland.

Of course, it must be a brain-racking dilemma for the diplomatists and the jurists to determine what form the annexation of Belgium should take, and many times have we asked one another, "With whom shall we conclude a peace sanctioning in law the right of conquest?" And indeed that question is not easily answered. Up to the present neither the Belgian Government nor the King has agreed with the Quadruple Entente not to sign a separate peace. But in spite of this reservation, from which there will undoubtedly be a departure in the near future, we shall never be able to conclude with the King of the Belgians and his Government a peace by which Belgium would remain under German domination, and the Quadruple Entente can not agree to our conditions of peace relative to Belgium, its ally. Therefore we can only refuse, during peace negotiations, to discuss the manner in which we shall incorporate Belgium.

We shall limit ourselves to asserting *the right of conquest.*

Obviously, one must not disregard the dynastic point of view, for in so doing, in justice and without concerning ourselves with idle considerations, we dethrone the King of the Belgians and allow him to remain abroad, an enemy full of ill-will. We must arrive at some decision in this respect, and perhaps it were better to conclude that it is so much to our advantage, if necessity does not force us to dwell too long on the dynastic view-point. A king will

lor, Herr von Bethmann-Hollweg, as we read in the German newspapers, and he made a speech in which he extended to the "delegates" a cordial welcome to the capital of the German Empire in "their quality of rep-

never voluntarily abandon his country to the conqueror, and the King of the Belgians will never resign himself to the surrender of his sovereignty or consent to its restriction. His prestige would be so affected that he could no longer be considered an aid to German interests, but a nuisance. The English for a long time and in divers circumstances maintained that the right of conquest is the sanest and simplest, and in Machiavelli's writings one may read that whosoever proposes to seize a country is obliged to rid himself of the king or government, even by murder.

These are certainly very serious resolutions to adopt, but they must nevertheless be adopted, for it is a question of the welfare and future of Germany, and besides, a war of extermination waged against us calls for expiation. We must retain in Belgium for many years to come the state of despotic control which is actually in force.

That despotic control, based on military force, is the sole administrative system that can be chosen; but we shall work out reforms in the future, slowly and methodically, and install a new form of government more appropriate to the interests of Germany. The annexation of Belgium, based upon the right of conquest, will be viewed by many Flemings and by a goodly number of Walloons as a release from doubt and vain hopes. One and the other can then breathe freely, do business, and enjoy life. The Flemings, whose nature is so independent, and who, furthermore, are difficult to manage, will find it easy to adapt themselves, on coming out of the state of tyranny, to a transitory state of things from which liberty for them will arise.

The Walloons can and must decide during that period whether they desire to adapt themselves to the new circumstances or whether they prefer to leave Belgium. Whoever remains in the country must recognize Germany, and, after a certain time, confess to *Deutschtum.* (Allegiance to Germany.)

As a result of this it will be impossible to tolerate that while

resentatives of a people so closely united to the German people by political, economical and intellectual ties." He referred to the "community of ideals which prevails be-

---

wealthy land owners emigrate they continue to derive income from their Belgian properties. In order to avoid in Belgium the creation of a situation analogous to that existing in Alsace-Lorraine, it will be necessary at all costs to have recourse to expropriation. Happily, we are not only powerful with the sword, but our statesmen have clear vision and know how to govern intelligently. Above all, half-way measures must be condemned and no attention paid to the possible wounding of susceptibilities. In these decisive days of German history it would be committing an injustice, fraught with the gravest consequences to those who have died for us, to be irresolute.

It would be, for instance, a half-way measure to treat Belgium as a hostage and not to reconquer, perhaps even to increase by means of her aid, our colonial empire. One thinks first of all of the Belgian Congo, and undoubtedly its possession would be of immense value to us. Speaking generally, I am strongly of the opinion that a colonial empire is necessary for Germany as a solid basis for her power and to allow her to develop a world-wide policy, and it is of slight importance over what regions this empire extends.

But the empire will not have its real value for us unless new frontiers afford us greater freedom on the seas. The partisans of a colonial policy must therefore also insist that we be given the Belgian coast-line, with the territory contiguous to it, for if we relinquish this, our fleet will lack important bases from which to undertake the efficient defense of our colonies.

It is, I realize, a great scheme to propose to keep all of Belgium for Germany, and to annex it under one form or another. It is a great goal that can be attained only by a courage ready for every sacrifice, and by clever energy at the time of peace negotiations. Let us take inspiration from that phrase of Bismarck (to which Bismarck gave such significance): "As in every walk of life so it is true in politics, that faith removeth mountains, that courage and victory have not the relationship of cause and effect, but are identical."

tween the two peoples," and assured them that "the confidence with which they had approached him had found a vibrating echo in his heart." He went on to express the wish that "in the midst of a bloody struggle Germans and Flemish might remember that the bitter fight against the encroachments of the Latin race should lead them to the same end."

"We have still before us many struggles and much labour," he said, "but that does not prevent me from extending to you my hand, that we may combat together our common enemy."

Continuing, the Chancellor said that "His Majesty, animated only by his esteem and compassion for the Flemish people, had decided to grant their wishes," and that "in execution of the orders of His Majesty the Emperor," he was "authorized to say that in order to give the Flemish people the possibility of developing freely, intellectually and economically, which has heretofore been refused them," he would lay "the cornerstone of the edifice of the Flemish national autonomy which the Flemish people were not able to conquer for themselves." In accord with the Governor-General in Belgium he gave them the assurance that this policy "which, as you have said, must be in conformity with the principles of international law," would be adopted, "and in order to bring it about we shall make a complete separation of administration, such as has been desired for so long by both parties in Belgium. . . ."

"The frontier of tongues must also be the frontier of administration under the common authority of the Governor-General," and the collaboration of the German authorities was promised the "representatives of

the Flemish people, who are so profoundly conscious of the duty they have to undertake and of the task that has been imposed upon them by their patriotism in these decisive times."

The Chancellor hailed "the unanimity of the Flemish people" as the best guarantee of the success of their work, and went on to say:

"After the negotiations of peace, and when peace shall have been established, the German Empire will do all in its power to encourage and to insure the development of the Flemish nation."

And then, in conclusion, he charged his visitors to spread his declaration in their "beautiful country. Say to the citizens of Flanders that we Germans shall do all that we can so that out of the distress and the misery of these times a new era of prosperity shall dawn for them."

It seems incredible, I know, and yet I take these extracts from the speech of the Chancellor as published in the officially censored Press in Germany and in Belgium. That, at the very moment when German soldiers were ravaging Belgium, bearing from those very provinces of Flanders for which such touching solicitude was expressed thousands of men into slavery, stripping every home in Belgium of the last of its copper and of its linen, with thousands of spies swarming over the country and rummaging in every bedroom and closet in the land, with daily executions of the death penalty after a mockery of a trial, the head of a modern State could seriously have adopted that tone, is beyond the comprehension of the normal mind. If he was sincere it proves that the Prussian mind thinks in se-

quences that are inaccessible to our mental processes.[3]

Then on the twenty-first of March appeared the official edict of von Bissing decreeing the division of the administrations, ordering that thenceforth there be virtually two internal Governments, one Flemish with its seat at Brussels, the other Walloon with its seat at Namur. The Flemish administration included, it will be noted, the two Flanders, part of Brabant, and Antwerp—that is, those portions of Belgium most coveted by German imperalism. Never, even when German troops entered Belgium in that terrible month of August, 1914, had such a blow been struck at Belgian honour, at Belgian patriotism, at Belgian pride, and the answer on the part of Belgium, and especially on the part of Flemish Belgium, was instant. The so-called Flemish delegates who had gone to Berlin were disowned, and the

[3] The feeling of all Belgium was nowhere so correctly expressed as in the protest adopted by the common council of Antwerp, when the stout burghers, themselves all Flemish, declared to the Governor-General: "We consider this measure as pernicious to the existence of our country and as favourable to our enemies. It is in contradiction with all our traditions and with our most important interests. If Antwerp considers itself with pride as the city having the strongest Flemish sentiments in the country, it is nevertheless to be, as a port and as an artistic center, one of the most powerful organs of Belgium as a whole. It does not yield to any other city in the realm, and this patriotism embraces in the same affection the Flemish and the Walloons. Blind is he who does not see that a people has other interests to safeguard than those which concern simply linguistic questions, however respectable those may be."

To these, others were added on the part of Belgian subjects of Walloon derivation.

most prominent men in the intellectual, political, and financial world among the Flemish at once sent a vigorous protest to the Chancellor. The responsible Flemish leaders, indeed, had protested even before the *affiche* definitely announcing the separation had been published. On the 20th they addressed a protest to the Chancellor of the Empire, telling him that the so-called delegation was composed of men unknown in the country, saying that they were without mandate or authority, and denouncing them as traitors to their own country and their own people. They were, indeed, everywhere execrated; threats against them were heard; if they remained in Belgium after the war they would be lynched, and they were added to that list, not very long in truth, considering all the circumstances, of whom it was said: *"On arrangera leur affaire après la guerre."*

As the far reaching meaning and the purpose of this act became more and more understood there was a spirit of resistance in Belgium such as I had never seen before. I was not in Belgium to see the end, but in those late days in March the personalities of Belgium and all the Parliamentarians then in or near the capital, met secretly and on several occasions, and unanimously resolved to resist the plan to dismember their nation. As a first step it was decided that when the edict was put into execution all the heads of departments should resign.

"When you are 'outside,' " said one of the leaders to me, "tell our friends that we will never submit; that the heads of departments will resign; tell them not to think of us, not to think of peace without victory but to go

on fighting until this brutal and insolent power is crushed." [4]

That message was given to me again and again, by

[4] The project was put into execution and the functionaries affected were ready and prompt to act; all the heads of departments, without exception, instantly resigned and refused to serve under the newly imposed conditions.

Baron von Bissing died April 18, 1917, and Baron von Falkenhausen, appointed to succeed him as Governor-General in Belgium, continued the work of dismemberment. On May 19, 1917, he issued an order to the Herr Dr. von Sandt, chief of the civil administration, to revoke his promise of January 4, 1915, and thus withdrew from the functionaries the right to resign. This was accordingly done, and the functionaries who had refused to continue after the separation of administration were arrested and most of them taken to Germany as prisoners, for having exercised a right that was not only assured them by The Hague Conventions, but had been expressely acknowledged by the German Government when they consented to continue at their posts, and had thereby formed a part of their contract of employment.

"Revoking" a promise was not much more of a novelty in Belgium than ignoring The Hague Conventions. The walls of Brussels had often borne solemn proclamations "revoking" promises made to the population. Then, the promise of immunity having been "revoked," the directors, secretaries-general, chiefs of division and other functionaries who had resigned were arrested and dragged off to prison camps in Germany.

Cardinal Mercier, that noble and austere figure, the incarnation of the virtues of his race, the prelate who recalls the early fathers of the Church, added to the long list of heroic deeds he had so courageously performed by a letter to Baron von Falkenhausen in which he resolutely defended the right of these functionaries to resign, and protested against their deportation.

The Cardinal's letter concludes with a spirited and trenchant sentence:

"Excellency," he says, "heed those who know the Belgian people and their history; no violence will ever overcome their patriotism."

all sorts and conditions of men. It was the unanimous sentiment of those brave people who endured, not only all the cruelties and calamities and horrors of war, but the ignominies of a German occupation besides, a civil population that resisted as heroically as its little army resisted at Liége and on the Yser. It is a sentiment that expresses the very soul of that brave people, about whose tragic destiny the great struggle for justice and freedom in the world has swirled.

The Cardinal sums up his countrymen in this defiant phrase. Their resistance to this attack on the political field has been instant and determined, as it was on the field of battle when, in 1914, the power that had sworn to protect the little State laid it waste with fire and sword. It is one more proof of the indomitable resistance of a brave people, inspiring to every lover of human liberty who realizes the significance of this war as the effort of autocracy, in its modern form of a military caste with a camouflage of culture, to yoke its domination on the world.

Reading the Cardinal's various protests side by side with the von Bissing testament, one may behold in striking contrast the irreconcilable doctrines that oppose each other in this world-conflict. The two figures themselves are in bold opposition—the one, with no arms but those of culture, contending for democracy and justice, relying on the rule of reason; the other, with a ruthless army at his command, striving to bring about the reign of brutal force, and relying on the theory that any deed is right if one has the power and the effrontery to commit it.

Somewhere toward the close of the von Bissing memoire there is a sentence in which is cited the advice of Machiavelli to the effect that when a prince would annex a province he must first dispose of the ruler of that province, even, if need be, by putting him to death.

General von Bissing is dead and history will deal with his rule in Belgium, and among the documents for the future historian to study none, perhaps, will be more interesting than this memoire, made public and vouched for by Herr Bacmeister, who thought thereby to render his friend an homage and his nation a patriotic service. B. W.

LI

RAGS AND OLD BONES

And while all this was going on we watched the spring come once more to Belgium, with pale, melancholy days that would have seemed wholly without hope had it not been for the thought that the great Republic in the West was organizing a newer and larger Commission for Relief in Belgium. Our trunks and boxes were all packed and we were ready to leave on a moment's notice, and yet we lived on, as we had lived so long, and had we but known were destined still to live, *sur la branche.*

"Shall we have war?" said Count von Gersky when I encountered him one morning in the Montagne de la Cour.

I answered his question with a diplomatic shrug of the shoulders and as careless an "As you please" as I could command. . . . Count von Gersky was what might have been called an *officier de liaison* between the General Staff in the north of France and the C.R.B. in its work in that region, and he had rendered loyal service to the cause. Mr. Hoover and Dr. Kellogg had always spoken of him with respect. He was a big, fine-looking man who, after his twelve years' residence in London, wore a monocle and had a manner that was distinctly English. He was smiling and pleasant.

We talked a while there in the street; the Count said

that if we were to abandon the *ravitaillement,* or not contrive somehow to keep it going, the people in the north of France would have to starve, for the Germans had only enough food for themselves.

And the people of Belgium were in the same plight. Just then down at the Gare du Luxembourg there were daily long lines of women surrendering up to the Germans their copper batteries, those pots and kettles which they had polished through so many years, which had been furbished and polished by their mothers and grandmothers before them, to make shining masses of gold in Flemish kitchens, taken from them now to be made into munitions of war with which to kill the husbands and brothers of those women. In the Bois, where the bright new greens were stealing, there were no smart equipages, no bright toilettes any more, no ladies and gentlemen riding spirited horses, and no lovers courting there; only ragged men in broken sabots, and children, their fingers blue with cold, picking up twigs to make a little fire at home.

One morning coming back from the Bois along the avenue Louise, there near the Place Stephanie, I met de Singay who remarked, almost casually:

"The Tsar has abdicated; the Grand Duke Nicholas Alexandrovitch is regent; there will be a constitutional Government."

We stood there and discussed the historical event, the latest of all the prodigious sequels to the French Revolution, in that almost indifferent calm which historical events had bred in us. . . . How the world had changed! Revolutions, the fall of dynasties, the crash of empires, these were but stuff for small talk. An event had to be either very immense or very small to in-

terest us. One heard a big story, as the journalists say, every hour or two, and yet, strange and inscrutable irony in things, the very moment in which there was so much news was the one in which censors appeared and a shortage of that paper on which the journalists would have loved to print it all!

I walked on, thinking of revolutions; would they come everywhere after the war, as so many were saying! *"Gare à la démocratie après la guerre!"* exclaimed, one evening after dinner, a man who did not much believe in democracy, shaking a warning finger at the company. Every one, since the war began, had been predicting a revolution in Germany, but it had not come, nor would it, said I to myself—unless the Government ordered it. . . . There they went, those men in field grey, with the sheer occiputs and narrow craniums, *têtes carrées,* their ears thrust out like those of fauns, under their little round skull-caps, trudging along the boulevard with stupid, docile, bovine expressions. There was no spirit, no revolt in them; theirs was the only country that had not, at some time in its history, had a revolution—not that revolutions in and of themselves were always good things, but they did at least show spirit and independence. All good countries had had them, as all good dogs have had the distemper; they had only a little *échauffourée* in 1848, immediately put down. They were tame, doubly mastered and enslaved, yet capable of monstrous brutalities and sanguinary cruelties on the weak—unarmed civilians, women, and children.

I think we talked more of the retreat of the German army in the north of France than of any other contemporary event, though no one was quite sure it was a

retreat. Brussels insisted that it was, because Brussels liked to think of it as a retreat, but the only results noted were the hordes of refugees from evacuated villages in the north of France who came pouring into the Hainaut. They had fled on two hours' notice in fear and terror, leaving their homes, which were in flames before they could pause for a last look at them. They were streaming into Charleroi with bleeding feet, grandfathers and grandmothers bearing frightened children with wild, haunted, haggard eyes. Mr. Gregory told me that there were fifty thousand of them, another vast hegira of that civilian population that was scattered in tribal wanderings by the besom of destruction. The Belgian villagers received them with Belgian hospitality; villages of only five hundred inhabitants found means of lodging a thousand, and the C.R.B. fed them. And the vast armies swayed back and forth in that unending struggle.

And yet life went on, in some of its aspects quite normal; M. Francqui was married during that month, as was his lieutenant, M. Emannuel Janssen, and we all went to the ceremony in the Eglise de St. Croix, near the Etang d'Ixelles, one bright spring morning. But the wedding over, the sun, as though it had appeared for that event alone, went under the grey clouds and it was almost winter again, with the cold, the *giboulées de mars,* though when the 21st, the first day of spring, came, and the ground was all covered with snow, a charming thing befell. In *Le Quotidien,* one of the censored sheets, there appeared a little article that filled Brussels with amazement and delight, and in the immense monotony of stupendous events gave us a theme for conversation

far more lively and interesting than battles and revolutions. It was this:

LUI. . . .[2]

Le printemps n'est pas encore là, en dépit de la date fatidique du 21 mars. Une ou deux fois déjà nos espoirs ont été trompés. Qu'importe? . . . L'astronomie est une science exacte, et il est des certitudes mathématiques.

Son retour a Lui aussi est écrit au cadran éternel des temps, et lorsqu'il fera son entrée triomphale dans sa bonne ville de Bruxelles, de l'avoir entendu si longtemps, si impatiemment, notre joie sera plus grande encore. Ce sera la fête du soleil, la fête des fleurs, et l'âme de tout un peuple communiera avec Lui. . . .

What unknown writer in that meretricious inspired Press had still the patriotism in his soul to write a little poem so cleverly that the German censor never saw the allusion that made all Brussels for the moment happy by its pretty conceit, and buoyed up the hope and reaffirmed that faith, of which there was imperative need if man was to continue to believe in justice in the universe, in the inevitable coming of that day when the King would return? Whoever he was, he had his secret satisfaction, atoning somewhat for the treason

---

[2] HIM. . . .

Spring is not yet here, despite the fatidical date of the 21st March. Once or twice already our hopes have been disappointed. What matter? . . . Astronomy is an exact science, and it is mathematically certain.

His return also is written on the eternal dial of time, and when he makes his triumphal entry into his good city of Brussels, after having waited so long, so impatiently, our joy will be all the greater. That will be the feast of the sun, the feast of the flowers, and the soul of a whole people will commune with Him. . . .

his necessities tempted him to commit in writing for that Press at all, and the literal, unimaginative German censor never suspected until the spies, listening at every key hole in town, got some inkling of this most artistic *double entendre,* and when it was at last explained to the censor the newspaper was suspended for its audacity.

But the spring was as tardy as the victory, the smiles faded, and the people in the dismal streets wore again the old moody, preoccupied expression of sadness.

"Vodden en beenen!" called the old woman in her shrill pipe down the Rue de Trèves every morning under my window. Ah, yes! Rags and old bones! To this had German materialism brought down a world that once was lovely in the springtime and full of new hope each morning.

LII

INSTRUCTIONS TO DEPART

Such was the ambient element of our life during those strange days of waiting and of worry, while that fatal ankylosis perpetuated the uncertainty in the reorganization of the *ravitaillement*. It had been plain, I think, to most of us, that with Germany and America at war, the Americans, even if they desired, could not remain long in Belgium, travelling about at their will and pleasure, inspecting the distribution of food and reporting on German interferences and abuses. But there were some who clung to the illusion that it might be, and clung to it almost to the last, and no argument seemed powerful enough to shake their fatal infatuation.

It is not a safe rule to go by, and I should hesitate to recommend it to any one, but there are moments of complication in life when it seems that there is but one thing to do, and that is to sit down and wait, in the hope, too often illusory and vain, that opposing tendencies by their mutual reaction will neutralize their own contradictions. The wires that lay under three thousand miles of troubled seas seemed for awhile to be as hopelessly crossed and entangled as the purposes they were endeavoring to harmonize. I shall not set myself the tiresome and tedious task of describing how our problem was complicated by their conflicting expressions, oftentimes ludicrous enough to laugh at had we not

been so worn by the nervous strain that we felt like weeping over them.

And so all the while, as in almost endless and futile conferences the matter was discussed, over and over, in a hopeless, vicious circle, and the two nations were drifting into the inevitable clash of war, Mr. Gregory and I could only continue to urge that provision be made for replacing the Americans.

Our meetings once so interesting, had become dull; the break in diplomatic relations, the coming separation, the impending change, the uncertainty as to the future, the ever-present thought that we were gathered perhaps for the last time, dispirited and discouraged us all, and the weariness of the long strain was apparent in every one. M. Francqui seemed to have no more of those jokes, those flashes of wit that had once enlivened us and kept up our spirits. We discussed the reports of abuses, heard that cattle were still being shipped in hundreds, had private information that the authorities were powerless to prevent it—but these things, once so momentous in the trouble they occasioned, seemed now to be small in comparison with the larger problems. There were utter weariness, long pauses, and silences.

"Well, my dear Minister," said Baron Lambert, rising one day after we had been in discussion for an hour, "I have a feeling that some one should be the first to go, and I'll be that one."

Mr. Gregory produced some effect by his announcement, early in March, that in the event of war he felt that all the Americans should leave at once.

"I know that I shall," he said. "In war a civilian's place is in his own country, or at least not in the enemy's country—if he can avoid it."

But would he be able to avoid it, and would all those other Americans be able to avoid it, if we did nothing?

I urged again and again that the Dutch and Spanish delegates be brought in and distributed over Belgium. Villalobar had approved, as had van Vollenhoven, but Holland was nearer Belgium than Spain, and Dutchmen more accessible than Spaniards, and the Marquis could not so easily or so promptly produce his own countrymen. It is not, I trust, too Chauvinistic to say that it was not easy to find men of the character of those who had served as volunteers in the Commission for Relief in Belgium. As the Marquis himself once remarked, they were gentlemen and business men. Gentlemen could be found elsewhere, and business men as well, "but," said the Marquis, "the gentlemen are not always business men and the business men are not always gentlemen!"

Then we had what was always to me good news—Kellogg was coming and we decided to postpone our discussion until he arrived. I had not as yet sent any answer to von der Lancken's letter; I had been hoping that we could reach some solution that would enable me to write definitely, but I could leave it no longer unanswered, and I sent my temporizing reply.[1]

---

[1] Legation of the United States of America,
Bruxelles, le 26 février, 1917.

Mon cher Baron:

J'ai l'honneur de vous accuser réception de votre aimable lettre d'aujourd'hui, dans laquelle vous réitérez le désir, que vous aviez déjà exprimé votre lettre du 10 février à Son Excellence Monsieur le Marquis de Villalobar, de voir continuer le travail de la Commission for Relief in Belgium, et mon association à cette oeuvre. Ainsi que je l'ai écrit à Son Excellence Monsieur le Marquis de Villalobar en lui accusant réception d'une copie de votre lettre, les

And then, like a thunderbolt, came the exposure in America of Zimmermann's plot in Mexico, with its gen-

---

Messieurs américains de la Commission for Relief in Belgium seraient toujours prêts à continuer leur travail en Belgique, comme je serais heureux moi-même de rester associé à cette oeuvre d'une manière compatible avec la position que j'ai l'honneur d'occuper dans le service diplomatique du Gouvernement des Etats-Unis d'Amérique.

Vous voulez bien me rappeler aussi la conversation que j'ai eu le plaisir d'avoir avec vous à ce sujet, et au cours de laquelle je vous ai dit que si nous trouvions le moyen de concilier les exigences d'une situation sans précédent, je prolongerais volontiers mon séjour en Belgique pour veiller à la continuation du bon fonctionnement de la Commission for Relief in Belgium.

Je vous remercie encore pour l'honneur que vous me faites en me priant, dans les circonstances actuelles, de rester à Bruxelles, et je différerai mon départ jusqu'à ce que soient reglées les questions encore en litage au sujet du ravitaillement; car je suis certain que nous avons tous le même désir de n'épargner aucune peine en vue de l'accomplissement de cette oeuvre humanitaire à laquelle vos efforts et votre bienveillance ont toujours été si précieux.

Veuillez recevoir, mon cher Baron, l'assurance de mes sentiments sincérement dévouées.

(*Signé*) BRAND WHITLOCK.

À SON EXCELLENCE
MONSIEUR LE BARON VON DER LANCKEN-WAKENITZ,
etc., etc., etc.,
Bruxelles.

(Translation:)

LEGATION OF THE UNITED STATES OF AMERICA,
Brussels, 26 February, 1917.

MY DEAR BARON:

I have the honour to acknowledge receipt of your kind letter of even date, in which you reiterate the desire, which you had already expressed in your letter of the 10 February to His Excellency the Marquis of Villalobar, to see the work of the Commission for Relief in Belgium continue, and my association with it. As

erous offer to Mexico of the States of Texas, Arizona, and New Mexico if she would go to war with America. Nothing in the whole course of the war had more accurately revealed the German mentality, and at the Politische Abteilung there was real chagrin, if not at the miserable trick at least at the disclosure of it, and Villalobar, chaffing them there about it, said:

"Quand on veut faire ces choses-là, il faut savoir les faire."

I have written to His Excellency the Marquis of Villalobar in acknowledging receipt of a copy of your letter, the American gentlemen of the Commission for Relief in Belgium are always ready to continue their work in Belgium, as I myself should be happy to remain associated with that work under conditions compatible with the position which I have the honour to occupy in the diplomatic service of the Government of the United States of America.

You are good enough also to remind me of the conversation which I had the pleasure of having with you and during the course of which I told you that if we found means of reconciling the demands of an unprecedented situation, I should gladly prolong my stay in Belgium in order to look after the continuation of the proper functioning of the Commission for Relief in Belgium.

I thank you again for the honour you do me in urging me, under the present circumstances, to remain in Brussels, and I shall postpone my departure until the questions still in dispute concerning the *ravitaillement* are settled; because I am certain that we all have the same desire to spare no pains in bringing about the accomplishment of this humanitarian work, to which your efforts and your kindness have always been so precious.

Pray accept, my dear Baron, the assurance of my sincerely devoted sentiments. (*Signed*) BRAND WHITLOCK.

To His Excellency
The Baron von der Lancken-Wakenitz,
etc., etc., etc.,
Brussels.

The news reached us just as we were waiting for the President's second inaugural and were beginning to hear rumours of an extraordinary session of Congress, and we could imagine how the revelation would act on national sentiment at such a time. The German newspapers were sputtering with splenetic rage over the exposure of the plot, and complaining of the President, saying that it was unfair of him to expose Zimmermann; and we suffered the reaction of all this feeling.

And I was more than ever anxious to get the C.R.B. men out of Belgium, for when Kellogg came, having crossed from Harwich to the Hook of Holland in a despatch boat, convoyed by destroyers, he brought news that because of the *lourde gaffe* war was inevitable and would come within a fortnight. My long residence in Belgium under German rule had taught me what they might expect when that two weeks had expired; I had constant visions of their being deported to Ruhleben, or some such place.

In the many conferences that followed I urged again and again the one possible solution which under the circumstances would insure the continuance of the *ravitaillement*—the replacement of the American delegates by Dutchmen and Spaniards, and at last the plan was endorsed by Mr. Hoover and assented to by all. The agreement came when we were almost in despair. The Germans had not yet given the promised guaranties for the immunity of the men of the C.R.B., and were threatening to hold them in quarantine at Spa, or at Baden-Baden, or somewhere in Germany, and Kellogg hurried out through the closed frontier with our plan, and Mr. Gregory arranged to substitute the new delegates as soon as they came in. Even then there were

more difficulties and delays; the proportion of Spaniards to Dutch was of long discussion, and Kellogg stopped in Holland until this problem could be solved.

I had little notion of what interest the world outside was taking in us until one day Dr. Reith sent to me to ask that in view of the alarming rumours that were being published, I give a statement to be telegraphed to American newspapers testifying that the Germans had done nothing inimical to the interests of the C.R.B. men and their work. I replied that it would be time enough to give such a statement when we had the promised assurances, and we got them then in writing, but they provided that before they could be released the men of the C.R.B. should be held in quarantine for a month! Inasmuch as the situation in its then unsettled state seemed likely to endure that long, Mr. Gregory and I asked the Germans to let the men pass this period of purification in Brussels, where they were then assembled waiting anxiously from day to day some news as to their fate; we pointed out that in all civilized countries some allowance was made, even in the case of criminals, for the period they had passed in gaol awaiting trial, and Lancken agreed that this be done, in the case of the delegates in Belgium, at least; and a few days later we induced them to reduce by a fortnight the duration of the quarantine.

Then I found that I had another problem on my hands, a problem growing out of the situation of the Chinese, depicted for me by Tchao Itao, the Chinese chargé, and Shu Tze, the Secretary of the Legation, who came one day for advice. When their Minister, M. Ouang, had gone away in the summer he had left behind a little son, a boy of six; they had asked for

passports for the boy and his tutor, to join Ouang in Switzerland; the passports had been given, and then suddenly withdrawn, and a passport was issued only for the boy—a lad of six in a strange world, expected to start out on such a journey alone! And, moreover, a rupture in their diplomatic relations with Germany was imminent.

But the Spaniards and the Dutchmen arrived at last, and on March 22 Mr. Gregory began to install them in place of the Americans. He made the first changes in the north of France, where there were seven of our men, and these were to be sent at once by the Germans to Baden-Baden to be quarantined for a fortnight; we had induced the Germans to shorten the period of cleansing in their case as well to that length of time. In order to instruct the new men Mr. Prentiss Gray had volunteered to remain after Mr. Gregory's departure, if Mr. Gregory ever got away, which sometimes we doubted. The news that crept in between the shining wires at the frontier was to the effect that all America was in vast excitement. The delegates were waiting in Brussels, confined to the limits of the city on parole, and there is little doubt that all the time when the delivery of the promised guarantees of immunity were from day to day delayed, the Germans intended to hold them as hostages; I had it from an excellent source, and the Germans explained their delay by alleging a fear that the Americans might mistreat Germans in America. It was with such possibilities suspended over them that they waited—and I waited. . . .

It came at last on Sunday, the twenty-fifth of March, a telegram from the President himself. At tea-time

Villalobar was announced; his face was very grave. Mr. Gregory happened to be with me. The Marquis had a telegram from his colleague at The Hague. It was this:

"Le représentant des Etats-Unis demande que Votre Excellence transmette au Ministre d'Amérique dans cette capitale le cable suivant, daté de Washington 23 mars et venant du Secrétaire d'Etat:

"A la demande du Président, je vous transmets l'instruction de quitter la Belgique immédiatement, accompagné par le personnel de votre Légation, par les officiers consulaires américains et par les membres de la Commission for Relief in Belgium. Le Département vous prie de télégraphier le date probable de votre départ de Belgique, ainsi que la route que vous suivrez, et vos projets." [2]

It was a distinct relief, and Mr. Gregory sprang up at once to send the Dutch and Spanish delegates that night into the provinces.

(Translation:)

[2] The United States representative begs that Your Excellency transmit to the American Minister at that capital the following cablegram dated at Washington the 23rd of March and coming from the Secretary of State:

"At the request of the President I transmit instructions to you to leave Belgium immediately, accompanied by the personnel of your Legation, by the American consular officers and by the members of the Commission for Relief in Belgium. The Department begs you to telegraph the probable date of your departure as well as the route which you will follow, and your plans."

LIII

DETAILS OF DEPARTURE

THE next morning I went to see Lancken. When I told him the news, there in that little room upstairs where the tiny stove was always going furiously, he looked grave for a moment, then said that there was nothing to be done but to bow to the inevitable. He expressed regret at my departure, and asked me to grant him a day or two in which to make arrangements for the passports; there would be a sleeping-car for the Legation staff, the best he could contrive because of the difficulty in transportation just then on account of the movement of troops. As to the Consuls and the C.R.B., he would know more the following day, but he feared that it would be impossible to give us a special train so that we could all go out together. We chatted some time under the sobering influence of the thought of war between our countries.

"Mon Dieu!" he exclaimed, *"amis depuis le temps de Frédéric II!"*

He feared that the English would seize the occasion to stop the *ravitaillement,* but I told him that only the Germans could do that; that if they continued to permit the abuses it would stop, but that it would all go on well if they put an end to them. He promised that the Governor-General would take drastic measures. He thought that we were nearing the end of the war because of the Russian Revolution; there would soon

be a separate peace with Petrograd, he said, and perhaps with another nation, though he did not vouchsafe its name.

The news flew at once over the town, in that mysterious way it always had in Brussels; again our friends came to bid us farewell, and when I went for a last look at the corners of the old town I had grown to love so deeply, in every one of the familiar shops where I stopped the people were already sorrowfully aware that at last we were going. And in the afternoon of that long day, as I was having my tea alone, I received a letter from the Comité National, signed by M. Solvay and M. Francqui, a letter that I read not without emotion.[1]

---

[1] Comité National de Secours et d'Alimentation

Bruxelles, le 26 mars, 1917.

Montagne du Parc, 3.

Cher Ministre:

Parmi toutes les heures graves qu'a vécues le Comité National celle que marque votre départ est l'une des plus émouvantes.

Depuis près de deux ans et demi, les Belges qui, avec le concours de la Commission for Relief in Belgium, ont assumé la lourde tâche de faire vivre, quand même, leurs compatriotes se sentaient soutenus dans leur effort par votre sympathie et par votre aide constante. Votre présence parmi eux, la certitude qu'ils avaient de pouvoir, en toute circonstance, faire appel à votre intervention, à votre appui, à votre amitié ardente, étaient pour eux une force précieuse. Ils en étaient arrivés à compter sur vous comme sur un compatriote. Il semblait presqu'en votre esprit généreux deux patriotismes vécussent: l'un pour votre grande nation, l'autre pour le petit pays que sa détresse et sa passion du droit, qui conduit votre carrière, vous avaient fait aimer.

Et nous n'étions pas seuls, nous qui pouvions mesurer l'entendue du service par vous rendu en demeurant en Belgique, nous n'étions

Among my callers that afternoon was a German officer of reserves, a man for whom I had come to have much respect. He was highly educated and there was much good in him, such limitations as he had being essentially Teutonic. I had talked often with him; he used to explain to me the well-known German conception of war as a biological struggle of the human species, destined to go on forever—that misunderstanding of Darwinism with which they had dosed their muddled philosophy. Now that this struggle for life was on

---

pas seuls à éprouver cette impression. Vous avez, cher Ministre, vous rendre compte la profondeur des sentiments de respect et de reconnaissance dont vous entourait toute la population belge. Au moment où l'on a appris en Belgique la rupture des relations diplomatiques entre les Etats-Unis et l'Allemagne, ce qui a le plus frappé, ce qui a profondément ému, c'est la pensée de votre départ.

Aujourd'hui cette pensée nous secoue tous. Nous ne voulons pas tenter de vous dire ici toute notre reconnaissance et toute celle de peuple belge; il faudra, pour l'exprimer, des formes solennelles, possibles seulement lorsque la nation vivra de sa vie normale. Alors seulement la Belgique pourra montrer qu'elle sait ce qu'elle doit à la grande république.

Aujourd'hui nous venons dire à l'homme qui l'a si noblement représentée parmi nous, à l'homme de grand coeur et d'esprit élevé, le respect qu'il nous inspire, la gratitude que nous lui gardons, la tristesse que nous cause son départ et notre espoir ardent de le revoir en des jours meilleurs quil aura puissamment contribué à nous rendre.

Nous vous prions, Cher Ministre et ami, de transmettre à Madame Brand Whitlock l'expression de notre respect, de lui dire que nous garderons le souvenir de son intélligente bonté, de remercier pour nous les membres du personnel de votre légation qui ont secondé vous efforts avec tant de zèle, de passion, d'affectueux élan, et de croire à nos sentiments d'inaltérable dévouement.

(*Signé*) E. Francqui. (*Signé*) S. Solvay.

between his species and mine, he was deeply shocked and grieved, and yet not at all unfriendly. Sitting there holding his great helmet between his knees, his face grown dark and sad, he spoke very earnestly of the impending conflict. He had not expected war, he said, as though he had cause for grievance, and he assured me that all Germans felt very bitterly toward America; America had been Germany's worst enemy; for since the Allies were not ready Germany would have won the war if America had not furnished munitions, and enriched herself in so doing. He said that we had not been neutral, that we had not insisted on protecting our commerce with Germany—that is, had not insisted on England's allowing American ships to pass the blockade. I tried to explain to him the theory of a blockade, but there was no explanation that I could make understandable to him. He began then to talk about the submarines, carefully explained to me that the German Government could not accede to America's demand, could not observe the rules as to giving warning to a ship, because if a submarine showed itself, it could be instantly sunk.

"You see," he said, with an air of happy illumination, "the submarine is a new invention; it changes the conditions of warfare; the old rules cannot be applied to it; America should have seen this and governed herself accordingly."

"But," I said, "do you think that you can change the rules of the game to your own advantage while the game is going on, just because you are losing?"

He stared at me. He did not see the point. They have, as I have said more than once, no sports in Ger-

many. A disarmed foe, a handicapped adversary—so much the better.

It was plain from the manner of all the Germans that I met at this time that none of them had expected America to take up the challenge, and that the German Government had not expected it, for they, of course, were but reflecting the opinion of Berlin. *"Une protestation très forte, mais oui,"* as Lancken had said, but no more. Their state of mind revealed the profound depths of cynicism to which their philosophy of life had sunk them. They did not understand America, of course; not many Europeans had ever understood her. Many have noted her superficial defects, as did Dickens and Mrs. Trollope and most of those who wrote books about us after a brief visit to our shores; the only ones who apprehended the secret were Lord Bryce and, long before, the young de Tocqueville. But to the others she lay off there in the West, dim and mysterious; and in reply to snobbish criticisms there was only the scornful laugh of the Genius of These States echoing in sovereign indifference from his mountain-top afar in the West.

There had been several conceptions of us, current in novel or cinema, the millionaire of the liberal *pourboire,* or the cowboy in evening dress nonchalantly chewing a cigar, and now and then, when in a tight pinch, calmly drawing his six-shooter. A charming lady at Brussels one evening remarked to me at dinner that it must be more uncomfortable to live in those sky-scrapers and to be known by a number.

But the most unflattering conception was that of the Germans, who thought us as grossly materialistic as themselves, and great hypocrites in the bargain, pre-

tending to a morality in which we did not believe. Of the essential idealism of America they had literally no notion. Their view of human society in general was indeed no more generous than that of Talleyrand, who carried disillusion to the point of an extravagant and utter negation, though they lacked the wit, so abundant in Talleyrand, that makes cynicism and pessimism agreeable. They were so imbued with the cynicism that had prevailed in European Chancelleries for decades that they considered President Wilson's exposition of principles and ideals merely as some new and rather clever political camouflage. It never occurred to them to take it seriously; it never occurred to them that any public man anywhere took such things seriously; and, failing to see in the notes and speeches in which that exposition had been made, the careful, patient, orderly pleadings on which the great Liberal leader was preparing to try the cause of humanity before the bar of history, unable to see the point where the issues at last were joined, they supposed that he would go on with the ideal exposition and leave them to continue the realistic work of the submarines.

The days that followed were filled with good-byes. I went one afternoon for tea with a charming old lady in her house in the Rue Royale, at the corner of the Rue Belliard, a fine old mansion, pure Louis XIV; once the palace of a bishop. From the window of the *salon* I looked down on that spot where once stood the *pensionnat Heger,* with its memories of Charlotte Brontë. In her day it was reached by the stairs that descend there behind the statue of Count Belliard, but it is all gone now, to make place for the great central railway station that was a part of the vast design Leopold II

had for beautifying Brussels. And gazing down there, thinking of Charlotte Brontë and of her affection for the master of the school, I had that sadness which one feels in leaving a place where one has lived, and the regret of not having hunted out all the old literary landmarks of Brussels; on that very spot before my eyes the impressionable Irish girl had lived and suffered; beneath the slender, delicate spire of the Hôtel de Ville, hung like a scarf of lovely lace in the pale spring sky there on the Grand'Place, was the house where Victor Hugo had lived while he was making his studies for the description of the battle of Waterloo; just across the Park was the home where Byron once stayed; not far away was the building where there had been

"the sound of revelry by night,"

whence George Selby had gone forth to the battle on the field where he was found the next morning, as Thackeray had put it in one of those rare dramatic climaxes in fiction that make one gasp, "lying on his face, dead." Baudelaire, rolling his splenetic eye on the crowds of that humanity which he hated in his sick heart, had roamed those very streets and lived under some of those huddled roofs; and Motley, Secretary of the American Legation long ago, had delved here for his great history of William the Silent. I had intended to hunt all this out and to write it down, and now it was too late; the task could only be added to that great mass of unfulfilled intentions now never to be realized, the mass that grows so great and intensifies its reproach as we grow old—*Jamais plus! Jamais plus!*

I went the next morning to talk with von Moltke

about the train; there was hemming and hawing; it would be impossible to get a special train, all of us could not go at once.

"Very well," I said, "if there are several trains, I shall go out last."

"Why?"

"Why? Because when the ship goes down the captain goes over the side last."

Thus to the old uncertainties so long endured, as to when and how we should go, there came a new uncertainty as to whether we should go at all. I had asked for a special train in which to take the Legation staff, the Consuls and their families, the C.R.B., and the Chinese Legation, for the Chinese Government had broken off diplomatic relations with Germany, and Sven Poussette, then charged with the representation of Chinese interests, had officially renewed the request of our Chinese colleagues that I take them with my party. But as von Moltke had intimated, it was proposed that the Legation go one day, the Consuls a few days later, and last of all the men of the C.R.B. It was told me that Lancken had been seen very dark of visage, very much worried, and that he had said that Berlin had ordered that we be sent out by Denmark, there to take ship for America, a petty reluctance to recognize the Belgian Government in exile at Havre, or its existence! He had telephoned to Berlin, however, and had that order revoked.

Meanwhile, in the midst of all these uncertainties and the anxieties they created, the Legation continued to be thronged with callers who came to bid us farewell, the expression of that Belgian gratitude which was so real, so overwhelming, and so constantly ex-

pressed that I was often embarrassed by it. All the officials, all the notables of the city, all our friends, came, and it was beautiful and touching, but no expression was more so than the call of Cardinal Mercier.

He came Thursday afternoon at tea-time, tall, majestic, with the simplicity of the truly great—such blue eyes of virtue and lofty courage! He was accompanied by the Reverend Père Rutten, who wore the white robe of a Dominican father, back in Belgium again after many adventures. I had crossed the sea with him on my return from America in 1915. His Eminence expressed sorrow, and showed sorrow, at our going. He spoke with beautiful appreciation of America and what America had done for Belgium, and said that Belgium had lost her "stay and support"—*"L'Amérique—la force, l'autorité, d'une grande nation."* His voice was vibrant with emotion; he was still a moment, and bowed his grey head. . . .

I told him that after the war he would have to make a voyage to America where he was so much loved and admired, and when I related how Protestant clergymen and Jewish Rabbis had united with the priests of his own faith to praise his courage and to extol his patriotism, he looked at me in the astonishment that was the product of his modesty. He feared that he was too old to undertake the voyage, there was the question of sea-sickness, but I assured him that in summer the ocean for him would be as smooth as *les étangs d'Ixelles.*

Over and over again he thanked me for what, as he was generous enough to say, I had done for Belgium. I wish that I might give all the conversation, and I wish more than all that I might give some sense of the charm and puissance of his personality. The effect

of his visit was most uplifting. He is one of those great beings that in a world crowded with little men lift themselves far above the mass and by the sheer force of moral grandeur radiate sweetness and light. In his presence all cares, all petty feelings, and all haunting fears fade away; one is before eternal verities, and we felt that night as though we had had a prophet in the house. Did not our hearts burn within us as he talked with us by the way?

On Friday morning—we counted those last days as a prisoner might—Gregory arrived early to say that Reith had told him that the C.R.B. could not go out until the sixth of April, a week hence. I sent Ruddock at once to tell von Moltke that if the C.R.B. did not go on Monday I should not go; that they might do as they pleased, send me as prisoner to Germany, or shoot me in the Grand' Place. I *would* not go before the C.R.B. . . .

Lancken sent to know if I could receive him at eleven o'clock; then he postponed the visit until afternoon, and something, some prescience, I know not what, told me that he was leaving on one of those trips to Berlin. At five o'clock that afternoon then, scrupulously groomed as ever, and smart in the light bluish-grey uniform that so well set off his handsome figure, wearing side-arms, he came to make his *adieux;* and my presentiment was correct—he was going to Berlin that night—to be gone a week. We had tea, and when he and my wife and I had chatted for a while he began to discuss the plans for our departure, beginning with the statement that Sherman, our Vice-Consul at Antwerp, might be detained as having been too pro-English, but I was able to persuade him out of that notion

and to induce him to forego that measure. Then he said that my train would be ready for Monday, but—there it was, the familiar "but" for which I was waiting—the C.R.B. could not go until the 6th, because Gregory had fixed that day.

"Very well," I said, "then I shall not go until the 6th."

He looked up in surprise; that would make trouble, he said; he could not be responsible for the military—they might do anything.

"Very well, let them do anything," I replied; "I will not go first, but last."

He said that it would be very difficult to change the arrangements and to send the C.R.B. Monday; the military might insist on their going into quarantine; there were difficulties of all sorts.

"That is a grave decision," he said solemnly. "Would you accept all the consequences of it?"

"I do not know what you mean by 'the consequences,'" I replied, "but let them be as grave as they will, I accept them. I will not be the first, but the last, to leave."

He gazed intently at me for a moment and then said that he would do all in his power to adjust the difficulty. There was little more to say; he glanced at the watch on his wrist, again expressed regret at seeing me go, and said that as the war was probably nearly over he felt we should meet again soon.

"Peut-être au congrès de la paix," he added, shook hands, said *au revoir,* and was gone.

Gregory was waiting to see me, and I told him the unfavourable news, the complication of the last moment which all the while, deep in our hearts, we had expected. He remembered then that some days be-

fore it had been suggested by some one at the Vermittlungsstelle that the members of the C.R.B. leave on the 6th, but it had been a suggestion merely, not an order. In the midst of this uncertainty a cablegram came from Washington, an urgent cablegram, instructing me to leave at once.

The next morning early there was a call on the telephone; von Moltke wished to speak to me, to tell me that the train would be ready for Monday at five o'clock. For whom? I asked. And he answered, for the C.R.B., the Consuls, even for the Chinese, who would go out with us. The seven men of the C.R.B. who had served in the north of France had left the evening before, and our going seemed now certain enough to warrant us leaving the "p.p.c." cards that had been so long prepared.

The day had its note of tragedy, for the night had brought the shocking news from Liége that poor Albert Heingartner, our Consul there, had died suddenly of heart failure, falling thus at his post at the very moment in which his services ended. His death cast its shadow over the Legation. He had been long in the Consular Service; he came from my own state of Ohio. I could only send Cruger to close the Consulate and to render what aid he could to the stricken family in such an hour. . . .

The day was crowded then with farewells. There was a *grand déjeuner* at the Taverne Royale, given by the Comité National to the departing Americans of the C.R.B. M. Francqui made a touching speech and I responded, and with much genuine regret and sorrow we bade adieu to the dear friends with whom we had laboured so long. The remaining hours until evening were taken up with receiving at the Legation those

who came to bid us adieu, Burgomaster Lemonnier and the échevins, to present an address from the city of Brussels,[2] and the Governor and the directors of the Banque

---

[2] Ville de Bruxelles
Cabinet du Bourgmestre.

Bruxelles, le 30 mars, 1917.

Excellence:

A l'heure où vous allez vous éloigner momentanément de la Capitale de la Belgique, permettez à l'Administration communale de la Ville de Bruxelles de vous présenter, une fois de plus, l'expression de sa profonde sympathie.

Nul n'ignore l'aide admirable que les Etats-Unis d'Amérique n'ont cessé d'apporter à la population belge depuis deux ans et demi. Nous sommes convaincus que, dans un avenir peu éloigné, l'heroïsme de votre grande Nation apportera à la Belgique et à ses alliés un concours encore plus puissant et plus généreux. L'affection et la gratitude de nos compatriotes survivront aux évènements actuels et feront désormais partie de l'âme même de notre Patrie.

A cet hommage qu'il nous sera toujours agréable d'adresser à la grande République d'outremer, nous ne pourrons nous empêcher d'associer le nom du diplomate éminent, de l'homme d'un si grand coeur qui, au cours d'une période remplie de difficultés sans exemple, a été parmi nous le digne interprète de la politique et sentiments de son pays.

La Population Bruxelloise ne saurait oublier combien, dans une foule d'occasions, votre intervention a été bienveillante et efficace. La respecteuse affection qu'elle a pour Votre Excellence n'est pas faite uniquement de gratitude.

Il s'y joint un sentiment d'un caractère plus intime: Nos concitoyens ont conscience de ce que vous éprouvez pour eux une sympathie sincère et réfléchie.

Ils savent que vous rendez justice à ce qu'il y a de noble et de touchant dans leur courage muet, dans endurance inlassable, dans leur patriotisme.

Toutes les fois qu'il est question de votre bonté et de votre

Nationale. On Sunday, it was the same, people came all day long, among them Burgomaster Franck, on behalf of the city of Antwerp. And late in the afternoon, when they all were gone, I went with my wife for a last walk along the boulevards in the soft spring rain, in the strange sense of realizing one's self as still of a familiar and beloved scene, yet saying sadly all the while within, "To-morrow I shall behold all this no more."

---

dévouement, il est impossible de séparer de votre nom celui de Madame Brand Whitlock. La population Bruxelloise ne perdra jamais le souvenir de ce qu'elle lui doit. Nous savons que le coeur de Madame Brand Whitlock a battu bien souvent au récit ou à la vue de nos misères et de nos douleurs présentes.

Vous nous quittez, Excellence; nous avons le ferme espoir que votre absence ne sera pas de longue durée.

Lorsque vous reviendrez, vous retrouverez une Belgique affranchie, ayant repris sa vie normale, à l'abri de ses libres institutions.

Souvent alors, votre memoire vous reportera à la période sombre et affligeante, durant laquelle la présence à Bruxelles du Ministre des Etats-Unis a été, pour notre population et pour nos Administrations communales, une consolation et un réconfort.

Nous vous prions de recevoir, Excellence, ainsi que Madame Brand Whitlock, l'expression de notre haute consideration.

Le Secrétaire,

M. VAUTHIER.

Le Collège des Bourgemestre et Echevins de la Ville de Bruxelles.

(*Signé*) M. VAUTHIER, le Secretaire.

(*Signé*) MAURICE LEMONNIER,
STEENS,
E. JACQMAIN,
MAX HALLET,
LÉON PLADET.

LIV

THE CLOSED DOOR

It was Monday, the second day of April, and, unless some new complication should arise, some new hitch develop in the scheme of things, our last in Brussels. The trunks and the boxes that had been so long packed were waiting in the corridors; and there was the confusion of the last hurried preparations, streams of callers, masses of flowers, and the weariness of the reaction after the long strain we could not yet realize as over. We of the Legation staff were twenty in all; there were fifteen persons belonging to the Consulates, about forty men of the C.R.B., and about eighteen of the Chinese Legation. We were to have luncheon that day at the residence of Burgomaster Lemonnier in the Avenue Louise; Villalobar was to be there, and van Vollenhoven, and the échevins of Brussels with their wives. The luncheon was to be at one o'clock; we were to leave at 5.10 in the afternoon.

At ten o'clock in the morning I was passing through the lower hall of the Legation; suddenly a German soldier stood before me at the salute; he was, from his costume, an *estafette,* and he showed the signs of having had a long ride on the motor-cycle that stood outside the door. He gave me a great envelope; I opened it and read an invitation from the Governor-General to luncheon at Trois Fontaines, at one o'clock. I had not seen Baron von Bissing since his return from Wiesbaden;

he had been ill ever since returning from his cure, and when I had asked von Moltke the day before when I might go to bid him farewell, he had not been sure that the Governor-General's health would permit him to receive me at all. And now, this invitation—for one o'clock, the very hour for which I had accepted at the Burgomaster's. The eternal complication, then, down to the very end!

The *estafette* was to await the response, and he stood there immobile, at attention. I thought an instant, then suddenly the solution flashed through my mind, the only advantage the complication of *l'heure belge* and *l'heure allemande* had ever presented; one o'clock by the Governor-General's time was noon by the Burgomaster's and:

"Present my compliments to His Excellency and say that I accept with pleasure," I said.

Trois-Fontaines is, as perhaps I have made clear somewhere in this long narrative, on the other side of Vilvorde, ten miles from Brussels; I consulted Eugène; he said he could drive it in fifteen minutes—perhaps in less. . . . My wife was to go to the Burgomaster's and explain that I had been sent for by the Governor-General.

At five minutes before one o'clock, German time, I was halted by a balking ass on the bridge at Vilvorde; a great crowd of laughing peasants tried to persuade him to make way, but he was obstinate; finally the men picked him up bodily and set him to one side, and at one o'clock I drove into the great park at Trois-Fontaines, past the lodge where the squadron of Imperial Guards, muffled in great-coats, were sitting their horses there in the wind that blew out the horses' tails, and a

moment later I was received by the Governor-General and the Baroness von Bissing.

The old Governor-General was feeble and haggard and looked much older; he walked stiffly and with difficulty, but he and the frail little Baroness smiled and received me cordially. They had a young son, a lad of fifteen, wearing the cadet uniform of some military training school, and already clicking his heels with a sharp report and saluting with the best of them. Count Ortenberg and several other members of the General's staff were there, and two guests, one of whom it was whispered to me was a great doctor of divinity and famous German theologian, whose name I did not learn. He was an enormous superman with a bristling belligerent pompadour, great spectacles, high yawning collar, a frock-coat that widened gradually from his narrow shoulders to its wide skirts below, the whole terminating at the floor in boots with glistening patent leather tips. The famous theologian was seated at the Baroness's right at luncheon, and I at her left, the Governor-General in the seat opposite his wife. The luncheon was the modest repast served always at that table, and the talk was not animated. Once during the meal the Governor-General lifted his glass and solemnly drank to my health; and once he looked up and said, in his heavy voice:

"Vous partez, donc?"

"Oui, Excellence," I said.

And then in a kind of rage he almost roared:

"Et pourquoi?"

As who should say, "What nonsense for you to go to war!" He said that he was sorry to see me go, that the *ravitaillement* would not go on so well.

And that was about all; the Baroness said she regretted the necessity for the submarine war, but that the English would never learn otherwise.

I was glad when the luncheon was over and glad that the coffee and cigarettes were served at the table. When we arose the Governor-General, as we chatted for a moment, said that he knew how hurried I was, and I took advantage of the remark to make my compliments and adieux at once. The famous theologian left, too, immediately after me, and as I went out of the hall I saw him drop to one knee before the Governor-General, the representative of the Imperial power and majesty, and heard the concussion of the loud moist kiss which the reverend one planted on the hand of His Excellency.

We raced back to town and I arrived at the Burgomaster's just after they had sat down to table, and sighed with relief to be among my good friends once more—and did my diplomatic best to eat another luncheon.

Villalobar came to us at half-past four that afternoon, and he and my wife and I had tea together in the sadness of those last moments. His motor, with the pretty red and yellow flag, the colours thenceforth to fly over the American Legation, was at the door to take us to the Gare du Nord; the motor of the Dutch Legation, with its orange flag, was there as well; and presently, bidding good-bye to those of the servants who had been so faithful during those trying days, we drove away from the Legation amid their tears. . . .

In the Place Rogier at the entrance to the Gare du Nord a great crowd was gathered, a crowd that filled all the space within the station. There had been, of course, no public announcement of our going, the hour

was not known, yet the word had gone about in Brussels. And there outside, and in larger numbers inside, the crowd stood in silence. As we left the motors to enter the station the men gravely uncovered, and the women were in tears. It was very still; there was not a word, not a sound. I went through the crowd; now and then a child was held out to me, its little hand outstretched, and low voices beside said:

"Au revoir—et bientôt."

The crowd was massed inside the station, and the words were repeated over and over in that most affectionate and touching of farewells:

"Au revoir—et bientôt."

All our friends were there, come to bid us us good-bye, and friends of the members of the C.R.B., all the remaining members of the diplomatic corps, the city officials, representatives of the Comité National, and when old M. Solvay, his eyes filled with tears, and M. Francqui and M. Emannuel Janssen came together to shake my hand—I could no longer speak.

Mr. Prentiss Gray, who had not only courageously volunteered to remain, but had insisted on remaining, to instruct the new delegates and to install his successor, was there to see us off.

The long train was drawn up under the sheds. Count von Moltke himself was at the turnstile; Baron von Falkenhausen, who was to escort us across Germany to the Swiss frontier at Schaffhausen, was there; we went out on to the platform.

Then the long farewells and the banalities with which the last moments are filled; finally the men of the C.R.B., the Consuls, the Chinese, got aboard. The masses of flowers were carried into the coach. Then

some one said that Josse Allard was there, that he could not get through the stile. I ran back, caught his eager face in the crowd, waved to him, and the crowd cheered. It was the only sound they had made, and, for their sakes, fearing a demonstration, I hastily withdrew and ran back to the carriage. I bade Lambert and then, the last, Villalobar, good-bye. He presented my wife with the bouquet of forget-me-nots he had brought, and handed her into the coach. The Baron von Falkenhausen mounted the steps; von Moltke, who had been so kind, who had so admirably made all the perfect arrangements, stood at the salute. I climbed aboard. The train was moving.

As we drew out of the city I looked out of the window of our coach. Far across the expanse of rails, at the end of a street which came down to the edge of the wide way, at the barrier of a grade crossing in Schaerbeek, a great crowd was gathered, and as the train passed, above the mass of faces blurred by the distance, there burst a white cloud of fluttered handkerchiefs. . . .

I went into a compartment alone and shut the door.

APPENDIX

DIRECTORY OF PAST AND PRESENT MEMBERS (NOT INCLUDING ADVISORY BODIES) OF THE COMMISSION FOR RELIEF IN BELGIUM

(Work began in London, Belgium and Rotterdam, October, 1914; in New York, November, 1914; and in Northern France, April, 1915; American representatives were withdrawn from Belgium and Northern France in April, 1917.)

Member.	University.	Period of Service.	Permanent Home or Business Address.
ALLEN, BEN S.	Stanford	October 1914—	Associated Press, New York City.
AMES, W. C.	McClure's Military College	July 1916—	Oakville, Napa County, Cal.
ANGELL, FRANK . . B. F.	Vermont and Leipzig	January–August 1916.	Bryant Street, Palo Alto, Cal.
ARROWSMITH, ROBERT B. F.	Columbia and Berlin	December 1915—	253 Highland Avenue, Orange, N. J.
BAETENS, FERNAN . . B. F.	Athenée Royal, Brussels	December 1914—	c/o C. R. B., Brussels.
BAIN, H. FOSTER	Chicago	June 1915–September 1916.	c/o Mining Magazine, Salisbury House, E. C. 2.
BAKER, GEORGE B.		October 1915—	375 Park Avenue, New York City.
BARROWS, DAVID P. . . B. F.	Pomona and Chicago	January–March 1916.	2600 Etna Street, Berkeley, Cal.
BARRY, GRIFFIN R. . . B. F.	Stanford	August 1915–December 1916.	c/o G. A. Barry, Monrovia, Cal.
BATES, LINDON W.	Yale	November 1914–October 1915.	615 Fifth Avenue, New York City.
*BATES, LINDON W., Jr.	Yale	November 1914–May 1915.	
BELL, JARVIS E. . . B. F.		October 1914–January 1915.	
BELROSE, LOUIS . . B. F.	Georgetown	June–August 1916.	6 Dupont Circle, Washington, D. C.
BERTRON, S. READING	Yale	November 1915.	40 Wall Street, New York City.
BOWDEN, CARLTON G. B. F.	University of the South	Dec. 1914–Jan. 1916, June–Oct. 1916.	St. Louis, Mo.
BRACKETT, FRANK P. . . B. F.	Dartmouth	July–December 1916.	Pomona College, Claremont, Cal.
BRADFORD, HENRY P. . . B. F.		January–May 1916.	c/o Brown, Shipley & Co., London.
BRANSCOMB, BENNETT H. B. F.	Birmingham College and Oxford	December 1914–February 1915.	Goodwater, Alabama.
*BRODRICK, C. T.	Harvard	December 1914–January 1915.	
BROWN, MILTON M. . . B. F.	Princeton	February 1916—	Glendale, Cincinnati, Ohio.
BROWN, WALTER LYMAN	California	December 1915—	C. R. B., Rotterdam.
BRYANT, FLOYD S. . . B. F.	Nevada and Oxford	December 1914—January 1915.	Reno, Nevada.
†BULLE, GERMAN . . B. F.		Beginning to December 1916.	
CARMICHAEL, OLIVER C. B. F.	Alabama and Oxford	December 1914—April 1915.	Goodwater, Alabama.
CARSTAIRS, CHARLES H. . B. F.	Yale and Ecole des Sciences Politiques	January 1915 to withdrawal.	Mariemont, Belgium.
CHADBOURN, PHILIP H. B. F.	Minnesota	February to December 1915.	223 East 17th Street, New York City.
CHADBOURN, WILLIAM H. B. F.	Massachusetts Institute of Technology	March—July 1915.	223 East 17th Street, New York City.
CHAMBERLAIN, D. C.		November 1914—	Des Moines, Iowa.
CHASSEAUD, H. GORDON B. F.	Amherst	February–August 1915.	c/o National City Bank, 55 Wall Street, New York
CHATFIELD, F. H. . . B. F.	Harvard	January–August 1916.	1939 Madison Road, Cincinnati, Ohio.
CHEW, OSWALD . . B. F.	Harvard	February–October 1916.	1715 Walnut Street, Philadelphia, Pa.
CLARK, ARCHIBALD D. B. F.	Cambourne School of Music	December 1914–December 1915.	Utah Copper Co., Bingham Canyon, Utah.
CLARK, ALBERT W. . . B. F.	Union College and Meadville Theological School	December 1915–June 1916.	c/o General Electric Co., Schenectady, N. Y.
CLARK, STANLEY . . B. F.		December 1914–December 1915.	Utah Copper Co., Bingham Canyon, Utah.

B.F. indicates service in Belgium or France.
The omission of the second date means that the member is still (April, 1918) in service.

Member.	University.	Period of Service.	Permanent Home or Business Address.
CLASON, CHARLES R. .. B. F.	Maine and Oxford	December 1914–January 1915.	Gardiner, Maine.
COFFIN, C. A.	.. ..	November 1915—	c/o General Electric Co., 120 Broadway, New York.
CONNETT, ALBERT N. .. B. F.	Rensselaer Polytechnic (Troy, N. Y.)	February–April 1915.	c/o J. G. White & Co., 43 Exchange Place, New York.
CONNETT, T. O. .. .. B. F.	Harvard Law and Cambridge ..	January–April 1915.	c/o J. G. White & Co., 43 Exchange Place, New York.
CROCKER, W. H.	California	November 1914—	First National Bank, San Francisco, Cal.
CROLL, MORRIS W. .. B. F.	Gettysburg College and Harvard ..	June–September 1915.	Princeton, N. J.
CROSBY, OSCAR T. .. B. F.	West Point	May–September 1915.	Warrenton, Va.
CURTIS, EDWARD D. .. B. F.	Harvard and Cambridge	Beginning to withdrawal.	Hammond Street, Chestnut Hill, Boston.
CUTLER, HENRY F. .. B. F.	Amherst, Genoa and Berlin	August 1916–January 1917.	Mount Hermon, Mass.
CUTTING, R. FULTON	Columbia	November 1915—	320 Nassau Street, New York City.
DANA, PAUL .. .. .. B. F.	Harvard	April–June 1915.	1 Fifth Avenue, New York City.
DANGERFIELD, J., Jr. .. B. F.	.. ..	December 1914 to withdrawal.	36 Garden Place, Brooklyn, N. Y.
DAWSON, THOMAS B. .. B. F.	.. ..	June–August 1916.	Box 287, Providence, R. I.
DICKSON, J. W.	.. ..	November 1914–December 1914.	6 Haymarket, London, S. W. I.
DULAIT, ARMAND .. B. F.	University of Liége	December 1914—	Brussels. [Cal.
DUNN, HARRY L. .. B. F.	California and Columbia Law School	July 1916 to withdrawal.	c/o Mrs. E. P. Dunn, Arlington Hotel, Santa Barbara,
DUNN, WILLIAM McKEE B. F.	Yale	February–June 1916.	118 Mutual Building, Richmond, Va.
‡DUTTON, ROBERT M. .. B. F.	U. S. Naval Academy	April 1915–November 1916.	Insurance Exchange Building, San Francisco, Cal.
DYER, RICHARD T. .. B. F.	Princeton	December 1916–February 1917.	62 Prospect Street, East Orange, N. J.
ECKSTEIN, FREDERICK B. F.	Yale	Feb.–Aug 1916, Nov. 1916 to with-	25 E. 30th Street, New York City.
EDGAR, WILLIAM C.	.. ..	November 1914— [drawal.	The Northwestern Miller, Minneapolis, Minn.
FLEMING, J. H. .. .. B. F.	.. .. [Seminary	January 1915–February 1916.	66 Pingree Avenue, Detroit, Mich.
FLETCHER, ALFRED C. B. B. F.	California and Gen. Theological	February 1916—	410 Hearst Building, San Francisco, Cal.
FLETCHER, HORACE .. B. F.	Dartmouth (Hon. A.M.)	February–November 1915.	Lotos Club, New York City.
FLINT, WILLIAM W., Jr. B. F.	Dartmouth and Oxford	December 1914–January 1915.	Concord, N. H.
GADE, JOHN A. .. .. B. F.	Harvard	September 1916–January 1917	107 East 71st Street, New York.
GAILOR, FRANK H. .. B. F.	University of the South and Oxford	December 1914–July 1915.	Memphis, Tennessee.
GALPIN, PERRIN C. .. B. F.	Yale and Oxford	December 1914–May 1915.	New Haven, Conn.
GAY, GEORGE INNESS	Colorado	July 1916—	434 S. 2nd Avenue, Mt Vernon, N. Y.
GARY, ELBERT H.	Wheaton and Chicago	November 1915—	71 Broadway, New York.
GERARD, JAMES W.	Columbia	October 1914–February 1917.	Union Club, 1, East 51st Street, New York.
GIBSON, CARLETON B. .. B. F.	Alabama	December 1914–April 1915.	208 Bull Street, Savannah, Georgia.
GIBSON, HUGH S. .. B. F.	Paris	October 1914—	c/o State Department, Washington, D. C.
GLENN, JOHN L. .. .. B. F.	Wofford and Oxford	Dec. 1914–Sept. 1915, June–Oct.1916.	Chester, S. Carolina.
GRAY, PRENTISS N. .. B. F.	California	February 1916 to withdrawal.	110 Market Street, San Francisco.
GREEN, JOSEPH C. .. B. F.	Princeton and Paris	October 1915–July 1917.	Avondale Avenue, Cincinnati.
GREGORY, DONALD M. .. B. F.	California	October 1916 to withdrawal.	Berkeley, California.
GREGORY, WARREN .. B. F.	California	November 1916 to withdrawal.	Berkeley, California.
GWYNN, WILLIAM M. .. B. F.	California	July 1916 to withdrawal.	1632 Ingraham Street, Los Angeles, Cal.
HALL, GUILLERMO F. .. B. F.	Morris Scientific School	February 1916–January 1917.	Austin, Texas.
HALL, WILLIAM C. .. B. F.	Harvard	July 1916–July 1917.	Kent School, Kent, Conn.
HAMILTON, HERBERT F. B. F.	Amherst	February–July 1916.	207 Minnesota Avenue, San José, Cal.

B.F. indicates service in Belgium or France.
The omission of the second date means that the member is still (April, 1918) in service.

Member.		University.	Period of Service.	Permanent Home or Business Address.
HARPER, GEORGE M.	B. F.	Princeton	May–June 1915.	Mercer Street, Princeton, N. J.
HAWKINS, CHARLES H.	B. F.	Williams and Oxford	December 1914–April 1915.	Warwick, N. Y.
HEINEMAN, DANNIE N.	B. F.	Liége and Bonn	Beginning to withdrawal.	Brussels.
HEMPHILL, ALEXANDER J.			November 1914—	Guaranty Trust Co., 140, Broadway, New York City.
HOLLMANN, EMIL F.	B. F.	Stanford and Oxford	December 1914–February 1915.	Oakland, Cal.
HONNOLD, WILLIAM L.		Michigan College of Mines	October 1915—	Metropolitan Club, Fifth Avenue and 60th Street, N. Y.
HOOVER, HERBERT C.		Stanford	October 1914—	Mills Buildings, San Francisco, Cal.
HOUSE, ROY T.	B. F.	Miami University (Ohio)	February–May 1916.	327 West Symnes Street, Norman, Okla.
HULSE, WILLIAM	B. F.		Beginning to November 1916.	Brussels.
HUMBERT, PIERRE	B. F.		April 1915–May 1917.	c/o Lazard Bros., N. Y.
HUNSIKER, MILLARD			October 1914–October 1915	33 Cornhill, London, E. C. 3.
HUNT, EDWARD E.	B. F.	Harvard	December 1914—October 1915.	27 West 44th Street, New York City.
ILIFF, JOHN G.	B. F.	California	May–September 1915.	1612 Edith Street, Berkeley, Cal.
IRWIN, WILL		Stanford	October 1914—	Players Club, New York City.
JACKSON, GEORGE S.	B. F.	Harvard	November 1914–November 1915.	462 Beacon Street, Boston, Mass.
JACKSON, ROBERT A.	B. F.	Harvard	May 1915 to withdrawal.	462 Beacon Street, Boston, Mass.
JACKSON, WILLIAM B.	B. F.	Yale (Sheffield)	December 1916 to withdrawal.	Silver Springs, Md.
JENSEN, ALFRED C.	B. F.		December 1914–March 1915.	
JENSEN, RENÉ LUDWIG	B. F.	Brussels University	January 1915—	Brussels.
JOHNSON, AMOS D., JR	B. F.	Kansas and Freiburg	December 1914–July 1915.	Rialto Building, Kansas City, Mo.
JONES, THOMAS H.	B. F.	Georgetown and Oxford	December 1914–April 1915.	Arcadia, Florida.
KELLOGG, VERNON	B. F.	Kansas and Leipzig	June–Nov. 1915, July 1916—	Palo Alto, Cal.
KELLOGG, MRS. VERNON		Stanford University of California	July 1916—	Palo Alto, Cal.
KITE, ST. ALBAN	B. F.	Pennsylvania School of Social Science	November 1915–August 1916.	c/o Miss Elizabeth S. Kite, Morton, Pa.
KITTREDGE, TRACY B.	B. F.	California and Oxford	December 1914–July 1915, May 1916–	Berkeley, Cal.
KNOX, NEWTON B.		Stanford	April 1915–July 1915.	
LANGHORNE, MARSHALL			November 1914–	State Department, Washington, D. C.
LATHROP, REV. C. N.	B. F.	California	September–December 1915.	All Saints' Cathedral, Milwaukee, Wis.
LEACH, DR. CHARLES N.	B. F.	Stanford	March 1916 to withdrawal.	c/o Dr. R. L. Wilbur, Lane Hospital, San Francisco, Cal.
LIEFELD, ERNEST T.	B. F.	Yale (Sheffield), Leipzig, Freiburg	July 1916 to withdrawal.	New Haven, Conn.
LOWDERMILK, W. C.	B. F.	Arizona and Oxford	December 1914–January 1915.	Willcox, Arizona.
LUCAS, DR. WILLIAM P.	B. F.	Western Reserve	May–August 1916.	Berkeley, Cal.
LUCEY, JOHN F.	B. F.		January 1915—	233 Broadway, New York City.
LYTLE, R. RIDGLEY, JR.	B. F.	Princeton and Oxford	May–August 1915.	300 W. 100th Street, New York City.
MACCARTER, ROBERT			November 1914–November 1915.	165 Broadway, New York City.
MACLOSKIE, CHARLES H.	B. F.	Princeton	Beginning to January 1915.	Brussels.
MALABRE, DR. ALFRED L.	B. F.	Georgetown	January–April 1916.	454 Fort Washington Avenue, New York City.
MANN, R. A.			December 1914–July 1915.	c/o J. F. Lucey Co. Broad Street House, London, E. C. 2.
MAURICE, ARTHUR B.	B. F.	Princeton	January 1917 to withdrawal.	Rahway, N. J.
MAVERICK, ROBERT V.	B. F.	Princeton	September 1916 to withdrawal.	San Antonio, Texas. [don, E. C. 2.
MAYREIS, LOUIS J.		Stanford	January–June 1916.	c/o Burma Mines, Ltd., 1, London Wall Buildings, Lon-
MEERT, FREDERICK W.	B. F.	Brussels and Louvain	Nov. 12, 1914 to withdrawal.	Brussels.

B.F. indicates service in Belgium or France.
The omission of the second date means that the member is still (April, 1918) in service.

Member.	University.	Period of Service.	Permanent Home or Business Address.
MORGAN, DUDLEY S. .. B. F.	Harvard	June 1916 to withdrawal.	Harvard Club, New York City.
NELSON, DAVID T. .. B. F.	N. Dakota and Oxford	December 1914–October 1915.	Mayville, N. Dakota.
OLIVER, THOMAS E. .. B. F.	Harvard	September 1915–May 1916.	912 W. California Avenue, Urbana, Ill.
OSBORN, EARL D. .. B. F.	Princeton	Oct. 1915–April 1916, Sep. 1916 to October 1914— [withdrawal.	40 E. 36th Street, New York City.
PAGE, WALTER HINES	Randolph-Macon & Johns Hopkins	December 1914–April 1915.	American Embassy, London.
PARADISE, SCOTT H. .. B. F.	Yale and Oxford	July 1916–June 1917.	Balliol College, Oxford.
PATE, MAURICE .. .. B. F.	Princeton		2053 Clermont Street, Denver, Colorado.
PERCY, WILLIAM A. .. B. F.	University of the South and Harvard Law School	December 1916 to withdrawal.	Greenville, Mississippi.
PINCHOT, GIFFORD	Yale	April 1915–May 1915.	1617 Rhode Island Avenue, Washington, D. C.
PLATT, PHILIP S. .. B. F.	Yale & Mass. Institute of Technology	June 1916–January 1917.	Scranton, Pa.
POLAND, WILLIAM B. .. B. F.	Mass. Institute of Technology	September 1915—	Engineers Club, New York, U. S. A.
POTTER, FRANCIS H. .. B. F.	Harvard	February–October 1916.	22 West 9th Street, New York City.
POTTER, PHILIP B. K. .. B. F.	Harvard and Cornell	February 1916 to withdrawal.	22 West 9th Street, New York City
PRATT, HENRY S. .. B. F.	Michigan, Leipzig, Freiburg, Geneva	September 1916–January 1917.	Haverford College, Haverford, Penn.
RICHARDS, LEWIS .. B. F.	Royal Conservatory of Music, Brussels	January 1915—	368 Chaussée de Bruxelles, Forest-les-Bruxelles.
RICHARDSON, GARDNER B. F.	Yale	May 1915 to withdrawal.	Woodstock, Conn.
RICKARD, EDGAR	California	October 1914—	120 Broadway, New York.
RUDDOCK, A. B. .. .. B. F.		June 1916 to withdrawal.	American Legation, Le Havre.
SEWARD, SAMUEL S., Jr. B. F.	Columbia and Oxford	June–December 1915.	262 Kingsley Avenue, Palo Alto, Cal.
SHALER, MILLARD K.	Kansas	October 1914—	3 Montagne du Parc, Brussels.
SHARP, WILLIAM GRAVES ..	Michigan	April 1915—	Elyria, Ohio.
SIMPSON, JOHN L. .. B. F.	California	December 1915–July 1917.	c/o D. Brockman, 833 Market Street, San Francisco.
SIMPSON, RICHARD H. B. F.	Indiana and Oxford	December 1914–April 1916.	243 Merrill Road, Indianapolis.
SKINNER, ROBERT P.		October 1914—	State Department, Washington, D. C. [E. C. 2.
SMITH, CHARLES A.		March 1915—August 1915.	c/o Caucasian Copper Co., 81 Palmerston House, London
SMITH, ROBINSON .. B. F.	Yale	December 1914—	
SPAULDING, GEORGE F. B. F.	Arizona and Oxford	December 1914–January 1915.	Los Angeles, Cal.
SPERRY, WILLIAM H. .. B. F.		December 1914 to withdrawal.	c/o G. B. Sperry, Redwood City, Cal.
STACY, T. HARWOOD .. B. F.	Texas	December 1914–March 1916	Austin, Texas.
STEPHENS, F. DORSEY .. B. F.	California and Oxford	January 1915–April 1916.	Hollywood, Cal. [N. Y.
STEVENSON, WILLIAM C. B. F.	Princeton and Oxford	June–October 1915.	c/o Rev. W. P. Stevenson, 111 N. Broadway, Yonkers,
STIMSON, HENRY L.	Yale-Harvard—Harvard Law	November 1916— [1916.	32 Liberty St., New York.
STOCKTON, GILCHRIST B. B. F.	Princeton and Oxford	April 1915–Jan. 1916, July 1916–Oct.	1754 Riverside Avenue, Jacksonville, Florida.
STONE, CARLOS H. .. B. F.	Hamilton & Auburn Theol. Seminary	December 1916 to withdrawal.	Cornwall-on-Hudson, N. Y.
STRATTON, WILLIAM W. B. F.	Utah and Oxford	January–July 1915.	Salt Lake City, Utah.
STRAUS, OSCAR S.	Columbia	November 1915—	5 West 76th Street, New York.
STUBBS, ROSCOE		November 1914—	Abilene, Kansas.
SULLIVAN, WILLIAM M. B. F.	Brown and Oxford	December 1914–January 1915.	Fall River, Mass.
THURSTON, E. COPPÉE .. B. F.	Lehigh	December 1914–August 1916.	608 Crocker Bldg., San Francisco, Cal.
THWAITS, FREDERICK C. B. F.	Wisconsin and Harvard	August 1916 to withdrawal.	405 Iron Block, Milwaukee, Wisconsin.
TORREY, CLARE M. .. B. F.	California	December 1915—October 1916.	2208 Parker Street, Berkeley, Cal.

B. F. indicates service in Belgium or France.
The omission of the second date means that the member is still (April, 1918) in service.

Member.	University.	Period of Service.	Permanent Home or Business Address.
TRUMBULL, FRANK		November 1915—	61 Broadway, New York
TUCK, WILLIAM H. **B. F.**	Princeton	September 1915–December 1916.	c/o Judge S. P. Tuck, San Stefano, Alexandria, Egypt.
VAN DYKE, HENRY	Princeton	November 1914–April 1917.	Princeton, N. J.
VAN HEE, JULIUS A. **B. F.**		January 1915 to withdrawal.	State Department, Washington, D. C.
VAN SCHAICK, J. B. **B. F.**	Cambridge and Harvard Law School	September 1915–September 1916.	Huntington Station, Long Island, N. Y.
‖WARREN, ROBERT H. **B. F.**	Yankton and Oxford	December 1914–May 1915.	
WELLINGTON, L. C. **B. F.**	Williams and Oxford	Dec. 1914–May 1915, Aug. 1915–	34 Amity Street, Amherst, Mass.
WHITE, JOHN BEAVER	Pennsylvania State College & Cornell	October 1914— [Sep. 1916.	120 Broadway, New York.
WHITING, ALMON C. **B. F.**	Mass. Normal Art School	September 1916 to withdrawal.	Toledo Museum of Art, Toledo, Ohio.
WHITLOCK, BRAND **B. F.**		October 1914—	State Department, Washington, D. C.
WHITNEY, CASPAR **B. F.**	St. Matthew's College (Calif.)	May 1915–April 1916.	Oakby House, Bronxville, N. Y.
WICKES, FRANCIS C. **B. F.**	Williams and Harvard Law School	August 1915–June 1917.	47 Fitzhugh Street, Rochester, N. Y.
WILLIAMS, EDGAR **B. F.**	Cornell	June 1916–February 1917.	141 St. Mark's Place, New Brighton, N. Y.
WILLIAMS, Dr. PERCY D. **B. F.**	Columbia	December 1914–January 1915.	249 West 72nd Street, New York.
WITHINGTON, ROBERT **B. F.**	Harvard	March–December 1916.	35 Bay State Road, Northampton, Mass.
YOUNG, CARL A.		December 1914–June 1916.	c/o Lucey Mfg. Corp., Woolworth Buildings, 233 Broadway, N. Y.

B.F. indicates service in Belgium and France.
The omission of the second date means that the member is still (April, 1918) in service.

**Lost on S. S. "Lusitania," May 7th, 1915.*
†*Died at Brussels, December 27th, 1916.*
‡*Died at Colorado Springs, February 19, 1918.*
§*Died at Fort Doniphan, Okla., October 25th, 1917*
‖*Died at Bordeaux, November, 1916.*

DH682 .W61 v.2
Belgium; a personal narrative,
Princeton Theological Seminary–Speer Library
1 1012 00002 0661